

JESUS, LORD AND SAVIOR, LIGHT OF THE WORD

Work 2017-2024

Dominic P. Simon, {God's child}

A little more than 20 Manifestations of the Holy Spirit
An Apparition of the Lord Jesus and a Manifestation of Mary
Bible and modern science

Book number 18 of the work:

The Holy Spirit is a real Manifestation in you, without it, no Heaven!



You have the right to know the Truth, it is your life after all...

Jesus, Lord and Savior, Light of the world

Work 2017-2024

A little more than 20 Manifestations of the Holy Spirit
An Apparition of the Lord Jesus and a Manifestation of Mary
Bible and modern science

Book number 18 of the work:

The Holy Spirit is a real Manifestation in you; without it, no Heaven!

Dominic P. Simon, {God's child}

For more information

For up-to-date information.

More than 120 audiovisual links are available at:

<https://www.dominicpsimon.com>

Legal deposit: Bibliothèque et Archives nationales du Québec
Legal deposit: Library and Archives Canada
ISBN : 978-2-924881-82-8
2024

Publisher: Dominic P. Simon
<https://www.dominicpsimon.com>



This book is licensed under the Creative Commons Attribution - NonCommercial – NoDerivatives 4.0 International (CC BY-NC-ND 4.0).

You may not: modify this book in any way or use it for commercial purposes.

However, you can:

- 1) Download this book for free and read it;
- 2) Print the pages of this book for personal use;
- 3) Share this book for free in its entirety.

Table of contents of book number 18

Foreword	7
0 Structure.....	7
PART 1 OF THE WORK (ESSENTIAL).....	11
Introduction (2017).....	11
1 Why is it important to read this book?.....	11
2 Two resource people for this book.....	15
3 The heart of this book	17
4 The truth!	25
Search for the Creator	29
5 Is it possible to prove that our Creator (God) exists?.....	29
6 Confirmation of the presence of God.....	41
Christianity	49
7 Introduction to Christianity	49
8 To acquire a Christian base.....	53
9 To follow the Way of Christ, is it necessary to be accompanied by a Christian movement?	61
10 God and {God's children}.....	69
11 Several kinds of baptisms	83
Testimonials.....	87
12 My steps to get my {birth of the Spirit}	87
13 Testimony of my Manifestations and their biblical explanations.....	95
14 Testimonials of other people.....	113
15 To be born again	115
Psychology notions	119
16 Some useful notions of psychology	119
17 To get a healing or a miracle	133
Satan and the devil	137
18 Yes, it is the devil who has mixed us all up!	137
Introduction to the Scriptures	151
19 The Bible.....	151
Explanation of the Scriptures.....	159
20 Properly interpret the Scriptures	159
Explanations of the most important texts of the Bible	165
21 The Old Testament, some important texts of Genesis.....	165
22 The Old Testament, some important texts of the prophets.....	173
23 The New Testament, the Gospel of St-John	181
24 The New Testament, the Gospel of St-Matthew	195

Resourcing	211
25 Celebration of the Word	211
26 Prayer	217
27 Additional topics	227
28 The same message since 2,000 years.....	231
The end of time	233
29 The Judgment.....	233
PART 2 OF THE WORK (RESEARCH, OPTIONAL READING)	239
A modern model.....	241
30 The Resurrection	241
An old model	259
31 The {birth of the Spirit} seen from the old point of view	259
Additional Manifestations of the Holy Spirit (2019-2023).....	261
32 But who exactly is the Holy Spirit?	261
33 The Lord, Yahweh (I Am)	275
34 The Mysteries of the Bible solved	291
35 Judaism and Christianity	323
36 It is important to build!	337
37 Heaven	343
38 The main points found during the research of this Part 2	353
PART 3 OF THE WORK (ESSENTIAL)	383
39 Following the Lord to get to Heaven	383
Annex.....	391

Foreword

|0| Structure

|0-A| Take a good start...

A) This work was written for all humans!

The name of the work is:

The Holy Spirit is a real Manifestation in you; without it, no Heaven!

This work was written in a progressive way in the image of a discovery over a period of 6 years. It responds in a tangible and precise way to all our questions. The goal is to seek and find the Truth. Where do we come from? What are we doing on earth? Where are we going after our life here?

B) The way the work is built.

In order to achieve the goal, I used a powerful research method (the detective's method). By this method, our preconceived ideas are erased and the truth finally appears! It will scare some people who will close this book very quickly. It will make the others say, "It was so simple!"

This work provides a tangible connection between our modern society, the Bible and our Creator.

C) Each chapter contains articles.

Chapters are numbered. Example: see chapter |2|.

Chapters are made of articles that each having a letter. Example: see article |2-A|.

D) The work is divided into 3 Parts as follows:

Part 1	Essential	The important message of the Lord (chapters 1 to 29)
Part 2	Optional reading	The mysteries of the Bible solved (chapters 30 to 38)
Part 3	Essential	Following the Lord in order to go to Heaven (chapter 39)

|0-B| Several books, but only one work

The Lord gave me a little more than twenty Manifestations of the Holy Spirit to inspire and guide the writing of this work from 2016 until now. In 2022, I have lightened the work by about 20%. Obviously since that time, the subjects (or chapters) of the work have accumulated! So I decided, for 2024, to offer you 2 books to choose from.

Here are the 2 books	Here are the titles
The complete work (2017-2024) is the book number 18.	Jesus, Lord and Savior, Light of the world
The work (2017-2024) lightened by 35% is the book number 19.	God really exists, He loves you, here's the proof
These books have the same chapter and article numbers. It is possible to switch from one to the other easily. For the writing history of this work, see the introduction to Part 2.	

|0-C| Warning, do not burn the steps!

This work has a lot of content, and the texts are synthesized. **So, I recommend you to take your time and to read slowly to assimilate the content.**

If you bought this work for a particular topic, I always suggest you start with chapter |1| and gradually go to the desired topic. **This work is structured like the floors of a building.** You cannot reach the highest chapter without starting with the lowest one. The proper understanding of a chapter depends on the reading of the others.

For those who cannot wait to know more, there is nothing to stop you from taking a quick look at an advanced chapter now and then coming back at the beginning. However, if the information found does not suit you, that does not mean it is not true at all. **This work is built on the truth and not on what the reader wants to see.**

|0-D| This work is born from a need and a discovery that I made at 45 years old

In 2015, I was doing a training (AEC) for buildings to open my small business in the energy efficiency field. I knew that starting a business would be very difficult. Many new companies do not survive more than 2 years.

In order to succeed, I needed help. So, because the only one who always knows what to do is God, I started to look for him.

Then, I found him! To go further in this narrative, see article |12-B|.

This work is the result of this discovery, a gift for all of us!

|0-E| I suggest you a simple way of reading this book

Whether you are a Christian or not and regardless of your level of knowledge, I suggest you start reading without taking it seriously, just for the pleasure of seeing what it brings you.

Then ask yourself if the plan of our Creator could be so simple. Does this book explain all the facts like the assembling of the pieces of a puzzle?

Finally, make the decision to go further or not. I can tell you that the 2 main obstacles for your research will be:

1) How did such a simple explanation escape us so easily?

2) Although it is written in the Bible. In the course of history, how can some Christian movements have been able to forget that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is always a real Manifestation in a person and not poetry?

|0-F| Presentation of this work

God created our world. He gave it to us generously and did not ask for anything in return.

Our world is so free that God seems to be absent from it as not to influence us in our choice of life on earth.

It is not proving the existence of God which represents an insurmountable issue! The real barrier comes from ourselves, our control, our lifestyle, our freedom, and our selfishness. We do not want God to help us. We want to live within his graces on earth, but we do not want his presence. Yet God has given us life and He is Life. Why are we so scared? What could go wrong with him by our side? What could we lose except for our little human misery? Do we want to lose his Life plan for so little?

For us, the supernatural side of God is, of course, madness, I admit it! But what do you risk if you do not take stock of this possibility?

1) If God does not exist, you would continue your path without regrets.

2) On the other hand, if he really exists, you can then choose to live with or without him. The Lord always leaves us free and does not punish anyone for his choice of life.

Note:

Whatever your beliefs are, I have good news for you. You are at the right place with this book. Christ is here beside you and is reaching out to you.

|O-G| List of abbreviations and simplified words

OT	The Old Testament of the Bible. It brings together the Scriptures of Judaism. These are the Scriptures before the coming of Jesus Christ on earth. The Old Testament is important because Judaism is the root of Christianity.
NT	The New Testament of the Bible. It brings together the Scriptures of Christianity.
Spirit	The Holy Spirit . This is the Wind or the Breath of Life of God.
Lord	A simple name we use for God.
St-, Ste-	For a saint.

|O-H| References

Note that all excerpts reported here are as they are, no corrections (orthographic, grammatical, and typographical) have been made.

A) The Bible.

It must be known that every good Bible is a translation of one great source, see article |3-D|. So, whatever your Christian movement is (Catholic, Orthodox, Anglican, Protestant or other), it does not change the deep meaning. So, you can follow this book with the Bible of your choice. It is intended for everyone and not for any particular Christian movement. **Remember that the 2nd Covenant is between God and human.**

In addition, whatever Bible you are using, chapters and verses are all referenced with the same numbers. It is therefore possible to go from one Bible to another without any problem and to compare what is written.

I give you an example of comparison:

Excerpts*	Bible (New American Standard)	Bible (King James 1611)	Bible (Darby)
St-John 3,5	Jesus answered, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.	Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.	Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except any one be born of water and of Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.
Acts 10,44	While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit fell upon all those who were listening to the message.	While Peter yet spake these words, the Holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.	While Peter was yet speaking these words the Holy Spirit fell upon all those who were hearing the word.

(*) We can see that the meaning of the verses is preserved even if a few words differ.

The original version of this work was written in French, the excerpts come from the Bible (Jérusalem, 1973 des Éditions du Cerf) of: <http://www.lexilogos.com/bible.htm>

Now for this English version, the excerpts come from the Bible (New American Standard) of:

<https://www.biblestudytools.com/nas/> Or http://www.lexilogos.com/bible_multilingue.htm

B) References in the Bible.

(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)
-----	-----	-----	-----

(1) One of the two parts of the Bible. Example:

OT	Indicates the Old Testament .
NT	Indicates the New Testament .

(2) One of the books of the Bible. Example:

St-John	Indicates the Gospel of Saint John.
----------------	-------------------------------------

(3) Chapter and verse(s). Example:

5,2	Indicates chapter 5, then verse 2.
5,2-7	Indicates chapter 5, then verses 2 to 7.

(4) The excerpt reported. It can be **complete or not** depending on what is important to read.

|0-I| Suggested audiovisual resources

A) Audiovisual resources (images and videos).

The Internet will be a good tool. You can use Google, YouTube or another search engine. Throughout this book, I provide you with **keywords** to help you find useful resources on the Internet. If you do not have the Internet, just ask for help from a relative or a friend who has it at home.

Internet Keywords	(1)
-------------------	-----

(1) These are suggested keywords.

B) The website of this work can help you.

As mentioned before, you can do your own research using the keywords suggested. You can also use the audiovisual resources of the website. There are more than 120 direct **links**.

These resources are not part of the purchase of this book. They are a useful help that I offer for free.

1) Go to: https://www.dominicpsimon.com
2) At the top, click on The resources .
3) There is a file (PDF) to download. Click on it and save it on your computer.
4) The file (PDF) contains a chart with a list of Internet links . Locate the article number of the book, example: 2-B . Click on the Internet link in the chart. The website suggested should open automatically.
Remember that any website belongs to its author and may disappear at any time.

|0-J| To write in the easiest way

For the sole purpose of lightening the writing, the masculine form was used. In God's eyes, we are all equal: men or women, adults or children, rich or poor.

For the Lord, the important thing is the heart!

Enjoy your reading!

PART 1 OF THE WORK (ESSENTIAL)

Introduction (2017)

| 1 | Why is it important to read this book?

| 1-A | The event

I was baptized Catholic Christian at 3 months old. I had my first communion at 7 years old. I was confirmed at 11 years old. I had my solemn communion at 17 years old.

On the other hand...

A) I had the {**gift of the Holy Spirit**} or my {**birth of the Spirit**} spontaneously at 45 years old.

This happened only when the Lord has judged me ready to receive it.

Here is what St-John writes:

NT	St-John	3,5	Jesus answered, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water (1) and the Spirit (2) he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.
----	---------	-----	--

(1) This is the baptism of water. It is also called the baptism of repentance of John the Baptist. It is to renounce evil and take the firm resolve to follow the teachings of Jesus Christ in his life. This is our human responsibility.

(2) Spirit (in Greek language) means: "Breath of God (in English)." Here, it is the Breath of Life of God that gives birth to a human being as a {God's child}. No Christian movement gives it. It is a truly concrete Manifestation that Jesus Christ alone gives when a person is ready to receive it and not before. You just have to work on yourself to get it.

NT	St-John	14,21	"He who has My commandments and keeps them is the one who loves Me; and he who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and will disclose Myself to him. " (1)
----	---------	-------	---

(1) By the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit}.

In 2017, I formally confirm that these passages of St-John are accurate!

B) Here is how the {**birth of the Spirit**} or the {**gift of the Holy Spirit**} occurs concretely into us.

See article | 10-I | :

It **always** happens by: "the Breath of the Presence of God which is really long in your nostrils." This Breath is really long because it is the Breath of the Eternal (God). This Breath is wonderful because God shows you his Glory. This Breath completely fills the inside of your body. Afterwards, it gives you the feeling that your chest is dilating a bit because the Breath of Life has filled your heart and you are now a temple of God. This Breath brings you to a new life.

(*) It lasts about 20 minutes. See my testimony in article | 13-D | .

This Breath of Life is in the image of the narrative of the birth of Adam in the book of Genesis.

OT	Genesis	2,7	Then the LORD God formed man of dust from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living being.
----	---------	-----	--

C) The {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit} is mentioned in different ways in the New Testament.

Here is what St-Peter writes:

NT	1st Epistle of St-Peter	1,3	Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to His great mercy has caused us to be born again to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead,
----	-------------------------	-----	---

(*) Here, it is God (the Spirit) who gives birth to a person again. It is simply saying "to be born of the Spirit" or "to be born from above" like St-John. When St-Peter speaks, he says that his {birth of the Spirit} is already done.

The apostles themselves did not give the {gift of the Holy Spirit} to Christian baptism.

NT	Acts of the Apostles	10,44-47	While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit fell upon all those who were listening to the message... Then Peter answered, "Surely no one can refuse the water for these to be baptized who have received the Holy Spirit just as we <i>did</i> , can he?"
----	----------------------	----------	---

(*) Even St-Peter (the leader of all Christian movements) did not have the ability to give the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. At that time, the apostles administered a ritual of water baptism in the name of Jesus. Therefore, even now no Christian movement can do more than that.

Important note:

Anyone who has had a Christian catechesis knows that without the {gift of the Holy Spirit} in him, there is no Heaven at the end of his days! The difficulty is that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a real physical Manifestation and not poetry...			
---	--	--	--

D) 3 months after this event, I had 2 concrete Manifestations of the {**memorial of the communion with Christ**}.

NT	St-Luke	22,19	And when He had taken <i>some</i> bread <i>and</i> given thanks, He broke it and gave it to them, saying, "This is My body which is given for you; do this in remembrance of Me."
	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	11,24-25	and when He had given thanks, He broke it and said, "This is My body, which is for you; do this in remembrance of Me." In the same way <i>He took</i> the cup also after supper, saying, "This cup is the new covenant in My blood; do this, as often as you drink <i>it</i> , in remembrance of Me."

E) Here is how the {memorial of the communion with Christ} occurs.

In short:

The Manifestation begins when the Eucharistic bread is put in our mouth. There is a "special feeling," similar to a fluid (water or air) that starts from our mouth and spreads in our chest and fills with "butterflies."			
--	--	--	--

(*) It lasts about 3 hours. This feeling is difficult to describe. It is not a feeling of happiness. It does not hurt either. This gives the feeling of a sweet suffering. It is like a mixture of 2 feelings. Jesus **suffered** for **Love** for us. See my testimony in article |13-G|.

<i>So you understand why it is important to read this book!</i>			
This work on Truth is the effort of about 5,000 hours. Unfortunately, I know that people are not ready to read it or even believe it. In any case, the message of the Lord is done! When Jesus spoke of generosity... you have a good example in your hands...			

|1-B| Right after this event...

Before my {birth of the Spirit} on March 14, 2016, I felt safe. It was simple: all baptized Christians go to the Kingdom of God after their death. You had to be a very bad person not to go there.

After my {birth of the Spirit}, I started to be scared! I had just got what St-John stipulates as a requirement in order to go to the Kingdom of God. I had received the Breath of God right in the nostrils that completely had filled me up. It was the Breath of God (the Life of God) while I was alive (biologically) on earth. All the Gospels concurred. The Epistles of St-Paul concurred. In addition, even the Scriptures of the prophet Ezekiel concurred. All the personal steps I went through to have my {birth of the Spirit} were, without knowing it, in the Gospels! In fact, all the important Scriptures of the Bible matched! What to do? Who would I say that to? Who would believe me? I found the message very heavy to bear. What would I do, a little human being of nothing at all, with such knowledge? **On the other hand, it must be said, a knowledge that is already written in the Bible.** I wondered if Christians really wanted to see it or not. Otherwise, I could not do anything!

|1-C| What is important

A) The objectives of this book.

1) To testify to the truth even if it will not please everyone.

If a reader does not believe this book, it is because he does not believe in the Gospels either!

2) To take away mysteries and superstitions to better discover Jesus Christ.

3) To help the reader who really wants to get his {birth of the Spirit}. On the other hand, this will require your sincere efforts. You have all your life.

4) To return to the Gospels that are the source of Christianity founded by Jesus and his apostles 2,000 years ago. It is a necessary return to obtain your {birth of the Spirit}.

5) To use our basic knowledge in science (physics, biology, psychology, etc.) to discover the most modern and logical image of the Plan that God has made for us.

On the other hand:

It is not intended to redefine the words and expressions of the many current Christian movements because they are surrounded by many mysteries. These terms belong to them.

It is not intended to change the (way of doing) of any Christian movements or even to invent another one.

B) A gift for all of us.

For the readers who are very disturbed by this book, know that it bothered me well before you. On the other hand, you have a "golden chance" because you are alive and you now know the reality. It is up to you to decide what you will do with this message (this book). Nobody is obliged to do anything!

My job is to write and transmit the message of the Lord (this book) and not that you believe me!

|1-D| This book would be so simple!

In fact, if I only had to summarize it, I think it would not exceed 50 pages. But the real difficulty is not there. The difficulty is: how to pass on a message when we care so much about our little beliefs buried in our head since childhood?

Personally, after my {birth of the Spirit}, it took me at least 4 months of work to clean this all up. Imagine! And I personally experienced the Manifestations. So, I can understand that the reader has trouble taking the news! The problem is: the more you do not want to see anything, and the more time goes by, but the reality remains there anyway.

Now, to understand the Scriptures effectively, you need a reference. This reference comes from God because it is his Scriptures and not ours. The reference is made by the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.

NT	St-John	14,26	"But the Helper (the Paraclete), the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all that I said to you.
----	---------	-------	---

So, in this book, to try to get the message across, I have to unravel all the "human spaghetti" by justifying just about everything I write. It is a colossal job!

We all know that it is easier to fill an empty vase than a full one. At the time, Jesus knew it very well. It is for this reason that he did not try to change religious people of Judaism, but that he taught to simple workers (the 12 apostles).

| 1-E | Forgiveness is necessary

We know that some Christian movements have made their mark in history, but not always in a very pretty way. You only have to look a little bit on the Internet. One of the worst stories is the famous witch hunt of the 1500s. Still not far off, there have been religious communities cloistered for life to forge saints. There was even the absurd idea that if a person gets closer to God than the devil will come at the same time!

What happened so that Christ, who is only goodness, is so badly represented and misunderstood?

Subsequently, in the 1970s, people had to forget everything. Yes, society had moved on. Yes, people forgot the bad stories and forgot the Lord at the same time, who nevertheless died on the cross to allow us to have access to the Life. We went from one extreme to the other. We went from the most rigidity to a total looseness. In Quebec, for most people, only naive people talk about God. Many Christians do not go to mass anymore. Currently, we have reached a Christianity so poor that it is enough to be baptized and not to do too much evil to have access to Heaven.

During the writing of this book, I asked the Lord several times in prayer, "What do I have to do for the Christian movements?" Do you know what his answer was? Nothing at all! Even the Lord does not know what to do with us!

I honestly admit that writing this book has been very difficult. How to tell the truth without offending a bit anyone? How to talk about the Way of conversion without referring a bit to the misinterpretations that some have made of the Epistles of St-Paul? See article | 20-D |. How to give the reader the desire to discover Christ without carrying the burden of the sad stories of the past?

So, I tell you, "We must not forget, we must learn from our mistakes and forgive everyone." Yes, I know it is not human, but it is what the Lord is asking of us.

For all these reasons, the reader must take care of himself. Being part of a Christian movement is very good and I encourage you... However, the most important thing is to stay close to the Lord and his Word (the Gospels).

So in this book I do not refer to any particular Christian movement, but of Christianity as a whole. In order to do this, in article | 3-A |, I distinguish 2 crucial things:

- 1) The Actions that depend only on the Will of God.
- 2) What Christ asks of the movements that claim to represent him.

In this book, the easiest way is to tell you the truth! Then, it is up to you!

| 2 | Two resource people for this book

| 2-A | The contribution of each one

A) Who am I to help anyone?

To reach a goal more easily, you need someone who has reached it himself.

B) Quickly, what are my diplomas?

I have 3 diplomas in science: DEC in mechanical manufacturing; BAC in mechanical engineering; AEC in building.

I have a general education in physics, chemistry, biology and psychology.

I did a Bible study during the writing of this book.

C) What is my experience with God?

From 2016 to 2017, I had a dozen Manifestations of the Holy Spirit: four before and eight during the writing.

From 2018 to 2023, I had just over 8 additional Manifestations of the Holy Spirit in order to complete the work.

D) What is my contribution?

I realized that all the general information that I gathered during my Manifestations is already in the Bible. In fact, I did not bring any new general information. I only got the ability to understand the Bible.

On the other hand, I know details that are not in the Bible. Examples: how is done the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, see article | 13-D |; what is the original sin, see article | 12-C |; how does the communion with the Body and Blood of Christ occur, see article | 13-G |; etc.

Finally, my multiple knowledge in science allowed me to take away superstitions and to structure all the information in a logical way in order to obtain this modern book for you.

E) What is the Lord's contribution?

Before my {birth of the Spirit}, I really had no idea of writing anything.

My plan was not to write this book at all, but to open my small business for energy efficiency of buildings.

So, it is obvious to say that the {inspiration} does not come from me.

| 2-B | Why would the Lord have inspired me this book?

The Lord chooses who he wants.

On several occasions in my prayer, I asked the Lord to make me a sign if anything in **his book** was wrong. Well, he always responded with a little Manifestation in a very short period of time. That reveals how he wanted that to be in his own way. See articles | 4-A | and | 13-Q |.

Why was this book not written before? Christian movements have been far too rigid and hermetic until 1960. **So, even if this book had been written before, it would never have reached you!** Do you really believe that I am the only one whose Holy Spirit has come to visit for 2,000 years? See chapter | 14 |.

I truly believe that the Lord wanted a modern book (logical and clear) adapted to the needs of the 2000s for all of us!

In short, the Lord asks all Christians to return to the foundations of the Gospels. Throughout the centuries, **there has been too much human power play** and we have moved away from what Jesus and his apostles taught us at the beginning (in the early Christianity).

A) Below, here are some Internet keywords to demonstrate the full extent.

Internet Keywords	1) History of Christianity. 2) Branches of Christianity.
-------------------	--

B) You can also go to the website of this book for the suggested resources. **See article |0-1|**.

This book contains a non-mysterious and understandable summary of the message that the Lord has been addressing to us for 2,000 years!

| 3 | The heart of this book

| 3-A | The problem

In Christianity, one of the major difficulties resides in the expression: "**to receive a sacrament.**"

I have received several of them and I have never felt anything!

So, until I was 45, I thought I could receive "something from God" without feeling it in my body.

Unfortunately, I was wrong! See article | 1-A |.

We must know that God gives us absolutely nothing without a tangible Manifestation that we can really feel in our body.

A) Here is the pure truth.

What Christians call the "reception of the Holy Spirit" or the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is not poetry, but a **real and concrete Manifestation** in a person. If a person did not feel anything, it was because he did not receive a thing.

When I talk about feeling the presence of the Holy Spirit, I am not talking about a little something that we do not really remember afterwards.

The {gift of the Holy Spirit} lasts about 20 minutes, but its intense effect lasts 3 days and it is only once in a lifetime. See article | 13-D |.

The {memorial of the communion with Christ} lasts 3 hours. I have received two of them: once for the {communion with the Body of Christ} and once for the {communion with the Blood of Christ}. This happened about three months after the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. See article | 13-G |.

These are sensations apart from what a human is used to feel...

So, we remember it for life!

B) In this book, I have no choice but to distinguish 2 things of great importance.

1) Here are some Actions that depend only on the Will of God (no ritual can do anything about it)
Through the Holy Spirit, God gives the tangible Manifestation of the {birth of the Spirit}. The person becomes a {God's child} really. This is done spontaneously to the Will of God alone. See article 13-D .
Through the Holy Spirit, God gives the tangible Manifestation of the {memorial of the communion with Christ}. I got it about 3 months after my {birth of the Spirit}. See articles 1-A, 3-C and 13-G .
Through the Holy Spirit, God makes different tangible actions adapted to the human condition on earth. Whether it is psychological help, gifts, healings, miracles, etc. See article 10-N .

It is important to understand that no Christian movement is more important than another in the eyes of its leader, Christ.

2) Here is what Christ asks of each movement that claims to represent him
It must put its interests aside in order to serve Christ.
It must announce the texts of the Bible as faithfully as possible.
It must manage its organization in order to offer a support service in respect of its followers.
Like the apostles of Jesus, it must give a Christian baptism of initiation.
It must practice the values of Christ and set an example: kindness, forgiveness, charity, humility, etc.
It must not pretend to hold power over the Actions of God, because it would be abusing the followers and it would be a risk of misguidance away from the Way of Christ.
It must make its followers understand the difference between a ritual and an Action of God. A ritual is a necessary human ceremony in order to prepare oneself internally to receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit} in a concrete way. This will be done only when the follower is ready and at the moment when God has decided it. The follower therefore has sincere efforts to make on the Way of Christ to obtain it.

|3-B| Rituals and sacraments

Christians often take their desires for realities of God. But God also has a say in it! He always does it with a tangible Manifestation. If God does not say yes, then it is not accepted. Is there anything complicated to understand in this?

I give you a comparison:

- 1) If 2 people get involved in a marriage, it concerns them both. So, they must each express their approval with a **firm yes**.
- 2) If someone and God get involved in the 2nd Covenant, this person gives his approval and then fulfills his commitment in front of Him. Subsequently, to seal this commitment, God finally gives his approval. As I said, "It is not yes until God has said yes by a tangible Manifestation."

On the other hand, it is true that you can get a Manifestation of the Holy Spirit during a sacrament. I had 2 during the Eucharist at mass. See article |13-G|. This Manifestation then makes the sacrament really effective, because God Himself approved it. But before obtaining his approval, a Christian is only preparing himself internally by rituals and it is quite legitimate and necessary. A human remains a human. He needs to touch and see in order to understand. Every Christian must take concrete actions in accordance with his faith and then internalize them deep inside. The Lord only reads our heart.

So, in this book, I do not deal with rituals or sacraments administered by Christian movements. The way people prepare themselves belongs to them. In reality, God does and gives what he wants when he wants and not what human wants. When God gives you something, he always Manifests it to you.

|3-C| A first step in the definition of terms (words and expressions) for this book

As stated in article |1-C|, this book is not intended to redefine the terms of many current Christian movements, because they are surrounded by many mysteries.

→ On the other hand, considering articles |3-A and 3-B|, I do not have the choice to define terms only for this book.

A) Here is general terms surrounding Christian movements.

It is important to understand that this book makes no distinction between all Christian movements that exist (Catholic, Orthodox, Anglican, Protestant, others), whatever the importance that each one is giving to itself. It is clearly stated in the New Testament that every Christian must have one leader who is Christ and that is all. Together, they should only form one movement.

What the human does by himself, see article |3-A|:

Words and expressions	The definition in this book
A Christian movement	An organization or community of Christians with the same doctrine and rituals.
A church	A building or room used by a Christian movement.
A Christian baptism	An initiation ritual to enter the Christian movement. It has the strength of the water baptism of John the Baptist (St-John: 1,26). After the day of Pentecost, the apostles gave a baptism of water in the name of Jesus, so no religious person does better even now.
A Christian	A person who has received a Christian baptism from his movement.
A religious person	A person who has a function in a religious movement.

B) Here is the limit separating the human action and the Action of God.

This limit is indicated by braces { }.

Without braces { }, the terms used have a common sense for people or even currently defined throughout Christianity.

With braces { }, the terms used have a specific meaning related to the {birth of the Spirit}. See (St-John: 3,5 and 1,33).

When you see an expression with braces { }, you must refer only to the definition I give here and nothing else or you will get lost. There is no equivalence elsewhere in another author's book.

C) Here are the specific terms for the Action of God.

What God only does, see article |3-A|:

Words and expressions	The definition in this book
The {birth of the Spirit} or The {gift of the Holy Spirit}	This is a tangible Manifestation of the Holy Spirit in a person (St-John: 3,5 and 1,33). This Manifestation is so important that the person will remember it for life. See articles 1-A and 10-I for the general definition. See article 13-D for my testimony. See article 13-O for the confirmation of the Lord.
A {God's child}	A person who has had his {birth of the Spirit}.
The {assembly of God's children}	Its organization is in the hands of God only and not on earth.
The {inspiration}	This is the inspiration of the Holy Spirit for this book.
The {memorial of the communion with Christ}	This is a tangible Manifestation of the Holy Spirit in a person (St-Luke: 22,19). See articles 1-A and 13-G .

|3-D| Words in the Bible that pose problems of meaning.

- ° Spirit;
- ° Soul;
- ° Heart.

Generally in the Bible, each of these 3 words is confusing. They have too many different meanings, so that most people end up getting a completely abstract idea of these 3 words. Then, the Bible becomes difficult to read, even incomprehensible.

A) Generally, in the head of today's Christian.

The spirit is (the human thought or the mind). The soul is a ghost floating at the end of our life on earth. The heart is the organ that pumps blood or it refers to the center of our feelings.

B) The Bible.

In the beginning there was the Hebrew Bible. Then, 270 years before Jesus, the Hebrew Bible was translated into Greek, it is the Septuagint. The apostles of Jesus wrote the New Testament in Greek and added it to the Septuagint (the Old Testament) to make it the Greek Bible. To go further, see on the Internet: "the Codex Sinaiticus." Later, the Greek Bible was translated by the great church of Rome into Latin, it is the Latin Bible (the Vulgate).

Inevitably, there have been problems of interpretation and translation throughout history. For example, in the narrative of the Garden of Eden, the apple that Eve ate is a bad translation that comes from the Latin Bible. In reality, Eve did not "eat an apple," but rather "revel in the fruit of evil" or "she liked to do evil."

Today, the modern Bibles that we have in hand are mainly translations of the Greek Bible. It is for this reason that there is no great difference in meaning between several translations of the Bible. See the chart of article |O-H|. There are only a few secondary words that are changing. You can safely use any internationally recognized Bible.

On the other hand, due to the influence of cultures throughout history, we must pay attention to words and expressions.

C) The different senses.

In a very general way, the 3 words (spirit, soul and heart) have the meaning of the "**interior of an individual.**"

1) Heart.

The word "heart" is the easiest to understand. For the Jews like Jesus, it was the **interior of the human**. Where his deep feelings reside and where the person forms his intentions (his good or bad intentions).

2) Soul.

For the Jews like Jesus, "the soul" is the "life principle of the human." It is his **human breath** (his biological breath of life) as **deadly** as his human body. The word "soul" is the translation of the word "**nephesh.**"

In the Bible, it can also be a deep feeling in the human. As in this expression: "I am wounded to the bottom of my soul" which means "I am hurt deeply in my feelings."

3) Spirit.

For this word, the most used meaning in the Bible is to "become aware" of something like the expression "open your mind to new ideas." Also, this word often has the sense of the atmosphere of a feeling as in the expression: "we are in the spirit of the holidays."

On the other hand, this word can sometimes refer to God and his form of Life. God is described as a **Spirit** that means Wind or Breath. God usually Presents Himself on earth as a Wind or a Breath. This is because he is qualified as: immaterial, free, alive, invisible and eternal. The word "spirit" is a translation of the word "**pneuma**."

Finally, sometimes in the Bible, there are "unclean spirits" who are actually diseases.

D) In the Bible, what meaning to use?

We must use the complete idea of the chapter and not only the verse to understand its true meaning.

To help you, I give you an explanation of the most important passages of the Bible in chapters | 21 to 24 |.

Anyone can make a simple interpretation of the Scriptures. On the other hand, we need our {birth of the Spirit} to do a precise interpretation. This explains why the Epistles of St-Paul have been so badly used by some Christian movements in the past and whose religious people have suffered so much unnecessarily. See article | 20-D |.

E) Beware of the misconception of the immortal soul...

As I mentioned earlier, for the Jews like Jesus, the "soul" is the "life principle of the human" which is mortal. On the other hand, for the Greeks (the Gentiles), the "soul" was also seen as the "principle of life of the human, but this time they believed immortal and came out of a person after his death as a ghost (**it is a myth**).

F) What animates the human being?

A crucial question: is the principle of life (the support) the body or the soul?

1) The old point of view of the Greeks:

Soul (1)	Human body	At death...
Psyche or mind (thought). Principle of life or support. Which drives the body.	It is only an envelope .	The soul becomes a ghost that floats everywhere. Everything is possible including reincarnation.

(1) The soul was seen as immortal by the Greeks (it is a myth).

The human body was seen as an envelope. The soul was the "principle of life" enclosed in this envelope. In short, the soul was the support of life that animated the envelope of the human body. The soul was seen immortal.

Although this concept may seem trivial, it has a terrifying impact! There may be ghosts (souls in pain) that float everywhere. The envelope of a human (his body) can be monopolized or possessed by a bad entity (a demon). The soul can even be reincarnated in another body. This way of thinking is still used by many religions today.

2) The old point of view of the Jews:

Soul	Human body	At death...
Human breath given by God to Adam and Eve. The principle of life or support. Which drives the body.	He is pulled out of the ground and returns there after its death (dust).	Soul falls asleep in the abode of the dead (Sheol).

(1) For the Jews, the soul was seen as **the breath in the nostrils** of a person. This breath was given by God for a maximum of 120 years. After the human life, **the soul fell asleep** in the abode of the dead (Sheol).

(2) The Sheol had 4 depths. Here to simplify, I give only 2 of them.

(3) The Sheol "from above" was the place where bodies decomposed and people were forgotten. We could say that in this place, the person no longer existed, but that he remained a "**remembrance**" for the Eternal (God) having the power to bring him back to life by the resurrection at the Last Judgment (the end of time). The Jews believed that they will resurrect with a perfect human body on earth when God would remove all evil.

(4) The Sheol "the deepest part" was the total abyss where Satan and his demons remain forever. For them there was no possibility of returning to God.

(5) For St-Paul, the resurrection is not with a human body, but with a spiritual body in Heaven.

(6) Since St-Paul taught the Greeks, he often uses the word "psyche" instead of the word "soul."

Moreover, the human body could be possessed by a demon, this explained the diseases of the time.

Note:

This way of thinking gives a good help to understanding the Gospels. Chapter 31 explains the {birth of the Spirit} using this old point of view of the Jews.

I give you here a small chart summarizing the general concepts defined mainly by St-Paul:

2 forms of life		Principle of life	Envelope
1st form of life	Mortal life on earth (An autonomous life, not united to God)	Soul or psyche (1st breath, mortal) This is our human breath	Human body Psychic body (1)
2nd form of Life	Life in Heaven (A united Life at the Eternal Source, God)	Spirit (2nd Breath, Eternal) This is the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. See article 13-D	Spiritual Body (2) (Unveiled at the end of time)

(1) St-Paul calls "the psychic man or the **natural** man," the person who has not had the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. He has only the 1st breath.

(2) St-Paul calls "the spiritual man," the person who has had the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. He has obtained the 2nd Breath.

3) A modern point of view (since the 1900s):

Consciousness (1)	Human body (including brain)	At death...
Mind	Support of biological life	Consciousness is extinguished with the death of the body.

(1) Consciousness is the fruit of the activity of the body including the brain.

In science, we know that the human body is the support of life. Our consciousness is the result of the brain activity of our brain which is an integral part of our body. If the body dies, consciousness dies too.

Note:

Since this book is modern, this point of view will be applied to the Bible in order to explain the most mysteries as possible.

|3-E| A last step in the definition of terms

After the finalization of article |3-D|, we can now finalize the definitions started in article |3-C|.

Words and expressions	The definition in this book
Heart	It is the interior of the human being. It is also the deep centre of human feelings.
Consciousness	It is our thought and what we feel internally.
Human body	Our body is biological and deadly.
Soul	It is the mortal life principle of the human, it is his human breathing. It should be noted that the soul was falsely seen as immortal by the Greeks and that it makes the New Testament difficult to interpret sometimes.
life (with a tiny letter)	It is the biological and mortal human activity.
Life (with a capital letter)	Only God can communicate this Life because he is the Eternal.
God The LORD The Eternal YHWH Yahweh I Am	The Creator. He is the Eternal . He is immaterial and timeless. For the Jews, he is the One God . For Christians, he is God the Father . In the Torah (Jewish), the name of the One God is YHWH . This name is a tetragram which is impossible to pronounce, because for the Jewish religious it was forbidden to pronounce the name of God. In English, the name " YHWH " was translated by " Yahweh ." On the other hand, before Moses, God named himself: " I Am ." See the book of Exodus (3,13-15): " I Am sent me to you." In the course of this present book, we will see that this is really how God presents himself.
Holy or Saint	The qualifier of God. He is without any evil.
The Holy Trinity	It is a Christian dogma made in the 0300s. In simple terms: the Father being the <u>Will</u> ; the Son being the <u>Word</u> ; the Holy Spirit being the <u>Breath</u> . I will use this dogma systematically until chapter 31 .
The Son; the Word; the Truth.	Names given to Jesus Christ in the Bible.
The Spirit of God The Holy Spirit The Spirit	Generally speaking, the Holy Spirit is the Breath or Wind of God. On the other hand, there are: 1) The (Breath or Wind) not containing the Presence of God. It is the Power of God. 2) The (Breath or Wind) containing the Presence of God. See article 13-D . Since the Bible does not differentiate between them and uses a general term (Spirit), I too will not differentiate between them until chapter 31 . <i>This is so, as not to confuse people when reading the Bible.</i>
The {gift of the Holy Spirit}	It is a term that is very misunderstood in Christianity. It is always a real and concrete Manifestation. See article 13-D . We see it mainly in the account of Pentecost at the beginning of the book of Acts of the Apostles. Here, the following 5 terms are equivalent (synonyms): 1) The {gift of the Holy Spirit}. 2) The reception of the Holy Spirit. 3) The spiritual anointing. 4) The baptism in the Spirit. 5) On the other hand, the term that best describes the tangible of this Manifestation is the {birth of the Spirit} .
The {spiritual body}	This advanced term was introduced by St-Paul. This term will only be discussed mainly in chapter 30 .
Kingdom of God	It is an Eternal World created by the Absolute Knowledge of God where evil does not exist.
Glorify	In the Bible, it means: to Unite with God.
Glory of God	It is the unimaginable feeling of joy and happiness of being in the Presence of God. See article 13-D .

Covenant or Alliance	2 words used to indicate a sacred agreement or mutual promise between God and a person or group. By making a Covenant (or Alliance), God promises a blessing in exchange for obedience to certain commandments.
Terms with a "capital Letter"	They are in direct connection with God, examples: A name giving the <u>essence</u> of God → the Eternal; the Consciousness; the Absolute Knowledge; etc. The <u>supernatural</u> of God → a Manifestation; an Apparition; a Vision; etc.

Generalities:

Words and expressions	The definition in this book	The definition of excerpts from the Bible
Earth (scientifically speaking)	Our pretty blue planet.	-----
The earth (generally speaking)	Our world. The land, the ground.	Our world. The land, the ground.
Heaven	The Kingdom of God.	The Kingdom of God.
The heavens or the heaven	The Kingdom of God. Or... The blue space above our heads forming a vault (sky).	The Kingdom of God. Or... The blue space above our heads forming a vault (sky).
Sky	The blue space above our heads forming a vault.	The blue space above our heads forming a vault. Or... (Very rarely) the Kingdom of God.

|3-F| How to get the {gift of the Holy Spirit}?

This is not done by "snapping fingers," it is a work on yourself.

You must fulfill all the promises of your Christian baptism in your life, unfortunately, which very few Christians do.

Every Christian must read the Gospels and learn them. Subsequently, he must begin a personal conversion in his life. At this point, a simple understanding of the Gospels is satisfactory. Becoming a good, honest person is nothing really mysterious!

The most difficult step to reach is the "gift of truly believing in God." It is only God who offers it to us when we look for Him ardently. The majority of Christians "**think** they believe in God," but in reality they do not believe enough.

To make your life easier, I give you the steps to follow in chapter |12|.

You must know that **the central point to receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit}** is to ardently desire to obtain the Presence of God at your side to help you on earth. It is putting all your hope and trust in God. Why is this necessary? Because the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is the Breath of the Presence of God within you. See article |13-D|. If you do not desire it, God cannot give it to you. Because **the central point of Heaven** is to live Eternally in the Presence of God (Happiness, Peace and Love). See articles |37-E| and |39-B|.

For those who want to understand the mysteries of the Gospels, the major difficulty resides in the vagueness of words. We need our {birth of the Spirit} for a precise interpretation. In short, it is the Holy Spirit who makes the **Word alive**.

This book helps you discover the reality of the Scriptures.

|4| The truth!

In all history of humanity, the truth has always disturbed many people.

So, this book will surely be much criticized although it is {inspired}.

If a reader does not believe this book, it is because he does not believe in the Gospels either!

|4-A| Work for the Truth

A) What warrant this book is true?

As a follow-up to article |2-B|.

I had my {birth of the Spirit} on March 14, 2016, when I did not even know it existed! Then, I had 3 other Manifestations related to my {birth of the Spirit} in the next 3 months. See chapter |13|.

Thereafter, from 2018 to 2023, I had a little over 8 additional Manifestations of the Holy Spirit to complete the work. They always arrived at the right time during the writing. So if the Lord had not wanted me to write for him, he would not have given me anything more.

NT	St-John	16,13	"But when He, the Spirit of truth (1), comes, He will guide you into all the truth; for He will not speak on His own initiative, but whatever He hears, He will speak; and He will disclose to you what is to come.
----	---------	-------	---

(1) This is another Name for the Holy Spirit.

I understood the meaning of my Manifestations only by researching answers in the Bible. So, do you know what that entails? The twelve Manifestations inscribed in this work (in 2017) confirm the Scriptures of the Bible of 2,000 years ago! In addition, did you know that the Bible confirms itself? The ancient prophets announce the coming of the new prophets well over a hundred years in advance. For this, we must see in the future (it is a miracle).

Now for skeptics...

You say to yourself, "I wish I had proof of all that." Okay, what do you want? A miracle! So, the Lord gives you your miracle, but you will have to work to see it. It is in front of you: read his book carefully; do your research; study it well and you will see that it is tightly knit like a web; it is referenced from everywhere. The important texts of the Bible are simply explained and united to the foundations of modern science. It is impossible humanly, because we need a reference that we do not naturally have on earth to obtain this result.

NT	St-Mark	16,14	Afterward He appeared to the eleven themselves as they were reclining <i>at the table</i> ; and He reproached them for their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they had not believed those who had seen Him after He had risen.
----	---------	-------	---

Finally...

I have always had a clean, settled life and my health is very good.

In any case, I could have written nothing at all, because I already had my {birth of the Spirit}.

B) Why did I write this book?

I wrote it to make a gift to the Lord.

On the other hand, if I had not done so, it would have been irresponsible for me to abandon other Christians without warning them of the reality.

C) Why is the {birth of the Spirit} or the {gift of the Holy Spirit} not really known?

Yet this is very well indicated in the Scriptures and repeatedly if a person pays attention. Here are 2 examples, but there are dozens of them.

NT	St-John	3,5	Jesus answered, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.
		14,21	"He who has My commandments and keeps them is the one who loves Me; and he who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and will disclose Myself to him. "

(*) It is the Manifestation of the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit}.

1) This is mainly because many religious people do not have it and think they believe in God, but their level of belief is not high enough. So the Scriptures are misinterpreted.

I give you a concrete example:

In the winter of 2017, during a mass whose homily was about (St-John: 14,21) above. Here are the facts: 1) The message of the religious person was, "to love God is to adore him and to be in admiration in front of his cross." 2) The following verse, though read, has not been commented, "... and I will love him and will disclose Myself to him." 3) No Christian in the church made the slightest comment. Yet this verse is very clear with words without any mystery. In short, there are 3 things: 1) The one who loves God makes what is written in the Gospels (his Word, his commandments). 2) He who makes his Word, the Son of God loves him and manifests himself to him. 3) How is the manifestation of God done? Yes, the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.			
---	--	--	--

2) It must surely have a link with the precious "**human power.**"

NT	St-Matthew	18,3	and said, "Truly I say to you, unless you are converted and become like children, you will not enter the kingdom of heaven.
----	------------	------	--

(*) Here, Jesus talks about having faith, kindness and humility.

3) It is probably because very few Christians get it to testify and others do not want to hear.

NT	St-Matthew	7,13-14	"Enter through the narrow gate; for the gate is wide and the way is broad that leads to destruction, and there are many who enter through it. "For the gate is small and the way is narrow that leads to life, and there are few who find it.
----	------------	---------	--

In this excerpt, what does it mean, "... there are few who find it?" It is hard to say. I think that in Quebec, today, it should not exceed more than 1 in 1,000 Christians and I am very optimistic...

It must be understood that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a very great reward. As I was very badly informed, if I had not been a good person basically and if I had not known misery in my life, I would not have gotten it.

However, you are informed now. So, that will only depend on you. If a person wants to get it, I advise him not to wait!

I even think that Christians, who have little theological knowledge, are better off than religious people.

I give you a concrete example:

<u>In the spring of 2017, during a mass.</u> I saw an 80-year-old religious person who taught Christianity all his life. He does not even know that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a real Manifestation! He believes so much that he is in the right direction that he does not want to ask any more questions! Worse, during a mass, he mentioned that his Christian movement has separated from the Gospels in the 300s when Christianity has socialized. I think that a little look back in his Bible would help him, because here is what St-Paul (a great founder) writes:			
NT	St-Paul, Epistle to the Galatians	1,9	As we have said before, so I say again now, if any man is preaching to you a gospel contrary to what you received, he is to be accursed! (1)

(1) It means: worthless, which is **excluded** from Christ.

D) What can explain why we lost this vital information?

During the time of the early Christian communities founded by the apostles, it is obvious that Christians knew it and worked to get it concretely. For this reason, despite the Roman persecution, they have kept their faith. Personally, I can assure you that with my {birth of the Spirit} I am unable to deny God!

I think you already know that the human being is not an "angel." About 30 years after the beginning of Christianity, St-Paul wrote that some Christians were not already serving the interests of Christ.

NT	St-Paul, Epistle to the Philippians	1,18	What then? Only that in every way, whether in pretense (1) or in truth, Christ is proclaimed; and in this I rejoice. Yes, and I will rejoice,
----	-------------------------------------	------	---

(1) With false motives.

After the legalization of Christianity by the emperor Constantine in 313, the kingship took all the place. I can assure you that without a good dose of humility, it is impossible to receive the Holy Spirit Visit.

Then, Christianity has spread, socialized, and somewhat commercialized. In fact, God requires much more **a conversion of the heart and a relationship** than a religion to do the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. In short, God wants us to be part of his **family** already on earth.

Finally, I do not believe that this vital piece of information is lost because it is written in many places in the Scriptures. The words used are: "I will disclose Myself to him"; "what you see and hear"; "the Spirit fell on them"; "they were filled with the Holy Spirit"; etc. The best explanation I have is that Christians do not believe enough in God to realize that the Scriptures are real and not poetry!

E) But now, why is it so difficult to recognize that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is essential?

1) Think carefully what this **truth** would imply for all of Christianity!

Of course, silence has always been the best **human solution**...

Here is what St-Paul wrote:

NT	St-Paul, Epistle to the Galatians	1,10	For am I now seeking the favor of men, or of God? Or am I striving to please men? If I were still trying to please men, I would not be a bond-servant of Christ.
----	-----------------------------------	------	--

(*) Yet another good reason to write this book.

2) Who is not scared to face this reality?

Like me, I got it, so it does not scare me to talk about it. But for a Christian who has not gotten it yet, it can be very disturbing, enough to quickly close this book by denying everything without going further in his research.

3) On the other hand, I have good news for you.

You are lucky to know it now and it is never too late to receive your {birth of the Spirit} before the end of your life. After it will be too late!

| 4-B | Here is simply the reality

Our world is so free that God seems to be absent from it as not to influence us in our choice of life on earth. It is up to us to discover him or not. It depends only on our efforts.

Each person has a choice to make:

1) Choose to follow your own personal path.
--

Then, to finish in the ground with nothing more. There is no punishment, the consciousness is simply extinguished at the human's death and it is over. Did you know that the word "hell" comes from the Latin "infermus" which means "in the ground?" So, you will never know the great joy of living in the Glory (Presence) of God. See article 13-D .

2) Choose God in your life, get your {birth of the Spirit} and go to Heaven after your earthly life.

→ If it is your choice, I offer you help in the next chapters.

Search for the Creator

| 5 | Is it possible to prove that our Creator (God) exists?

A) An important goal.

I begin this chapter | 5 | with the search for God. If God does not exist, then why be interested in him? On the other hand, if he exists, and there, we will be able to choose whether to follow him or not. In reality, we always have the choice in front of him and nobody is punished for his choice.

Moreover, I say to you, no one can have his {birth of the Spirit} if he does not firmly believe in God. How much will it be necessary to believe? **As much as you have a nose in your face. Yes, only that!** It is not by simply reading this book quickly that you will believe enough in God. You must make an inner effort. In reality, it is through your effort that God will first believe in your approach. Afterwards, he will allow you to believe in him. This is not a joke! No one can believe in God without his permission. That is why, God is so hard to find. To go further, see article | 10-L |.

As I said in article | 0-E |, I suggest you start reading this book without taking it seriously. Afterwards, you will decide what you want to do.

B) Basic plan of the research.

- ° We are going to look over a bit of history in article | 5-A |;
- ° We will use a powerful method to do our research, the detective's method in article | 5-C |;
- ° Finally, we will conclude our research in article | 5-P |.

Note:

For readers who are not interested in science at all, skip to article | 5-P |. You will only miss the demonstration to reach the conclusion. At the very beginning, it was by working on this demonstration that I began to truly believe in God. So, although it is boring for some, it is very effective.

| 5-A | Let's look over a bit of history...

In all eras, humans thought there was one or more gods. Greek mythology had several deities. Ancient Egypt also had several deities. On the other hand, the Hebrew people (of Abraham) had only one divinity. Finally, Christian history has the same divinity as the Hebrew people.

Now, let's take a leap back in time, in the 1900s.

Before 1950, we know that some Christian movements were very powerful. Later, around 1960, people began to be less and less religious and practicing. But what happened? We know that the rapid rise of technology has played a big role. People's lives have changed a lot: from common use of horses (1930s); to televisions (1950s); to personal computers (1980s); and to the Internet (1990s). Today, science and technology are present in our lives. We are in a society where we do not miss anything: health care; social services; employment insurance; and so on. Of course, if a person has everything, then why ask God for things?

Moreover, in the 1800s, the science of physics made a very important hypothesis that was very profitable. I am saying a hypothesis and not something grounded. It made the assumption that every phenomenon has a logical explanation that stems from measurable laws in nature. If we repeat an experiment several times, we will always have the same result. Example: if we throw a ball in the air, it will always end up falling to the ground. We call this the force of gravity and there is a law in mathematical form that gives the value of the force on the ball to the ground. This hypothesis worked so well that scientists were no longer scared to touch anything, even to look at how a human works inside. Superstitions were demolished one by one.

In the years (1900 to 1950), looking into the human head, scientists did not find "a spirit or even a soul" that floats like light or steam. However, they found a brain that looks like gelatin. Currently, we know that our brain is made up of about 100 billion interconnected neurons as a gigantic communication network. Communication is made mainly through nerve

impulses (small electrical currents). Communication is also made chemically by some 50 hormones secreted by glands. We know that hormones circulate in the bloodstream throughout the body to exchange messages. The human body is a pure wonder that greatly exceeds any imagination of modern science.

Also in the 1900s, physicists watched the space carefully with telescopes. They saw that it was huge with billions of stars. All this did not seem to move at all. Then, they thought with confidence that the universe was fixed. So the universe did not move, everything was frozen. The form of the universe remained the same. Even Albert Einstein (physicist) was caught in the idea that the universe was fixed. All of this has had a great impact on people's belief in God. The Bible said that everything was created by God and there, physicists said that the universe was frozen.

Internet Keywords	Einstein's Biggest Blunder
-------------------	----------------------------

We understand very well the principle that if everything is fixed, there is no beginning so there is no Creation! The universe was then eternal in itself. If there is no beginning, there is no end and therefore there is no time between the two. Physicists even wondered if the time was real or if it was just a human invention.

Finally, we have seen that the search for "spirits or souls" had given nothing and the search for Creation had not given anything either. Then, the conclusion was easy to make, God the Creator did not exist either.

That is it, the science and technology of the early 1900s made God disappear. On the other hand, it was necessary to explain how scientifically life had appeared on Earth. The idea was very simple, by chance or probability! I give you an example: you are in front of a pocket game that is 30 meters (100 feet) away from you. The chance that you throw a pocket in one of the holes at this distance is practically impossible, you might say! On the other hand, if you have millions of pockets and you have eternity to succeed, chances are that one day a pocket will fall into a hole. The scientists' idea was the same. Earth and life on it are so unlikely, but the universe is so big and eternal, so there is a possibility that all this could happen by chance. That is it, it was settled! There is no God at all. We, humans, were the children of chance on a lost planet somewhere in an infinite and eternal universe.

This thought that (God does not exist) was propagated by scientists until the 1980s. This served their causes well and assured them, of course, a lot of work. God the Creator became useless and we, humans, were orphaned and lost. So, we absolutely needed science not to fall into the void.

Without knowing it, science and technology, having the answer to everything, became the new gods of our society!

The first time I had chemistry and physics classes at school, I was 17 years old. My teachers told me that it was impossible to prove that God exists. I was so convinced that even during my studies in science at university (between 1991 and 1995), I did not even think about trying.

Subsequently in 2002, while I was working on a wind turbine project (in Gaspésie), I watched a strange program on television. Two renowned physicists (one from Montreal and one from New York) discussed unexplained phenomena. They said, "Discoveries of the last 5 years force us to say that everything is possible even in the most unlikely ideas!" They said that the global scientific community then decided to shut up so as not to lose their credibility in front of people. All this had intrigued me. However, the information was too imprecise to go further. I did not start research until October 2015.

|5-B| To look for

While we are looking for God, do you know that he is watching us? In fact, we do not find God, but it is God who wants us to look for him in our lives. I know that for sure. On the other hand, I am sure the reader wants proof and that is fine, so let's continue.

|5-C| An effective method of finding

I will use the detective's method. It is a simple and effective method that requires only to be sincere. So you absolutely must not burn any of the steps. My job is to guide you in the method. You, your job is to let you drive. On the other hand, I encourage you to check what I am doing by your own research.

Since the majority of readers do not have a multiple background (physics, biology, psychology, theology), I will give the simplest possible information as I go along.

Why do we need a method? It is because a human being is always advancing step by step.

|5-D| Can we play detective?

Of course, our Creator likes it and is waiting for us. He even wants us to look for him ardently. Is it difficult to find him? Yes, because we are all born blind of God. Humanly, we only see what is on earth, nothing more. We see in a human way. In addition, in a psychological way, we only see what we want to see. This is to ensure that we stay in our personal comfort zone.

Do you know that no one can truly believe in God if he does not allow it? Here is the problem! To truly believe in God is not human at all. It is a gift from God himself.

So, how can we believe that he really exists? The answer is simple. We must work hard to find him so that God can trust us. This approach must be sincere, because God knows our (inner self) more than ourselves. God loves truth and hates falsehood. After your sustained efforts, when God will be convinced, I am sure he will give you his first "gift" which is to truly believe. To show you that it is God who makes this "gift," here is what Jesus says:

NT	St-Matthew	16,16-17	Simon Peter answered, "You are the Christ, the Son of the living God." And Jesus said to him, "Blessed are you, Simon Barjona, because flesh and blood (1) did not reveal <i>this</i> to you, but My Father (2) who is in heaven.
----	------------	----------	---

(1) Here, Jesus says that the human being is only biological. This is also what modern science has discovered.

(2) Here, Jesus says that only God the Father allows the gift of truly believing in him.

|5-E| I am making you a detective.

Here, I am asking you to put on a "detective hat."

You must now take your role very seriously. Repeat that you are a detective several times in a row if that can help you.

Like any good detective, the only way to find the truth is to put your own personal interests aside. **The discovery of the truth is what matters most.**

To make you a detective, I am going to equip you with a formidable search method. This method has proven its worth since the technological thrust around us is obvious and irrefutable.

|5-F| Here are the steps of the detective's method

1) As I told you earlier, first of all, you must take away your own interests (your pride) from research. It is easy to understand that if you only see what you want to see, then the search for truth is over before you even start.

2) We must observe the real facts that are happening around us. They must be noted.

3) We must analyze these facts and extract the main points that are obvious. They must be listed.

4) We must find logical explanations. We must go out the different possibilities.

5) We must clean up the possibilities. We must reconcile all the facts and evidences to find the only possible solution. **At the very end, there must be only one solution.** This solution must explain everything, and this without any exception.

I reassure you, you will only have to follow me in the method. For those who want to check it out, go ahead, I encourage you.

|5-G| Search for the Creator through science of physics

You do not have a science background! **No problem, your simple logic will be enough.** We will focus only on the obvious, simple and 100% proven evidence elements. This first search is crucial because we will be able to discover the qualities of our Creator.

|5-H| Let's start with the steps 1 and 2 of the method

A) Let's go with the detective's method.

1) First step, you should not put your personal interests into your detective work. You must be critical.

2) Second step, we must observe the real facts that are happening. They must be noted.

B) Here are the facts:

a) Reality, the universe is not eternal, there was a beginning.

You have probably heard about the Big Bang. The universe started in a single point in a gigantic initial explosion! The echo of this explosion was recorded by the physicist (Robert Woodrow Wilson) in 1964 and it earned him a Nobel Prize in 1978. In 1989, NASA sent the COBE satellite into space to prove this discovery. The results were quickly positive and several other Nobel Prizes were awarded to researchers. In 1992, the well-known physicist Stephan Hawking said, "The Big Bang is the most important discovery of the century." Moreover, it is important to understand that physicists claim that before this beginning (this Big Bang) it was emptiness, nothingness. There was nothing then, neither matter nor time.

Internet Keywords	1) Big Bang. 2) Robert Woodrow Wilson. 3) COBE Satellite (Cosmic Background Explorer). 4) Physicist Stephen William Hawking.
-------------------	---

b) Reality, the universe will have an end.

The physicist Max Planck was one of many physicists to prove the irreversibility of all physical phenomena. This is what we call "entropy." In a simple way, there is nothing that works without energy loss. Whether it is a spinning top of a child that you have launched now and that will eventually stop and fall to the side in 4 minutes. Whether it is your car to which you must add fuel so that it does not break down. Whether it is our Sun that shines, burns, and will eventually go out in about 5 billion years. We understand that everything will end sooner or later, it is only a matter of time. Even the activity of the universe will end one day due to its losses. So, the universe cannot be eternal. Even the idea of the universe in eternal recycling is impossible.

Internet Keywords	1) Entropy. 2) Physicist Max Planck. 3) Irreversibility. 4) Our star the Sun.
-------------------	---

c) Reality, the universe is not fixed, it increases in complexity because there is life on Earth.

Here, physicists are faced with an impossibility. The universe increases in complexity. Let me explain. The universe comes from an explosion (the Big Bang). Everyone knows that an explosion only scatters the ashes everywhere and does not build anything at all, there is nothing complicated in there! In addition, the universe was formed in a fireball that sterilized everything. So where does our pretty little blue planet come from, Earth and life on it? Where does all this immense knowledge come from to establish life on a sterilized planet that was Earth at the beginning? This is the miracle that thousands of physicists, chemists, biologists and geneticists around the world do not explain even after more than 100 years of research. Some physicists then said that the answer is not here in our universe. So, there is something external to the universe that acts on it and has a plan. You will understand that science had reached the bottom.

Internet Keywords	1) Sterilization. 2) On a cosmic scale, water is rarer than gold. 2) À l'échelle cosmique, l'eau est plus rare que l'or.
-------------------	--

Scientifically, these facts are proven.

It is important to understand that for each of these 3 facts, science has reached the limit of what matter could tell it. There is no more and there will never be more. Science cannot study what is outside our universe.

These proven facts then become valid forever.

|5-I| Let's continue with the step 3 (we must analyze these facts and extract the main points...)

A) Of these 3 facts proven and valid forever.

We can say:

1) The universe has a beginning. It is therefore impossible that there is no cause at this beginning.

→ Give him a name: **the Cause.**

2) The universe began in total darkness when matter did not exist and it was nothingness. **The Cause is therefore not material, but immaterial.**

3) All of a sudden, "Big Bang" and the light has popped up. **The Cause is the source of everything.**

4) The heat ball that was then the universe at the beginning expanded and cooled forming matter, stars and planets.

5) The Big Bang was of unimaginable power. **The Cause is therefore of unimaginable power too (infinite).**

6) Physicists say that the speed of expansion of the universe has occurred with great precision. If the speed had been just a little slower, the universe would have closed on itself (contraction). The universe would be dead even before Earth had time to exist. If the speed had been just a little higher, the universe would have dispersed too quickly. Once again, the universe would be dead even before Earth had time to exist. **The Cause is therefore very precise.**

7) Physicists say that the universe by forming itself made appear the perfect laws of physics as well as time. **The Cause is therefore perfect. The Cause is therefore outside time.**

8) The universe has become more complex because Earth is very beautiful. **The Cause has a plan.**

9) The Cause is not subject to matter or even time, because all this did not exist before the Big Bang. **The Cause, besides being immaterial, is also timeless (eternal).**

| 5-J | Step 4 (we have to find logical explanations and get out the different possibilities)

A) Here is what we know by observing the universe:

- ° It is impossible that there is not a Cause that has produced our universe;
- ° The Cause is of unimaginable or infinite power;
- ° The Cause works with great precision;
- ° The Cause is in the image of the laws of physics, perfect;
- ° The Cause has a plan;
- ° The Cause is the source of everything;
- ° The Cause is immaterial;
- ° The Cause is eternal.

What can fully answer this list? Which word can answer this definition?

Do you see a big list?

B) I put here a list of all the possibilities and we will analyze them one by one at the next step:

- ° An extraterrestrial;
- ° A ghost;
- ° A parallel universe;
- ° A divinity.

| 5-K | Step 5 of the method (we must clean up the possibilities)

A) It is now necessary to reconcile all the facts and evidence to find the only possible solution.

At the very end, there must be only one solution. This solution must explain everything, and this without any exception.

1) An extraterrestrial is a being a bit like you and me, but who comes from outside Earth. He has great technological applications. He is a great scientist. He uses instruments and a spacecraft. He uses the material and energy already in place to make something.

Conclusion:

No. He is himself subject to everything around him, like matter and time. It does not work at all because the Cause has produced the universe. The cause is therefore outside of matter and time, and in addition it is immaterial.

2) A ghost is a being who is dead physically, but whose soul floats on earth.

Conclusion:

No. This has nothing to do with our list.

3) A parallel universe is a universe that would be next to ours. We could imagine that, by chance, this universe poured a quantity of itself (energy) through a small hole in our empty space. This gave what it takes to make our Big Bang. A bit like a vase that pours (overflow) into another empty vase. We understand that this original parallel universe must be absolutely eternal and not temporal and mortal like ours. Well, so far, this may possibly hold up. Well, the parallel universe intervenes in the Big Bang pouring a large amount of energy. Now it is done, our universe is launched, perfect! There are still 2 difficulties to qualify this possibility. In the list, the Cause has a plan (our universe becomes more complex after the Big Bang). The best example is Earth and life on it. Earth appeared 10 billion years after the Big Bang. In the list, the Cause works with a very great precision, which means that the Cause has not only deposited energy in our universe like 2 communicating vessels. The Cause has a plan and works with precision. The Cause makes things in an established order in its time. The Cause first makes the Big Bang, then 10 billion years later, it deposits life on Earth. The Cause is therefore intelligent! It is here that we lose our way with the parallel universe. A parallel universe is a thing. It does not think! It does not make a plan and it is not patient to do a job in its time and later! The parallel universe would simply dump its surplus energy and... "Big Bang" without control, without Intelligence! The spill would be done in a very brutal way and then there would be nothing new. Everything would simply cool down and scatter like an explosion. To persuade us, we only have to watch a video on the Internet of an explosion to convince us that it does not create beautiful plants and beautiful animals. It is the complete opposite, it destroys everything and even life.

Conclusion:

No. This solution does not fit all the facts without any exception.

4) A divinity is not a created being. He can be the source of everything. He can create a world and beings. A divinity can be infinitely powerful. A divinity can have a plan. A divinity can make perfect things so with great precision. A divinity can be immaterial and immortal (eternal).

Conclusion:

Yes. This solution answers all the facts and evidence without exception.

B) In short:

The solution is: a divinity.

From here, it is obvious that science no longer has a say, because the divinity we are looking for is immaterial, eternal and out of our universe!

|5-L| Let's go further in the search for the Creator

Research by physics has been very rewarding. We now know that there is a **divinity** who created our world.

So far, we have used only observations of the universe and the fact that life on Earth exists since we are walking on it. With these 2 only pieces of information, we have found the existence of a **divinity** and even some of his qualities.

Now, let's see if other sciences can confirm our discovery and if we can learn more.

|5-M| Let's continue our research by other sciences

A) By biology.

We know that after more than a hundred years of research by several thousand scientists (physicists, chemists, biologists, geneticists, etc.), the explanation of life on Earth is an insurmountable puzzle if we do not involve the existence of a **divinity** as a true reality.

So let's take a little trip back in time just after Earth was formed, just as the first trace of life appeared.

The insurmountable difficulty of the appearance of life on Earth is that the universe began in a nuclear fireball, 13.8 billion years ago. Even, if in the future, scientists would find an explanation other than that of the Big Bang to this ball of fire, the fact remains that the existence of this initial nuclear fireball was proved by the COBE satellite then the Planck satellite.

Internet Keywords	1) First image of the Big Bang. 2) History of the universe.
-------------------	---

Let's go back to our research. The important point is that the universe was born in far more than billions of degrees Celsius.

We know that the process of sterilization of food, surgical instruments, etc., is already reached at 200 degrees Celsius. The universe was born sterile from the beginning. There was no life at first. On the other hand, an obvious observation is that there is life on Earth now!

Many have tried to explain the emergence of life by chance or by spontaneous generation. Basically, life just happened by chance and multiplied. The life of plants and animals has appeared and evolved to form other plants and other more and more complex animals. In fact, with genetics (DNA) and cell theory, there are only living cells that can make other living cells. So it takes life to give life, we cannot do otherwise!

Internet Keywords	1) Spontaneous generation. 2) Cell theory.
-------------------	--

In genetics, human DNA has about 25,000 genes. Each species has its own DNA code which is, in a way, the living plan or program of its body. Example: dogs can breed between themselves, but not with cats. The human being is alone in his species. A human being can only reproduce with another human being. We know that the Darwin's theory of evolution failed because of genetics. DNA is sufficiently sealed that accidental modification is not possible. This explains why species have never degenerated. It also means that the evolution of species is impossible without the work of the Creator himself.

Currently, there are laboratories that play with genes (DNA) to make genetically modified organisms (GMO). Yes, but all this is not natural! So we have to be careful, we know that genetic modifications make far more cancer than good results.

To date, with all the knowledge of modern science, a laboratory has never been able to produce even a single small gene spontaneously from inert matter (non-living) under ideal and controlled conditions. So, ask yourself this question: what is needed as **intelligence and knowledge** to make and assemble several thousand genes all in the right order to make a single species of animal on a pebble as was Earth in the beginning? Subsequently, to make millions of species of animals and plants, without forgetting, of course, to create the perfect harmony between all these beings that we call the ecosystem. In addition, all this must not degenerate for billions of years. **What more is needed to believe?**

When I say that our planet Earth was a large pebble, I am not exaggerating! In the beginning, there was no loose soil, it is the roots of plants that broke the rock on the surface of Earth to produce it.

As life comes only from life. Then, the **divinity** has **knowledge** and **intelligence** that can create life and maintain it.

B) By computer science.

We know that computer science has made a major breakthrough in modern science since the 1980s.

What can it tell us?

We know that the universe was born sterile. We know that genetics says it takes a lot of knowledge (information) to establish life on Earth. We know that Earth was a rock. So, where does all this knowledge or information come from to make life from nothing?

Recently, computer scientists have done tests with a very powerful computer. The idea, can we generate new information from nothing?

The idea was simple:

- 1) We use a very powerful computer;
- 2) We put a small program inside with some initial data;
- 3) We ask the program to generate random data from the initial data that was inserted at the beginning. The computer works for months at billions of operations per second;
- 4) We analyze the data thus generated to see if after this great work, there would be some new data that was not in the initial data.

The goal was to see if there would be any new information or knowledge that would appear from this random work.

The conclusion was that there is no more information (or knowledge) after this work than there was at the beginning in the initial information.

The conclusion is therefore very simple. More information is needed to create life on Earth from nothing (the big pebble). Chance or randomness does not make any additional information out of nothing.

So, we are not little beings born of chance on Earth! For life to appear on Earth and to be built, it cannot be the result of chance, but the fruit of an intelligence.

Life on Earth is therefore not the random generation of information from our sterile universe, but the addition of continual information that comes from outside our sterile universe.

So there is something, a superior intelligence that has allowed life on Earth and its development!

Internet Keywords	1) Yes, God exists. 1) Oui, Dieu existe. 2) Does God exist? 2) Dieu existe-t-il ?
-------------------	--

| 5-N | Conclusion of research with other sciences

A) In short:

So, I proposed to you to reinforce the assurance that a **divinity** really exists, **it is done!**

We now know that he has the absolute: knowledge, intelligence, patience and harmony. He is the author of life on Earth.

He deposited life on Earth that has spread by itself since that time through reproduction.

B) Moreover:

We know that the last being on Earth is human. Human is the last modern man. He suddenly appeared about 35,000 years ago. There is no other being who appeared after us. It is obvious to say that the human being is the crowning achievement of his work.

Have you noticed that the human being is the only one on Earth with self-consciousness? He is the only one able to know if his actions can do good or evil.

C) Here are other qualities of the **divinity**:

Intelligence; absolute knowledge; patience; perfect harmony; author of life.

| 5-O | Identification, what divinity are we talking about?

Let's take again the detective's method.

1) First of all, you have to take away your own personal interests from the research.

OK, this step is already done.

2) It is necessary to observe the real facts which happen, it is necessary to note them.

OK, this step is already done.

3) We must analyze these facts and extract the main points that are obvious. They must be listed.

Let's replace the word (Cause) of article | 5-J | by its name (**a divinity**) and associate it with all the qualities found.

Here is what it gives:

- ° A divinity created our universe;
- ° A divinity of unimaginable or infinite power;
- ° A divinity who works with great precision;
- ° A divinity who is in the image of the laws of physics, perfect;
- ° A divinity who has a plan;
- ° A divinity who is the source of everything;
- ° A divinity who is immaterial;
- ° A divinity who is eternal;
- ° An intelligent and patient divinity;
- ° A divinity with absolute knowledge;
- ° A divinity capable of making perfect harmony;
- ° A divinity who is the author of life.

4) We must find logical explanations. We must get out the different possibilities.

We must now find a religion whose **divinity** responds to all this list within their sacred books.

I will let you search a little by yourself...

Internet Keywords	1) The major religions compared.
-------------------	----------------------------------

5) We must clean up the possibilities.

Now, we have to reconcile all the facts and evidence to find the only possible solution. At the very end, there must be only one solution. This solution must explain everything, and this without any exception.

If we look at different religions, which ones are in agreement with this list?

The answer: the facts only agree with the religions that come from the God of Abraham.

To make sure of this, it is enough to consult the Christian Bible whose God is Abraham's God. The God (Yahweh) who is described throughout the Bible corresponds in every respect to our list.

In addition, the narrative of Creation (in the book of Genesis) fits quite well with all the facts and evidence found in modern science. It must, of course, be taken into account that this narrative was inspired (by God) to people with no scientific knowledge, more than 2,000 years ago. We can see the allusion to nothingness (empty, without matter) before the Big Bang and afterwards the great light. It is even said that animals were created by species as it has been found now by genetics.

Internet Keywords	1) The qualities of God in the Bible. 2) The Bible, the first narrative of Genesis.
-------------------	---

|5-P| Conclusion by the detective's method

It is now proved, the God of Abraham really exists!

He is also the God of Christians.

Psychology teaches that the human being has a very incredulous background. So, if right now, you do not believe, well that is normal. However, this does not change the reality of the conclusion of our investigation. God is really here, I assure you, and even beside you now!

As a Christian, remember what I told you at the beginning. Only God can make the "gift of believing in him really." To have this "gift," we have to show him that we are really determined to find him.

|5-Q| The God of Abraham

We know that the religions that have the God of Abraham as their Divinity are **monotheistic**. This means that there is only one Divinity. In the list of article |5-O|, we have: "a Divinity that is in the image of the laws of physics, perfect." This perfection of the laws of physics **confirms** to us that there is only one Author (one Divinity). If there were several Authors, there would be a divergence in the laws, no they are perfectly homogeneous.

In the religions of Abraham, God is without any evil (he is Holy). His adversary (the evil one) is not a divinity, but the leader of one of his (fallen creatures) called Satan (or the devil). We will discuss this subject in chapters |16| and |18|.

|5-R| Why did I choose Christianity to continue the research?

1) Because there are several tangible Christian miracles to prove it.

2) Because to write this book, I had a dozen Manifestations of the Holy Spirit.

Ask yourself this question. If you were God, how would you introduce yourself to humans so that they might recognize you? I am giving you clues about God. He is: not material as what is transparent; free as much as air; everywhere around us; life in the image of everything that breathes; pure good; humility. So what form would you take to make yourself known? Yes, in the form of a blessed Wind or Breath. **As simple as that!** "Spirit" means Breath in the Greek language. "Holy" means good only, this is only proper to God alone. Then the Holy Spirit is the "Breath of God's Goodness."

|5-S| Are you still skeptical?

If you have not had the following inspiration yet: "Yes, God really exists," do not worry! We will continue our search. Readers with a background in science have benefited so far. For other readers, I will soon use a different way to make you discover him.

Here we have proved by an effective method of investigation that the God of Christians really exists.

From now on, even if you have not yet received the "gift of truly believing in God," you know that he is there really.

I can assure you that you are not wasting your time to keep looking for it!

Finding him is only a matter of time and personal sincerity.

So, be patient!

|5-T| Conclusion

Our detective work has shown that the God of Abraham (the same as Christians) is the only possible solution to the universe and life on Earth.

In a very simple way, the most irrefutable proof that God really exists is that we exist ourselves!

In other words, God is hiding, but we now know he is there.

A) Here is a summary of what we know so far:

- ° God of Abraham really exists (he is also the God of Christians);
- ° God is the Creator of our universe;
- ° God is of unimaginable or infinite power;
- ° God works with great precision;
- ° God has perfect laws;
- ° God has a plan;
- ° God is the source of everything;
- ° God is immaterial (he has no physical limits);
- ° God is eternal (he has no time limits);
- ° God is intelligence and patience;
- ° God is perfect harmony;
- ° God is the Author of all life;
- ° God possesses absolute knowledge.

Since by nature, we (humans) are all incredulous, I propose to confirm the presence of God in chapter |6| to reinforce once again the assurance that he really exists.

| 6 | Confirmation of the presence of God

I propose 3 ways to do it.

A) Some miracles of history.

Even though we were not there, the Bible tells of several tangible miracles.

B) Some visual miracles.

Here, I propose some miracles that you will be able to look with your eyes. Here are the criteria to make sure you have a reliable miracle:

- ° The miracle must have no scientific explanation;
- ° The miracle must be simple, tangible and with several observers;
- ° Documentation of the miracle must not be controversial by experts (medicine, physics, biology, etc.).

You will be able to compare these miracles with the list of God's qualities in our study of article | 5-O |.

C) Some testimonials.

I offer you some testimonials that you can hear from yourself.

| 6-A | The Exodus of the Hebrew people from Egypt (miracle of history)

The people of God (the Hebrews) were enslaved in Egypt (around 1300 B.C.). To bring out his people, God demonstrated to the king of Egypt (Pharaoh) that he was the master of nature by performing a dozen miracles. Egypt finally yielded and the spokesman of God (Moses, the deliverer) led the people to the Promised Land (Canaan). God even opened the sea for them to cross it.

The empire of Egypt was the greatest world power of the time. Who can take away people in slavery from Pharaoh's hand? He was considered a god!

Internet Keywords	1) Moses. 2) Book of Exodus.
-------------------	------------------------------

For skeptics who say to themselves, "There is not much evidence of this part of history in Egypt!"

Do you really believe that the Pharaoh of the time would have kept records of his humiliating defeat before poor slaves? Do you believe that at that time everyone was able to write? Do you believe that the few historians of the time were not in the pay of kings and only wrote what was ordered? Do you believe that Pharaoh would have paid for such writing ridicule him? If you had been considered a god and master of the world at that time, what would you have done? ***So, you have your answer!***

| 6-B | Jesus Christ, a man like no other (miracle of history)

The Bible tells of the miracles, healings and wonders of the Son of God, Jesus Christ. Jesus walks on the water in the middle of a lake to meet his disciples in their boat! He orders the wind to calm down! Jesus brings back to life 3 dead people! He makes the paralyzed walk and heals the lepers! Jesus heals even a blind man who was born blind! Sometimes there is a crowd of 5,000 people who follow him to hear his teaching and receive healings and miracles!

Between you and me, could all those people who testified of these wonders have hallucinations all at the same time? Here we are talking about several thousand people over 3 years.

Internet Keywords	1) Jesus Christ.
-------------------	------------------

|6-C| The early Christians (miracle of history)

For 300 years, in the Roman arena, thousands of Christians died as martyrs for their faith. They even had to hide in the catacombs to survive.

Between you and me, would you be dead for lies, falseness, and human inventions? All this in total poverty!

Internet Keywords	1) Christian persecutions.
-------------------	----------------------------

You will tell me, "If God exists, why did not he intervene to destroy the guilty Romans?"

Jesus Christ would have said to you that you are thinking like a human and not in the way of God! The key to the answer is that God gives life and always gives freedom to every human being, whether good or bad. For God, yes, the Romans did not have the right to kill. On the other hand, if God had destroyed them, he would have demonstrated the opposite of what Jesus taught. Stop making evil for evil because it is endless.

Well, imagine for a moment that God would have intervened with "fire from heaven, voices and lightning!" It would have been nice, but the Romans would have thought that the Christians were a group of wizards and demons to destroy as soon as possible! The whole army of Rome would have risen up to destroy the small Christian communities. God should have intervened again with "fire from heaven!" How would all this have ended? Of course in an endless war between God and the empire of Rome! A carnage! No, God is the Creator and not a destroyer.

|6-D| Let's start by arriving on Earth (visual miracle)

The first miracle is for people who say to themselves, "Why God does not do spectacular miracles?"

It is because you do not see them!

A great prodigy is in front of you. Just look at some images of Earth seen from the moon, yes, a beautiful little blue planet in huge space, black, cold, and lifeless.

On Earth, we can see moonlight.

But from the moon, we could see...

Internet keywords (image)	1) Image of Earth seen from the moon.
------------------------------	---------------------------------------

|6-E| During a Christian mass in Lourde (visual miracle)

Internet Keywords (small video)	1) Levitating host. 1) Hostie en lévitation. 2) Host of Lourde. 2) Hostie de Lourde. 3) Levitating host in 1999 (Lourde). 3) Hostie en lévitation à Lourde en 1999.
------------------------------------	--

The second visual miracle that I propose to you is a levitating host during a Christian mass in Lourde (France) in 1999. It was a private mass that should not be broadcast in public.

For the reader who is not a Christian, here is what you need to know before watching the video.

In the list of God's characteristics of article |5-O|, we know that we seek the God of Abraham who is the same as that of Christians. We also know that God is immaterial and can do wonders that are far beyond nature on Earth or outside the understanding of our science.

1) The levitating host is the symbol of divinity (God).

2) Here, the host that rises like in an (air draft) is the symbol of the Spirit of God. The word Spirit means in Greek: "Breath or Wind."

The priests that you see here, have no scientific or technical background. They are people with a university degree in theology. The priest of the center is an archbishop. The audience is composed of religious people. It is the program (Le Jour du Seigneur/The Day of the Lord) that films and its technicians have no particular knowledge that would allow them to falsify the images. They only film and retransmit the images. The program has certified that the video is original. I can tell you that everyone would be too scared to lose their job to make a fake!

It should be known that for some Christian movements, the procedure to certify a miracle is very severe. Even if someone sees a miracle, there must be an (in-depth investigation) to affirm it. The majority of miracles have been confirmed after over 30 years of research. The one you are going to see, has been silenced for the moment because it is too recent.

In front of the priest, there are 2 hosts. They are very flat and round pieces of bread about 6 inches in diameter (15 centimeters) that represent the sacrifice of the life of Jesus Christ (the Son of God) for the human, 2,000 years ago.

During the video, the priest will ask God to spread his Holy Spirit on both hosts. Spirit means "Breath or Wind" and Holy means "without any evil." The Wind or Breath of God is simply called the Holy Spirit.

At the moment when the priest's request is made, we see that only the top host lifts about 1 inch (2.5 centimeters) above the other. The one underneath stays in place. The top one seems to rise by "a gust of wind" that makes it shudder and then stabilizes perfectly horizontally above the other.

There are several small videos. For those that show us the event closely, notice that there is an air space between the 2 hosts. We even see the designs and colors of the priest's cassock that travels through this 1 inch (2.5 cm) space.

I said earlier that I have several diplomas in applied science. See article |2-A|. I can assure you that it is technically impossible to levitate a piece of bread under the same conditions as you see there. Even if someone would give me a budget of 1 million dollars to achieve this miracle, I am not able to do it! You must take into consideration that there are no pipes or even electrical cables on the table and that in addition the host will be eaten.

You will tell me, "Why no one was surprised during the mass?"

The archbishop said that he noticed something, but he had to stay focused on his words. Also, the people in the room are very far away. It would take a very good vision to observe the miracle at this distance. We could say then that the miracle is simply intended for us, the viewers.

|6-F| The Blessed Virgin Mary appears to Juan Diego (visual miracle)

The third visual miracle is that of Juan Diego, a shepherd who saw a "Beautiful Lady all radiant" in front of him in the field. She asked him to go to see his bishop to build a small church on site. Juan Diego went to see his bishop who did not believe him. The bishop asked Juan Diego that the Lady gave him a proof.

The Lady appeared again to Juan Diego and told him to go and bring a large bouquet of roses to the bishop. Juan Diego took the flowers and brought them to the bishop as requested.

When Juan Diego appeared in front of the bishop, he opened his coat and a lot of roses fell on the floor. First of all, you should know that this was not the time of year when roses grow in this part of the country. Secondly, the image of the Beautiful Lady was printed on Juan Diego's coat. **Therefore, the bishop built the little church.**

To go even further, scientists analyzed the image of the Lady (the Blessed Virgin Mary) in the fabric of the coat. Hold on, they discovered the reflection of Juan Diego kneeling in the eyes of the Blessed Virgin Mary!

We see here that God does not do things halfway!

Internet Keywords	1) Juan Diego Cuauhtlatotzin. 2) Our Lady of Guadalupe. 3) Juan Diego in the eye of the image of the Blessed Virgin.
-------------------	--

|6-G| The Blessed Virgin Mary appears on the roof of a church (visual miracle)

The fourth visual miracle that I propose to you is the video of an Apparition of the Blessed Virgin Mary above the roof of a church. This miracle happened again and again for more than 3 years. Hundreds of thousands of Christians have seen this miracle in person.

Scientists made expertise on the roof to understand the phenomenon and found no explanation.

The patriarch (Orthodox) authenticated the Manifestation and this was respected by the pope (Catholic).

Internet Keywords (video or image)	1) Apparitions of Mary in Zeitoun (video). 2) Apparitions of Mary in Zeitoun (image). 3) Our Lady of Zeitoun.
---------------------------------------	---

|6-H| The Apparitions of the Blessed Virgin Mary to the children of Medjugorje (visual miracle)

The fifth visual miracle that I propose to you is the video of an Apparition of the Blessed Virgin Mary to the children of Medjugorje. These Apparitions still going on today, and have been for 30 years already.

Internet Keywords (video or image)	1) Virgin of Medjugorje Presentation (video). 1) Vierge de Medjugorje Présentation (en film). 2) Apparitions of the Virgin Mary in Medjugorje (website).
---------------------------------------	--

The video comes from a research scientist in neuropsychology. Neuropsychology is the study of the internal activity of the brain relative to human thought. It is important to know that the human brain has about 100 billion neurons. Our human thought comes from their activities. See chapter |16|.

In the middle of this video, you will see a neuropsychologist putting electrodes on the subject's head (the person) he is studying. These electrodes are connected to a computer to see the brain activity of the subject.

It is important to say that only children see the Apparition. The other people around them only see the **reaction** of the children. During the Apparition, the children can talk to her, hold her hand and even touch her veil! For children, she is as tangible as if a human being was in front of them!

Now, for us, what can this bring us since we do not see the Apparition? Yes, but we see the **reaction** of children and it is fantastic!

I will help you. Look carefully at the girl who is praying at the beginning. She has the figure of a girl coming out of her bed with drawn features and tired eyes. Now, look at his face as the Apparition begins. Suddenly, his face lights up with the most beautiful smile in the world! She gets down on her knees and speaks on the tip of her lips (it is an intimate conversation with the Apparition). Afterwards, she stops speaking and it is the child (next to her) who begins to speak on the tip of his lips. When he stops, the first one starts again. It is as if the Apparition speaks to each of them in turn! Each of the children cannot know that the other has finished speaking, because each one is looking ahead. In addition, they do not listen to each other, because each one is only moving their lips (there are no words coming out of their mouths). Take a good look, notice the synchronization.

Meanwhile, the neuropsychologist checks the brain activity. The brain activity is as if the children were in a state of light sleep. We see that the neuropsychologist even puts an opaque cardboard in front of a child's eyes and she sees the Apparition!

At the end of the Apparition, each child tilts his head backwards as if the Apparition is ascending into the sky (heaven) and then they say, "She is gone!" Notice the synchronism.

It is reported that during another Apparition, the children said that the Virgin Mary showed her Son (Jesus) on the cross.

Here are the neuropsychology researcher's conclusions. There is no magic trick. The children really have a collective Apparition. There is no natural explanation for this phenomenon, which has been going on for 30 years.

These Apparitions are being approved by some Christian movements.

|6-I| A host that has a heartbeat (visual miracle)

The sixth visual miracle that I propose to you is the video of a host in its paten. It was sealed using a small glass window. This miracle is still active today in Buenos Aires, Brazil. The current pope Francis himself witnessed this miracle while he was archbishop in Brazil.

At first, we see that the host is white and has nothing special. On the other hand, when the priest says the mass, during the consecration of the host which becomes the sacrifice of the body of Jesus Christ on the cross, something happens! The host becomes stained with blood. Thereafter, we see a heartbeat appear in the host. After the consecration, the host becomes white as before, without pulsations or even blood!

Medical scientists took a sample of the host for laboratory analysis. They discovered that the sample had the same composition as the myocardial tissue of a human's heart. They found inside the tissues, the infiltration of white blood cells that occurs during the suffering of a tortured person put to death. Example: the crucifixion of Jesus on the cross!

This miracle is amazing!

Internet Keywords (video)	1) Eucharistic miracles. 2) Host of Buenos Aires (video) 2) Hostie de Buenos Aires (en film). 3) Pope Francis eucharistic miracle Buenos Aires.
------------------------------	--

|6-J| Incorruptibility of saints (visual miracle)

The seventh visual miracle that I propose here is amazing! These are the bodies of some saints who have been dead for more than 100 years and have remained intact. ***Their bodies did not deteriorate after their death!***

You know how a dead body decomposes naturally and quickly enough!

What happened? At their death, they were buried as usual. Then, the religious community had to, several years later, move the cemetery for some reason. By moving the degraded wooden tombs, they discovered that the flesh of the person was not decomposed. The clothes were decomposed, but not the body of the person!

Religious people decided to have the miracle authenticated. This allows the person to be beatified or canonized (in order to receive the title of saint).

Subsequently, the community took the body, washed it, dressed it, and placed it in a grave with a glass. So, visitors can see the body of the saint, but cannot cut out pieces of his clothes.

In the process, medical specialists (biologists) take samples of human tissue to analyze them in order to authenticate the miracle.

Often, their skin is still flexible. For many, we could say that they are only sleeping!

We see that these saints are amazing! These are permanent miracles. They demonstrate the Eternity of God and that he is far above nature and science.

Internet Keywords	1) Incorruptible bodies of the saints. 2) Incorruptibility of saints (video). 2) Incorruptibilité des saints (en film).
-------------------	---

|6-K| The miraculous water of Lourde (Ste-Bernadette Soubirous)

Bernadette was 14 years old when she had 18 Apparitions of a "Beautiful Lady" in Lourde, France. Her Apparitions took place at the Grotto of Massabielle between February 11 and July 16, 1858.

At the first Apparition, Bernadette is near the grotto to collect dead wood on the ground. **Bernadette is then surprised by a noise, like a gust of wind.** Later, Bernadette will say that in a strange way this gust of wind did not move the branches of the trees! We will see in chapter |10| that this "**wind**" is the Presence of the 3rd Person of God (the Holy Spirit) who says, "Hello, I am here!" "**Spirit**" means "**Wind**" in the Greek language. Afterwards, Bernadette looks up and the Beautiful Lady is there! She is smiling and does not speak, then disappears.

Bernadette describes the Apparition like this: a (luminous) girl of 16 years old with a veil, a white dress, a blue belt and a yellow rose on each of her feet.

During another Apparition, Bernadette has a candle lit in one hand. A doctor present next to her makes the following statement. Bernadette is so focused on the Apparition that she does not pay attention to her gestures and passes her other hand over the flame for 15 minutes. Finally, the doctor discovers that Bernadette's hand has no burn marks!

In another Apparition, the Beautiful Lady asks Bernadette to dig with her hands on the floor of the grotto in order to discover a small spring of water. From this tiny hole, 120 cubic metres of water will come out every day. By drinking or rubbing with this water, hundreds of healings appeared. Even today, miracles are still happening (healing of blind, paralytic, etc.).

In the Apparition of March 25, 1858, the Beautiful Lady finally revealed her name: "*Que sòi era Immaculada Concepcion.*" Which translates as: "I am the Immaculate Conception." Then, people discover that the Beautiful Lady is the Blessed Virgin Mary. It should be known that March 25 is the day of the feast of the Annunciation.

Internet Keywords	1) Bernadette Soubirous (Wikipedia). 2) Bernadette Soubirous (video). 2) Bernadette Soubirous (le film).
-------------------	--

|6-L| Stigmatization

- 1) The Bible does not tell of stigmatization. The holy apostles who founded the early Christian communities were never stigmatized.
- 2) If I look with the dozen Manifestations of the Holy Spirit that I have had. See chapter |13|. My Manifestations have always been very sweet, as if in the eyes of God, I was as precious and fragile as a little flower! I have always felt safe, respected and loved! God is Holy (without any evil).
- 3) Stigma is a controversial topic for many medical experts.

So, this topic cannot be part of this book.

|6-M| Do your own search for miracles

If you are still skeptical, after all the solid miracles I have given so far, I suggest you do your own Internet research. **On the other hand, it is easy to get lost.** Again, I give you the criteria listed above.

To make sure you have a reliable miracle in front of you:

- ° The miracle must have no scientific explanation;
- ° The miracle must be simple, tangible and with several observers;
- ° Documentation of the miracle must not be controversial by experts (medicine, physics, biology, etc.).

If a miracle scares you or makes no sense, skip it. The idea is to confirm that God exists, not that all the miracles (video) on the Internet are true. ***In reality, only one true miracle is needed to confirm the presence of God. So, you have to do your research intelligently!***

Now, if you want to look for yourself.

Internet Keywords	1) Miracles. 2) The most amazing miracles. 2) Les miracles les plus étonnants. 3) The most mysterious miracles. 3) Les miracles les plus mystérieux. 4) The Marian Apparitions. 4) Les Apparitions Mariales. 5) Apparitions of Fatima. 5) Apparitions de Fatima. 6) Apparitions of Jesus. 6) Apparitions de Jésus. 7) I was in Heaven and Jesus spoke to me. 7) J'ai été au Ciel et Jésus m'a parlé). 8) And so on.
-------------------	---

(*) Recently, I discovered that even Jesus makes Apparitions! However, Jesus only seems to make Apparitions to one person at a time.

A word of encouragement from me:

Do you know that God is near you right now? One day, if he sees the sincerity of your approach and you look for him ardently, he will give you the first "gift" which is to truly believe in him. I repeat, this "gift" is not human. The only thing that is in your hands is your sincerity and your effort to seek him.

|6-N| Testimonies of miraculous healings

In Quebec, we are fortunate to have a good example with Saint Brother Andrew.

Through the grace and action of God, Saint Brother Andrew obtained hundreds of healings for people who came to confide in him and pray.

To see a short video:

Internet Keywords (video)	Portier de Dieu, saint André de Montreal.
---------------------------	---

For a simple biography:

Internet Keywords (Wikipedia)	Brother Andrew.
-------------------------------	-----------------

To see the text of the miracle that led to his canonization:

Internet Keywords	Diocese of Montreal, Brother Andrew, the miracle that led to his canonization.
-------------------	--

|6-O| Testimonies of near-death experiences (NDE) that saw Jesus

Many people who had a "near-death experience" testified that they saw Jesus.

Personally, I believe that these people had indeed received a message from God for themselves and their entourage. I am convinced of that, just look at their sincerity!

A) Now, let's look at some testimonies.

I give you some titles:

Internet search titles, video (Google, YouTube, or others)
1) A doctor meets Jesus Christ, testimony. 1) Un médecin rencontre Jésus Christ, témoignage.
2) She committed suicide, went to hell, to heaven, and then came back. 2) Elle s'est suicidée, est allée en enfer, au paradis, puis est revenue.
3) Exceptional/the vision of the Sacred Heart suffering (version 14 minutes). 3) Exceptionnel/la vision du Sacré-Cœur souffrant (version 14 minutes).
4) I do not believe in God ... Patrick's answer. 4) Je ne crois pas en Dieu... réponse de Patrick.
5) A child sees Jesus and Paradise. 5) Un enfant voit Jésus et le Paradis.

All these testimonies are real gifts for Christians. So thank you all for your donations and your sincerity!

B) The best explanation.

By psychology and my knowledge of God, here is:

As we will see in chapter | 16 |, experiences associated with suffering (demons, vampires, the devil) are easily explainable by the brain's natural dysfunction during the process of death. **On the other hand, happy experiences are not!** When a brain dies, it is easy to understand that it happens in pain and not in happiness. **So, there is something going on here...**

God being our Creator and knowing that he is very intelligent and loves all of us, so here is what I believe. God simply gives this person a help to better discover him and share his experience with the people around him. It is when we pass close to losing something (here our human life) that we discover its importance (God is the source of all life). Do not forget that God is a parent. Without realizing it, he does a lot for us every day. We only have to look at our beautiful planet Earth that he gave us.

| 6-P | Research summary on the existence of God

1) In chapter | 5 |, we used the observable facts of the universe and Earth to find out that God really exists. Afterwards, we deduced some of his qualities.

2) We found that the religions of the God of Abraham are the only ones in agreement with the facts and the qualities found.

3) Subsequently, as I had a dozen Manifestations of the Holy Spirit, I brought you into Christianity.

4) We have seen that Christianity is true because there is a set of tangible and concordant visual miracles as irrefutable proof.

You now have everything in your hands (scientific facts, miracles, testimonies) to allow you to believe more firmly in God.

On the other hand, as I told you at the beginning, to truly believe in God is only possible if God himself allows it. ***Humanly, we are born blind of God!***

By doing a very caring personal search in the eyes of God, he will allow you one day to believe.

If you do not believe yet, work to find God and he will grant you this, rest assured! ***God (Father, Son and Holy Spirit) really exists and is waiting for you!***

| 6-Q | What is stopping us from finding God?

It is not the lack of science. I was able to prove that God exists with only chapter | 5 |.

It is not the lack of miracles, because you have to know that there are at least 250 miracles authenticated in the West alone. In reality, only one authentic miracle is needed to prove the existence of God.

It is not a problem of human history. In all eras, people have believed in one or more deities.

It is just our lack of willpower to find it. Our society fills us with so many interesting and frivolous things that we do not need God.

Usually, we seek God when:

- ° Our life does not work as we want it (**it was my case**);
- ° Disease;
- ° Death is near.

Finally, I would say that our society does not really help us to find God. The beauty of nature on Earth tells us a lot about our Creator. On the other hand, our society has built itself a human kingdom (the cities) over it. Then, we no longer see nature and therefore the image of our Creator at the same time. For our financiers, the goodness of God and the truth is not the best-selling point. For science and technology, the existence of the "Owner of nature" hinders development, because we should respect what does not belong to us. Economically, the best solution is to make the "idea of God" disappear in the head of precious consumers (us).

Christianity

In chapter |5|, we discovered that God really exists. In chapter |6|, we confirmed his presence. Logic dictates that I should now present to you the testimony of my Manifestations of the Holy Spirit whereas I will do it only in chapter |13|. The reason is simple, I must prepare you beforehand. My Manifestations are related to the Scriptures (the Bible). If you do not have sufficient knowledge of the Scriptures, my testimony will unfortunately have no meaning for you...

|7| Introduction to Christianity

|7-A| A word for those who have been traumatized by a religion in the past

A) Beware, you will never find your Creator (God) by fear, because he is Holy (without any evil)!

In reality, Christianity is much more **a conversion of the heart and a relationship** (between a beloved child and his loving Parent) than a religion. It is a way of life. It is a big family whose big brother (Jesus) has come to announce how to live in harmony on earth and what place he will reserve for you in the Kingdom of the Father if you follow his Way. The Lord wants children of light.

To follow the Way of Christ, the most important is your **sincerity**.

God really exists. See chapters |5 and 6|. He is next to you now and he already knows you.

On earth, without Christians knowing it, Christ has kept all the Powers in his hands. This is because humans tend to do evil and the Lord knows that very well.

In article |3-A|, the Lord asked the Christian movements only a work of accompaniment of the followers. This is to **prepare** them to receive the Visit of the Holy Spirit. Be careful, God is managing his kingdom himself!

In fact, **if you take charge of your own life**, no Christian movement is necessary for you to follow the Way of Christ. Here is why:

- 1) Water baptism is your human commitment to follow the Word of God in your everyday life. God is everywhere and beside you always. You can make this commitment alone in front of him if you want. You can also choose a Christian movement and be baptized. It is important to understand that in the eyes of God, your water baptism depends on **your personal sincerity** and not on a ceremony. The baptism of water is only in your hands in front of God. To be a Christian is in your heart and not on a piece of paper.
- 2) Currently, we have a golden chance. The Word of God is written in the Gospels of the Bible. Moreover, they are available for free on the Internet. A Christian is committed to learning the Gospels. However, you do not have to memorize all. On the other hand, by dint of reading them, you will see that the sentences will come out of your mouth alone.
- 3) It is Jesus who saves, no one else. He died on the cross for you to obtain the forgiveness of God necessary for your {birth of the Spirit}. See article |13-D|.

B) In short.

In order to find the Truth (Jesus Christ) in your life:

- ° You can do it alone from home (the door of your room closed);
- ° It is not necessary to adhere to anything, see chapter | 9 |;
- ° Yes, there may be people around you who will not agree. But no one knows the depths of your heart and your personal life belongs to you. It is between you alone and your Creator. No one has anything to say.

What is really important is that the day you will be ready to receive the Breath of Life (the Holy Spirit) in you, the Son will give it to you. Thereafter, no one will be able to take this Gift away from you.

NT	St-John	14,21	"He who has My commandments and keeps them (1) is the one who loves Me; and he who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and will disclose Myself to him. " (2)
----	---------	-------	---

(1) Here, it is to apply the Word in his everyday life. This only comes from you.

(2) Here, it is the {birth of the Spirit}. This is given only by Jesus Christ alone.

Here is what you need:

- ° To be a little **tired** of all injustice and human wickedness on earth;
- ° The **will** to seek God in your life;
- ° The **Word** of Jesus Christ (Gospels). It is possible to have access to the Bible via the Internet for free;
- ° **Time** and **patience**;
- ° **Sincerity**.

C) This book offers you an accompaniment in your search for God.

Having had several Manifestations of the Holy Spirit myself, I am well placed to give you a good help to find God in your turn.

Throughout this book, I help you understand the important points of the Bible. I give you simple and modern explanations of a person who is able to talk to you about the Love of God today.

Without the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, it is impossible to make an accurate interpretation of the Bible. If you ask a person (even a religious person) to interpret these texts, be very careful! Make sure he has had the {gift of the Holy Spirit} in a concrete way. See chapter | 13 |. If the person tells you that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is not perceptible then he does not have what it takes to help you.

Besides, nothing prevents you from being part of a Christian movement if you want. It is always interesting and more encouraging **to prepare** in a group. But that is your choice, see chapter | 9 |.

|7-B| It is important to set the record straight

A) Scientifically:

Since the 1990s, scientists have been scared to tell people in our society that the only explanation left for the existence of our world is that the Creator (God) also exists. They would not want to lose their credibility!

B) Religiously:

Many Christians do not know that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a real Manifestation. Throughout Christian history, many religious people have written about Christ without actually receiving the Holy Spirit in them to guide them in their work. They thought they had received the Holy Spirit in their sacraments but it was not the case. This explains that human rituals have taken a lot of space at the expense of what Christ requires, a conversion of the heart and a relationship.

C) So, how can I do?

- ° How can I tell the truth and offend as few people as possible?
- ° How can I remove myths in people's minds?
- ° How can I make a modern, simple and logical Christian book for people today?

D) A challenge too big for me alone!

The purpose of this book is to inform the reader and help him to seek the Truth. Without the {inspiration} of the Holy Spirit, this book would not exist. So, if you want one more proof of the existence of God, you have it in your hands!

|7-C| Why find God?

When you have found God, you have everything! Much more precious than gold. Much more precious than anything that rusts and gets lost on earth.

Imagine that you are in your room at 4 o'clock in the night. You have to go to the toilet and there is no night light on your way. It is a safe bet that you will stumble on an object lying on the ground in the dark! On earth, it is the same thing. God is this "Light" for you. When we know that God is there, we can ask him things. God watches over us, protects us, and helps us to achieve what we do not believe possible! God can do wonderful things for us if we sincerely ask him.

However, we have to go to meet him, we have to find him. Most people do not get anything from God, because in reality they do not believe enough in him. In their head, God is, say, "far enough!" It is normal that the fulfillment of their demands is, says, "far enough!"

|7-D| Why is God so hard to find?

It is simply because God hides his Presence from us humans.

You will tell me, but why?

It is mainly a question of human freedom. God has given us life generously, he wants nothing in return, not even to be recognized. God is humility!

God created our world. He has laid down life here and nature works autonomously without God. Life on earth is spreading like a flame in the grass of a field. God has his own world and we humans have ours. In a way, Earth is our heritage and we do what we want even bad things. ***God has the great goodness to tolerate us!***

The reality is that God does not allow us to truly believe in him without his permission. On the other hand, we may think that he exists. Here, there is a big difference between the expressions: to think and to truly believe.

The expression "to think" is human and it has a sense of "maybe he is there, I am not 100% sure!"

The expression "to truly believe" is not human and it has a meaning such as: "Well, yes, he is there for real"; "Why did not I understand it before"; "Was I blind?" In this book, I hope to bring you to the expression: "to truly believe." On the other hand, understand that "to truly believe" is a permission that only God can grant you.

| 7-E | 5 quick (questions/answers):

1) What is the use of nature on Earth?	a) Maintenance of life. b) To understand that all this beauty is the work of much greater than us (our Creator).
2) What is the use of science?	To discover by our observation that God really exists.
3) What is God for?	To create living worlds. Example: Earth and Heaven.
4) What is the use of being a {God's child}?	To live eternal relationship in the joy of his Father (the Creator).
5) What is the use of this book?	a) To answer your important questions. b) To help you discover that God really exists. c) To help you to become a {God's child} if you really want it.

|8| To acquire a Christian base

|8-A| An outline of history in the Bible

In the Old Testament, texts from the beginning until Abraham are "symbolic." These texts, inspired by God, are very interesting because they draw primarily the history of humanity. Without people noticing, these texts also give a small picture of God's Plan for the human, so they are very important. For the moment, I advise you to read them simply out of curiosity, I will explain them in chapter |21|.

The truly tangible narrative begins with Abraham (around 2,000 B.C.). In his time, Abraham did not agree with the stone gods that humans carved and prayed. Most of these gods were ugly and wicked. Abraham thought that the God who created earth, plants and animals must be necessarily different from that! He therefore began to seek God (the Creator). One day, God came to him in the form of a "Vision." Since we know that God is immaterial, we can think that only Abraham could see and hear him in his head. It is obvious that people have called him crazy!

Abraham was the leader of his own people (Hebrews or Jews). He had no children, because his wife was sterile. In addition, they were both very old. God promised a son to Abraham and his wife gave birth to him 12 years later. God establishes the First Covenant (Old Testament) with Abraham and his people. God truly became their One God, and the people in return received a territory (Canaan) and got help to repel the enemies. Abraham and his people saw the promises of God come true.

Subsequently, there was a great general famine that lasted 7 years in all territories including Canaan. Through Joseph (grandson of Abraham), God asked to gather a large supply of grain in Egypt and brought the people to a land that Pharaoh of Egypt lent them to settle.

The Hebrew people had already been working in Egypt for a few hundred years when the Egyptians decided to enslave the Hebrews. What did not please God at all!

Afterwards, God spoke to Moses through the miracle of the "burning bush!" On the orders of God, Moses went to deliver the Hebrew people from the hands of Pharaoh of Egypt. To convince Pharaoh of the Power of God, God did wonders, one at a time, until Pharaoh let the Hebrew people go.

Here are some of the wonders that we also called the "plagues of Egypt":

- ° The shepherd's rod of Moses changed into a serpent (cobra) in front of Pharaoh's court;
- ° The water of the river (the Nile) changed into blood;
- ° Hail as fire fell in Egypt;
- ° The moon totally obscured the sun for 3 days;

There were 10 wonders (or plagues of Egypt) in all. These wonders were to demonstrate that God is the Creator and that Pharaoh is only a human.

After 10 wonders, Pharaoh could not take it anymore and decided to let the Hebrew people go. Moses led the people across the desert to the shore of the sea. During this time, the proud Pharaoh had hardened his heart again, he decided to go after the people in the desert and kill them. God made 2 other miracles. He erected a pillar of fire in front of Pharaoh's army to bar his way. God opened the sea. He made a way into the sea to let the Hebrew people pass. There were two walls of water, one on the left and one on the right creating a path in the sea. Afterwards, Moses alone went to meet God on Mount Sinai and received two tables of God's Law (the Ten Commandments) for his people so that they may live in peace. Then God gave them the land of Canaan.

Hundreds of years passed and the people began to break the Laws of God. God sent many prophets to talk to the leaders of the people. But the leaders did not want to listen to them and killed them.

Finally, God the Father sent his Son on earth (Jesus) in the year 0000. Through the action of the Holy Spirit, the Son of God took flesh in the womb of a woman named Mary. The role of Jesus was to put an end to the First Covenant (Old Testament) that the people did not respect and subsequently, to concretely establish the 2nd Covenant (New Testament). Jesus, then

30 years old, taught the basics of the new doctrine for 3 years to his disciples and the people. Jesus performed several hundred miracles, healings, and wonders to prove to the people of his day that he truly was the Son of God.

Of course, as it happened to all the prophets, it bothered the leaders of his time a little too much, because Jesus was revealed as the Son of God. The leaders therefore organized themselves to condemn Jesus and have him crucified by the hand of the Romans. God the Father allowed this crime to be done in order to demonstrate the guilt and wickedness of the human compared to the goodness of his own Son. We say that Jesus sacrificed his life, his own body to give the chance to every human being who really wants to be called a {God's child} to have access to the Kingdom of God for Eternal Life.

Three days after the death of Jesus, God the Father Resurrected him. This is to show that God the Father has power over all life and over death. Subsequently, the Risen Jesus appeared to his disciples and more than 500 people for 40 days, then he returned to God the Father.

|8-B| To believe in something solid!

We have seen that only religions derived from the God of Abraham are in accord with all the facts of modern science. See chapter |5|.

Christianity is very different from Judaism. As Jesus taught at the time of Judaism, it is normal that nascent Christianity had taken, by the transfer, notions of Judaism. From there come concepts such as: punishment, demon, hell, etc. (see the Septuagint on the Internet). Jesus had taken 12 people of the time (called the Twelve) with the least knowledge of Judaism to diminish its influence. But there are notions that are passed anyway.

Because there is only ONE God. Because there are currently several major religions, and all of them have religious people. Because all these religious do not all pray the same deity, but believe in it! This means that a person can believe in a deity that does not exist and invest in it all his life. That is why the usefulness of chapters |5 and 6|.

For **Christianity**, there is a "cornerstone," it is a **promise of God that certifies it**. That of receiving in oneself the {gift of the Holy Spirit} which makes a person, a {God's child} already on earth. In the New Testament, the first {gift of the Holy Spirit} was made to the Twelve, at the day of Pentecost. See the beginning of the book of Acts of the Apostles.

|8-C| How to find the Truth?

A) To believe in what exactly?

To do this, look at the 4 Gospels, the book of Acts of the Apostles and the Epistles. The Old Testament is not Christianity, but Judaism. In Judaism, humans believed that God was an avenger and punisher. This is against the revelations of Jesus. You can read the whole Bible if you want, but if you see bad things about God, it is not the reality of God, but the human belief of the time.

Some texts in the Bible are in conflict. Example: the book of Job (from the Old Testament) and the Epistle of St-James (from the New Testament). Job having the vision of the Tempter (the devil) while St-James says that every human being is confronted with his own human temptation. There is also the book of Revelation (Apocalypse, New Testament) which is in conflict with the Gospels (the revelations of Jesus) on the Holiness of God. See article |20-B|.

In addition, for some Christian movements, we must be very careful, because there are certain beliefs (dogmas) that do not match the Gospels. See article |2-B|.

B) Can we take the Scriptures literally?

You have to be careful. In the days of Jesus, people were very superstitious and this is reflected in their writings. People thought that diseases were "evil spirits." They even believed that fever could be a "bad spirit." They thought that they were purifying their hands of "unclean spirits" by passing their hands in the water. **Even Jesus tried to reason them:**

NT	St-Matthew	15,16	Jesus said, "Are you still lacking in understanding also?"
----	------------	-------	--

An important detail misinterpreted is the famous "Gehenna of fire" which Jesus talks about. It was actually a simple dump at the exit of the city. People put in it rubbish and added sulfur to help it burn better, hence the smell given to the word "hell." When there was nothing more to burn, it is obvious that it was extinguished all alone. In the days of Jesus, the word "hell" meant "under the ground" where we put a grave. The expression "until the end of time" did not exist either, it meant "for the time it lasts or when God will have decided it." It is therefore important to filter the Bible translations to find their bearings and not take fright! See chapter | 20 |.

In reality, one must have his {birth of the Spirit} to interpret the Bible accurately. Otherwise, it is easy to see demons everywhere! That is another reason I write this book for you. ***This is to help people see clearly and allow themselves to truly love God without fear!***

| 8-D | To be in relationship with the Lord

One of the revelations of Jesus is that God wants to be in touch with you in particular. You have a great value in his eyes. It is a relationship between a loving Parent (God) and a beloved child (you). Not from a king to his faithful subject. Not from a guru to his adept! Not from the terror! God already knows you and he wants you to know him too. God knows you even if you are not baptized (Christian). He looks at you every day and already loves you. He wants you to go to meet him. He has plenty of time for you. **But do you have time for him?** Would you like to live in his Presence? If you want to become his {child}, his Breath will actually come into you to make you {be born again} on earth when you are ready. He will help you with all your miseries. You will never feel lonely again. He will prepare a place for you in his Kingdom. How much does it cost? Money interests only the human, but not God. No one can buy a place in his Kingdom.

Jesus said:

NT	St-Matthew	5,2-10	He opened His mouth and <i>began</i> to teach them, saying, "Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. "Blessed are those who mourn, for they shall be comforted. "Blessed are the gentle, for they shall inherit the earth. "Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, for they shall be satisfied. "Blessed are the merciful, for they shall receive mercy. "Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God. "Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called sons of God. "Blessed are those who have been persecuted for the sake of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.
		11,28-30	"Come to Me, all who are weary and heavy-laden, and I will give you rest. "Take My yoke upon you and learn from Me, for I am gentle and humble in heart, and you will find rest for your souls. "For My yoke is easy and My burden is light."

So, what do you have to lose apart from your human misery?

Without God, the human alone performs only rituals. Jesus said that it is not by performing rituals that you will be saved (for Eternal Life).

NT	St-Luke	6,46-47	"Why do you call Me, 'Lord, Lord,' and do not do what I say? "Everyone who comes to Me and hears My words and acts on them, I will show you whom he is like:
----	---------	---------	--

The human part of religion is: rituals; severe laws; buildings; sacred objects; prayer formulas; administrators.

All this already existed in Judaism and it has been transmitted in Christianity, because a human remains a human. **Except that God asks for a religion of the heart, a way of conversion!**

NT	St-Matthew	12,7	"But if you had known what this means, 'I desire compassion, and not a sacrifice,' you would not have condemned the innocent.
----	------------	------	---

|8-E| So Jesus Christ comes to change everything by putting his Spirit in our hearts!

A) God the Father does not want severe rituals and laws that make people suffer.

On the contrary, Jesus gives us only 3 commandments: to love God, to love others as oneself. So, respect and do no evil to anyone (to God, to others, to oneself). Evil breed evil. Jesus was a pioneer of modern psychology 2,000 years ago. It is said now in psychology, "One cannot love and respect others if one does not love oneself and does not respect oneself first."

Jesus says that religion is nothing if it does not come from the bottom of the human heart.

B) God the Father sends the Paraclete (the Helper), he is the 3rd Person of God, the Holy Spirit.

NT	St-John	14,15-17	"If you love Me, you will keep My commandments. "I will ask the Father, and He will give you another Helper (1), that He may be with you forever; <i>that is the Spirit of truth</i> (2), whom the world cannot receive, because it does not see Him or know Him, <i>but</i> you know Him because He abides with you and will be in you (3).
		14,21	"He who has My commandments and keeps them is the one who loves Me; and he who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and will disclose Myself to him. " (4)
		14,23	Jesus answered and said to him, "If anyone loves Me, he will keep My word; and My Father will love him, and We will come to him and make Our abode with him. (5)
		14,26	"But the Helper, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things (6), and bring to your remembrance all that I said to you.
	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	3,16	Do you not know that you are a temple of God and <i>that</i> the Spirit of God dwells in you? (7)
	Acts of the Apostles	2,1-4	When the day of Pentecost had come, they were all together in one place... they were all filled with the Holy Spirit (8)...
		2,33	"Therefore having been exalted to the right hand of God, and having received from the Father the promise of the Holy Spirit , He has poured forth this which you both see and hear. (9)
		2,38	Peter <i>said</i> to them, "Repent, and each of you be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins; and you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. (10)
	Epistle of St-Paul to the Romans	5,5	and hope does not disappoint, because the love of God has been poured out within our hearts through the Holy Spirit who was given to us. (11)
	2nd Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	1,21-22	Now He who establishes us with you in Christ and anointed us is God, who also sealed us and gave <i>us</i> the Spirit in our hearts as a pledge. (12)

These verses give a lot of information about the Holy Spirit. The reference **(6)** of the excerpt of (St-John: 14,26) above explains the {inspiration} of this book.

Here, we will analyze the subject of the Holy Spirit for the first time. Subsequently, chapter |10| will give more precision and chapter |30| will go even further. On the other hand, as I said in article |0-C|, we must not burn the steps.

Let's go!

Two general terms: the Holy Spirit and the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.

In these verses (higher on this page), look carefully at references **(1)** to **(12)**. Here is the general idea that emerges. The Holy Spirit is a Paraclete (an Intercessor) who does Actions for us. The Holy Spirit is always a concrete Manifestation. The Holy Spirit can do many different actions. A big difficulty is that the Bible talks so generally about the Holy Spirit that we have a hard time knowing what he is precisely. The Holy Spirit is not an object or a good. The Holy Spirit is the 3rd Person of God. Being a Person, he introduces himself and says, "Hello" in his own way (a Wind, a Breath, a Light, etc.). Being a Person, he does things for us. He can do wonders, he can give psychological help; he can make messages; he can donate. Beware, the Holy Spirit does not enter or leave a place. He Manifests himself for a few moments and disappears. See chapter |10| for more details.

We have seen that the Holy Spirit is a Person of God. The {gift of the Holy Spirit} means that the Holy Spirit accompanies us in our daily lives.

C) The Scriptures, yes they are real!

In the last verse above, in reference **(12)**, St-Paul says that the "Breath of God has filled their hearts." We must understand the mentality of this time. They are mainly people from the land and fishermen. They have no romanticism or abstract symbolism. When they say that God: "blew them inside"; "filled with the Spirit"; made them a "mark in their hearts that is the seal of Jesus Christ." Well, it is real; tangible; it is felt in their body. **I am the living witness!**

No one can receive the "Breath of God in him and be filled with it" without actually feeling it in his body. If it does not "blow" is that there is no breath, it is not complicated! If you have not felt the mark in your heart, it is because your heart has not been "filled with the Holy Spirit." Even if you are baptized Christian, confirmed or even a religious person. **Do you want tangible proof?** The majority of Quebecers have been baptized Christians and confirmed, but where is their faith? The vast majority do not go to mass and churches fall into ruins! Yes, they started a Christian initiation, but it was necessary to engage by efforts.

|8-F| In order to acquire some basic knowledge

In this book, I have only excerpted some verses necessary to understand the essentials of the Bible. See chapters |21 to 24|.

For now, I suggest you read only the introduction of chapter |19| which will give you an idea of the structure of the New Testament in order to give you some guidance.

In order to make it simple and at the lowest possible cost, I suggest you:

In article |8-G|, summaries of the Bible in paper form or on the Internet.

In article |8-H|, complete Bible in paper form or on the Internet.

In article |8-I|, Internet movies.

In article |8-J|, some movies in DVD format (low-cost).

Before going any further, it is important to understand that all websites belong to their respective authors and that they may disappear at any time.

|8-G| Summaries of the Bible in paper form or on the Internet

In reality, it is quite difficult to read the Bible. For example, the Jerusalem Bible has about 1700 pages. Since the goal I am giving you here is to have general knowledge and not to become a theologian, the easiest and fastest way to do so is to read a Bible for young people. Yes, you have read it well, a Bible for young people! This type of Bible is very pleasant to read and only takes a few hours. It gives a well-structured and sufficient overview at first. I present 3 here, but there are many others. These small Bibles are very well illustrated. They are intended for young people, but so pleasant and quick to read for an adult. They give all the basic information to someone who wants to get a good overview quickly.

1A) *Children's Bible: Illustrated Stories from the Old and New Testaments*

See all good booksellers with this number:

ISBN-13: 978-1841936390

1B) *The Complete Illustrated Children's Bible*

See all good booksellers with this number:

ISBN-13: 978-0736962131

2) *God speaks to His children*

See Aid to the Church in Need: <https://acn-canada.org/>

You can read this little book for free on this website:

https://issuu.com/aidtothechurchinneed/docs/god_speaks_to_his_children

|8-H| Complete Bible in paper form or on the Internet

1) For this book, the excerpts come from the Bible (**New American Standard**) of:

<https://www.biblestudytools.com/nas/>

Or

http://www.lexilogos.com/bible_multilingue.htm

For the last website, there are several Bibles available and in several languages.

2) You can also get a complete paper Bible starting at \$25. See all good booksellers.

The advantage of a paper Bible is that there are notes from the translator at the bottom of each page. The strength of the translator is the context of the Scriptures. On the other hand, the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is necessary to bring out its profound meaning. That is what I am doing here for you.

3) For those who would like someone to read the Bible for them.

<https://www.biblestudytools.com/audio-bible/web/>

It is the World English Bible.

4) There are also Bibles in electronic format for less than \$10. However, it is important to check if there are any footnotes of the translator.

|8-I| Internet movies

Using the Internet (with Google or YouTube).

I give you a short list of some possibilities that we can meet there.

The Gospel of John (2003 Full Movie)

A must see

The Acts of the Apostles (Full Movie)

A must see

The Gospel of Matthew (Full Movie)

A must see

In the Beginning (Full Movie)
The prophet Jeremiah (Full Movie)
The Ten Commandments (1956 Full Movie)
Abraham, Sarah, Isaac, Jacob (Full Movie)

Jesus of Nazareth (1977 Full Movie)

Warning, this well-known movie does not really follow the Gospels. Do not rely on it to learn them.

| 8-J | Some movies in DVD format (low-cost)

These movies have 2 objectives:

- ° To give a general knowledge;
- ° To offer an entertainment.

Some movies may use word-for-word biblical text excerpts. Other movies are interpretations of its author, therefore his vision of the facts.

List	
<i>The Bible</i> <i>In The Beginning</i> Cinema Classics Collection Directed by John Huston (The first 22 chapters of Genesis)	<i>The Ten Commandments</i> <i>Les Dix Commandements</i> De Cecil B. DeMille Charlton Heston, Yul Brynner (Exodus, Moses)
<i>The Nativity Story</i> <i>(La Nativité)</i> Keisha Castle-Hughes (Marie) & Oscar Isaac (Joseph) (Quite complete)	<i>Mary of Nazareth</i> <i>Marie de Nazareth</i> A Film by Jean Delannoy Myriam Muller, Didier Bienaimé. (Smooth)
<i>Son Of God</i> <i>Le Fils de Dieu</i> Les producteurs Mark Burnett et Roma Downey (Modern and action)	<i>The Agony and the Ecstasy</i> <i>L'Extase et l'Agonie</i> Charlton Heston, Rex Harrison (Story of Michelangelo, the painter)
<i>Ben-hur</i> William Wyler's Charlton Heston (Entertainment)	<i>The Robe</i> <i>La Tunique</i> Richard Burton, Jean Simmons, etc. (Entertainment)

(*) Personally, I bought these movies for about \$5 Canadian each. We can find them in supermarkets or online stores (on the Internet).

| 9 | To follow the Way of Christ, is it necessary to be accompanied by a Christian movement?

Answer:

You can get help from a Christian movement if you wish, but it is not a necessity.
--

| 9-A | Introduction

A) Two difficulties, simplicity and the truth!

1) The first difficulty:

Many Christian movements think they have in their hands the powers of Christ and transmit the {gift of the Holy Spirit} to Christian baptism. Of course, you will not feel anything at all, because that is not the way it works. See article | 1-A |.

Later, during mass, they talk to you as if you had received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} while you did not receive anything. Obviously, their formulas become difficult to understand, abstract and mysterious. From then on, some followers even begin to lose interest in mass...

As I had the {gift of the Holy Spirit} in a concrete way, I understand what is said at mass. See chapter | 13 |.

On the other hand, for the follower **who did not have** the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, the words of mass will confuse him in error. He will believe that he is already saved while **he is not saved at all**.

The follower thinking himself saved now believes that he has very little to do as Christian. Then, he will fall asleep and will fork off of the Way of Christ...

In summary:

The words of mass apply to you only after your Manifestation of the {gift of the Holy Spirit} . (1)
--

The words of mass do not apply to you if you have not had your Manifestation .
--

(1) The {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a synonym for the {birth of the Spirit}. See article | 3-E |.

2) A second difficulty:

Several Christian movements base their catechesis on Eucharistic communion. The problem is that communion **is only a memorial**. This is indicated in the New Testament in several places. I do not understand why they have not seen it yet! This memorial is after the {birth of the Spirit}. I had this memorial at mass, but 3 months after my {birth of the Spirit}. See chapter | 13 |.

3) Simplicity:

Contrary to what some Christian movements think, Christ has kept all the power in his hands.
--

In reality, a follower does not need to understand a single mystery. The Lord wants the follower to believe in him and make his conversion of the heart every day in his life. The Lord wants the follower to follow his Way. Not that the follower spends his time juggling with mysteries! In order to prove that the conversion of the heart is much more important than the mystery. The first Gospel was made by St-Mark at the request of St-Peter. It is a Gospel of conversion of only 20 pages that has no mystery inside. At the beginning of their mission, the apostles worked with this one Gospel and their Epistles.

The only thing you really need to know is that if you do what Jesus asks, he will send the Holy Spirit to give you your {birth of the Spirit}. If you have not yet had your {birth of the Spirit}, it means that you are not working hard enough on yourself. You are not ready yet, it is not more complicated than that!
--

4) The truth:

Whether you are simply Christian or a religious person. For you, if rituals and mysteries are more important than believing in God and making your conversion of the heart every day... you will never have your {birth of the Spirit}. Keep dreaming because you will never go to Heaven! No ritual or mystery is needed to approach God. On the other hand, the deep need to find the Creator, goodness of heart and humility are essential for Him to reach out to you!

5) This book...

On the other hand, I do not have the choice to unravel the mystery, because there has been too much human confusion. In fact, in the course of history, humans have made Christianity very complicated when Christ had established something very simple...

B) Understand that no Christian movement will do the work for you in front of God...

Christianity is much more **a conversion of the heart and a relationship** (between a beloved child and his loving Parent) than a religion. It is a way of life. It is a family whose big brother (Jesus) came to announce how to live in harmony on earth and the place that he will reserve for you in the Kingdom of the Father if you follow his Way. The Lord wants children of light.

It is only Jesus Christ who Saves, no one else. It is only Jesus who makes the {gift of the Holy Spirit} when a person is ready to receive it.

Very important:

In reality, the **connection** between you and God is not made by a Christian movement, but by **the Holy Spirit**. The only job of the Christian movement is to proclaim the Gospels and prepare their followers for the Visit of the Holy Spirit.

This is what Jesus says:

NT	St-John	14,26	"But the Helper (1), the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all that I said to you.
----	---------	-------	---

(1) The Helper (or Paraclete) means "Intercessor."

Yes, it is true that it is more pleasant to participate in a group and **I encourage you to do so**. So, participate in it, but stay very vigilant because it is very easy to get lost...

NT	St-Matthew	7,13-14	"Enter through the narrow gate; for the gate is wide and the way is broad that leads to destruction, and there are many who enter through it. "For the gate is small and the way is narrow that leads to life, and there are few who find it . (1)
----	------------	---------	--

(1) Ironically, finding this Way took me only 45 years!

C) I cannot choose a Christian movement for you.

The only thing I can tell you is not to let yourself fall asleep, because you will never wake up...

Some movements will say something like, "A little water and a cross on the forehead and then Heaven at the end of your life!" It would be so easy if it was like that! After such a beautiful ritual, everyone could put the money first and only care about themselves! **But it does not work like that!**

|9-B| Some questions to ask to know if we are forking off from the Way of Christ

See also the 2 charts in article |3-A|.

A) A small list:

1) Does the Christian movement use an unrecognized Bible (internationally)?

→ If so, you do not have the Word (the Gospels) of Jesus in your hands.

2) In the course of history, has the movement forged beliefs outside the Bible? See article | 2-B |.

→ If so, you do not have the same beliefs as Christ.

3) Does the movement have a ceremony or ritual in which it involves more than yourself?

→ You can only commit yourself to God by a promise.

→ As for him, God has only made one Promise. It is the 2nd Covenant accessible to every human being in particular. It is the {gift of the Holy Spirit} on earth and Eternal Life at the end of his mortal life. But this is conditional on following the Word of Jesus as his Master, rejecting evil in his life and belonging to God. **Otherwise, there is nothing at all.**

4) Do you receive gifts of God without feeling them in your body?

→ Impossible, the Holy Spirit is always a concrete Manifestation in your body. See article | 13-J |.

5) For the Christian movement, is the devil at your door?

→ It is not fear that will make you love God! God is Love.

6) Does the movement cost a fair amount of money?

→ Jesus was poor and had no money.

7) Do you have to do things you do not want to do?

→ God is only freedom. It is for this reason that God does not impose himself on earth and that humans do whatever evil they want. We need only think of the horror of World War II.

8) Do you feel respected, you and your family?

→ God is only respect.

9) Does the movement prohibit you from certain health care services?

→ God is the Lord of the living and not of the dead.

10) Does the Christian movement give you the {gift of the Holy Spirit}?

→ Impossible, the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is made by **God alone** to a particular person when he is ready to receive it and not before. I received it at 45 years old spontaneously at home and in the middle of the night and I did not know that it existed!

11) During mass, do not you understand half of what is said, because there are too many mysterious words?

→ The more mysterious words there are, the more people who pronounce them show you that in reality they do not understand much. So, it is not in a vague direction that you will achieve what Christ is asking you to do!

12) Are you eager to get out of the mass of a Christian movement?

→ So, what are you doing there? Our Creator is far from dull! There are many other Christian movements waiting for you to better meet your personal needs on the Way of Jesus. You must understand that a Christian remains a Christian. He must absolutely **belong to Christ directly** and not to any Christian movement.

B) Finally, I give you 3 passages from the Scripture that will make you think:

NT	St-John	10,16	"I have other sheep (1), which are not of this fold; I must bring them also, and they will hear My voice (2); and they will become one flock (3) <i>with</i> one shepherd (4).
----	---------	-------	--

(1): The 2nd Covenant is available to every human being in the world and not only to the Jews of the time.

(2): It is to recognize that Jesus Christ is the Son of God and to follow him.

(3): It is the {assembly of God's children}.

(4): It is Jesus Christ.

NT	St-Paul, Epistle to the Romans	8,9	...But if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Him.
----	--------------------------------	-----	---

(*) One must have received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} in himself concretely to be a {God's child}.

NT	Paul, 1st Epistle to the Corinthians	3,16	Do you not know that you are a temple of God and <i>that</i> the Spirit of God dwells in you?
----	--------------------------------------	------	---

(*) One must have received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} in himself concretely to be a {God's child}.

If you have felt nothing of God, it is because you have received nothing from him!

|9-C| What is the true role of Christian movements?

See also article |3-A|.

NT	Acts of the Apostles	1,5	for John baptized with water (2), but you will be baptized with the Holy Spirit (1) not many days from now."
----	----------------------	-----	---

(1) Here is a translated excerpt from the footnote of the Bible (Jérusalem 1977, des Éditions du Cerf): "The baptism of the Spirit, already announced by John the Baptist, and here promised by Jesus, will be inaugurated by the outpouring of Pentecost. Then, according to the order of Christ, the apostles will continue to administer **the baptism of water as a rite of initiation** to God's kingdom."

(2) The holy apostles gave only a rite of initiation. So no Christian movement does more than that, too.

NT	St-Matthew	28,18-20	And Jesus came up and spoke to them, saying, "All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on earth (1). "Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations (2), baptizing them (3) in the name of the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit, teaching them (4) to observe all that I commanded you (5); and lo, I am with you always, even to the end of the age." (6)
----	------------	----------	---

(1) It is Jesus who has all the powers and not humans.

(2) To announce the Good News of the Risen Jesus.

(3) To give a baptism of initiation.

(4) To teach and set an example.

(5) The 4 Gospels.

(6) The Presence of God on earth is done by the Holy Spirit.

In summary:

1) Christ has all the powers.
2) Christian movements only have an accompanying role: a) To teach the Gospels and to set an example. b) To give water baptism as a rite of Christian initiation. c) To help the followers in their preparation in order to receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.

|9-D| How to unlock in order to get his {birth of the Spirit}? The basics

Understand that if you have not had your {birth of the Spirit} yet, it is not that it does not exist, but rather that you are doing something that prevents you from getting it. If you do not look for the truth in your life, **it is over**.

Some basic questions to ask yourself:

- ° Is good agreement and mutual aid priority? Or your priorities are objects, power, money and success.
- ° Are you straight and honest? Are you looking for reality and truth in your life? Or personal benefits.
- ° Do you really have a kind heart? Or deep down, it is more about appearance.
- ° Do you really believe in God? Or rather it is a family tradition.
- ° Do you need God to help you direct your life? Or you want to manage it alone.
- ° Do you fulfill the promises of your Christian baptism?
- ° Do you know the Gospels enough to recite bits of sentences easily?
- ° In your life, do you try to conform to the teachings of the Gospels?

|9-E| How to unlock in order to get his {birth of the Spirit}? Your commitment

A few questions:

1) In the world, are there several Christian movements? Or a single united movement...

NT	St-Paul, 1st Epistle to the Corinthians	1,12-13	Now I mean this, that each one of you is saying, "I am of Paul," and "I of Apollos," and "I of Cephas," and "I of Christ." Has Christ been divided? Paul was not crucified for you, was he? Or were you baptized in the name of Paul?
----	---	---------	---

(*) See article |2-B|

2) Do Christian movements have the same beliefs? Have some of them moved away from the Gospels?

NT	St-Paul, Epistle to the Galatians	1,9	As we have said before, so I say again now, if any man is preaching to you a gospel contrary to what you received, he is to be accursed! (1)
----	-----------------------------------	-----	--

(1) Accursed (or anathema) means: worthless, **which is excluded** from Christ. See article |4-A|.

3) Does each Christian belong to Christ directly or to his respective Christian movement?

NT	St-Paul, Epistle to the Romans	8,9	... But if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Him.
----	--------------------------------	-----	--

(*) Obviously, St-Paul talks about the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit}.

4) For Christians, are sacred objects and rituals more important than belonging to Christ?

NT	St-Matthew	7,21	"Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father who is in heaven <i>will enter</i> ."
----	------------	------	---

5) Where does the Spirit of God reside? Maybe at the back of the church in a small box!

NT	St-Paul, 1st Epistle to the Corinthians	3,16	Do you not know that you are a temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you?
----	---	------	--

6) How to obtain the forgiveness of our sins? Perhaps by our sacrifices!

NT	St-Matthew	12,7	"But if you had known what this means, 'I desire compassion, and not a sacrifice,' ..."
----	------------	------	---

7) Are you looking for the truth in your life? Or to obtain human benefits?

NT	St-Paul, Epistle to the Galatians	1,10	For am I now seeking the favor of men, or of God? Or am I striving to please men? If I were still trying to please men, I would not be a bond-servant of Christ.
----	-----------------------------------	------	--

8) Do you believe enough in God?

In reality, there are several levels within the meaning of the word "believe." I, before the beginning of my research on God in October 2015, thought that I believed in God. But I did not know that my level of belief was not enough. To get to your {birth of the Spirit}, you will have to see nature around you (animals, plants, etc.) really as the tangible work of God. It is his garden and his little beings. You will have to be convinced of the existence of God as much as that of your nose in your face! It is only that you have not met him yet. You will even have to believe enough not to be too surprised that an angel might really appear to you. **Yes, just that!** This step (to truly believe in God) is difficult to achieve because it is a "gift that God alone can give you." See chapter | 12 |.

In Christianity, the expression "to have faith" has many meanings. For most people, that means "believe." But in reality, it is more than that. The word "faith" means "commitment." To have faith means → to believe enough to commit oneself to the Way of Christ.

NT	Epistle of St-James	2,17	Even so faith, if it has no works, is dead, <i>being</i> by itself.
----	---------------------	------	---

9) Are you in religion with God or in **relationship**?

Jesus reveals God as the Heavenly Father. God is immaterial and he reads directly into our heart. He does not want to have people crawling on all fours in front of him! No, he wants children!

Here is a proof...

OT	Ezekiel	2,2	As He (1) spoke to me (2) the Spirit entered me and set me on my feet (3); and I heard <i>Him</i> speaking to me.
----	---------	-----	---

(1) God.

(2) The prophet Ezekiel.

(3) God wants to be in a relationship with the person.

The shortest definition of the word religion is "the management of the sacred." Currently, this involves objects, clothing, images and rituals.

If you see God as a religion, it will be difficult to get your {birth of the Spirit}. **A religion is human!** I am not the only one to say it, even the Blessed Virgin said it during her Apparitions in Medjugorje. Basically, the Blessed Virgin said that Jesus is the Word that you must "**integrate into your life**" every day. It is for this reason that Jesus presents himself as the "living Word that must be eaten."

NT	St-John	6,57	"As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who eats Me, he also will live because of Me.
----	---------	------	--

Here are 3 very short verses, but that say a lot about what Jesus asks:

NT	Acts of the Apostles	2,41-42	So then, those (1) who had received his word (2) were baptized (3); and that day there were added about three thousand souls. They were continually devoting themselves to the apostles' teaching (4) and to fellowship (5), to the breaking of bread (6) and to prayer (7).
----	----------------------	---------	--

1) The early Christians.

2) They decide and open their mind to the Word of God.

3) They go into action and enter into the small community through the initiation of water baptism in the name of Jesus.

4) They are diligent and put the teachings of Jesus into practice every day (they make their conversion of the heart).

5) They are united, have a kind heart, forgive and help each other.

6) They commemorate the Sacrifice of Jesus. Jesus being the only Truth, the only Way, the only Life.

7) They ask the Lord for help and thank him for the graces granted.

From these 7 points, see how we have moved away from what Christ is asking. Then, you understand why the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is so rare!

Let's go further...

Read the Gospels carefully and you will see that Jesus is asking for more than a religion. He holds Eternal Life, and the only way to have it in your turn is to mix your human life with his own. **It is not anything!** It is why God sends the Intercessor (the Holy Spirit). It is because humanly, we are too weak to reach the necessary by ourselves!

10) What is the cross?

a) To carry his cross.

There are many Christian movements which believe that it is necessary to suffer a lot to follow the Way of Christ. It is true that the expression "to bear his cross" is written in the Gospels. Except that you have to put yourself in context. At the time of the evangelists, the early Christians were martyred in spite of themselves by the Romans.

But now, the Roman Empire no longer exists and Christianity is the largest religion in the world. So, we have to update ourselves a bit!

NT	St-Matthew	10,14	"Whoever does not receive you, nor heed your words, as you go out of that house or that city, shake the dust off your feet. (1)
		10,23	"But whenever they persecute you in one city, flee to the next (2) ...

(1) In the past, how many Christians have lost their faith because religious people have imposed Christianity.

(2) How many religious people have been martyred needlessly to defend their building rather than run away.

So, what does it mean "to carry his cross?" It is simply when someone chooses to do good on earth, it is obvious that other people who have not made the same choice will give him some misery. So, we must continue to move forward without becoming bitter. We must forgive. It is necessary to remain good in spite of everything with the example of Christ. See article |12-D|.

b) The cross, an important symbol.

Furthermore, I point out to you that worshiping a cross is not in the Gospels. The Lord was not in admiration before his cross, he died on it! On the other hand, the cross is a symbol of shame for humanity. It represents our madness and our rejection of our own Creator! Through this symbol, a Christian must recognize his own wickedness and see where it leads! Subsequently, this symbol makes it possible to bring forth the desire of the conversion of the heart to obtain the Forgiveness of God.

11) Did a Christian movement put you to sleep?

You were baptized then for what to make an effort! Everyone on the bus to Heaven! See article |1-B|. I closed my eyes for 45 years. It would have been possible that I never open them again...

|9-F| How to unlock in order to get his {birth of the Spirit}? Your head and your heart

A) Intellectualization.

It is easy to intellectualize the texts of the Bible. These texts are mysterious and therefore stimulating. It is even possible to study the Bible in every little detail for years. **But Jesus asks to pass his Word from head to heart** and not to be an absolute specialist of the Scriptures.

B) Not to confront human malice.

To make a small world to oneself, well protected from the wickedness of our society, does not help to obtain our {birth of the Spirit}. In reality, the suffering and evil that humans do on earth is "the stepladder of the heart" to cry out to God and take his hand, "Lord, come and help me, I need you in my life!"

C) To be scared of the reality of God.

Talking about the Holy Spirit like that is very interesting and captivating. **It is not disturbing as long as He does not really appear!** We do not want to be seen as crazy, are we? Humans love human praise, they do not like being perceived as an illuminated person...

The difficulty is God! God is neither human nor material. Jesus says of his Father that he is Spirit (Wind). So, how to pray "the true God who is Spirit" when we are scared that he really appears to us!

→ In reality, in order to become a {God's child}, God must be Present!

→ ***You just have to trust, because God is our Creator. When you meet him, you will see that he is a Love! See article | 13-D |.***

D) To be scared of the devil.

Surely you have heard about the idea that if we come near God, the devil is approaching at the same time. Well, this idea is absurd!

In chapter | 18 |, we will discover that the devil does not exist as: "a supernatural being of Evil."

However, let's not go too fast with a simplistic conclusion. The devil really exists as: "a fundamental concept in our head, our natural fear of death." It is for this reason that the devil is so present in the Scriptures of the Bible. The devil is "**the personalization of a reality of our psyche**" that is natural and necessary for everyone to defend themselves and stay alive.

It is for this reason that a "supernatural being of Evil" is much talk about in Christianity as in many other religions besides. This is because the fear of death is natural for every human being.

The real difficulty is superstition. It is scary and it is very morally exhausting. Then our brain, being alert of a possible danger that it cannot concretely identify, can create us the idea of the devil to make us flee.

→ I can assure you that you can approach God without any fear!

| 9-G | Just one Way of Life (Jesus Christ) for everyone

Stay close to the Word (Jesus) only, for he is the Resurrection and the Life. **You can be in touch with God even from your home.** The only Person who will come to you for real is the Holy Spirit when you will be ready, but not before. God loves you and you have the right to live on earth in peace, respect for others and for yourself. God is already there beside you now and waiting for you **whether you are Christian or not**. It is simply a matter of removing your selfishness and opening your heart to him. It is so little to receive so much!

| 10 | God and {God's children}

Here, I discuss some important concepts from my synthesis work (**done in 2017**) between the Scriptures (the Bible) and my dozen Manifestations of the Holy Spirit from chapter | 13 |.

A) The Holy Trinity.

From article | 3-E |.

The Christian dogma of the Holy Trinity was made in the 0300s.

In simple terms: the Father being the Will; the Son being the Word; the Holy Spirit being the Breath.

I will use this dogma systematically until chapter | 31 |.

Generally speaking, the Holy Spirit is the Breath or Wind of God.

On the other hand, there are:

1) The (Breath or Wind) not containing the Presence of God. It is the Power of God.

2) The (Breath or Wind) containing the Presence of God. See article | 13-D |.

Since the Bible does not differentiate between them and uses a general term (**Spirit**), I too will not differentiate between them until chapter | 31 |. ***This is so, as not to confuse people when reading the Bible.***

Thereafter, from chapter | 32 | of 2019 to chapter | 34 | of 2022, the Lord will give me additional Manifestations of the Spirit in order to completely solve the mystery of the Holy Trinity. We will see that in reality, it is precisely this “famous fabricated dogma” that prevents a simple understanding of the Bible.

On the other hand, to read the Bible, we absolutely need to know the dogma of the Holy Trinity.

So, let's start...

For Christian theology, God presents himself to humans as ONE God, but composed of 3 Persons. The 3 Persons are so united that together they form only ONE God.

There is:

- ° The Father;
- ° The Son;
- ° The Holy Spirit.

They compose the Holy Trinity.

The word Holy is the qualifier of God. Only God is Holy (without any evil).

We could make a small comparison with our hand. We have 5 fingers, but they are the fingers of one hand.

B) A {God's child}.

The process used by God to make a {God's child} from a human being has always been rather mysterious. The problem resides in the fact that God is (eternal, immaterial) and that the human being is (mortal, material).

In order to elucidate this mystery as much as possible, we must strive to better understand the reality of God and that of the support of human life.

We have seen in point F) of article | 3-D | that there are 3 ways to see the support of life of the human being.

1) The old point of view of the Greeks.

Since it is false, it will not be used.

2) The old point of view of the Jews.

It is very useful for understanding the Bible.

In chapter |31|, I use this old point of view to present a basic summary of the mechanism of the {birth of the Spirit}. This old point of view is less realistic than the modern point of view used in chapter |30|. On the other hand, this old point of view is easier to understand.

3) A modern point of view (since the 1900s).

This is the method used here in this book because it helps to elucidate the most mysteries.

Let's go!

|10-A| The Holy Spirit, a mystery for many people...

See also article |8-E|.

A) Why is it so difficult to define the Holy Spirit?

This is because many people teach and write about the Holy Spirit and do not even know they have not received him in them! They have not experienced him and do not even know that the Holy Spirit is always a concrete Manifestation. So, they stir up learned words that others have written and they mix up a lot of people with all that...

B) In the Bible, why is the Holy Spirit so mysterious?

In the Scriptures, we see the Holy Spirit primarily through the eyes of the 4 evangelists and St-Paul. It is true that the idea of the Holy Spirit is foggy. Why did not they write more clearly?

Here are some probable reasons:

- 1) The mystery has always been fascinating. It is a natural driving force for humans. To solve the mystery, we must look for the answers. This work changes our mentality and moves us forward.
- 2) In the image of the parables of Jesus (difficult to understand), set aside those who do not want to make an effort to understand so that they do not harm the apostles.
- 3) The level of science was low at the time. The current logical and rigorous thought did not exist.
- 4) The Scriptures were made so that only those who have had their {birth of the Spirit} understand the mystery. This allowed people who did not understand asking for help from those who received it. **As I am doing right now for you in this book.**
- 5) The mysterious form of the Scriptures has allowed them to pass through time until now. Fortunately in the course of history, since humans (alone without the Holy Spirit) do not have the ability to understand the mystery, they no longer had the ability to modify it. So, we currently have Scriptures of sufficient quality.

Now, I am going to take away some of the mystery. In fact, it is easier than we think!

|10-B| The least known Person

As I said, there are 3 Persons. But logically, they should be rather indicated in this order:

- ° The Father;
- ° The Holy Spirit;
- ° The Son.

You will understand later...

In Christianity, it is common to say that the Holy Spirit is the least known Person of God.

This is really strange! In reality, it is the Person who should be the best known...

In reality:

It is through the Gospels that we know the Son.

It is through the Revelations of the Son that we know the Father.

It is when the Holy Spirit Presents himself to us that the Word of the Son becomes alive and real.

So, if many Christians do not know who the Holy Spirit is, it is because they have not met him yet.

This is what St-Paul said:

NT	St-Paul, Epistles to the Romans	8,9	... But if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Him.
----	---------------------------------	-----	--

| 10-C | A basic image of God in 3 Persons

A) If we associate the person with his function:

1) The Father is: the Eternal; Foundation; Perfection; Love; Goodness; Source.

→ The Father is **God who is the Source of Existence.**

2) The Holy Spirit or simply the Spirit is: the Breath of Eternal Life of God.

The Holy Spirit is the Vital Power that comes out of the Father.

The Holy Spirit is also the link of Unity (the cohesion) of God.

→ The Holy Spirit is **God who is the Union of Life.**

3) Now, let's go for the Son...

Reading the Gospels, Jesus is called "master," which means teacher. He says he is the only Way to Eternal Life. At the beginning of his mission, he calls himself the "Son of man." Subsequently, he is revealed as the "Son of God" or the "Word of God." Now, in the days of Jesus, what did every son do? He learned from his father a trade and humbly received instruction.

If we rephrase in one sentence:

Jesus is the teacher with the humility of taking the human condition (Son of man) so that the human being, by taking his Way, may become {a son or a daughter of God}. On his Way, a human being goes from a man's child to a God's child. It is about letting yourself be led with confidence.

Now back to the Person of the Son...

The Son is: the Word, the Master or the Teacher.

→ The Son is **God who Educates.**

At the end of his mission, Jesus goes so far as to die to give an example of what he teaches. Is there a bigger teacher than him?

B) If God is compared to human communication:

1) The Father is the Will. 2) The Holy Spirit is the Breath. 3) The Son is the Word.

C) If God is compared to a human being:

Humanly, it is obvious that I am not able to read in the mind of a person (interior). By cons, I can understand the mind of a person if I listen to him (exterior). I draw a parallel here:

- 1) The Father is the Internal of God or the Existence (the Invisible of God).
- 2) The Son is the External of God or the Word (the Visible of God).
- 3) The Holy Spirit is the Union of Life of God. He is the Union between the Internal and the External.

| 10-D | The world of humans and the World of God

To go further in the search for the Holy Trinity of God, we must define the 2 world/Word.

But before, I have to talk about the concept of **good and evil**.

A) Good and evil.

- 1) What is good and evil? Do you know that? Yes! Are you so sure about that?

The problem is that we differentiate between **good and evil** through established criteria. Let it be criteria of the society in which we live. Let it be religious criteria. But these criteria have always been redefined according to the times.

Examples:

About 1300 B.C.	God gave Moses the 2 Tables of Law. These are the 10 Commandments.
From the 10 Commandments.	The Pharisees of the time of Jesus had made more than 600 rules.
In the year 0030.	Jesus simplified all this in one sentence: "To love God and others as oneself."
In the year 1995.	The Civil Code of Québec contains more than 3,000 articles.

- 2) In reality, there is only God who has **Absolute Knowledge** in order to make the difference between **good and evil**.

We only "think that" according to the criteria learned during our education.

On earth, our human life is autonomous (biological) and not united to God. Then, all the possibilities of action of good and all the possibilities of action of evil are inevitable. Since Eternity, God has made his own choice of good only. Now, he asks every human being on earth to make his own choice. Those who make the same choice as him will be called "God's children." Those who do not make the same choice will not have this favor.

It is for this reason that it is said, "In the Kingdom of God, we will do only the Will of God."

It is obvious! In this place, there are only the possibilities of action of good, so it will not be difficult to do...

B) What is most important to get his {birth of the Spirit}?

Becoming a "God's child" means everything...

To take the existence of God seriously.	It is impossible to go in one direction without firmly believing it. A child has confidence in his parents.
To make your conversion of the heart.	God is without evil, so his child must make the same choice. It is necessary to make efforts.
To belong to God.	A child belongs to his parents and has access to his home. God cannot share his Life (the Holy Spirit) with us if we do not share our life with him. Subsequently, the Holy Spirit gives the necessary qualities to the person in order to do the least possible evil.

To go further, see chapter | 12 |.

Now, let's define the 2 world/World...

C) The world of humans is:

- ° Material;
- ° Temporal;
- ° Deadly;
- ° Individual.

It is a world totally free of experimentation. The human being has an individual life form (biological) without God, hence its total freedom of choice. The human being can do anything he wants even atrocious things. This temporal world is limited (temporary) because evil is possible and God does not eternally finance the life of those who do evil. The human being is responsible for the evil he does and he receives no evil supernatural influence. Satan is a symbol. The devil is not a supernatural being. The devil is the psychic personification of our fear of dying. To go further, see chapter | 18 |.

Why is our world temporal and limited?

This is because it is possible to do evil on earth and God only allows it "temporarily."

Our entire universe functions as an "hourglass" or a "battery" that God has given us. There is always a full container that empties into another until it is exhausted.

I give you 3 examples:

- 1) A waterfall is a reservoir that flows to a lower basin.
- 2) Our Sun is slowly consuming itself to heat Earth and will eventually run out in 5 billion years.
- 3) The energy of the "Big Bang" flows into the void of space until its total cooling.

D) The World of God is:

- ° Immaterial;
- ° Timeless;
- ° Eternal;
- ° Unified.

This World is filtered by God. Unlike our world on earth, all the possibilities for action of evil are absent. In this World, all beings live in the perfect Unity (without any evil) of God. It is a World where beings are so United that they all share the same "Breath of Life of God." It is a World where death and suffering do not exist, because the choice of evil does not exist either. In this World, all beings have their own personality and are free to do whatever they want in the possibilities of good.

E) Similar characteristics between the 2 world/World.

God being the Creator of our world (our universe), we find similar characteristics of his World in ours.

Examples:

- 1) In physics, we know that the laws that govern our universe are **perfect**.
- 2) In physics, we know that by nuclear combustion, it is possible to make matter disappear in the **non-material form** (energy, heat, light, radiation).
- 3) In physics, we know that Earth spins on a **perfect and lossless** imaginary axis around Sun in an empty space for almost an **eternity** (billions of years).
- 4) Through ecology, we know that the atmosphere, animals, plants, insects and bacteria are all **perfectly united** on Earth in an **endless cycle of life** (billions of years) as long as the Sun is shining.

F) Why is the World of God timeless?

God presented Himself to man under the Name of Yahweh. His Name means "past, present, future." God is the **Eternal**. Since eternity has no beginning and no end, then there is no time between the 2 either.

| 10-E | Who is the Holy Spirit?

Look closely at the characteristics of the 2 world/World of article | 10-D | and you will understand that they cannot touch each other. They are completely sealed and separated from each other. So, it takes a means of communication between the 2 world/World. It takes a means of exchange or transfer.

This means of transfer is the Holy Spirit! Everything goes through him...

Then, who is the Holy Spirit?

In one sentence, the Holy Spirit is the "**Living Unity**" or the "**Living Bridge**" connecting the 2 world/Word.

1) In the World of God, the Holy Spirit is the "Breath of Life of God" shared among all.

2) In our world on earth. As we cannot feel the immaterial reality of God, the Holy Spirit makes for us Manifestations adapted to our condition of biological life to convey the "Message of the World of God" here.

| 10-F | 2 forms of life

In this article, I will only talk about the basics. To go further, see chapter | 30 |.

As there are 2 world/World, there are also 2 forms of life.

1) The biological or mortal life form on earth.

It is our "**human or biological body**" that we know very well.

2) The form of Eternal Life in the Kingdom of God.

The qualifier of the word spirit being spiritual, St-Paul simply gives it the name of "**spiritual body**."

| 10-G | What is the form of life in the World of God?

Personally, I have not seen any Apparition until now (2017). However, there are people who have seen it.

The Apparitions of the Blessed Virgin Mary are described with "splendor." See chapter | 6 |.

It is said that angels have a "luminous human body."

It is said that Jesus had a "Resurrected Body without limits" and that he passed through the walls.

It is said that we will live in the Presence (Glory) of God. With the same feeling of "happiness and peace" as during the {birth of the Spirit}, but this time forever. See article | 13-D |.

The same words always come back: "human; immaterial; luminous; splendor; without limits; happiness and peace."

This will make a big positive change with our human condition!

Notes:

In February 2022, I had an Apparition of the Lord Jesus. See article 34-N in point 3).
In April 2023, I had a Manifestation of Mary. See article 37-A .

| 10-H | How does the Holy Spirit operate between the 2 world/World?

Never will a human being know it and that's fine! Let our Creator do his work and we do ours...

To be sure you understand well. On earth, the Holy Spirit always makes real Manifestations and adapted to our world to enable us to be in **relationship with** the World of God.

I give some examples from chapter | 6 |.

A) Outside of us:

Manifestation	message...
The miracle of a host that changes into flesh and blood.	The Memorial of the sacrifice of the body of Jesus on the cross.
The miracle of a host that is levitating over the paten.	Levitation is the sign of a divinity. Jesus is the Son of God.
The miracle of a saint who died and who is incorruptible even after hundreds of years.	God is the Eternal. In (St-John: 11,25), Jesus says, "I am the resurrection, who believes in me, even if he dies, will live."

B) Inside us:

Manifestation	message...
Put a message directly in our brain as in an Apparition, a Vision, a Perfume.	God shows us that He is the Supreme Consciousness. There is nothing impossible for him.
The {birth of the Spirit}.	It is the bond of unity between God and the person on earth. To go further, see chapter 30 .

| 10-I | Concretely, how is the {gift of the Holy Spirit} made?

Some Christian movements will tell you that it is through your Christian baptism. Others will tell you that it is when you believe in God. Others will tell you that it is by the sign of "speaking in tongues." See article | 27-B |.

People have mixed everything up so much that the Lord made me a special Manifestation to confirm this subject.

→ It is only through the {birth of the Spirit} that I describe you. Nothing else!

When St-John says that you must "believe" to go to the Kingdom of God, read his texts carefully and you will see that the word "believe" is a bundle of things. Not only: "I think." If you do everything in his famous word "believe," you will have your {birth of the Spirit} in a short period of time. In brief, the word "believe" of St-John is all the things you need to do in order for Jesus to give you your {birth of the Spirit}.

Some people will say, "If the Holy Spirit gives me a Manifestation like feeling a Perfume in my head, it is because the Holy Spirit is already in my head, so I have received it!" **No.** You must understand that God is everywhere around us and even through our human body. God does not come in or out of a place. God is immaterial and you cannot feel him. On the other hand, God can do all the physical and biological Manifestations that he wants. Manifestations on earth are (biological or physical) because the human being is (biological and physical). In fact, to go to the Kingdom of God, you need only one particular Manifestation, that of your {birth of the Spirit}. Even if you had "Visions" and "Apparitions," it does not change anything! **One Manifestation does not replace another.**

I give you a little revelation from chapter | 30 |. A person cannot go into a world without having a suitable body to go there. It is simple!

The {birth of the Spirit} is a particular Manifestation to be mixed with no other. See article | 13-D |.

Warning.

It is very important to understand that a person can have "Visions, Messages, Apparitions" when he has not had his {birth of the Spirit} yet. In order to prove it to you, St-Paul (also called Saul) had an Apparition of the Son of God while he was going to persecute the disciples of Jesus...

NT	Acts of the Apostles	22,6-8	"But it happened that as I was on my way, approaching Damascus about noontime, a very bright light suddenly flashed from heaven all around me, and I fell to the ground and heard a voice saying to me, 'Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting Me?' "And I answered, 'Who are You, Lord?' And He said to me, 'I am Jesus the Nazarene, whom you are persecuting.'
----	----------------------	--------	---

|10-J| A Person of God in me?

Now, for the reader who says to himself, "Since the Holy Spirit is a Person of God, will I be haunted by this Person if he enters me?"

No, I think you have been watching too many movies on TV....

Does your human breath in your nostrils haunt you? Does the biological life of your human body haunt you? **No, well it is the same thing!**

Come on, do not be scared, God is our Creator, we cannot be in better hands!

In reality, every Christian must prepare to receive the **{gift of the Holy Spirit}** which is the (Breath of Eternal Life).

From there, you are a {God's child} and heir to his Kingdom. If you ask "something righteous in the eyes of your Heavenly Father," he will send the Holy Spirit to give it to you on earth. Then, you will feel his return as a Wind. His name is Spirit, which means Wind in the Greek language. He will then present himself to you as a "pleasant wind!" You may be a bit surprised, but do not be scared of our Creator...

It is important to know that the Holy Spirit is the **Breath** of God and not the Word. It is for this reason that one must seek in the Word (the Gospels) to understand the Message he is making.

The Holy Spirit is our "Intercessor" and can bring us many things: comfort; the feeling that God loves us; the feeling that we are not alone with our miseries. You can even get miracles for yourself or others. Then you will see, I do not make promises for God.

While watching testimonials on the Internet, I could catch a glimpse of something surprising. Sometimes I get the impression that people who were sick then were healed when the Breath of Life of God came into them. I saw the testimony of a person with AIDS who was healed and who even got married and whose wife had two very healthy children. I saw the testimony of a schizophrenic (who believed himself to be haunted by the devil) and who was healed when the **Light** of the Holy Spirit came into him! So if you have a health problem right now, you may be lucky that the Holy Spirit heals you at the same time. **That will make 2 gifts!**

I am in good health. I can tell you that my health is not better after my {birth of the Spirit} than before. So, I ask the Lord only to feel his Presence when I miss him and the {inspiration} for his book. Usually, after a request, the Lord makes me a little Manifestation in a short period of time. The "Heaven delivery service" is very good. I told him that he can give me all the Manifestations he wants without any problem and that he does not need my permission. After more than a dozen Manifestations (in 2017), I am not really surprised when the Holy Spirit arrives. It is rather the meaning of the Message that requires several hours of work. Sometimes I have to refer to my other Manifestations to understand.

On the other hand, it is true that I had a healing at the beginning of October 2016. It is a request that I made to the Lord in order to write his book. Working on a computer screen for a long period of time gives me a tired neck. Since I had a dislocated vertebra in my neck, I had a lot of difficulty doing exercises to remove this fatigue. If you want to read more, see article |13-R|.

You see the love of our Creator for us. So, why would you do without him? He is here nearby you and waiting for you now! It is not his love that is the problem, but our human selfishness...

↑ (Essential articles)	They are necessary for understanding the next chapter.
↓ (Optional articles)	They give additional information.

| 10-K | Apparitions, Visions, Messages...

I have had several types of Manifestations. The most important are described in chapter | 13 |. Sometimes the Lord gives me a "flash" of 5 seconds after a prayer. Sometimes I ask myself a question, and immediately after, the Lord makes a deep feeling appear in me, but there is no word. An important point is that Messages are always very short. On the other hand, they are very rich in meaning.

It should be known that Apparitions are usually intended for young people; or to people who do not know the Gospels; or to make a Message that is not related to the Gospels. For example, if God wants a small chapel in one place, it is obvious that it will take a Messenger to say it and some miracles for the incredulous people. Usually the Lord sends the Blessed Virgin for this work...

As far as I am concerned (2017), I give you the big points:

- 1) I had my {birth of the Spirit} at night. See article | 13-D |.
- 2) I had twice a {memorial of the communion with Christ} during the Eucharist on Sunday. See article | 13-G |.
- 3) If I am missing an important piece of information for this book, the Holy Spirit comes a few minutes especially at night around 3 o' clock to make me a Message. This is not a joke, the Lord really likes the number 3! Basically, he makes me live an experience and then I have to find the Message for myself. At first, I was looking on the Internet for quick explanations and I realized that they were even more confused than me. In reality, it is only when I look in the Bible that I find the answers.

A) What's going on for a Vision?

As I said in article | 10-F |, there are 2 forms of life:

- 1) The biological or mortal life form on earth. It is the **human body**.
- 2) The form of Eternal Life in the Kingdom of God. It is the **spiritual body**.

The Holy Spirit is the "Living Bridge" or the "Communication" between the 2 world/World.

For example, Old Testament prophets often had visions. In science, we know the principle of telecommunication. I will apply it here:

- 1) First of all, in the Kingdom, the Son of God (the Word) gives the Message.
- 2) Subsequently, the Holy Spirit establishes the "Communication" on earth through a biological Manifestation directly in the brain of the prophet.
- 3) Finally, the prophet lives the Vision and must extract its meaning.

→ For a good example, see article | 22-D |.

B) What happens for an Apparition?

It is similar to a Vision except this time the Messenger (example: the Blessed Virgin) speaks in front of you.

I give you an example:

Here is an excerpt from article | 6-K |:

Bernadette is then surprised by a noise, like a gust of **wind** [...] Afterwards, Bernadette looks up and the Beautiful Lady is there! She is smiling and does not speak...

(*) This **Wind** is the Presence of the 3rd Person of God (the Holy Spirit) who says, "Hello, I Am here!"

The Holy Spirit is the Breath of God. Here, it is the Holy Spirit who **brings** the Blessed Virgin to Bernadette. Thereafter, it is the Blessed Virgin who **speaks**. The Holy Spirit allows Communication between the spiritual body of the Blessed Virgin and the human body of Bernadette.

Note:

The Holy Spirit makes Manifestations. Examples: it can be a Vision or feelings in you. As if God is dropping the Message directly into your head. No, it is not words in your ears.

C) Why a direct biological Manifestation in the brain of the person?

Imagine that the Lord would give you a real and physical message in front of you as you would like to see it. What will he show you? A flash of light to blind you and make you lose the retina of your eyes! Fire to burn your skin like a sausage! Nuclear power to pulverize your body! So we must be realistic, a direct message in our head is very good, thank you!

→ Communication in the head (direct) is **much more precise** than external and indirect communication through our eyes and ears.

On the other hand...

In the Old Testament, in the books of Exodus and Leviticus, God made **truly physical Manifestations** before the Hebrew people in the wilderness. Why? Mystical Manifestations (in our heads) are for particular people who truly believe in God. Physical Manifestations (before our eyes) are for the unbelievers (the people or the vast majority of people).

AT	Exodus	40,34-38	Then the cloud covered the meeting tent, and the glory of the LORD filled the Dwelling. Moses could not enter the meeting tent, because the cloud settled down upon it and the glory of the LORD filled the Dwelling. Whenever the cloud rose from the Dwelling, the Israelites would set out on their journey. But if the cloud did not lift, they would not go forward; only when it lifted did they go forward. In the daytime the cloud of the LORD was seen over the Dwelling; whereas at night, fire was seen in the cloud by the whole house of Israel in all the stages of their journey.
	Leviticus	16,2	and said to him, "Tell your brother Aaron that he is not to come whenever he pleases into the sanctuary, inside the veil, in front of the propitiatory on the ark; otherwise, when I reveal myself in a cloud above the propitiatory, he will die. (1)

(1) In the Bible, this is where the idea comes from that it is impossible to see God and live. On the contrary, God can be seen, because Jesus came on earth.

D) God accessible to all.

For people who have serious and sometimes terrible sins, everything you have done is forgivable for the Lord. The only thing that is unforgivable is your attitude:

- ° Not to need God in your life, not to look for him (to be indifferent);
- ° Not to want to make an inner effort to become a good right and honest person;
- ° Your unbelief;
- ° Your selfishness;
- ° Your lack of humility.

The lack of a single point on this list will prevent you from receiving the Holy Spirit in you. What does the word Holy mean? Without evil! So if you like to do evil, the Holy Spirit cannot unite with you...

NT	St-Matthew	13,13-15	"Therefore I speak to them in parables; because while seeing they do not see, and while hearing they do not hear, nor do they understand. "In their case the prophecy of Isaiah is being fulfilled, which says, "You will keep on hearing, but will not understand, you will keep on seeing, but will not perceive; for the heart of this people has become dull, with their ears they scarcely hear, and they have close their eyes, otherwise they would see with their eyes, hear with their ears, and understand with their heart and return, and I would heal them. " (1)
		12.31	"Therefore I say to you, any sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven people, but blasphemy against the Spirit shall not be forgiven. (2)

(1) It is hearing, understanding and putting into practice the Word of God in order to heal from his spiritual blindness.

(2) The sin against the Spirit is simply not to make every effort to obtain the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.

| 10-L | To receive some help from the Holy Spirit

Here, it is not Manifestations, but psychological help that the Holy Spirit offers you.

As I just mentioned, the Holy Spirit does many different things. It is just a matter of identifying them.

A) An important help is to truly believe in God.

It is very subtle, at the moment when you start to truly believe in God, there is like an inspiration and a "switch" that engages in your brain. From there, you believe in God as much as in the presence of your nose in your face! You are convinced that he exists, it is only that you have not met him yet. You will never believe more than that, even when you have your {birth of the Spirit}.

NT	St-John	6,65	And He was saying, "For this reason I have said to you, that no one can come to Me unless it (1) has been granted him from the Father."
----	---------	------	---

(1) It is God who allows you to truly believe in him. For that, you have to work on yourself.

B) Help to go in search of God.

The Holy Spirit can also make you feel a Perfume in your room when that smell does not really exist, even if you are looking for it everywhere. This Perfume is not in your nose, but in your head, in your feelings, in your brain. This Perfume is a help to seek God more strongly so that you really believe in him.

C) Help to make you obtain the forgiveness of God.

After truly believing in God, there will be feelings of guilt that appear in your head. This, to try to make you obtain God's Forgiveness for your sins. You will need humility to get through this crucial step. There will even be a strange feeling that will automatically appear in you: "the idea that the devil could actually exist." And this even if you have never believed in the devil before! In fact, it is a normal feeling, because now you have to take stock. Will you choose death or life? For this, there are 2 great players:

- ° The devil is the great actor who takes you to death.
- ° Jesus Christ is the great actor who takes you to Life.

D) Help to pray differently.

After you truly believe in God, you will begin to pray differently, because you will know that God is really there.

E) Help to have a "gift" very useful.

To begin with, I advise you to ask the Lord for "peace in your head." When I asked for it, that very night, I saw a little "flash of light" in my head and the next day, I had the gift of peace in me that I still have. This gift of peace in oneself is a marvel! As I told you, God never gives you a gift without you knowing it in your body.

| 10-M | The Holy Spirit in brief

In reality, the supernatural is not as supernatural as we think...

We cannot feel the World of God. It is the Holy Spirit who makes real Manifestations (physical and biological) that are adapted to our human body. These Manifestations are not imaginary, but tangible in our body.

A) The main Manifestations of God are:

- ° To do wonders (miracles and healings);
- ° To give psychological help;
- ° To make Messages;
- ° To make gifts.

See article | 8-E |.

B) I give some examples:

1) Before my {birth of the Spirit}, I asked the Lord to have peace in me. Then, the Holy Spirit Presented himself as a "flash of light in my head." He inserted in me the "gift of peace" and he disappeared. Even after a year, I still have this gift.

2) After my {birth of the Spirit}, when I began to write this book, I made a little prayer to the Lord. I was in front of my computer and I did not understand the meaning of the narrative of the Garden of Eden. I knew this narrative was symbolic, but did it really represent the origin of man? Could man has been created in a place outside Earth and brought to Earth after doing evil (perverting)? This was a piece of the puzzle that I was not solving alone.

So, I asked the Lord, "What do I do with the Garden of Eden?"

About 10 seconds later, I had a small Vision (a Flash) that lasted about 5 seconds like this:

God who walks in the Garden of Eden is Jesus in the year 0030.

(*) From this Vision, it is simple to understand that "the tree of Life in the middle of the Garden" is the Holy Spirit and the Garden of Eden itself is simply our planet Earth.

This narrative of the Garden of Eden does not symbolize the beginning of humanity, but the unfolding of its history, from yesterday to today. With this spark, it was easy to understand that the narratives of the Garden of Eden, Cain and Abel, the Flood and the Tower of Babel are the story of humanity in connection with the plan of God. To go further, see chapter | 21 |.

| 10-N | A list of some gifts

The gifts that the Holy Spirit can insert into you are numerous. It is important to understand that some may be requested before the {birth of the Spirit}, others may be requested after.

A) Before the {birth of the Spirit}.

To truly believe in God

To have peace in oneself.

To pray with more sincerity.

To have some help in repentance in order to obtain the Forgiveness of God.

B) At the {birth of the Spirit}.

A New World opens to us.

On request, it is possible to feel the Presence of God in oneself by the "seal of Jesus" in the chest.

Wickedness is diminished, which increases peace and goodness.

Covetousness is diminished, which diminishes the importance of the objects that surround us.

Boredom is lessened, because we know that God is always near us.

The fear of death is diminished, because we know that earth is only a pilgrimage path.

Life on earth takes on a new meaning. We understand that our past failures were only a stepladder to meet God.

Ability to understand God increases. God is Life and without him, we would not even exist! We live on Earth in his good graces. We only have to look at some images of Earth seen from space to realize that apart from our beautiful blue planet, there is no life at all.

C) After the {birth of the Spirit}.

It is possible to ask for special gifts. God will not refuse you a gift **if it is also his Will**. You must understand that God knows you better than you. So, he will only give you gifts that go with your personality.

Even though the Lord already knows our needs, **we must never stop praying and asking him**. See article | 26-B |.

Life on earth is not easy, but with God near us, even our difficulties make sense. God does not take away all our difficulties, because he wants us to grow up. He has confidence in our abilities and he is always there, without us knowing it, to give us a little help that is missing.

| 10-O | A Manifestation of the Holy Spirit

A) How can I know that the Holy Spirit is giving me a Manifestation?

As I said, he Presents himself as a Wind or a Breath. His Presence is very pleasant. He does not speak. He makes you live feelings. Instinctively, you will know that it is the Presence of God.

B) How can I know that this is not a psychic problem?

If the experience is **unpleasant**, it is not the Holy Spirit. It is a psychic problem.

C) How to differentiate between superstitions and reality?

I invite you to read article | 16-D |.

D) Some basic information to know.

1) Supernatural.

The Holy Spirit Presents himself in a supernatural way, for God is above nature. When you receive his Visit, you will not doubt, because the sensations that you will feel are not human.

God Presents himself supernaturally, because humans are very incredulous. I give you an example. When Jesus came to walk on earth, did humans believe that he was the Son of God? Not really! Humans recognized Jesus as the Son of God only after his Resurrection. **They had no choice**, Jesus had a Special Body!

NT	St-Mark	16,14	Afterward He (1) appeared to the eleven (2) themselves as they were reclining at the table (3); and He reproached them for their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they had not believed those (4) who had seen Him after He had risen.
----	---------	-------	---

(1) The Risen Jesus.

(2) These are the 11 apostles who remain after the suicide of Judas.

(3) The doors of the house were locked, and Jesus appeared to them in the midst of them without even opening the door.

(4) Jesus had made Apparitions to other disciples long before the 11 apostles.

NT	St-John	20,26-29	After eight days His disciples were again inside, and Thomas (1) with them. Jesus came, the doors having been shut, and stood in their midst and said, "Peace <i>be</i> with you." Then He said to Thomas, "Reach here with your finger, and see My hands; and reach here your hand and put it into My side; and do not be unbelieving, but believing." Thomas answered and said to Him, "My Lord and my God!" (2) Jesus said to him, "Because you have seen Me, have you believed? Blessed <i>are</i> they who did not see, and <i>yet</i> believed."
----	---------	----------	--

(1) Here the apostle St-Thomas did not believe at all that Jesus appeared to the other apostles.

(2) We see that to recognize a natural miracle as (Jesus, the Son of God on earth), a supernatural proof is required (an Apparition).

2) The devil.

Many Christian movements firmly believe in the devil. Sometimes, I wonder if they do not believe more in the devil than in God! What I am writing is very hard, but it is unfortunately true.

The difficulty is that the idea of the devil is very difficult to grasp in the Bible. We do not know exactly where he comes from. Is he a creature of God who has badly turned in the past (Lucifer) and is eternal since that time? Is he a divinity of Evil?

In Christianity, in the 1500s, there was a real clash of ideas. Basically, will the "Forces of Good" one day fight against the "Forces of Evil" in a "War" where the devil will be locked in hell for eternity with his followers (demons and damned humans)? Has this famous War already begun on earth?

For all these reasons, some Christian movements often take more than 30 years to recognize a miracle. Yes, this miracle could come **from the devil** and not from God! So, they have to investigate a long time and find the meaning of all the small details to conclude.

I will soon debate the existence of the devil in chapter | 18 |. For now, I can tell you that:

° Satan is a symbol;

° The devil is not a supernatural being, but the natural psychic actor who brings us to biological death.

So, I assure you that the devil does not do Manifestations or wonders to anyone!

3) The human brain.

In chapter | 16 |, I will give you a basic introduction to the human brain (psychology). I can tell you that our brain is very complex. So, you have to take care of it to make it work well.

| 11 | Several kinds of baptisms

In Christianity, the word baptism needs to be clarified...

In the Bible, it is stated that there are several. In the Gospel of St-John, it is indicated the baptism of water and the Baptism of the Spirit. The Acts of the Apostles also mention the baptism in the name of Jesus.

In addition, each of Christian movements has its own baptismal ritual.

So, how to find oneself in all this?

I am taking stock here. It takes the {gift of the Holy Spirit} to unravel all of this, because all the steps have been successfully completed.

Let's go!

| 11-A | The reality of baptisms

In the New Testament:

NT	St-Matthew	3,11	"As for me (1), I baptize you with water for repentance (2), but He who is coming after me is mightier than I, and I am not fit to remove His sandals; He (3) will baptize you with the Holy Spirit (4) and fire (5).
----	------------	------	---

(1) John the Baptist.

(2) The ritual of water baptism is a human repentance.

(3) Jesus Christ.

(4) The Baptism given by God alone (here the Son, Jesus).

(5) Water represents the purification that a person does on himself by his own efforts. Fire represents the purification that God alone does on a person.

In fact, there are only 2 baptisms that I will simply name:

- ° Human baptism;
- ° Baptism of God.

1) Human baptism.

It begins the day a person says his promises in front of God. This can be done alone or during a ceremony of a Christian movement. It depends only on your sincerity and not on a piece of paper. **It is a personal commitment to follow the Way of Christ.** Then, this person becomes a Christian. Afterward, the person must walk under God's gaze **to fulfill his promises.**

2) Baptism of God.

In this book, it is called the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit} according to the verse (St-John: 3,6). The person becomes a {God's child}. In a way, here the person gets his "diploma from Christ." To obtain it, you must ask God to guide your life, because God alone always knows what to do. So you must trust him as a child in front of his Parent. See articles | 25-C | and | 26-E |.

On the other hand, as I said before, even if a person does not have his {birth of the Spirit} yet, he can get things from the Holy Spirit:

- ° A healing or a miracle to strengthen one's faith;
- ° A help with conversion;
- ° The gift of truly believing in God;
- ° A help with repentance.

The Holy Spirit is a Person of God who does many different Actions. So, one must not see the Holy Spirit as an object that one appropriates...

The Holy Spirit is the Intercessor who comes to help us.

| 11-B | The different baptisms used in Christianity

A) Baptism of water.

It is a rite of human initiation to inner conversion in order to take the resolution to do good. So, to reject evil and to make a good human life. It is also the baptism that John the Baptist gave. It is a human promise in front of God. It is the beginning of a work on oneself.

This is also the ritual given by the holy apostles. They gave this baptism of water in the name of Jesus. The person rejected evil and made the promise to follow the Way of Jesus. Thereafter, the person could be part of the Christian community.

B) Christian baptism of all Christian movements.

Whatever promises the Christian movement does to the baptized person, this Christian baptism has no more value than the one given by the holy apostles. It is a baptism of Christian initiation only. It is only a departure on the Way of Christ.

1) I give you proof that no Christian movement does more than that.

NT	Acts of the Apostles	10,44	While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit fell upon all those who were listening to the message.
		10,47-48	"Surely no one can refuse the water for these to be baptized who have received the Holy Spirit just as we <i>did</i> , can he?" And he ordered them to be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ.

(1) We see here that even St-Peter, the leader of the apostles did not give the {gift of the Holy Spirit} to anyone. On the other hand, he gave a baptism of initiation in the name of Jesus Christ.

NT	Acts of the Apostles	1.5	for John (1) baptized with water, but you will be baptized with the Holy Spirit (2) not many days from now." (3)
----	----------------------	-----	---

(1) John the Baptist.

(2) Here is a translated excerpt from the footnote of the Bible (Jérusalem 1977, des Éditions du Cerf): "The baptism of the Spirit, already announced by John the Baptist, and here promised by Jesus, will be inaugurated by the outpouring of Pentecost. Then, according to the order of Christ, the apostles will continue to administer **the baptism of water as a rite of initiation** to God's kingdom."

(3) The holy apostles gave only a rite of initiation. So no Christian movement does more than that, too.

→ It should be known that at the time of the apostles, the way of conversion lasted 3 intensive years (not 1 hour/week) before the person receives the ritual of initiation of the baptism of water.

→ It should know that the apostles gave the initiation ritual of the baptism of water in the name of Jesus Christ only. It was only centuries later that some Christian movements said that the Holy Spirit was given at the same time.

C) Baptism in the Spirit.

Be careful with that expression, it is very badly interpreted. In the Gospel of St-John, this expression is used by John the Baptist because he is a "baptizer." On the other hand, the apostle St-John uses the term {birth of the Spirit} farther on.

NT	St-John	3,3-8	Jesus answered and said to him, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born again (2) he cannot see the kingdom of God." Nicodemus said to Him, "How can a man be born when he is old? He cannot enter a second time into his mother's womb and be born, can he?" Jesus answered, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water (1) and the Spirit (2) he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. "That which is born of the flesh is flesh (3), and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit (2). "Do not be amazed that I said to you, ' You must be born again. ' (2) "The wind blows where it wishes and you hear the sound of it, but do not know where it comes from and where it is going (4); so is everyone who is born of the Spirit."
----	---------	-------	---

- (1) The human baptism. That of John the Baptist's repentance.
- (2) The Baptism of God. This is the {birth of the Spirit} that I talk about in this book. In other Bibles, it is also named: the {birth from above}, because it means to be born from the Breath of Life of God (from above).
- (3) The human being is made only of flesh and blood. There is nothing eternal in him that escapes during his death like a ghost.
- (4) Here, the text simply tells of the freedom of the wind. But what freedom exactly? That of the deliverance of our mortal human condition to obtain the freedom of Eternal Life.

St-Peter also talks about it:

NT	1st Epistle of St-Peter	1.3	Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to His great mercy has caused us to be born again (1) to a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead,
----	-------------------------	-----	---

- (1) When St-Peter is speaking, he says that his {birth of the Spirit} is already done, yes at the day of Pentecost.

D) Why does St-John use the word birth rather than baptism?

Just to make a difference. St-John knew that he and the other apostles gave a baptism of initiation to people, but that another word was needed for the {gift of the Holy Spirit} which is given by God alone when the person is truly ready to receive it and not before. St-John then used the word "birth" to indicate how we feel when the Breath of Life of God enters us. St-Paul gives another term similar to the {birth of the Spirit}. Why? Again to make the difference with the baptism of Christian initiation. St-Paul gives the order: "Be filled with the Spirit." Again, that is what we feel when the Breath of God's Life enters us.

For those who believe they have received it, you should check it by comparing it with the description I give in article |13-D|.

→ **Yes, it only happens in one way for everyone.**

On the other hand, if your "experience" does not correspond to the description that I give, it is not the {birth of the Spirit}. You will have to work harder on yourself. It must be understood that the Holy Spirit does many different Manifestations. If this diverges, the simplest thing is that your "experience" is to give you a little help in order to pass your step of truly believing in God that is needed.

In short, the problem with the expression "Baptism in the Spirit" is that the word baptism means "to be immersed or submerged in." A person could falsely think that the experience is like "entering and exiting a lake (in this case, no water but Spirit). While in the real world, this is not the way it happens at all.

E) The fullness of the Spirit or be filled with the Spirit.

These expressions are only part of the experience that occurs during the {birth of the Spirit} and do not describe it completely. See article |13-D|. At the {birth of the Spirit}, you will have the impression of being reborn, even of resurrecting with Christ here on earth. It was St-Paul who brought these terms to order the person who received a Christian baptism that he must absolutely obtain his {birth of the Spirit} during his earthly life.

F) The Outpouring of the Spirit.

This term is used by some Christian movements who believe that the person receives the {gift of the Holy Spirit} at his Christian baptism. The Christian then believes he has received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} in him without even having felt it. Now, their "idea" is that during the Outpouring, it is the Spirit that "**sleeps**" in the person who finally Manifests himself!

In reality, the Holy Spirit is a Person who always makes concrete Manifestations.

→ **In short, if you have not felt anything, it means that you have not received anything at all!**

| 11-C | Christianity is relaxing...

Many other religions reproach Christians for not knowing their Bible and not applying the teachings of Jesus in their lives.

The reason is simple. Why make efforts when some Christian movements say that their followers are already saved by their Christian baptism? It only remains to move on in life and focus on money and power...

| 11-D | Christianity is not easy...

You will tell me that the prescriptions of Jesus in the New Testament are very difficult to do.

Yes, it is true!

Jesus talks about:

- ° The conversion of the heart;
- ° Goodness;
- ° Forgiveness;
- ° Charity towards the poor;
- ° Love for God and for others;
- ° A detachment from the lust that leads to accumulate great earthly goods to the detriment of weak people who have practically nothing.

So, why does Jesus ask those who want to follow him to do that?

Well, answer this question:

Why would a person want to go to the Kingdom of God (where there is only good) if that person does not want to do it already on earth?

→ ***God never brings a person to a place where he will not be comfortable!***

| 11-E | Should we do some small works?

A) For all Christians.

Basically, in Christianity, each one is responsible only for himself. It is a relationship between you and God. Your Salvation comes first. On the other hand, there is a close relationship between believing and acting. One cannot believe and not act, it is unfortunately the problem of the majority of Christians. When we believe in God, our life is different, because we know that God is there near us at every moment. Our selfishness is diminished and we want to do small works for our Creator as St-James said. Jesus said that finding God is like finding a precious stone and he was right. We must believe in God to act and we must act to follow the Way of Jesus to obtain the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. Here are the 3 major works. For oneself, make your conversion of the heart (become a better person). For others, be charitable especially towards the poor. For God, share your faith with people to make them grow.

B) For {God's children}.

Since you have received the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, you have been doing small works for a long time, sometimes without even knowing it. Now for you, it is easier to follow the teachings of Jesus than before. Be a light for other Christians, but do not try to do sensational things. The best thing to do is to let the Lord give you a little project. He knows you better than you. So, if he wants something specific, you will do it naturally and you will realize it in the long run, because the Lord gives you his support. Basically, do what you think is right, but do not play heroes!

Testimonials

| 12 | My steps to get my {birth of the Spirit}

| 12-A | Introduction

A) If you want to go to the Kingdom of God, you will absolutely have to reach the following 10 great steps in your life:

(1) To convert yourself to become a good right and honest person. For this step, get help from the Word (the Gospels).
(2) To forgive everyone. See article 27-D .
(3) To realize that our society is built much more with evil than with good. Examples: selfishness; greed; lust; abuse of power; lies; insensitivity; the rejection of the poor; etc.
(4) Personally rejecting to live by doing evil even if you have to suffer from your decision sometimes. Jesus does not ask to hide from society. On the contrary, Jesus asks to be a light for others. Jesus asks to remain good, upright and honest even if people around you are not. During his mission on earth, Jesus never hid himself from society. On the contrary, he taught righteousness to people who were not righteous. In the Gospels, Jesus sums up this in a pictorial way, saying that we must follow his Way and carry our cross every day. On this Way, forgiving allows you not to become bitter. Not wanting to accumulate wealth helps not to compete and become unhappy, because there will always be someone who has more than us. Each person sets his own priorities, so do not compare yourself to others! If you have chosen the Reward of Heaven, work to obtain it, but do not compare yourself to those who work for material rewards on earth. If you take the Way of Jesus to obtain a material reward on earth or tributes, you will be very disappointed. On the other hand, Jesus will give you the first part of your Reward with your {birth of the Spirit}. Afterwards, you will have the second part of your Reward eternally at the end of your pilgrimage on earth. The best image I can give you is that earth is like a garden. God gathers in his garden pleasant flowers for his House and the other flowers remain in the field of culture and die. Moreover, in the past, several Christian religious communities have cloistered themselves in order not to be influenced by our society. But how can we reject evil if we do not see it and if we do not suffer its effects? If I had not chosen to do good despite the evil that others did to me, I would never have had my {birth of the Spirit}. See article 12-D .
(5) To need God and seek him ardently.
(6) To truly believe in God.
(7) To understand that we do not deserve the Eternal Life that God wants to give us. To understand that we deserve only to finish in the ground.
(8) To repent of the evil we do to obtain God's Forgiveness for our sins.
(9) To put all our trust in God alone.
(10) To place our human life in the hand of God so that he helps us to lead it, because we are not able to direct it alone.

For the steps from **(1)** to **(5)**, you must do this work alone. This depends only on you. On the other hand, it is possible that God might perform small miracles around you to help you in your faith. Know how to recognize it...

If you work hard, God will believe in your sincerity and give you permission for the step **(6)**. Afterwards, God will give you some psychological help for the last 4 steps, because they require humility.

(11) You will have your {birth of the Spirit} when God feels that you are ready and not before...
--

B) In 2 examples below, I insert the (numbers) of the above chart:

NT	Acts of the Apostles	2,38	Peter <i>said</i> to them, "Repent (1, 2, 3, 4) , and each of you be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ (5, 6, 9, 10) for the forgiveness of your sins (7, 8) ; and you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. (11)
	1st Epistle of St-John	1,8	If we say that we have no sin, we are deceiving ourselves and the truth is not in us. (1, 2)
		1,9	If we confess our sins, He is faithful and righteous to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. (8)
		2,5	but whoever keeps His word, in him the love of God has truly been perfected. By this we know that we are in Him: (5, 9, 10)
		2,15-17	Do not love the world nor the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh and the lust of the eyes and the boastful pride of life, is not from the Father, but is from the world. The world is passing away, and <i>also</i> its lusts; but the one who does the will of God lives forever. (3, 4, 7)
		2,22	Who is the liar but the one who denies that Jesus is the Christ? This is the antichrist, the one who denies the Father and the Son. (6)
		2,27	As for you, the anointing which you received from Him abides in you , and you have no need for anyone to teach you; but as His anointing (*) teaches you about all things, and is true and is not a lie, and just as it has taught you, you abide in Him. (11)

(*) There are 2 types of anointing:

A) An anointing with oil on the body as during a sacrament. This is not what is in question here.

B) A spiritual anointing. It is the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. It is the "seal of Jesus" in the heart that St-Paul tells in his Epistles. In the course of Christian history, people have thought that this anointing is not tangible, that it is a romantic idea. In reality, a {God's child} actually feels this anointing in his chest for about 6 weeks. St-John writes that the anointing teaches everything, see my 12 Manifestations of chapter |13|. This also explains the {inspiration} of this book for a scientist like me.

|12-B| A summary of my steps

I give you some details now...

Take a good look at the narrative of my past below and you will find the 10 steps in the chart of article |12-A|.

A) At church, I had the following sacraments:

- ° My Catholic Christian baptism at 3 months old;
- ° My first communion at 7 years old;
- ° My sacrament of forgiveness at 9 years old;
- ° My confirmation at 11 years old;
- ° My solemn communion at 17 years old.

→ I have never felt anything in my body.

In reality, these are **preparatory ceremonies** in order to become aware of his commitment to the Way of Christ. For God, what is important is not the ceremony. What is important is **the application of this commitment in his everyday life**.

B) Adult, I felt that my life was not progressing like many other people...

At work, I have always tried to be close to people. I would have liked everyone to get on well with each other. On the other hand, I realized that I was often rejected because I have an easy and good character. Often, selfish people kept their jobs in the company while I was laid off at the slightest drop in contracts. Many employers wanted me to be tough with my subordinates. For them, money is more important than anything!

When I was 44, I took stock of my life. I realized that most of my former employers were looking for someone to do the "stopgap" to fill a small surplus of work and then, goodbye! So for them, a good person to hire is the "naïve" that they say to move (from one city to another) for a "supposedly permanent" job, but that in reality will last 8 months! In the end, I totally lost confidence in human goodness! Basically, dishonest people win and honest people lose! **In short, on earth, kindness is like a big defect...**

C) I took a rest so I could forgive all the people who hurt me so I could make a new start...

Once again on employment insurance, still very stressed by my former boss who liked to scare all his staff. I was angry with my boss for my misleading layoff when he had just sold the business. It took me 3 months to unwind and really forgive him in my head. So, I decided to make a little return to school to specialize a little more. Since the study program only required 35 hours/week, I had some time for myself...

D) I needed God in my life...

I was doing a training (AEC) for buildings to open my small business in the energy efficiency field. I knew that starting a business would be very difficult. Many new companies do not survive more than 2 years.

In order to succeed, I thought I needed help. So, because the only one who always knows what to do is God, I started to look for him.

E) I sought God...

At that time, I did not read the New Testament because I thought I had already received all the information during my catechesis. I trusted my catechesis blindly and without checking anything. In short, I was sleeping comfortably like the vast majority of Christians!

I wondered if God existed for real...

I started by watching several Bible movies on the Internet...

Here is a movie that surprised me:

The Gospel of John (word for word). See article 8-I .
--

Looking at the detail of the conversation between Jesus and Nicodemus about the {birth from above}, I never had this teaching during my catechesis! At that moment, let's say I did not understand much of this conversation, but at least it intrigued me a lot.

At the same time, I undertook research in science to see if it was possible to prove that God really exists. **I realized that yes!** In this book, I have included this research in chapter |5|. At that time, I did not even know there were Christian miracles filmed on the Internet. See chapter |6|.

This step took me about 300 hours of work.

F) I believed in God and I took action...

I finally realized that it was impossible that God does not exist! And then a "click" occurred in my head, as if a "switch" had been turned on! **I took a breath and said, "God exists for real!"**

I realized that the best proof of God's existence is simply the nature surrounds us. More than that, my own existence (life) on earth while the universe was created perfectly sterile!

Afterwards, I started going to mass regularly and I started to really get interested in what was being said.

NT	Epistle of St-James	2,17	Even so faith, if it has no works, is dead, <i>being</i> by itself.
----	---------------------	------	---

G) I changed my thoughts...

As I knew that God really exists. I began to watch my thoughts so as not to displease God.

NT	Epistle of St-James	1,26	If anyone thinks himself to be religious, and yet does not bridle his tongue but deceives his <i>own</i> heart, this man's religion is worthless.
----	---------------------	------	---

I, who have never believed in the devil before, I began strangely to think that the devil could exist and blow me evil thoughts!

I reassure you right away, as it will be seen in chapter | 18 |, the human is the only one responsible for evil that he does and he receives no evil supernatural influence. In fact, what I was doing (more than before) was simply to pay close attention to my thoughts.

I give you here a good tip to know if you start to believe in God. The thought that "the devil could really exist" will happen at the same time.

This step took me about 1 month.

H) I repented...

I began strangely to think that I am bad in front of God. That I do not deserve God to take care of me in life. That I do not deserve the Life that God gives. That I deserve rather to finish my life in the ground! Without knowing it, this is called "repentance for the evil that one has done" even sometimes without knowing it. God is perfect and I am not! I do not deserve his forgiveness and his life!

We must be very humble to pass this step. It is to recognize in front of God that I do not deserve his Eternal Life, but rather human death at the end of my days.

If you want to know exactly what repentance is in the baptism of water, it is what I just said. Often during Christian baptism ceremony at church, we say yes to all questions without thinking. But if this is not sincere and put into practice, it has no value in the eyes of God. You have to do your homework...

This step took me about 2 months.

I) I needed God concretely in my life.

I began to pray differently.

I was not asking for a job, but I was asking for his presence...

Here are:

"Lord, I know that you really exist, I need you in my life!"

"Lord, I do not have much to tell you tonight, but I need your presence near me, I would like to sleep in your arms tonight!"

"Lord, you are my life and I love you as much as I can."

One evening I prayed to the Lord for peace in my head. Then the same night, I saw (in my head of course) a small "flash of light" pass. Well! The next day, I had received the "gift of peace in my head" that I still have.

J) I needed God to help me lead my life in his own way, because he alone is perfect...

I wanted to make a fresh start in my life, to have a small business of my own.

I remembered that a lot of people love power and that I would not have much chance of succeeding in business by myself.

As I wanted to succeed, I told myself that the only way to do it was to be guided by God. He knows what to do...

I told God I did not trust our human world!

I told God that I did not want to live without him in my life, that I needed him by my side!

I sincerely told God 3 times (it is really a cry from the heart) that **I give my life to him!**

"Lord, come to guide me."

"Lord, take my life, because I do not succeed much alone."

"Lord, I am scared to live without you, Lord never go away from me."

"Lord, you have given me life and it is yours."

"Lord, I would like to testify that you exist, but I am not able to do it!"

This last prayer is the sincere desire to put oneself at the service of God, it is a capital step! The {gift of the Holy Spirit} is the necessary force which St-Peter spoke in order to serve God. Without this strength, this book would not exist. The Lord always gives his {children} what they really need.

K) Look carefully at what Jesus said:

NT	St-John	12,26	"If anyone serves Me (1), he must follow Me (2); and where I am, there (3) My servant will be also; if anyone serves Me, the Father will honor him (4).
----	---------	-------	---

(1) To serve God.

(2) To concretely make the Way that Jesus asks in the Gospels.

(3) The reward of Heaven.

(4) By the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.

In the Bible, have you noticed that we often talk about serving? Patriarchs, prophets, apostles and disciples regularly say that they are in the service of God.

We all have a choice between 2 ways. We can serve ourselves and build our little human kingdom. This will be our mortal inheritance. There will be nothing after that. We can serve God (the Eternal) and help him on earth to build his Kingdom (truth, justice, peace, Life, etc.). It is up to us to choose. If you do not have your {birth of the Spirit} yet, it is because you have not yet chosen the way of the Eternal. And that even if you are a religious person. **Jesus did not ask for a human religion, but a sincere commitment of the heart to serve him.** Here, we are very far from a religion with rituals and ready-made phrases. It is a commitment of personal life. God shares his Eternal Life with us if we share our mortal life with him. This has absolutely nothing to do with being a religious person. I point out that the apostles were not religious people and I am not a religious person either!

L) Then, the Lord Manifested himself...

I had my {birth of the Spirit} a few days later in the night, March 14, 2016. See article | 13-D |.

The Breath of God (the Holy Spirit) filled me inside. I felt reborn. I would even say **as resurrected** with Christ.

The Breath, as entering through my nostrils, gave me the impression of making my heart dilate a bit.

I knew it was a "**birth**" because it looked like the image of Adam's narrative in Genesis.

OT	Genesis	2,7	Then the LORD God formed man of dust from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life ; and man became a living being.
----	---------	-----	---

Except that all this did not correspond with the catechesis received!

I said to myself, "I had not received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} at my Christian baptism!" But that is impossible! **I have been in ignorance all this time...**

M) Subsequently, I did a search in the New Testament...

I understood that this Manifestation was my {birth of the Spirit}. It is also the Baptism of the Spirit which is given only by Jesus Christ himself to the people who will become {God's children}.

This is indicated in several places in the New Testament. This is what St-John writes in his Gospel at the beginning of chapter 3. This is also what St-Paul writes in his Epistles.

Even the book of Acts of the Apostles tells about it in the narrative of Pentecost.

NT	Acts of the Apostles	2,33	"Therefore having been exalted to the right hand of God, and having received from the Father the promise of the Holy Spirit, He has poured forth this which you both see and hear . (1)
----	----------------------	------	--

(1) The {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a concrete Manifestation and not poetry.

N) I also did a search in the Old Testament...

About 500 years B.C., this is what the prophet Ezekiel writes:

OT	Ezekiel prophet	37,13-14	"Then you will know that I am the LORD (Yahweh, Eternal), when I have opened your graves and caused you to come up out of your graves, My people. "I will put My Spirit (1) within you and you will come to life, and I will place you on your own land. Then you will know that I, the LORD, have spoken and done it," declares the LORD." (2)
----	-----------------	----------	---

(1) It is the Breath of Life of God or the Holy Spirit.

(2) It must be understood that for God who is Eternal, a human being on earth (who is temporal) is already dead and in his grave before the Breath of Eternal Life of God is in him by his {birth of the Spirit}.

| 12-C | Let's go a little further in the big steps...

In addition, see the beginning of chapter | 23 |.

A) It is a personal way that requires time, effort, sincerity and humility.

1) The person must have the desire to follow the Way of Jesus in his life and to go to the Kingdom of his Father (Eternal Life where evil does not exist).

2) The person must start a personal conversion process. To seek reality and truth in one's life and set aside evil to try to do good.

3) It is better for a person to be baptized humanely by one of Christian movements (the one of his choice). In this way, the person puts a beginning on his Way of conversion. The person will then be part of a group to support him. This baptism is similar to what the apostles called the baptism of water. You must understand that this is only the very first step, "it is a departure." It is a human choice to want to follow the teaching of Jesus in his personal life. If you are told that you will get the {gift of the Holy Spirit} during this baptism, make a big smile and say, "Oh yes, thank you very much!"

On the other hand, for people who do not want **or cannot be baptized** by a Christian movement, it does not matter. You can make this commitment intimately in front of God wherever you want, because He is everywhere. I will prove it to you:

NT	Acts of the Apostles	10,44-47	While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit fell upon all those who were listening to the message... Then Peter answered, " Surely no one can refuse the water for these to be baptized who have received the Holy Spirit just as we <i>did</i> , can he?"
----	----------------------	----------	---

(*) Here, people have received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} when they have not yet had the **ritual** of water baptism. We must not confuse the sincerity of the heart with a **ritual**.

During Christian baptism, you will hear approximately this:

The person is committed to learning and following the teaching (the Word) of Jesus. The person agrees not to do evil consciously in his words and actions every day.
The person is committed to belong to Christ (the Son of God) or simply to God if you want. The person lets his life be guided by the teaching (the Word) of Jesus.

In fact, during Christian baptism, who can really accept such commitment from the start? Only very few people! So, during your Christian baptism, do not be scared to say "yes" to every question. Even if you do not understand everything and deep down, you are not ready at all. Some might say, "Should we become a religious person for such a commitment?" **Of course not, am I a religious person?** Many ordinary people have had their {birth of the Spirit} and many religious people have not had it and do not even know it exists. In reality, the {birth of the Spirit} is simply the promise of God to give the {gift of the Holy Spirit} to the one who is ready to receive it!

→ ***I did not receive an exceptional grace! I received what every Christian must receive in his life...***

In summary, the step of Christian baptism is only the beginning of the Way. You take a first step and I hope it will not be your last, because it will not save you!

4) Now you must learn the Word of Jesus (the Gospels). You must put it into practice in your life. The more you have a selfish and libertine nature, the harder it will be. To demonstrate this, you only have to read the Gospel of St-Matthew. St-Matthew was a man who was far from having a righteous life. For him, it was not easy to follow the Way of Jesus and this can be seen in his Gospel. On the other hand, if you read the Gospel of St-John, everything is done smoothly. This is because St-John was fundamentally good and sought the truth in his life even before met Jesus.

You must understand that if you do not have a good human background, you will have to work harder on yourself. A person cannot receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit} if:

- ° He wishes to do evil;
- ° He does not forgive;
- ° He has a deep anger in him.

In short, Jesus said, "I am the Bread of Life from Heaven; I am the Word of my Father; whoever feeds on this Bread (his Word) will never die!" It must be understood that eating means integrating something in oneself. Here, one must integrate the Word (the teachings of Jesus) into oneself every day.

5) When do we receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit}? It is when we have fulfilled all the promises of our Christian baptism.

6) In the end, following the Way of Christ is a matter of personal choice.

To want to obtain his {birth of the Spirit} is the greatest human decision.

You then decide to belong to God so that he gives you his Breath of Eternal Life. Afterwards, you will not be an ordinary human being, you will really be born as a {God's child}. Jesus will be your big brother (Son of God) and his Father (God the Father) will be yours also by adoption and heir to his Kingdom.

To accomplish all these steps is difficult, because it takes perseverance. So, do not wait too long to start if you are interested...

B) What is original sin?

It is an expression very poorly understood by Christianity.

First of all, you should know that the Garden of Eden (at the beginning of the book of Genesis) is a symbolic narrative inspired by God to people with very little science, more than 2,000 years ago. In reality, this famous garden is Earth. Now, in the science of genetics, we know that the human being is made in one block with more than 25,000 sealed genes. So, original sin is not the human condition, because God created us like that.

Original sin is simply not to put ourselves under the authority of God or to put our life in his hand so that he helps us to lead it. It is normal, we are human and we do what we want. Our intentions are not always in agreement with "doing only good!"

→ If you listen carefully to the words spoken at Christian baptism, they are simply the promise to renounce one's original sin.

For more details, see article |18-C|.

|12-D| Strangely, I sincerely thank those who have given me misery in my life!

I started making small toys when I was 5 years old because my parents could not afford to buy some. I realized that the more I was attentive and I was looking for reality (truth) and the more successful I was in my small projects. During my studies in science, I used the same principle and I obtained 3 diplomas.

When I started working in the labour market, I realized that very few people were interested in the search for truth and reality. On the other hand, the search for power, appearance and money is very important. So, I was put aside several times and was told that I was idealistic, even a little too honest....

If one does not have a certain ideal, honesty and desire to seek truth and reality, then, how to build something solid in life? I realized that these fine qualities are not very popular in Quebec. It is enough to have followed Charbonneau Commission (Inquiry) on television in 2012 to conclude that I am not entirely wrong...

On the other hand, for God, seeking Truth is essential in order to receive the reward of Eternal Life.

If it were not of the people who gave me misery in my life, I would not have found the most beautiful gift, **God!**

So, I thank them all so much for their "malicious" good help!"

I can tell you that it is easier to find God for someone who knows misery because he asks for help more often and more sincerely.

You see, everything is useful on earth ... even misery!

NT	St-Matthew	5,9-10	"Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called sons of God. "Blessed are those who have been persecuted for the sake of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.
----	------------	--------	---

In Truth, no one succeeds his life if he has not met his Creator.

Important note:

In articles |25-D| and |39-B|, I summarize for you the essential points in order to obtain the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.

| 13 | Testimony of my Manifestations and their biblical explanations

In this book, I give information in a progressive way to make your reading as comprehensible as possible. As a result, I had to choose to put the chronology of events in second place. It is important to know that several texts in this chapter | 13 | form the starting point of the book. At first, I did not understand all the details of my Manifestations. From the information of the Bible and from the information gained during my Manifestations, I had to work hard to put the pieces of the puzzle in place...

| 13-A | Introduction

I started praying to God when I was about 6 years old. I asked him some things, but I did not see what he was giving me. I said to myself, "The Lord does not answer what I ask!" I still continued to pray, maybe he would hear me someday...

From the age of 30 to 45, I saw 3 small miracles come true. These are not big miracles, but they let me think about the presence of God in my life. See article | 13-S |.

At the age of 45, I did some research on God to find out if he really existed. I finally found him and about 3 months later, I had my first Manifestation which is my {birth of the Spirit}.

It must be known that when we become a {God's child}, there may be small Manifestations of the Holy Spirit from time to time. Why? For readers who have a child, I ask you a question. Do you leave your child alone all the time? With the Lord, it is the same thing. So to write this book, he helped me...

A) I quickly present to you my Manifestations of the Spirit (2016-2017).

They are divided into 2 groups:

- 1) A {God's child} will have at least the first 4 Manifestations. See articles | 13-D to 13-G |.
- 2) The other Manifestations are mainly information for this book.

Every {God's child} will obviously have some Manifestations in his life. I share the gifts I have had. I begin by a summary in article | 13-B |. Subsequently, I make you live my Manifestations through what I felt. Finally, I will explain them to you in parallel with the Bible.

B) I also had a little physical healing.

Here, I do not put the little healing in the list of my Manifestations of the Spirit, because it does not have the same objective. I can compare one of my Manifestations of the Spirit with the Bible. By cons, I cannot compare the little healing I had with anything. See article | 13-R |.

| 13-B | Summary of my Manifestations (March 2016 to February 2017)

The 1st Manifestation is my {birth of the Spirit} which occurred spontaneously at night and lasted about 20 minutes. During this experience, I was filled with the Holy Spirit as in the days of the apostles. On the other hand, there was not "a tongue of fire on my head nor a bright cloud in my room" as in the narrative of Pentecost of the apostles. It was night and my eyes were closed. See articles | 13-D | and | 13-F |.

The 2nd Manifestation is the "seal of Jesus in my chest" from the day after my {birth of the Spirit}. I had a soft pain in my chest area and I could not help but pray. This lasted 3 days. If I stopped praying, I was bored of God. See articles | 13-E | and | 13-F |.

The 3rd and 4th Manifestations occurred on the last Sunday of June and the first Sunday of July. This happened during 2 Eucharist at mass. Each was the {memorial of the communion with Christ}. It started when I put the host in my mouth. Each lasted about 3 hours. See articles | 13-G | and | 13-H |.

The 5th Manifestation is a (Message in a dream) during the night to begin the writing of this book. See article | 13-I |

The 6th Manifestation occurred after a prayer to obtain information about the Holy Spirit for this book. See article | 13-J |.

The 7th Manifestation is a Perfume. See article | 13-K |.

The 8th Manifestation is the Presence of the "seal of Jesus in my chest" on request in prayer. See article | 13-L |.

The 9th Manifestation is information about the devil for this book. See article | 13-M |.

The 10th Manifestation is about the love of God. See article | 13-N |.

The 11th Manifestation is the confirmation of the Breath of God that gives birth from above. See article | 13-O |.

The 12th Manifestation is about the Transfiguration of Jesus on the Mount. See article | 13-P |.

The 12th Manifestation occurred on February 5, 2017. Thereafter, I had the 13th Manifestation 5 months later, in early July 2017. It arrived 2 weeks before completing the French correction of the book (2017).

To write this book is an indirect Manifestation of the {inspiration} that is obviously not of me.

Did they happen day or night?

By day, these are the Manifestations: 2, 3, 4, 7, 8.

At night, these are the Manifestations: 1, 5, 6, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13.

How did each of the night Manifestations happen?

They took place during the waking up phase. The beginning of the Manifestation starts while I sleep lightly, that I am partially conscious and that I do not think of anything in the dark. It is the Manifestation that provokes my total awakening. I feel the Manifestation very well from beginning to end. The first part (about 40%) is done without I have the ability to analyze what is happening. This happens concretely in me and I do not ask myself questions. The last part of the Manifestation (about 60%) is done while I am fully awake and I still have my eyes closed. I have the perfect ability to reflect and ask myself questions about the meaning of the Manifestation that I am still experiencing.

|13-C| The step of my truly believe in God

I started my research on the existence of God in October 2015.

After a 3-month search, I realized that it was impossible for God not to exist. **God is there**, but I do not see him! In reality, it is wrong. Take the example of a painting on canvas made by an artist. The artist really exists since we have a painting on canvas in front of us. And that, even if the artist did not lock himself in his painting on canvas! It is obvious to say that the painting on canvas tells us about the talent of the artist by the material, forms, colors and emotions which emerge from it. See chapters |5| and |6|.

That is it, the proof of God's existence was so simple! His works are everywhere around us on our beautiful planet Earth filled with life! In reality, we have been living in God's garden since childhood and we do not even realize it! We live in his graces every day. So, a little thank you is not too much...

Some will say, "If God exists, why is there evil on earth?" It is that God gives freely, he created the human being free to choose to follow him or to turn away. And there, some others will say, "The animals also do evil!" Everything that surrounds us: insects, plants, trees, animals are part of the necessary functioning of life on earth. These are the gear wheels of the clock. Have you ever seen a clock does evil?

Yes, before, I spoke of God from time to time. But it was an idea a little distant, a God not so present. After this research on God at age 45, there was something changed. It was impossible that God did not exist...

And then, in an instant, I realized... God really exists!

That day, my faith leapt forward. I also understood that it was my human reason and my selfishness that made me a blind man...

In psychology, it is taught that the human being has an instinctive mechanism. A kind of armor so as not to believe. This keeps you safe so you do not change anything. So, if at this moment, you still do not believe me, it is human! **However, this does not change the reality!** So, I hope you dare to do your own research. Jesus said, "Knock on the door and we will open you" and "He who seeks, finds!"

In early February 2016, my search for God was finished. I knew that God exists and that the Bible is true. I said to myself, "Well, I am going to move on, I only have to do my little religion like everyone else, but this time knowing that God really exists..."

Except that I started to pray differently...

Before, I made requests to God a little like a child holding in his hands his famous list of Christmas presents. From there, it was different.

Here are some examples from article |12-B| :

"Lord, come to guide me."

"Lord, take my life, because I do not succeed much alone."

"Lord, I am scared to live without you, Lord never go away from me."

"Lord, you have given me life and it is yours."

"Lord, I would like to testify that you exist, but I am not able to do it!"

| 13-D | My 1st Manifestation is my {birth of the Spirit}

My testimony:

It was on Monday night, March 14, 2016. I was sleeping in the dark and I was not thinking of anything. This happened throughout my awakening. I felt my breathing deep and too long, much too long... air at the beginning that comes in through my nostrils and, in a moment after, that the Breath of God entered me and I was totally filled with it. There are no words to describe that! I was deeply asleep and I knew that it was the Presence of God in me, I did not have the slightest doubt. I felt the Divine power and the Light enter into me, an incredible and beneficent power! I felt so good, I felt I had received an immense Gift inside my body. A Gift so precious that I wanted to keep it in me forever. Then, in my head, I said to the Lord, "Never separate me from this gift, I want to keep it forever, my life is Yours!" This happened and I woke up slowly. I can tell you that the Lord is so Sweet and so Powerful at the same time. During that moment, I was filled with a Happiness So Strong, it is unimaginable! I was not fully awake yet, I did not have all my consciousness yet and I knew that the Breath of God was in me. I was not afraid, I had no doubts, I had the feeling of hovering filled with the Existence of God! Then, my consciousness increased and a little more reasoning and, at that moment, I trembled with fear and I doubted. Not that God exists, I previously had a firm belief in God, I said that it is impossible that he does not exist. It was rather that God had just visited his child. My conscience told me, "What happened, it is not possible!" I was troubled. Why would God come into me? I am only an ordinary human being, is it a dream? As my heart was pounding slowly and peacefully, I realized that it was my reason that makes me doubt. I felt in the depths of myself this Peace and my filled heart, overflowing in my chest as if my heart was taking up a lot of space. Then, I removed the doubt in my head to feel this Gift of Love, to have it in me, to be able to contain it with my body, so precious as if I wanted to live it every moment by saying to myself, "I live that now and I will think later!" I knew that even my future thinking would never make me say that this is all wrong. I stayed in bed, awake for about 20 minutes, enjoying this Happiness and trying to think as little as possible, to simply feel the Wonderful Gift of God in me. Thank you Lord! I went back to sleep and got up in the morning ... but **different!**

The next night, I watched some Internet videos of the Baptism of the Spirit. I saw that several people got it! On the other hand, it is necessary to be careful, the "speaking in tongues" is not a necessary sign. See the 1st Epistle to the Corinthians, verse (12,30). In article | 13-O |, the Lord confirmed to me the way in which the {birth of the Spirit} is always carried out.

| 13-E | My 2nd Manifestation is the "seal of Jesus" continually present in me for 3 days

My testimony:

The next day, after my {birth of the Spirit}, I was hungry for God, for his Presence in me. I felt that my heart in my chest was dilated like a sweet pain, as if I was hungry for God! It is a special feeling, it looks like hunger pangs in the stomach, but this time it is in the chest, in the heart! So, I understood the pious picture where we are shown Jesus Christ with a heart in flame in the chest. I see now where this picture was inspired! This sign has been continuously present in me for 3 days. It diminished afterwards...

During these 3 days, the seal of Jesus in the chest is continually present. Subsequently during the next 6 weeks, it is present but more weakly. Subsequently during the next 6 months, it turns on weakly from time to time. After 6 months, it disappears completely. By cons, even after one year, it may return slowly during prayer.

Here is this pious image:

Internet Keywords (image)	Sacred Heart of Jesus Christ
---------------------------	------------------------------

| 13-F | Biblical explanations of my 1st and 2nd Manifestations

In the boxes below, I report excerpts from my testimony above.

Let's start:

Excerpt from my testimony:

It was on Monday night, March 14, 2016. I was sleeping in the dark and I was not thinking of anything.

(*) My feeling was to be in the dark without more...

This is the narrative of the dry bones of the prophet Ezekiel:

OT	The prophet Ezekiel	37.13-14	"Then you will know that I am the LORD (1), when I have opened your graves (2) and caused you to come up out of your graves, My people. "I will put My Spirit within you and you will come to life, and I will place you on your own land. Then you will know that I, the LORD, have spoken and done it, declares the LORD."
----	---------------------	----------	---

(1) For this Bible (New American Standard), translators have chosen to use the name (the LORD) for God. Unfortunately we lose the deep meaning of his name. His name is **Yahweh** which means (**the Eternal**). See article | 3-E |.

(2) For God who is **the Eternal**, a human being on earth is already dead until he has received his Breath of Life (his Spirit).

In summary. For God, I was dead in my grave...

This is also what St-Matthew writes:

NT	St-Matthew	24.37-44	" For the coming of the Son of Man will be just like the days of Noah. "For as in those days before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark, and they did not understand until the flood came and took them all away; so will the coming of the Son of Man be. "Then there will be two men in the field; <u>one will be taken and one will be left</u> . "Two women <i>will be</i> grinding at the mill; <u>one will be taken and one will be left</u> . "Therefore be on the alert, for you do not know which day your Lord is coming. "But be sure of this, that if the head of the house had known at what time of the night the thief was coming, he would have been on the alert and would not have allowed his house to be broken into. " For this reason you also must be ready; for the Son of Man is coming at an hour when you do not think He will. "
----	------------	----------	---

In summary. This is the Last Judgment. He will come in the night and take one and not the other. See chapter | 29 |.

Excerpt from my testimony:

This happened throughout my awakening. I felt my breathing deep and too long, much too long... air at the beginning that comes in through my nostrils and, in a moment after, that the Breath of God entered me and I was totally filled with it. There are no words to describe that!

There is one surprising detail that I did not mention in the narrative of my testimony. While the Breath of God came into me, **the time in my head had stopped!** I will try to explain to you this non-human feeling. Imagine that you are in front of a clock and you are thinking, but when the Breath enters you, all the hands of this clock do not move at all, even that of seconds! You are still thinking, but time is not moving forward! It is so strange that you have to live it to believe it! I have only one sentence, "This is the Breath of the Eternal." In the Old Testament, God was often called **the Eternal** (Yahweh). Then, I understood a little better what the Eternal meant. For God, time does not exist, he is **timeless**.

In reality, the most important thing is that my feeling was to "be born from above" (like resurrect). Yes, you read it correctly!

This Breath of Life is in the image of the narrative of the birth of Adam in Genesis:

OT	Genesis	2,7	Then the LORD God formed man of dust from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life ; and man became a living being.
----	---------	-----	---

St-Paul said that the person then becomes a new creation. Following the Firstborn, Jesus Christ, Son of God.

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	1,15	He (Jesus Christ) is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of all creation.
	St-John	3.3-8	Jesus answered and said to him, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born again he cannot see the kingdom of God." Nicodemus said to Him, "How can a man be born when he is old? He cannot enter a second time into his mother's womb and be born, can he?" Jesus answered, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water (1) and the Spirit (2) he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. "That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. "Do not be amazed that I said to you, 'You must be born again.' "The wind blows where it wishes and you hear the sound of it, but do not know where it comes from and where it is going; so is (3) everyone who is born of the Spirit."

(1) Here, it is the baptism of water. It is repentance and conversion of the heart of the human being. See article | 11-A |.

(2) Here, it is the {birth of the Spirit}.

(3) Here, by the {birth of the Spirit}, it is the liberation of death.

In short, it is the {birth of the Spirit}.

Excerpt from my testimony:

I was deeply asleep and I knew that it was the Presence of God in me, I did not have the slightest doubt.

In short, in the Presence of God, sin (here, **to doubt**) is not possible. Therefore, this is why evil is impossible in the Kingdom of God due to the Presence or the Glory of God.

Excerpt from my testimony:

I felt the Divine power and the Light enter into me, an incredible and beneficent power! I felt so good, I felt I had received an immense Gift inside my body. A Gift so precious that I wanted to keep it in me forever. Then, in my head, I said to the Lord, "Never separate me from this gift, I want to keep it forever, my life is Yours!"
--

This Gift is also called the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. It is surprising that I felt the "Light entering me" while my eyes were closed! When I felt this Divine power in me, I can tell you that I quickly became very humble. I felt and understood that God is Life and that I, humanly speaking, am really small in all that...

NT	St-John	1,1-4	In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was in the beginning with God. All things came into being through Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being. In Him was life, and the life was the Light of men.
----	---------	-------	---

Excerpt from my testimony:

This happened and I woke up slowly. I can tell you that the Lord is so Sweet and so Powerful at the same time. During that moment, I was filled with a Happiness So Strong, it is unimaginable! I was not fully awake yet, I did not have all my consciousness yet and I knew that the Breath of God was in me. I was not afraid, I had no doubts, I had the feeling of hovering filled with the Existence of God!
--

In the Bible, it is said that God is Holy. Well, that is perfectly true! When I felt his Presence in me, it is a really non-human feeling. It is a happiness that I did not even know it could exist. It is as if at my {birth of the Spirit}, I had just discovered another World. Afterwards, I found it difficult not to live constantly in his Presence. I was like a little cat that we were trying to wean from his mother! It took me about 6 weeks to come back! I can tell you that we humans, without the Presence of God, we do not know that we are not happy. We do not know what True Happiness is!

Excerpt from my testimony:

Then, my consciousness increased and a little more reasoning and, at that moment, I trembled with fear and I doubted. Not that God exists, I previously had a firm belief in God, I said that it is impossible that he does not exist. It was rather that God had just visited his child.

NT	St-John	1,9-12	There was the true Light which, coming into the world, enlightens every man. He was in the world, and the world was made through Him, and the world did not know Him. He came to His own, and those who were His own did not receive Him. But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become children of God , <i>even</i> to those who believe in His name,
----	---------	--------	---

Excerpt from my testimony:

My conscience told me, "What happened, it is not possible!" I was troubled. Why would God come into me? I am only an ordinary human being, is it a dream? As my heart was pounding slowly and peacefully, I realized that it was my reason that makes me doubt.

In short, doubt is natural and part of the human being.

Excerpt from my testimony:

I felt in the depths of myself this Peace and my filled heart, overflowing in my chest as if my heart was taking up a lot of space.			
NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Romans	5,5	and hope does not disappoint, because the love of God has been poured out within our hearts through the Holy Spirit who was given to us.

In short, it is the Action of the Breath of God that fills the heart and makes it dilate.

Excerpt from my testimony:

Then, I removed the doubt in my head to feel this Gift of Love, to have it in me, to be able to contain it with my body, so precious as if I wanted to live it every moment by saying to myself, "I live that now and I will think later!" I knew that even my future thinking would never make me say that this is all wrong.

Note: here, it is renounce sin once more.

Excerpt from my testimony:

I stayed in bed, awake for about 20 minutes, enjoying this Happiness and trying to think as little as possible, to simply feel the Wonderful Gift of God in me. Thank you Lord! I went back to sleep and got up in the morning ... but **different!**

I was **{born again}**, to a new life.

Excerpt from my testimony:

The next day, after my {birth of the Spirit}, I was hungry for God, for his Presence in me. I felt that my heart in my chest was dilated like a sweet pain, as if I was hungry for God! It is a special feeling, it looks like hunger pangs in the stomach, but this time it is in the chest, in the heart!			
NT	St-John	6,51-57	"I am the living bread that came down out of heaven; if anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever; and the bread also which I will give for the life of the world is My flesh." Then the Jews <i>began</i> to argue with one another, saying, "How can this man give us <i>His</i> flesh to eat?" So Jesus said to them, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in yourselves. "He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up on the last day. "For My flesh is true food, and My blood is true drink. "He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him. "As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who eats Me, he also will live because of Me.

The Holy Spirit is the Breath of Life shared by the Father and the Son. Through the {birth of the Spirit}, God shares with his new child his Breath of Life already on earth by filling his whole body.

Excerpt from my testimony:

So, I understood the pious picture where we are shown Jesus Christ with a heart in flame in the chest. I see now where this picture was inspired!			
NT	2nd Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	1,22	who also sealed us and gave us the Spirit in our hearts as a pledge .

Here, we see the meaning of the "seal of Jesus Christ" in the chest. We must "eat the Word made flesh" in order to have in us its Breath of Life.

Excerpt from my testimony:

This sign has been continuously present in me for 3 days. It diminished afterwards...			
---	--	--	--

During these 3 days, I only prayed, because when I stopped, I missed God.

As Jesus spent 3 days in the tomb before resurrecting, I really felt that I was reborn. **Even as resurrected already and now on earth!**

In the image of Jesus who is Risen on earth in 3 days. The person is reborn as a {God's child} in 3 days with Christ.

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	3,1-2	Therefore if you have been raised up with Christ , keep seeking the things above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God. Set your mind on the things above, not on the things that are on earth.
----	--------------------------------------	-------	--

After my {birth of the Spirit}, I realized that the "sweet little pain" (which does not hurt at all) in my chest is the concrete sign of being filled with the Holy Spirit. This sign can also be seen as the Presence of the Risen Jesus Christ who suffered to save us. This is the "seal" that St-Paul talks about in order to belong to Christ.

During the 6 weeks following my {birth of the Spirit}, I had a strange feeling. First of all, time did not matter, because I felt eternity before me. Secondly, when I looked at the people around me, I felt they were deadly! They were like dead on bail, but they did not know it. In the stores, people wanted everything and they hurried. Yes, their lives are short, so they need to take advantage of it quickly! It made me a bit unhappy for them... After, I cleaned up my mind and that feeling disappeared. They only have to look for God as I did, I do not have to make myself unhappy for that.

Take a good look at what Jesus says:

NT	St-Matthew	8.21-22	Another of the disciples said to Him, "Lord, permit me first to go and bury my father." But Jesus said to him, "Follow Me, and allow the dead to bury their own dead." (1)
----	------------	---------	--

(1) Without the Life Jesus gives, every human being is like a death on bail. Yes, they are spiritual deaths.

Quickly, what is the meaning of the 1st Manifestation?

It is the {birth of the Spirit} that makes a person, a {God's child}.

Quickly, what is the meaning of the 2nd Manifestation?

It is the Breath of God that enters the heart so that the human being becomes its temple. Then, the person becomes a {God's child}.

NT	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	3,16	Do you not know that you are a temple of God and that the Spirit of God dwells in you? (*)
----	---	------	---

(*) In chapter |33|, this subject will be dealt with in depth.

The 3 days of prayers with the presence of the seal of Jesus in oneself are the sign of the rebirth or even the resurrection of the person with Christ **and this already on earth.**

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	3,1-3	Therefore if you have been raised up with Christ , keep seeking the things above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God ... and your life is hidden with Christ in God.
----	--------------------------------------	-------	--

Note:

Article | 33-L | gives additional explanations for these 2 Manifestations.

| 13-G | The 3rd and 4th Manifestations are each one, the {memorial of the communion with Christ}

Subsequently, I had 2 other Manifestations, one on the last Sunday of June and another on the first Sunday of July. This happened during 2 Eucharists on Sunday mass.

The Manifestation began when I put the host in my mouth.

My testimony:

The moment I ate the Eucharistic bread, I realized that there was a "special feeling," similar to a **fluid** (water or air) starting in my mouth and **spreading** in my chest and to fill it. Then, I felt a "presence" like butterflies in the area of my chest! It was not a human sensation at all. I did not even make a little jump! It lasted about 3 hours and then disappeared.

(*) We know that "butterflies" feelings in the chest area are well known **to lovers**. On the other hand, this feeling is difficult to describe. It is not a feeling of happiness. It does not hurt either. This gives the feeling of a sweet suffering. It is like a mixture of 2 feelings. Jesus **suffered** for **Love** for us.

In 2016, I asked myself the following question. Why does this Manifestation last about 3 hours? I did not find the answer until February 2022.

NT	St-Matthew	27,45	From noon onward, darkness came over the whole land until three in the afternoon
----	------------	-------	--

(*) Jesus suffered on the cross about 3 hours before he died. In simple, the Manifestation of communion with Jesus lasts the same amount of time.

| 13-H | Now, what is the meaning of my 3rd and 4th Manifestations?

1) The first is the {memorial to the Body of Christ}.

2) The second is the {memorial to the Blood of Christ}.

NT	St-Luke	22.19-20	And when He had taken <i>some</i> bread <i>and</i> given thanks, He broke it and gave it to them, saying, "This is My body which is given for you; do this in remembrance of Me." And in the same way <i>He took</i> the cup after they had eaten, saying, "This cup which is poured out for you is the new covenant in My blood.
	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	11.24 -25	and when He had given thanks, He broke it and said, "This is My body, which is for you; do this in remembrance of Me." In the same way <i>He took</i> the cup also after supper, saying, "This cup is the new covenant in My blood; do this, as often as you drink <i>it</i> , in remembrance of Me."
	St-John	6.52-57	Then the Jews <i>began</i> to argue with one another, saying, "How can this man give us <i>His</i> flesh to eat?" So Jesus said to them, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in yourselves. " He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood (1) has eternal life, and I will raise him up on the last day. "For My flesh is true food, and My blood is true drink. "He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him. "As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who eats Me, he also will live because of Me.

(1) In my testimony, this explains the "special feeling." Similar to a **fluid** (water or air) that starts in my mouth and **spreads** into my chest and fills it with **butterflies**.

| 13-I | My 5th Manifestation is a message for this book

At the beginning of September 2016, I was worried about this book. I was wondering if it would sell...

My testimony:

A few days later, one night, I had a dream. I was sleeping and I had a "flashback" that reminded me of my {birth of the Spirit}. Subsequently, I had these feelings:

- 1) **I Am** with you;
- 2) The commercial success of this book is unimportant;
- 3) You will not miss anything.

As I said before, there are no words, they are feelings.

The next day, I realized that I did not have to worry about it and write, that is all. Later... I realized that God really wanted this book. Why? In prayer, each time I asked for information for this book, he always made me a little Manifestation on the same night. So, **it is his book**, I am just writing...

A) It was only at the end of writing that I understood why the success of this book is unimportant.

This is because the reader must know the truth even if it may not please him! It is because on earth, God leaves the human free of choice. So, the Lord wanted a Christian book adapted to our time (the 2000s). My job is to make this book **visible** and **available**, no matter if **people read it or not**.

| 13-J | My 6th Manifestation is a request for information about the Holy Spirit

In September 2016, I discovered that there is a lot of information available about the Holy Spirit. But how to take stock of what is true?

- 1) The New Testament says that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or its reception is tangible, real, physical in the person.
- 2) The holy apostles only baptized adults because they needed the consent of the person.
- 3) Some Christian movements say that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or its reception is done at Christian baptism.
- 4) Looking at my testimony of my {birth of the Spirit} written in detail 4 days after the event, my narrative followed what the apostles say...

I was really torn, because the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or its reception is one of the cornerstones of Christianity.

So, I decided to ask it to the Lord...

It was on September 21st, here is my testimony:

A) That night, here is my prayer:

"Thank you, Lord, for being in my life. Lord, forgive me for what I do wrong sometimes. Help me to love you more because I am only a human being. You are my Life and it is Yours. Lord, I have a problem with your book. I do not know if the Holy Spirit always has a physical manifestation even at baptism. You know, but I do not know, I am confused. Can you send me a sign whenever you want? Thank you Lord, I love you, good night!"

B) I did not expect anything quickly. Then around 4 o'clock in the morning, something happened...

That night, the weather was nice.

I was sleeping in the dark and I was not thinking of anything.

- (1) I heard like a storm (thunder and a "flash" of light)!
- (2) I was half-awake and wondered what was going on outside...
- (3) Then, a wind started to blow gently on me...
- (4) Then, I realized that there was a wind in my room!
- (5) Then, I felt that the wind came at the same temperature (or heat) than me.
- (6) Then, I felt that the strength of the wind was such that it made me tremble all parts of my physical body. All my interior was trembling like tree leaves in the wind.

(7) I finally understood that it was the Holy Spirit in me.
 (8) I took the time to feel his beneficent Action in me.
 (9) Later, I felt a soft pain in my chest.
 (10) I said to the Lord, "Thank you, you are very kind!" Then, I fell asleep.

After this Manifestation, I had to work for a long time to understand. The Lord likes that we work a little. I did not understand the message until 4 days later. In reality, it was simply necessary to look in the New Testament.

So, I discovered the narrative of Pentecost...

To make a comparison, I put each line number of my **testimony** in the narrative below.

NT	Acts of the Apostles	2,1-4	When the day of Pentecost had come, they were all together in one place. And suddenly (1) there came from heaven (sky) (2) a noise like a violent rushing wind, and it filled the whole house (4) where they were sitting. And there appeared to them tongues as of fire (5) distributing themselves, and they rested on each one of them (6). And they were all filled (8 and 9) with the Holy Spirit (7) ...
----	----------------------	-------	--

(2) Here, there is a small translation problem in this Bible. For the Jews, the heaven is simply the sky above them.

There, the Lord has confirmed it!

Yes, there is always a Manifestation when the Holy Spirit is Present!

Reflecting a little, the word Spirit means "Wind or Breath." The word Holy means "without any evil, which is only proper to God." So, how can we receive the Wind or the Breath of God without feeling it? This comes from our misinterpretation of what the word spirit means. In Greek language, a spirit is a wind. On the other hand, our usual idea is that spirits pass through us without feeling them...

It is impossible to receive the Wind or the Breath of God without actually feeling it in us.

Even St-Peter (the leader of all Christian movements) has no power over the Holy Spirit:

NT	Acts of the Apostles	10,44	While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit fell upon all those who were listening to the message.
		10,47-48	"Surely no one can refuse the water for these to be baptized who have received the Holy Spirit just as we <i>did</i> , can he?" And he ordered them to be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ.

It is easy to see that no Christian movement makes the {gift of the Holy Spirit} through Christian baptism. It is God alone who makes this gift.

I was ready and the Holy Spirit came to Visit me quite simply.

God will do the same for you when you are ready too...

| 13-K | My 7th Manifestation, a Perfume

My testimony:

At the end of September 2016, one evening when I finished my prayer in my room, I felt an "orange perfume!" I could smell this "perfume" for about 5 minutes. Yet there was no smell of orange anywhere! While taking the time to breathe several times, I realized that the smell of this "perfume" was in my head, in my brain and not elsewhere! It is like I felt it, not with my nose, but inside my head!

In neuropsychology, we know that our nose is just an odor sensor. However, there is an odor interpretation center in our brain. The Lord had simply put this Perfume directly there! God thus shows the human being that he is our Creator. It is well known that the Manifestation of a Perfume is associated with the Presence of the Holy Spirit.

Here, even prayer goes through the Holy Spirit!

Note:

Article | 33-F | gives the full explanation of this Manifestation.

| 13-L | My 8th Manifestation, the seal of Jesus in the chest on request in prayer

After my {birth of the Spirit}, I felt a sweet little pain in my chest in the region of my heart. I knew that this was the mark of the {gift of the Holy Spirit} in me. Reading St-Paul, I realized he was talking about it.

NT	2nd Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	1,22	who also sealed us and gave <i>us</i> the Spirit in our hearts as a pledge .
----	---	------	--

This Manifestation of the seal of Jesus in my chest is still available to me when I ask it in prayer. This is very comforting, because I know that God accompanies me by his Presence in my everyday life.

In this verse, the choice of the word "pledge" **needs an explanation**. In reality, St-Paul meant here that the process of resurrection begins on earth with the {gift of the Holy Spirit} and is finalized after our human life. St-Paul sees this gift as a deposit on the inheritance of the Kingdom of God. See chapter | 30 |.

| 13-M | My 9th Manifestation, information about the devil

A) Jesus uses the term "Satan" but not really the term "the devil."

Satan means only "Opponent of God." For Jesus, anyone who does not do the Will of the Father (who is only to do good) is somehow a "little Satan." This explains why Jesus could see "Satan(s)" everywhere around him on earth! On the other hand, we must not take fright and see ourselves and others as such anyway. God alone is perfectly good. How many parents in Quebec use the following affectionate expression for her child, "Where is she hiding, the beautiful little love demon of her daddy?"

We know that the idea of the devil had a dazzling thrust around the 1500s. People of that time were very superstitious and saw demons everywhere...

If we do research on the Internet, what do we find? Many Christians still believe in the devil and many others do not believe him at all. I even found an exorcism on the Internet filmed seriously by religious people. Yes, this film makes you think! See article | 18-J |.

In addition, I have seen various filmed testimonies from people who have a near-death experience (NDE). Some saw a light at the end of a tunnel. Some people saw Jesus in front of them. See article | 6-O |. On the other hand, other people who have had a bad life talk about having seen or gone to hell with demons. See article | 18-I |.

I am absolutely convinced that all these people have seen what they say. I do not even doubt it for a second, because to tell such an experience, you must have been deeply distressed! So I do not take anything away from them.

NT	St-John	5.28-29	"Do not marvel at this; for an hour is coming, in which all who are in the tombs will hear His voice, and will come forth; those who did the good deeds to a resurrection of life, those who committed the evil deeds to a resurrection of judgment . (1)
----	---------	---------	--

(1) Excerpt from the New American Standard.

Here, I am giving you **my own English translation** of the same verses but from the Bible (Jérusalem de 1956 des Éditions du Cerf):

NT	St-John	5.28-29	Do not be surprised, the hour is coming when all those who lie in the tomb will come out at the call of his voice; those who have done good will be resurrected for life, those who have done evil, for damnation . (1)
----	---------	---------	--

(1) In French, the exact expression is: "**pour la damnation**."

On the other hand, being a scientist, there is something illogical. If we take into account that there is really the "Last Judgment at the end of time" and that everyone is there, **then why did these people see hell directly without any judgment?**

In psychology, the only valid explanation I see is a disturbance of the brain during the process of death. I will discuss this subject in more detail in chapter | 16 |. In psychoanalysis, the idea that we have of the devil has been well defined. It is **the death drive** that every "normally formed" human being has in his head in a natural way. We can see this **drive** as the fear of dying. In a way, the devil is "the personification of death or the actor who brings us to death!" Yes, it is scary, for sure!

Scientifically, I have all the solid evidence that God really exists. By cons, I do not have any solid evidence that the devil exists. In addition logically, he cannot exist, I explain myself:

1) How to freely choose good or evil if our Creator leaves this "Tempter" around us?

2) It would be illogical that God (being alone Eternal) to maintain the life (existence) of his "Great Adversary."

This is what Jesus said:

NT	St-Mark	3.24	"If a kingdom is divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand.
----	---------	------	---

So, God does not maintain the existence of the devil!

3) This would also be against the observations of science. We know that the laws of nature (physics, chemistry, etc.) are mathematically perfect and regulated like a Swiss watch. If the devil existed, he would have disturbed these laws and made them random, even to understand nothing about them. Which is far from being the case, they are perfect!

After this reflection, my research on the devil was over. I said to myself, "I will surely not pray the Lord to show me whether the devil exists or not!" I am willing to write this book for the Lord and for you, but it does not tempt me to see the Horror! Let's say I am a little scared...

B) I will tell you something that happened last night (October 15, 2016).

You should know that a person does not write a book in one shot like that. There are many phases (research, draft, etc.). Yesterday, I was at the end of a step and I said to myself, "It would be interesting to push a little more the story of the devil, but I do not have any solid information to do it." It was 10 pm, I went to bed without praying because I was tired. You know how in the middle of the night our brain make us dream about our worries the day before. You are going to laugh...

My testimony:

I was asleep, and dreaming for a moment here and there that I was possessed by the devil! Yes, it was pretty "terrifying" at times, but I was telling myself through other waking moments that my brain was playing tricks on me. Thereafter, suddenly around 4 am, I felt a sweet wind on my whole body that woke me up completely. My brain then calmed down and the wind on me stopped only a few minutes later. This wind was as if someone had just lit a fan on me. In fact, I had blankets all over my body up to my neck, so there was no real breeze.
--

(*) You will tell me, "What is this?" Well, that is the answer I was looking for. I told you, the Lord always hears us. He answers his {children}.

Here is the explanation:

When I fell asleep, my brain stirred up ideas about the devil, so Evil and Possession, etc. My brain played tricks on me a part of the night. Suddenly, the Holy Spirit Blows on me to make my fears disappear.

So what is the message?

- 1) Jesus Christ drives out demons. This, the Gospels do not stop saying it. So, this is not the message.
- 2) We must not play with our fears in our heads, because our brains accumulate unnecessary stress and can play tricks especially at night. That is what is taught in psychology. So, this is not the message.
- 3) The Holy Spirit is there to Blow our fears out of us in order to make us feel good and at peace.

A well-mastered message:

In addition, I realized something important during my Manifestations. When the Lord makes a message in the head of a person, every small detail of the thought is important. In reality, the Lord perfectly controls the experience.

→ Thereafter, it is only a matter of reflecting in order to discover the meaning of the message.

To confirm this box, see the bonus Manifestation of article | 13-Q|.

In the experience, where was the devil? In my head. It was my fear of death and the Breath chased it away.

→ **So, the message received is: "the devil is the fear of death in our head and Jesus has the power to drive it away by giving us Eternal Life."**

For skeptical readers who say to themselves, "But this does not prove that the devil does not exist!" Yes, you are absolutely right...

Except that:

- 1) To prove that something exists is feasible. For example: it is all about finding a single cat on earth to prove that cats exist.
- 2) On the other hand, to prove that something does not exist, it is impossible! Why? We would have to rake the whole universe to make sure that what we are looking for is nowhere! **Who can do that? No one!**

C) Conclusion on the message I received.

For me, the message I received is clear.

Moreover, in the months that followed, I did not have any other Manifestations of the Lord in order to correct my conclusion. ***So, my conclusion is good.***

I thank the Lord greatly for his enlightenment!

Note:

To go a little further with the message of the Lord, see the end of article | 33-L| in point 18).

| 13-N| My 10th Manifestation, the Love of God

Yesterday (October 30, 2016), a hearing-impaired young woman who does not speak much has gone to my home to sell me a CD of music. To encourage her, I bought it. Listening to the music on the CD, I realized that it is she who sings and is accompanied by musicians. It is normal that she does not sing very well, but I found that she had great courage to sell her records from house to house. I said to myself, "I do not have half of her courage!"

My testimony:

In the middle of the next night, when I was sleeping in the dark and I was not thinking of anything, I felt a "beneficent vibration" inside me for about 5 minutes. The strength of this "beneficent vibration" came from the inside and not from the outside. It made me vibrate inside my body like the turbulence of a flame, but at the temperature of the body. Then, I said, "Thank you, Lord, I love you!" **At the same time, "the turbulence of the beneficent vibration" has become at least twice stronger for about one minute!** Then "the turbulence of the beneficent vibration" diminished and stopped. After, I felt in myself as if the inside of my body was still vibrating a little. This sensation lasted most of the night.

Sense of this Manifestation:

→ God loves us and shows it to us. Thank you Lord!

| 13-O | My 11th Manifestation, the confirmation of the Breath of God that gives the birth from above

Yesterday (December 6, 2016), I was wondering whether the {gift of the Holy Spirit} can be received in any other way than by the "Breath of God in the nostrils." I was thinking that there are surely other ways according to the person who receives it and according to the message that God wants to give. I thought that this information was missing in this book...

My testimony:

The same night, I made this prayer:

"Lord forgive me for what I do wrong sometimes. Lord, your book is going well. Lord, I need your help to finish it. Good night!"

In the middle of the night, when I was sleeping in the dark and I was not thinking of anything. I felt a "Wind enter in my nostrils." I began to breathe deeply through my nostrils. No matter how I breathed, the wind was continually entering. I realized that I inhaled and expired in a human way, but that the Wind continued to enter through my nostrils. I knew very well that it was the Holy Spirit. I finally thanked the Lord for his help.

Behold, the Lord has confirmed it!

The {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth from above} is always done in the same way for everyone.

The {birth of the Spirit} is always done by: "the Breath of the Presence of God which is really long in your nostrils." This Breath is really long because it is the Breath of the Eternal (God). This Breath is wonderful because God shows you his Glory. This Breath completely fills the inside of your body. Afterwards, it gives you the feeling that your chest is dilating a bit because the Breath of Life has filled your heart and you are now a temple of God. This Breath brings you to a new life.

This Breath of Life is in the image of the narrative of the birth of Adam in the book of Genesis.

OT	Genesis	2,7	Then the LORD God formed man of dust from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living being.
----	---------	-----	---

This time, it is not the first breath of biological and mortal (human) life on earth, but the second Breath of Eternal Life for the Kingdom of God.

St-Paul says that the person then becomes a new creation. Following the Firstborn, Jesus Christ, Son of God.

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	1,15	He (Jesus Christ) is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of all creation.
----	--------------------------------------	------	---

I remind you of the chart of article |3-D|.

I give you here a small chart summarizing the general concepts defined mainly by St-Paul:

2 forms of life		Principle of life	Envelope
1st form of life	Mortal life on earth (An autonomous life, not united to God)	Soul or psyche (1st breath, mortal)	Human body Psychic body (1)
2nd form of Life	Life in Heaven (A united Life at the Eternal Source, God)	Spirit (2nd Breath, Eternal)	Spiritual Body (2) (Unveiled at the end of time)

(1) St-Paul calls "the psychic man or the **natural** man," the person who does not have his {birth of the Spirit}. He only has the first breath.

(2) St-Paul calls "the spiritual man," the person who has had his {birth of the Spirit}. He got the 2nd Breath.

|13-P| My 12th Manifestation, the Transfiguration of Jesus on the Mountain

Important note:

I have not yet given the necessary notions to explain this Manifestation.

Here, I give only my testimony of my Manifestation on February 5, 2017.

My testimony:

I was sleeping in the dark and I was not thinking of anything. Suddenly, I felt a weak vibration in my body, but a strong enough vibration in my face that woke me up. I recognized one of the signs of my Manifestations of the Holy Spirit as in many others. However, there was no Wind or even a message. I said to myself, "There is no message in there, what is this vibration for?" Anyway ... and I went back to sleep.

→ This Manifestation will not be completely resolved until 2023, in article |34-B|.

|13-Q| My 13th Manifestation, a call to be a witness of the Resurrection of Christ

At the beginning of July, I had about two weeks left to complete the French correction of this book (2017). I had not had another Manifestation of the Spirit in about 5 months. I thought to myself, "I hope the Lord is satisfied with his book!" A few days later, I had a little Manifestation.

My testimony:

That night, I was dreaming of one of my old friends. I had lived in his home during my studies in the 1990s. In my dream, I spoke to him and there was a very light and continual breath coming out of my mouth and going towards his direction. However, my friend tried to avoid this breath. I felt that the breath did not come from me, but from inside me and that I was just trying to direct it towards him. Afterwards, I woke up softly and **felt that there was actually a continual Breath coming out of my mouth** for a few more minutes! Then, I recognized the Manifestation of the Spirit, and I was not even surprised. But I wondered, "Why this friend in particular?" I cannot talk to him about this book because he died about 10 years ago!

I did not understand the meaning of this message until a week later:

- ° I know that this friend was a good person;
- ° I cannot do anything for him anymore, because he is dead;
- ° We see that this friend is reluctant to receive the word and breath;
- ° We see that personally, I am only an instrument to transmit the word and breath that do not come from me.

If I make the link with this book:

- ° No one is saved by his own good deeds, but for following the Way of Christ.
- ° We have the time of our human life to receive the Breath of Life of God, after which it is too late.
- ° Of course, many readers will be reluctant to believe and make efforts;
- ° I transmit to the reader the {inspiration} that I received.

Note:

This is my first Manifestation in which I do not receive the Breath, but I transmit it. So, I got the answer to my question. The book is ready for its distribution and the Lord is satisfied.

(*) Thank you Lord for answering me!

| 13-R | A small physical healing

A) At the beginning of October 2016, I was already working full-time on this book for 2 months.

Those who write a lot on computers know that neck pain is inevitably felt. I told myself that I would like to have a little chiropractic session to relax vertebrae of my neck. The only difficulty is that a physiotherapist told me several years ago that I could not because I had a dislocated vertebra in my neck. So, a chiropractor would only stretch that same vertebra further without relaxing any of the others. For those who do not know what I am talking about, when I turned my head, a person next to me could hear a "tac."

So I prayed to the Lord for some help. I told him that I am ready to write his book, but I have pain in my neck all the time...

Well, a few days later, I had a little healing:

In the middle of the night, when I was sleeping in the dark and I was not thinking of anything. Then, I had a feeling of vibration in my spine (from the middle of my back and over the entire length of my neck). The vibration lasted for about 5 minutes. Then, the vibration disappeared, and I felt that my neck was less tense. I immediately thanked the Lord for his help.

About a month later, I realized that my symptom (the famous "tac" in my neck) no longer existed at all. All I had to do was some exercise to remove fatigue. We must understand that the Lord gives a good help, but that he does not do everything for us.

So for people who are suffering, you see that there is always hope with the Lord! See article | 17-C |.

| 13-S | Other small miracles in front of my eyes...

Before my {birth of the Spirit}, I witnessed 3 little miracles.

A) Around the age of 32.

It was Easter Sunday morning. I was visiting my parents in the countryside. At this time of the year, early in the morning, the fields are covered with snow with a thick ice crust on the top. The ice crust is so thick that a person can walk on it without breaking it. That morning, I went for an ATV ride (all-terrain vehicle, 4 wheels) on the crust. I was about 2 km from the house when I found myself in an area where the crust did not support the weight of the vehicle. The wheels of the vehicle then broke the crust. I put the vehicle into reverse, and the wheels still broke the crust. To remove some weight, I decided to walk next to the vehicle. My feet broke the crust and I had the snow practically at the hips. If I try to move forward, the wheels were breaking the crust. If I try to move backward, the wheels were still breaking the crust. There had holes everywhere like a Gruyere cheese! I then made a small prayer to the Lord. I asked him for help, "Lord, I will not be able to go to Easter mass if you do not help me!" Well, after my little prayer, the wheels of the vehicle no longer broke the crust at all. I went around the holes and went back home! But that is impossible! The wheels passed on the remaining crust between the holes which, of course, has no strength to support the wheels! At mass, to thank the Lord, I put a nice \$ 20 bill in the quest basket. Thank you Lord!

B) At the age of 34.

I had just started a new job in Lévis. I had been in room and board for 3 months already. I was looking for a reasonably priced apartment, but I could not find one. One evening, I prayed to the Lord. I told him that I was not able to find an apartment and that I needed his help absolutely. Well, the next day in the nearby street, there was a sign for an apartment for rent! I went to work at 8 am, I made a phone call to the owner. At 9 am, I was visiting the apartment and decided to take it!

From these 2 little miracles, I understood that we start by doing our best to solve the problem. Then, if we ask him, the Lord helps us to make the missing part...

C) During my research if God really exists at 45 years old.

Around November 2015, my expensive print cartridge (\$100 for 1,000 copies) indicated 0% ink. It continued to print a little, but the result was pretty pale. During the rest of my search for God, I printed at least 500 additional pages with the same empty ink cartridge! Subsequently, the day I told myself that my search was over, **that very same day**, the cartridge stopped working all of a sudden. **Pretty surprising!** As if the Lord provided ink...

I give you here the reference of a testimony of a sister (a nun). She said that her convent had no money to buy 2,000 liters of heating oil needed to survive the winter. Well, the convent started the winter with 500 liters and ended the winter surprisingly with the same 500 liters!

Internet Keywords (small video testimony)	1) Saint Joseph and the testimony of an amazing miracle. 1) Saint Joseph et le témoignage d'un miracle étonnant.
--	---

| 13-T | How to read the testimonies of the Manifestations of the Spirit in this present book?

A reader might tell me that he does not know how to read the testimonies of the Manifestations of the Spirit, because it does not correspond to anything he knows humanly.

So here...

Testimonials should not be interpreted. You have to read the testimonies word for word as they are described by imagining yourself living them inside.

In fact, what I am describing is exactly what every {God’s child} feels and sees. This, whatever the time (even of the apostles). To help you in your reading, I give you a little chart from article | 34-L | of 2022.

Explanation on the Manifestations of the Spirit. They are mystical. I will give you the simplest possible description:

- ° The Wind comes from a Storm in the sky (like at Pentecost). Afterwards, we feel the air moving around us and on our skin (even if we are clothed). Strangely, the Wind does not move an object or even a single speck of dust around us.
- ° The Breath is in our nostrils. This Breath mixes with our human breathing. We know that our human breath is back and forth with air. On the other hand, the Breath of God in our nostrils is continuous and slightly pulsating. Depending on the Manifestation, the Breath can enter into us or the Breath can go out of us.
- ° The Fire makes itself felt in us by its Turbulence (which makes our interior tremble), but this Fire does not burn.
- ° The very intense Light is visible inside us and this even if our eyes are closed.

| 13-U | Additional Manifestations of the Spirit

It should be noted that this present chapter | 13 | was written in 2017. Subsequently, I had just over 8 additional Manifestations of the Spirit to complete the writing of this work in 2023.

| 14 | Testimonials of other people

| 14-A | Introduction, synergy

In chapter | 13 |, I gave you my testimony for 16 wonders.

By cons, I am not alone to be a {God's child}. There are many others. Of course, not all {God's children} necessarily want to give testimony. As I told you, Christianity is a relationship between a person and God. In writing this book, I realized that it is a joint work, it is a synergy. I wanted to write this book well and the Lord wanted to {inspire} it. In a certain way, the will of the person is united with that of the Lord. The Lord never imposes anything, because it is a relationship. I never imagined writing such a book in my life! The Lord and I worked very hard to make you **this gift of Truth**. Who has not noticed that truth is not easy to find in our beautiful human society of power and artificial kingdoms? In any case, our beautiful little blue planet (Earth) and nature are currently suffering a lot of it...

| 14-B | Listen to other testimonials

To do this, I propose 2 methods (A and B).

A) By your own search for testimonials on the Internet.

Here are:

1) From one of the following Internet search engines:

Google	YouTube	Vimeo	Dailymotion	or other
--------	---------	-------	-------------	----------

2) I suggest the following Internet keywords:

Baptism of the Spirit	Holy Spirit
Outpouring of the Spirit	Spirit of God
Testimony of the Baptism of the Spirit	Testimony Holy Spirit
Testimony of the Outpouring of the Spirit	Or other combinations of these words

3) A good search tip.

By doing your research, when you have a first testimony, in the side window, the Internet will offer other testimonials. In this way, you can go from one testimony to another. There are always beautiful discoveries to make.

B) You can also go to the website of this book for the suggested resources.

See article |0-I|.

It must be understood that a visual testimony is very difficult for the one who testifies. This is a great gift that requires a lot of respect from the viewer (us). No one makes a testimony of the heart to have fun to become a star! Often a person who testifies is not even thanked. So no one testifies for himself, but for the Lord...

So, the Lord thanks you all for your testimonies, because they are always very precious for him and for all of us!

Note for skeptics:

You have to be realistic and understand that there will always be people playing comedy. To find out: look at their eyes; their sincerity; their messages and you will recognize those who are telling the truth. Most people are sincere. In any case, you lose absolutely nothing to seek, because I assure you that God really exists and that the Holy Spirit is a real Manifestation. **Search and you will find...**

|14-C| In summary, here is what you will discover in these testimonials...

These are all very nice and generous people.

We can see sincerity in their eyes.

Their encounter with the Holy Spirit changed their lives. They are all much happier.

Some testimonies are very recent, because they show with their hands the {gift of the Holy Spirit} that fills the heart.

Some people thought that their life was really over (drugs, prison, alcohol, illness, etc.). Then, they shouted from the bottom of their hearts to the Lord. He came to them and gave them a {second life}. **Congratulations!**

Some have even been cured of an illness.

I have even seen the testimony of some religious people. After the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, they realized that in reality, although they had big diplomas, they missed the principal, the encounter with the Lord...

NT	St-John	14,26	"But the Helper (the Paraclete), the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all that I said to you.
----	---------	-------	---

So, good discoveries to all!

| 15 | To be born again

| 15-A | What happens after his {birth of the Spirit}?

We become a witness of the Risen Jesus Christ. God is no longer a belief, but a certainty because he is now part of our life. This allows the person to follow the teachings of Jesus much more easily.

The person becomes a {God's child}. It is not an idea, it is real. In a pictorial way, the person who had both eyes on earth now has one eye on earth and the other in Heaven. Over the next 6 months, the person will have to adapt little by little because his values will change. The person understands that God never leaves his {child} alone. Like me, the person will probably have small Manifestations from time to time as needed. Like me, the person will feel the "seal of Jesus in his chest" for a few hours when he asks it in prayer.

It must be understood that the {birth of the Spirit} is **the greatest Gift** a human being can receive on earth. All the gold of the world cannot buy a place with God! So, be very happy to have your {birth of the Spirit} because you have to work on yourself to get it. In reality, the true purpose of our existence on earth is to obtain our {birth of the Spirit}. Why? On earth, life is about 100 years old. In Heaven, Life is Eternal!

After my {birth of the Spirit}, it was easy for me to understand that the Holy Spirit changed things in me. I am more at peace; I am calmer; I am less worried about life; objects are less important; my life has a real meaning.

St-Paul said that the person is renewed after his {birth of the Spirit}. **He was not wrong!**

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	3,8-10	But now you also, put them all aside: anger, wrath, malice, slander, <i>and</i> abusive speech from your mouth. Do not lie to one another, since you laid aside the old self with its <i>evil</i> practices, and have put on the new self who is being renewed to a true knowledge according to the image of the One who created him
----	--------------------------------------	--------	--

To tell you that the {birth of the Spirit} is a concrete Manifestation in us, I will tell you something. After my {birth of the Spirit}, my interior became quite sensitive (not emotionally, but physically) for about 6 weeks. I give you examples:

1) Before, I used to play a bit of my electric guitar with distortion effect (metal sound). Afterwards, I was no longer able to support the guitar with this aggressive sound against my chest. It hurt me, inside me! So I continued to play, but without distortion.

2) Before, I was able to speak sometimes aggressively. After that, I no longer felt aggressive in myself, as if it were just a memory.

Subsequently, my human nature came back a bit and I became less sensitive.

| 15-B | To win good and to lose bad

A) Here is what I won:

- ° My life has taken on a real meaning;
- ° To feel the Presence of God in me;
- ° To know the Goodness of God, to feel loved by him and to know that he is always there for me;
- ° To know that my life is connected to God;
- ° To never feel lonely;
- ° To love God really;
- ° To be less in a hurry, for with God we have Eternity;
- ° To have peace in my mind;
- ° To find Christian songs on the Internet that are very pleasant, see article | 26-D |;
- ° To know how to pray naturally, see chapter | 26 |;
- ° To be more patient with nature, animals and people;
- ° To have Manifestations of the Holy Spirit and {inspiration} for this book.

B) Here is what I lost:

- ° **My fear**, my life is not only in my hands, God accompanies me;
- ° **My solitude**, God is always there to listen to me;
- ° **My human death**, God has already made me feel my resurrection with Jesus;
- ° **Sometimes, feeling a little lost in life**, God always has plans;
- ° **My impatience**, God is a good teacher, because he has created life on Earth in some billions of years;
- ° **My lust**, when you have God in your life, you have everything.

| 15-C | Here are my tips:

- 1) You now have a tangible confirmation that God really exists since he has Manifested himself to you.
- 2) With this Manifestation, you are no longer quite the human person you were before. So, you need to take the time to adapt to your new reality of {God's child}. Breathe through your nose and take the time to enjoy the Peace of God in you.
- 3) If suddenly, you began to think that the devil and eternal hell exist, it is normal! Read chapters | 16 | and | 18 |, this will help you become calm again and smile again.
- 4) If you are a little lost in the catechesis that you have learned, it is normal! I searched for 4 months. The problem is that there has been too much human power in history. Tell me sincerely, how a religious person can guide his followers by saying that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a reality when he did not receive it himself! In Christianity, this problem is generalized and absolutely insoluble. In Quebec, I do not believe that there is more than one Christian in a thousand who has received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} and I am optimistic. It must be known that {God's children} are all humble, so it is obvious that their calls have never been heard very loudly...
- 5) Every day, always be happy to have received this **Gift from God** even if people do not believe you. That is their problem and not yours. You already have your ticket to Heaven! So, you do not have to make yourself unhappy for people who do not want to make efforts! They will simply end up in the ground like everything that is born on earth. You, you are now "born from above" as Jesus says so well (St-John: 3,3).
- 6) Talk about what you live only to those who can take it.
- 7) It should be known that some Christian movements have taken in the past very firm positions in their ways of doing things and their **dogmas** and nothing and no one can make them change their minds. That is why this book has been written to get the message straight to those who want to hear.
- 8) We must understand that our human brain was born on earth and that it likes the realities of earth. Let's be realistic, God exists, but earth exists too! We must accept to live with a compromise, to have one eye in Heaven and the other on earth at the same time. **But the priority is God.**
- 9) If you ask yourself, "Should I become a religious person?" This is not required in the Gospels. Moreover, I do not know any testimony in which the Lord asks to be a religious person. Even the Blessed Virgin does not ask for it in her Apparitions. On the other hand, you have your {birth of the Spirit} and many religious people do not have it! You are already part of the {assembly of God's children}, so you have already succeeded in your life.
- 10) How do you know if the Lord has a project for you? He will ask you this clearly and give you his support. **Do not do anything without him because you are going to face problems.** Do not try to save the world, Christ has already passed and they crucified him! I give you an example with this book in article | 13-I |. Basically, the message that I got from the Lord is: "whether this book sells or not, reads or not, my role is to give this message and that is it!" The purpose of this book is not that the reader believes me. No, the goal is to give him the opportunity to walk towards the Truth (Jesus). A reader can look at this book for an hour and then close it, because it scares him and puts it back in his library. Two years later, this same reader can experience a difficult event and reopen this book to go one step further. The way to the Lord may be short, it may be long and sometimes it may never be completed. The difference between success and failure depends only on your sincerity and your effort. If a person does not succeed, it is either because he does not believe enough

in God, or because he has other things more interesting to see. But as the proverb says, "God helps those that help themselves."

In summary:

- ° Thank the Lord;
- ° Take good care of yourself;
- ° Do only what you can do with respect and freedom of others;
- ° Do not take fright.

| 15-D | How to explain the {birth of the Spirit}?

One of the earliest texts of the New Testament and therefore one of the closest to the thought of Jesus is the 1st Epistle of St-John dated around the year 0040. Here are the points:

- ° There are many Persons in one God.
- ° God the Father is the Eternal;
- ° God the Son is the Word who pronounced the Creation;
- ° The Word was incarnated (Jesus Christ) on earth;
- ° Some important recommendations on the Way of Christ;
- ° Jesus is the propitiation for our sins;
- ° The anointing that Jesus gave to his disciples and which dwells in each of them;
- ° The Spirit of God who dwells in a {God's child} as in a temple and teaches him the truth;
- ° Unity between the Father, the Son and {God's children};
- ° Eternal Life.

→ On the other hand, St-John is unable to say what form of life a {God's child} will have at his resurrection and when all this happens.

Psychology notions

| 16 | Some useful notions of psychology

In order to go further in our search for the Truth, it is necessary to look at some basic notions of human thought. The major difficulty in finding the logic of the Bible is related mainly to the idea of the devil. It is therefore necessary to acquire some notions to see clearly in all this. Before the 1900s, science of psychology was not advanced enough to understand what was happening with people who saw demons. Now, psychology helps to better understand and differentiate between reality and imaginary.

| 16-A | Consciousness

More than 100 years ago, people thought they had a kind of light in their head that we called a "soul." At death, the soul floated like a ghost in the air... This thought was very common and is still a little today. But with modern science, this thought is no longer realistic at all! It has been discovered that the human brain has over 100,000,000,000 living cells interconnected like a telephone network. Our brain is a living organism that functions autonomously. Even Jesus 2,000 years ago knew it, because here is what he says:

NT	St-Matthew	16,15-17	He said to them, "But who do you say that I am?" Simon Peter answered, "You are the Christ, the Son of the living God." And Jesus said to him, "Blessed are you, Simon Barjona, because flesh and blood (1) did not reveal <i>this</i> to you , but My Father who is in heaven.
----	------------	----------	--

(1) The human being is made only of flesh and blood. His interior (or his soul) is as deadly as his body.

When you read this book, you are in your consciousness. It is your brain that makes your consciousness. If your brain dies, your consciousness stops too. Do you want proof? Where are you when you sleep very deeply? You can sleep 8 hours as if the night had lasted only 10 minutes. We say to ourselves, "Not already in the morning!"

| 16-B | Reality or imagination?

To better understand our human brain, here I am doing a small introduction to a fundamental basis that is the difference between reality and imaginary.

First, there is the "**external reality**" that surrounds us. This is what really exists around us. Example: the trees of our street.

Secondly, without knowing it, we make ourselves a "**mental image**" of this external reality, because we interpret reality through our 5 senses (sight, smell, hearing, taste and touch). We make a mental idea of reality. For example, a tree is tall, green, and does not move on its own. This mental image serves to define external reality. This gives us some reassuring landmarks.

Except that:

1) The "**external reality**" around us is one thing.

AND...

2) Our "**mental image**" of this reality is another.

On the other hand, we try to make the two coincide as much as possible.

A) I give you 2 examples:

1) The cat of the neighbor really exists (the mind, the mental image), because I have already touched it, it was purring (the external reality).

→ Conclusion, cats exist.

2) A witch does not really exist (the mind, the mental image), because I have never met her (the external reality).

→ Conclusion, witches are just stories of fairy tales.

B) I give you 2 other examples:

1) A human being knows (the mind, the mental image) that a rainbow exists, because he sees its colors (the external reality).

→ Conclusion, rainbows exist.

On the other hand...

2) For a dog (the mind, the mental image), the rainbow does not exist, because it does not really see colors (this is an incapacity of its sense of sight).

→ Conclusion, rainbows do not exist.

We find here a major problem, because we have 2 opposite conclusions for the same reality. Man sees what dog does not see. We find here that our belief can be different from the true reality.

C) Here is an example of history:

You must have seen the movie about the Titanic tragedy (a boat that sank off Newfoundland in 1912). We, the spectators of the movie, we know the story, the boat will sink and it is for us a (true reality). But at that time, Titanic's passengers firmly believe that the boat is "unsinkable" (the mind, the mental image). What caused the disaster is not (the reality) of the boat that can really sink. No, what caused the disaster is (the mind, the mental image) that it is impossible for the boat to sink. So for the futility of arriving at the port of New York in record time, the crew of the Titanic sailed without fear at high speed and in the middle of the night through the icebergs. As a result, the Titanic hit an iceberg and sank quickly, resulting in about 1500 deaths.

D) So, it must be understood that there are 2 distinct things:

1) The true **reality**.

AND...

2) What we **think** is real.

The difficulty is that there is not a direct link between the 2!

An example:

3,000 years ago, some people thought the stars were angels. Now the stars are nuclear furnaces. But it is always the same reality, the same stars.

So for the same **reality**, there can be several **thoughts** (the mental image) according to the time.

The major difficulty of the human being is that he firmly believes (his mental image) and not (the reality). Unfortunately, we see reality through our "own psyche." It is for this reason that although pollution is very obvious on earth, our society does not really care about it.

A last example:

A person who has never been to war can find it very exciting. Fighter planes, rifles, power, etc. But for someone who has been there and came back alive, that can be very traumatic. So much so that he can spend his nights screaming!

E) Conclusion:

Our mental image does not guarantee the true reality that surrounds us.

It is therefore necessary to discern the difference between the 2 otherwise we are subject to:

1) To mentally believe that a **true reality** is **false**.

2) To mentally believe that a **false reality** is **true**.

That is why I introduced the detective's method in article |5-F|. It is a powerful way to search for the true reality and correct our mental image.

|16-C| Let's take a first step in the development of the child's brain

To discern the difference between the true reality and our thought, it is necessary to acquire some notions of the development of our brain. Our brain begins its construction baby and finish it after adolescence.

The younger a child is, the more his brain develops its fundamental parts. I am asking you a question. What is the foundation of the human being? To answer it, remember the questions you ask when a mother gives birth to a baby.

- ° Is the baby alive?
- ° Is the baby healthy?
- ° Is the baby a girl or a boy?

The first two questions are about life and death. The third question concerns reproduction. The bottom of our brain is primarily concerned with staying alive and secondly with reproducing. In psychology, it is said that our brain is basically psychosexual.

Now, let's take a first step in building our brain...

A) We know that a baby is born with his eyes closed.

He is innocent and has no mental idea of the world around him. His life is connected to his mother who takes full care of him. At this age, the fundamental part of his brain is "total security."

At first, the baby (the self or the ego) and his mother (the other one) together make only one person in the baby's head. This is what we call "being in fusion." To represent the whole, I draw a rectangle below. This rectangle is the "mental safety" of the baby.

Here is the chart:

Whole
The self or ego (the baby) and the other one (the mother) merged

In psychology, the will or desire of a person is simply called: drives or urges.

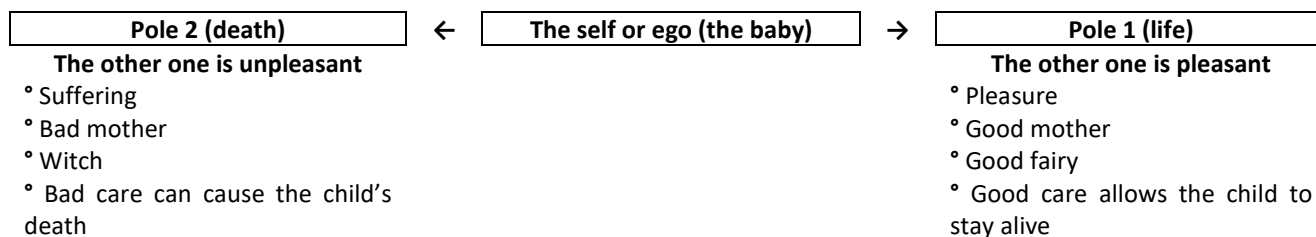
For the baby, all the drives (desires) are mixed in his head. Everything is possible, he has not yet classified his drives (desires) in the drawers of his head.

B) Afterwards, the baby will realize that he and his mother are 2 people.

This will happen around the age of 8 months. In psychology, this is called: the mirror stage.

There is the self and the other. For the first time, the baby will make a classification in his drives (urges). A new mental (psychic) arrangement will then be built. There is the self and the other. The other one (the mother) can bring to the baby pleasant sensations (pleasure) and unpleasant sensations (suffering).

Here is the chart:



At this stage, we see that the child is totally dependent on the other one (his mother). Depending on the care or lack of care, he may live or die. This is the first time the baby is scared. He is scared of dying and it is really terrible for him! It is the love of his mother that will give him the security needed to continue to develop mentally.

On the other hand, the reality is:

Sometimes the mother is very pleasant because breastfeeding is at the right time.

Sometimes the mother is very unpleasant because breastfeeding is done too late.

Notice (above) the two **poles (1 and 2)** on the right and on the left.

The 2 very simple thoughts on the other one will form.

The pole 1 is the pleasure symbolized by **the good fairy**.

The pole 2 is the suffering symbolized by **the witch**.

We see the fundamental concepts: (pleasure/suffering); (good/bad); (good fairy/witch).

Let's not forget that there is a lot of dependence between the baby and his mother. This link is of an extreme strength that is connected to the 2 poles (life/death).

In psychology:

The pole 1 is called the (life drive).

The pole 2 is called the (death drive).

The pole 1 invigorates the body to move forward and make plans.

The pole 2 unbalances the body and makes it depressed.

The will to live comes at the same time as the fear of dying. This is mainly the explanation of the fervor for extreme games. When we approach death, this is also where we hold the most to life.

C) Later, when the child will really know his father.

Instinctively, the mother will transmit to the child that the father is stronger than she physically. The child will make a mental association once again very exaggerated...

The pole 1 representing the good fairy will be associated with (the exaggerated masculine strength) to become the image of the super good father who can be effectively associated with "God the Father."

The Pole 2 representing the witch will be associated with (the exaggerated male strength) to become the image of the super bad father who can be effectively associated with the "**devil**." Now you understand why the image we make of the devil is masculine.

It is not uncommon to hear in Quebec, "When I was young, my father was criticizing so much in the house that he looked like the devil. In any case, it was hell!"

For the brain, these 2 poles (life/death) are indissociable like the 2 ends of the same stick.

For fans of horror movies, authors have used the arsenal of fear of the brain of the child under construction:

- ° The great **link of dependence** of the child on the other one;
- ° The **evil of the witch**;
- ° The **exaggerated male power**.

All this to create **terror** or **evil possession of the devil**! Yes, it is obviously terrifying, but it is in our head...

Be careful, what I am explaining to you is not the reality about the devil.

No, I only show you the construction of our thought (the mental image). This has nothing to do with (the true external reality). That is what every human being has recorded in the back of his brain.

On the other hand, you can see that **I proved that God really existed** in chapter |5|, whereas many adults in our society believe he is a fairy tale...

But then, you will tell me that the devil exists too! **Now it is your brain playing tricks on you**. Why? As I explained, the true reality and our mental image are 2 separate things. The structure of our thinking when we were children does not guarantee the exact reality of what surrounds us. See article |16-B|.

When a person begins to truly believe in God as real, the logic of the brain naturally intervenes like a mirror. He wonders then if the opposite of God exists, so the devil. In a way, if white exists, black exists. **Not necessarily**, white is the presence of light and black is the absence of light. If hot exists, cold exists. **Not necessarily**, there is air with a lot of thermal energy that produces hot air and there is air with little thermal energy that produces cold air. If life exists, death exists. **Not necessarily**, death can be seen as the absence of life.

Do not forget that our thoughts are not a guarantee of the true reality, we must seek a little...

| 16-D | Superstitions or realities?

In addition to article | 9-F |.

Are you superstitious? No, are you really sure? There is often a close relationship between rituals and being superstitious. People who are superstitious like mysterious objects and their powers...

For millennia, humans have had superstitions about the afterlife.

A) How to know the truth in all this?

It is simple:

I proved in chapter | 5 | that our Creator (God) really exists. **So it is a fact.**

In chapter | 18 |, we will discover that the devil does not exist as a "supernatural being of Evil." However, let's not go too fast with a simplistic conclusion. The devil really exists as a fundamental "psychic concept" in our head that is our natural fear of death. It is for this reason that the devil is so present in the Bible. The devil is **the personalization of a reality of our psyche**. This reality is natural and necessary for everyone to defend themselves and stay alive.

It is for this reason that a "supernatural being of Evil" is widely spoken in Christianity as in many other religions. This is because the fear of death is natural for all humans.

Jesus told us that the human being is only mortal. Jesus told us that a person only resurrects in unity with God. So there are no floating souls and no ghosts. These are just superstitions.

The only promise of God is to send our Intercessor (the Holy Spirit) on earth. **There is nothing more!**

In the Old Testament, there were messengers of God, the angels. In the New Testament, angels are very little spoken. Why? Because it is the turn of those who have received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} to make the messages as in this book.

B) In summary, the real messages come from 2 possibilities:

1) The Holy Spirit who makes you a Manifestation.

The Holy Spirit presents himself as a pleasant Breath or Wind.

He does not speak because his Messages are directly related to the Word of Christ (the Gospels) that every Christian must know.

2) A human person who has received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} and who speaks to you as I do in this book.

Everything else does not exist for real, it is not complicated.

Whatever it is:

- ° Ghosts walking in your room or floating on the ceiling;
- ° Souls of purgatory;
- ° Death fumes;
- ° Demons.

*If you see these kinds of unpleasant characters, go see your doctor without delay.

See also article | 16-E |.

C) Your brain can play incredible tricks on you if:

- ° You are too exhausted;
- ° You have not slept for some time;
- ° You are taking strong medication, drugs or a lot of alcohol;
- ° You live in constant fears or in superstitions;
- ° You have a personality disorder (neurosis, borderline, psychosis, etc.).

D) However, do not worry with trivial problems.

1) Sometimes, a person lying down, feels that there is an individual or something that goes up on his bed. By checking, he finds nothing. The explanation is simple. These are the legs of the person who have small involuntary muscle spasms. The brain always first looks for an explanation outside of himself to try to identify the danger, hence the impression that something goes up on his bed.

2) It may happen that a person lying down wakes up and feels paralyzed for a few moments. He may think that there is "something" that holds him in place. The explanation is simple. When we fall asleep, our brain starts by deactivating the consciousness and then the motor function of the body. When waking up, if the motor function is still not reactivated before the return of consciousness, the person will feel as if he is fixed for a little while.

↑ (Essential articles)	They are necessary for understanding the next chapter.
↓ (Optional articles)	They give additional information.

| 16-E | Let's take a second step in the development of the child's brain

At the age of 3 or 4, there is a second stage of development in the child's head. Once again, the drives (or the urges) will be classified in 2.

In psychology, this is called: the division of aggressive and sexual drives.

Here, the word "aggressive" has no meaning of "wickedness."

The aggressive drive (the pole 3) is the complex name for the desire to socialize (family and friends).

The sexual drive (the pole 4) is the complex name for the desire to reproduce.

For the observant parents. It is also at this age that the child will "have fun with his little body alone." So the parents are going to say, "What is my little girl doing under the table with her hands in her panties?" Children (girls or boys) all do so at this age. This is part of normal brain development.

A) What does the Bible say about sexuality?

It says that people have to be married to have sex. Yes, here we are talking about relationship. This involves 2 people. In reality, it is a question of responsibility. A man and a woman must absolutely commit themselves, because all the children need parents. In addition, sexual diseases must not spread. It is not very complicated to understand...

On the other hand, the Bible never talks about individual sexuality (masturbation). Why?

1) First, it is mostly men who wrote the Bible. For them, this is part of their normal life from the age of about 12 years old. So, why address this natural subject?

2) Second, whether we like it or not, children aged 3 to 5 years old all have a childish sexuality.

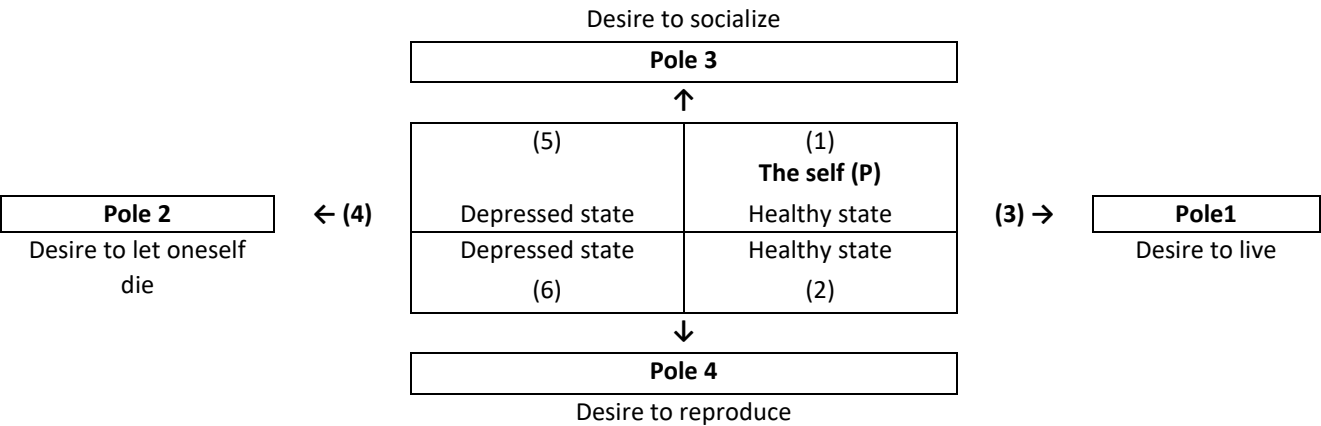
Individual sexuality (masturbation) is natural.

B) To go in the same direction.

The neuropsychologists and gynecologists recommend this practice to singles (men or women) for the maintenance of their health. We have to accept things as they are.

C) Now, I take the last chart of article |16-C| and I add the 2 new poles.

Here is the chart:



This chart roughly represents the different possibilities (zones) of our human thought.

Our current thinking is the point "P" in the chart. We know that our thinking is constantly changing. Our point "P" can move on the chart.

Here are the different areas of the chart:

- (1) The zone of friendly thought.
- (2) The area of passionate thought of lovers (sexual love).
- (3) The line of the desire to live (existential love).
- (4) The line of the desire to die (depression).
- (5) and (6) The zones of thought of depressed people (personality disorders).

D) It is said in psychology that the human brain is fundamentally **psychosexual**.

This means that human thought is inevitably connected to a sexual dimension. We see it even in very young children. Boys and girls do not think the same way and do not have the same needs.

Trying to remove the sexual dimension from a human being is like making him suffer and destroying his brain. On second thought, who is the great actor of suffering and death? **Yes, the devil.**

Now, you understand better why the human sexual dimension is not a game.

| 16-F | Celibacy

NT	Genesis	2,18	Then the LORD God said, "It is not good for the man to be alone; I will make him a helper suitable for him."
----	---------	------	--

We only have to think about St-Peter who was married and had children. Before the year 1000, several religious people were married. Currently, many married pastors have said that their family relationship allows them to better understand and help their followers. I believe that the charge of religious people is difficult enough like that without spending their life alone. I think it is time for mentalities to change a little...

On the other hand, personally, it would be nice to see women having the right to the function of priest. Women have strong interpersonal skills. At the time of the apostles (which means missionary), their work was very physical (walking long) and dangerous. Whereas only men were mandated for this work, this was understandable. But currently with civil laws and technology, I am convinced that women could very well have their place...

| 16-G | How should one determine his love for God?

The best place is on **line (3)** of the chart of article | 16-E |.

Why? Because God is Life. Our personal life comes from him. Therefore, we must love him with a **love of life**.

This Love is first. It is, of course, before all other forms of love, because God is the Creator of our existence. Without him, we would not exist, and so would the others.

In the prayer of the "Our Father," Jesus asks us to love God as a Father. Here, he asks to love God in the **zone (1)** of the chart, because God does not want us to be scared of him.

On the other hand, some people may feel attracted to being passionately in love with God or Jesus. Here, we must pay attention to the passion of love, because this is the **zone (2)**. I have nothing against passion. The difficulty is the extremely complex and involuntary reality of the functioning of our human brain in this **zone (2)**. We know that God is not sexual, but the human being is. In our brain, there is a natural law prohibiting love within the family. This is not to allow ourselves to be in love with our father or our brother. So, if someone tries to love God (Father or Son) in this way, there could be a conflict of thought.

So, begin by loving God in the **zone (1)** and if afterwards your love for him increases, simply go on the **line (3)** (the love of life).

| 16-H | The complexity of human thought

Throughout human history, people have always tried to firmly control their thoughts.

Recently, neuropsychology (the science of the internal brain study) has put an end to this misunderstanding. Human thought is a process, a path. It starts in the very low and unconscious part of our brain that we call "the brainstem." It ends in the very high and conscious part of our brain called "the cerebral cortex."

You will understand that our conscious thoughts are then the product (the end) of the process that we do not really control. To try to control our thoughts, we can then do 2 things:

- 1) Trying to remove our thoughts from our head by saying that we do not want them. Of course, eventually our brain will make other thoughts that may not please us yet. Then, we fight with our thoughts for a while! It is a little exhausting, but we all know this reality inside us.
- 2) If we think about it, in the end, it is we who make the decision of our actions. We can do only what is moral and throw the rest of our thoughts in the trash without feeling too guilty.

On the other hand, the science of genetics has discovered that human beings have been built as they are again now. From the beginning, the human being has always been like you and me. Since it is God who made the human being, he knows very well what he has put in him and he must surely not expect us to have ever angelic thoughts!

So do not worry too much about your thoughts. But you have control over what you do.

NT	St-Matthew	21,28-31	"But what do you think? A man had two sons, and he came to the first and said, 'Son, go work today in the vineyard.' "And he answered, 'I will not'; but afterward he regretted it and went. "The man came to the second and said the same thing; and he answered, 'I <i>will</i> , sir'; but he did not go. "Which of the two did the will of his father?" They said, "The first."
----	------------	----------	---

(*) For Jesus, what is really important is not our thoughts, but our actions.

In conclusion:

Pay attention to your brain. When it feels safe, it works very well. When it is afraid, it is programmed to flee. What is the utility of the mythical idea of the devil? Escape from danger as quickly as possible to stay alive! Hence the popular expression in Quebec (in French), "He ran so fast ... as if he had the devil on his heels!"

Psychoanalyst Jean-Jacques Lacan said that, "The human brain is structured like a language."

I give you 2 examples of our language.

1) Here is a simple example with the word "love":

A woman is seeing (with her eyes) her husband.	She is experiencing feelings of love for her husband.	She is imagining her husband as her "prince charming..."
↑	↑	↑
True external reality	Our psychic reality	Our imagination

2) Here is a complex example with the word "devil":

He does not exist concretely.	This terrifying and gripping character exists as a fundamental concept in our head that is our natural fear of death. This is necessary in order to defend oneself and stay alive on earth.	He is the ideological symbol of the supernatural being of Evil. He is the imaginary actor who brings us to biological death.
↑	↑	↑
True external reality	Our psychic reality	Our imagination

| 16-I | A small summary of personality disorders

I do not intend to make you specialists in psychology. On the other hand, when we search for reality, it is better to have at least a small reference point to situate personality disorders.

See the chart of article | 16-E | . Personality disorders are found in the depressive state, the **zones (5) and (6)**.

A) Here is this little useful reference:

- 1) If a person **has a personality disorder**, what he experiences in his head **will always be impregnated with suffering**.
- 2) On the contrary, if a person **does not have a disorder**, what he experiences in his head **will not be impregnated with suffering**.

B) Now, let's look very briefly at the main personality disorders.

I give here only an overview. To go further in the search, simply use **the words** that I indicate and go to see on the Internet or in books specialized in psychology.

1) In article | 16-C |.

I have already talked about stage 1 of brain development: it is the mirror stage.

The child must complete stage 1 to go to stage 2.

If the child does not succeed, there is a blockage.

Then, it is the **infantile psychosis** that begins without delay.

2) In article | 16-E |.

I also talked about stage 2: it is the division of aggressive and sexual drives (urges).

The child must complete stage 2 to go to stage 3.

If the child does not succeed, there will be blockage.

Then, it will be the **adult psychosis** that will begin in adolescence.

3) Let's go a little further...

I have not talked about stage 3 of development yet.

Stage 3 is the "resolution of the Oedipus complex" which happens from the age of 4 to 10 years approximately.

The resolution of the Oedipus complex is simply "the place the child holds" in his relationship with his parents (father/mother).

There are 3 possibilities:

a) Is the child important for parents or not? So, does the child exist or not?

If the child does not feel (inside, in his psyche) sufficiently exist, there will be blockage.

Then, it will be the **obsessive family neurosis** that will begin in adolescence.

b) Is the child asked to assume child or adult responsibilities?

If the child is asked to take on adult responsibilities, there will be a blockage.

Then, it will be the **phobic family neurosis** that will begin in adolescence.

c) Is the child a girl (like her mother) or a boy (like his father)?

If the child does not feel (inside, in his psyche) enough (girl or boy) as the case may be, there will be a blockage.

Then, it will be the **hysteria family neurosis** that will begin in adolescence.

4) Last step, adolescence.

After his Oedipus complex has been sufficiently solved, the child will be able to pass the last stage of his adolescence to become an adult.

Unfortunately, if the child suffers significant physical abuse (especially sexual), there may be a **borderline personality disorder** that will begin in adolescence. This disorder is called "borderline" because it is between the neurosis and the psychosis.

C) In general, how can we identify a personality disorder?

→ It is absolutely necessary to have a diagnosis of a psychotherapist.

By cons, I give you 3 basic benchmarks:

1) **A neurotic** person knows that he has an emotional problem, but feels unable to solve it. He often has great paralyzing fears that may seem much exaggerated.

2) **A borderline** person often has big addiction problems (drugs, alcohol, etc.). He is between the disorder of the neurosis and the psychosis, it depends on the moment.

3) **A psychotic** person does not know that he has a problem. On the other hand, you will perceive it if you are careful to let him speak without judging him. You will find that there is a strange feeling that emerges, as if the meanings of the words used and the feelings generated are not completely connected.

| 16-J | Take the right Way with Jesus...

A) What Jesus asks:

1) To renounce evil and do good.

2) To learn and apply the Word of Jesus in his everyday life. The thought of God must accompany you in your actions and your decisions.

3) To make your conversion from the heart to become a good person, upright, honest and charitable.

4) To belong to God

5) There are 3 commandments that are: to love and respect God; to love and respect other people; to love and respect oneself.

In one sentence, what is asked is to be sincere and that God is the priority in your life.

B) Here is what Jesus does not ask:

It is not asked to be a religious person.

The apostles were mere workers.

Note:

The Holy Spirit teaches everything as St-John says so well. Christianity would be supposed to be a nation of prophets, but it is very far from being the case, because the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is rare.

It is not asked not to have sexuality.

St-Peter was married. Religious people had the right to marry until the year 1000 approximately.
--

Note:

The total absence of sexuality is harmful for the regeneration of the brain. The person may then feel haunted by his thoughts or become impatient or even bitter.

→ Consultation of a sexologist is recommended.
--

It is not required to make big sacrifices.

Jesus asks us to do our human conversion.

Water represents the human purification that one does on one's own by following the Way of Jesus.

The Holy Spirit is the purification that God alone gives when we are ready to receive it.

Note:

The Holy Spirit provides a lot of "gifts" that far exceed the qualities that can be cultivated by oneself.

It is not asked to believe in the devil.

Fear does not help to love God. See chapter | 18 |.

Note:

If you really see ghosts; if the TV is talking to you, etc.

→ Consultation of a doctor is recommended. Usually it is a psychotic personality disorder.

On the other hand, it can also be the taking of strong medications or drugs.

It is not required to withdraw from the world or to lock up oneself.

Jesus asks to be little lights for others and to help them.

Note:

If you are scared of everything; if you need to do rituals in order to calm down, etc.

→ Consultation of a psychologist is recommended. Usually it is a neurotic personality disorder.

It is not asked to spend his day in adoration.

The human is purchasable, but God is not.

Kings have always needed adorators, but God is a loving Father.

Note:

God is real, you do not need to dream. On the other hand, if you desire your {birth of the Spirit}, you will have to concretely work on your conversion.

It is not asked to own anything.

If a person is rich and his wealth is not a hindrance to his Way to Jesus, there is no problem in that. Jesus only said it was harder for the rich.

Note:

To prove it to you, in the book of Acts of the Apostles in chapter | 10 |, the Roman centurion named Corneille did receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit} when he was rich...

It is not asked to hurt yourself.

It is even against the teachings of Jesus to harm oneself and not to respect oneself. At the time, it was not the holy apostles who martyred themselves, they were picked up and dragged away by force.

Note:

If you like to hurt yourself.

→ Consultation of a doctor is recommended. Usually it is a borderline personality disorder.

Conclusion.

We must put aside excessive thoughts and extreme behavior. God does not ask anyone to suffer for all the people of the whole world or to walk barefoot in the street!

C) Respect for others.

No one is obliged to follow Jesus! This person will have no punishment for that. See chapter | 29 |. This person will simply not have the Eternal Life Reward.

Christians must respect the choice of religion of other people as well as those who want to remain atheists.

| 16-K | For readers who want to go further into the world of psychology

I give you a small starting point searching by yourself.

It should be known that psychology is a very broad field that includes several great schools of thought. Each uses its own tools to understand. In simple, it is a bit like looking at an individual. You can see him from the front. You can see him in profile. You can see him from behind. But it is still the same individual...

I give you here a small chart to situate you:

Psychology schools	Point of view on human mind
Psychoanalysis (Psychodynamics)	Human thought is analyzed through different stages, from the baby's brain development into adulthood. This in order to find the blockage.
Behavioral (Cognitive-behavioral approach), CBT	It uses a great principle that is the close connection between: our thinking and our behavior. Here are: A) If we change our thinking → we change our behavior. B) If we change our behavior → we change our thinking.
Humanism	Most psychology books in the market today are from this school. The patient is the only specialist in his life, and the psychologist is only his guide. Basically, the human being is a being of happiness and love. Then, the great tensions create traumas that block his proper functioning. It is necessary to reconstruct the way of thinking of the suffering person so that he is more in harmony with his real needs.
Transpersonal	Psychoanalyst Carl Jung is its main root. In his research, Carl discovers what he calls "the collective unconscious." It is a close link between the human being and a "Force" that takes care of the human being. In short, without wishing to name it, he found traces of the Actions of our Creator.
Sexology	The human mind is fundamentally psychosexual. It is impossible to remove the sexual dimension of the human being without destroying him.
Neuropsychology	This is the study of neurons and brain glands in connection with our mind.

| 17 | To get a healing or a miracle

| 17-A | Suffering on earth/good and evil

A) What is good or evil?

The difference between good and evil is a concept that we do not understand very well.

It is for this reason that Jesus gave us his Word (the Gospels) to follow it. In reality, there is only God who is perfectly capable of differentiating between good and evil.

Why? This is because the Thought of God is Absolute and our thought is only referential.

If we look at our own human notion of good and evil, what is it based on? Psychology will say that it is about the notion of what we feel: joy and suffering. The human being does not like to suffer, so suffering is interpreted as evil. The human being loves joy, so it is interpreted as good.

On the other hand, if we look closely at the Word of Jesus, we will discover that the notion of good and evil has as a central piece, respect for **life and the unity** of the people.

1) To love others.

2) Do not do to the other person what you would not want done to you.

3) Jesus suffered on the cross. It hurts, that is for sure! Yet, Jesus redeemed every human being who wants it from death for Eternal Life, so it was good.

4) The 3 Persons of God are so united that they are only One.

Reflecting on it a little, **unity** is not so far away from nature on Earth. Ecology has shown us that all beings on Earth (animals, trees, plants, insects, etc.) live for billions of years in **union** (photosynthesis, water circulation, biological recycling, etc.). We see once more who our Creator is and what is important to him, **union and life**.

In short, for God:

- ° Good would be the union that builds life;
- ° Evil would be the indifference that destroys life.

B) Why suffering exists on earth?

In the past, many people have imagined that by becoming a Christian, God would give them divine protection on earth. Have you ever heard the phrase, "The Kingdom of God begins on earth?" Then Christians thought that suffering would disappear and that God would protect them from everything! No more problems...

Since this has not happened, many people have concluded that God does not exist!

All this comes from human confusion...

1) For the phrase, "The Kingdom of God begins on earth." This is done simply through the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit}. As few Christians get it, then that does not make a visible change in our society.

2) We are in a world where we have a choice to make. This involves having several options and being free to take the options that interest us.

Then God created us an autonomous world so as not to interfere in our choice. On earth, everything is possible and we do our experiments. Doing experiments does not say that they are always happy. A child who learns to ride a bicycle sometimes falls and gets hurt.

Nature is beautiful, but it can be very wild at times. Why? Being autonomous, nature has mechanisms of survival, cleaning, recycling and regulation. Examples:

- ° Animals like vultures are cleaners.
- ° Insects are recyclers.
- ° Microbes and viruses regulate populations so that they are not too numerous and do not unbalance the ecosystem.

Yes, it is true that we are in a garden that can be quite dangerous if we are not careful...

So, we need:

- ° To pay attention to our health.
- ° To pay attention to others.
- ° To help each other.

Therefore, in an autonomous world of choice as here on earth, suffering and death are inevitable.

Jesus promised Heaven as a reward for those who follow His Way. Heaven is without evil because taking the Way of Jesus already requires the choice to renounce evil on earth and to be guided by God.

| 17-B | Link between the capacity to love and the capacity to suffer

A) The feeling of loving in a general sense.

In psychology, there is a close connection between our capacity to suffer and our capacity to love. Why? It is because in our brain, all our feelings (joy, love, and suffering) pass through the same channel to our consciousness. The more we do not want to suffer, the more we block this channel also for our feelings of joy and love. Since feeling these feelings of happiness regulates hormones, a person with a blockage will be more tense and prone to depression. At the limit, there are people who have suffered so much that they are no longer able to love at all.

B) Let's connect with our society.

It is no secret to say that our society has an allergy to suffering. Thus, little capacity to suffer equals little capacity to love. So that is why selfishness is so much felt....

C) Here, I will make you discover something important.

Now, I am asking you a question. Who has the greatest capacity to love?

You will tell me... It is God!

So, God Loves us so much that he Suffers so much!

Yes, on earth, we suffer from evil of others. But have you ever thought that God suffers from evil we all do together? It is easy to understand that our human suffering is very little compared to his own.

To become a {God's child} is also to understand that our Heavenly Father Suffers much more than we do...

[17-C] Much more than hope for people who suffer, but a certainty!

I know there are a lot of readers who are currently suffering:

- ° Disease;
- ° Depression;
- ° Lack of work;
- ° Despair;
- ° Feeling of not succeeding his life;
- ° Etc.

Yes, these feelings of insecurity and helplessness prevent us from being happy on a daily basis and making plans for our lives. I know that all this hurts and I understand, because I too am human and life is not easy for anyone.

Here, I will give you much more than hope. I will give you a rock, a reality that will never fail you.

We know that our society has high success criteria:

- ° Money;
- ° Career;
- ° Power;
- ° To be important;
- ° To have a lot of goods;
- ° To be beautiful;
- ° To be in great physical shape;
- ° Etc.

We have all been educated since our childhood with these performance criteria to such an extent that we believe that they define our own personal worth. Moreover, if we do not meet these criteria, we feel excluded and unhappy. It is important to know that the financiers of our society need that we believe strongly in these performance criteria to enrich themselves. Why do you believe that our society has made God disappear when I have been able to prove that God really exists in chapter [5] alone? I am not smarter than anyone else, it is only that I have been searching for the true reality...

NT	St-Matthew	6,24-25	"No one can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will be devoted to one and despise the other. You cannot serve God and wealth. "For this reason I say to you, do not be worried about your life, <i>as to</i> what you will eat or what you will drink; nor for your body, <i>as to</i> what you will put on. Is not life more than food, and the body more than clothing?
----	------------	---------	---

Contrary to what people believe, we cannot pass the examination of our human life if we use our society's performance criteria. Take a good look at what Jesus says:

NT	St-Matthew	16,24-26	Then Jesus said to His disciples, "If anyone wishes to come after Me, he must deny himself, and take up his cross and follow Me. "For whoever wishes to save his life (1) will lose it; but whoever loses his life (2) for My sake will find it. "For what will it profit a man if he gains (3) the whole world and forfeits (4) his soul? Or what will a man give in exchange (5) for his soul?
----	------------	----------	--

(1) It is a life with the criteria that our society offers us. Yes, at the time of Jesus, there were essentially the same criteria as today to be important in the eyes of humans.

(2) This is the Way of life that Jesus proposes to us towards Eternal Life. On earth, that does not mean to have anything at all or to starve! This means that God must be our first priority.

(3) It is human life with the criteria of our society.

(4) If he loses Eternal Life.

(5) The human with all his money and power cannot buy Eternal Life. We must follow the Way of Jesus, because it is He who saves the person that He wants for the Kingdom of his Father. All the gold of the world does not buy that.

What is this rock or this certainty?

In reality, you are on earth only to make a choice of life. If you find your Creator (God) and you choose him, **you have succeeded in your life**, it is as simple as that. Otherwise, you have unfortunately failed, even if you are beautiful, rich and powerful...

What is important is that you know that you need your {birth of the Spirit} to say, "I achieved what my Creator asked me to do in the mortal life that he gave me on earth."

Now, good news, you are still alive so there is hope! In addition, you have in your hands a fantastic asset ... your suffering! **So, use your suffering as a cry from the heart to find God and take his Hand!** On the day of your {birth of the Spirit}, you will say to yourself, "Fortunately I have suffered in my life and the Lord has given me this book because I did not know that I was lost!"

NT	St-Luke	15,24	for this son of mine (1) was dead (2) and has come to life again (3) ; he was lost (2) and has been found.' And they began to celebrate.
----	---------	-------	--

(1) For God, he has only children (son or daughter).

(2) In this parable, "to be lost" or "death" represents the inability to recognize the importance of God.

(3) There is only God who is the Source of all life.

On our Way to Him, the Lord always makes small wonders here and there to encourage us and increase our faith.

In article |13-S|, I told you about 3 little miracles that I had well before my {birth of the Spirit}.

In article |13-R|, I told you about a healing that I had afterwards.

In article |6-K|, I told you about the miraculous water of Lourde still available today. There have even been healings of blind and paralysed people.

I can assure you that if you seek him ardently, the Lord will give you a gift (small miracle, healing, etc.). He did it for me, you are no less important to him! So, in your prayer (or request), have confidence. You will be surprised that the day you do not expect anything, the Lord will come to your aid. On the other hand, know how to recognize his help even if you doubt a little. It is better to thank the Lord for something he did not do than not to thank him for a grace granted. It is wiser to thank now and clean up your doubts later. In this book, I told you about more than 16 wonders that I have had. So, you do not absolutely waste your time with the Lord, he really exists! He is next to you now and reading this book with you. Why? Because you are important! Because you already have a miracle of him, you are reading **his book**. See article |13-Q|. To prove to you that I am right, in article |30-F|, during the writing of his book, it happened to me that I miss a piece of information so I could not go further. At first, I did not tell it to anyone. I only wrote in the page that I could not go further. I did not pray to the Lord for help because I was thinking that it was good like that. However the following night, I received the missing piece of information! So, that means the Lord reads what I write over my shoulder now! So, he is doing the same thing for you right now too...

So thank you Lord ... You are a Love!

Now, what are you waiting for to confide him your miseries, he listens to you and loves you!

The difficulty is not to reach God. No, the difficulty is that we do not want God to reach us. This barrier is ours, so he respects the choice of our silence and he makes silence with us.

Reach out your hand to him, you cannot imagine how great the Love of his Presence is. See article |13-D|.

In closing, I give you a precious help for prayer in chapter |26|.

Satan and the devil

| 18 | Yes, it is the devil who has mixed us all up!

Without knowing it, the biggest hindrance to understanding the Bible is the idea of the devil as a real being with supernatural power.

1) With this supernatural idea of the devil, the Plan of God is incomprehensible.

2) Without this supernatural idea of the devil, the Plan of God takes on a very simple meaning.

Obviously, for readers who do not really believe in God, the idea of the devil is not a problem. But the day when you will be totally convinced that God really exists, then you will have to clean up your thoughts. That day, you will not be so sure that the devil and eternal hell do not exist either...

In reality, this famous idea of "the actor of death" is not that bad! To get your {birth of the Spirit}, you will have to go through the step of knowing what you want to do with your life:

1) To trust God and put your life in his hand for Eternal Life.

2) To keep your life for yourself and face sooner or later "the psychic and natural actor of death, the devil."

I will now deal with the subject of the devil by different methods in order to define him.

Let's go!

| 18-A | Many current Christian models are outdated...

Currently, the majority of models in Christianity date mainly from the 1500s.

Since Christian movements are not unanimous, I have no choice but to give you a short summary as best as I can. Do not hold it against me if it is not exactly what you have learned...

First of all, to better understand what I am writing, you must imagine being in the evening in front of a beautiful starry sky.

Note:

The people who wrote the Bible did not know that we were on a small blue planet...
--

A) Here are the main lines:

1) The idea of the heavens (the sky above them).

The angels were in the "sky" with the stars. Some even saw the stars as angels.

The Kingdom of God was at the "**Most High**." It was far, far beyond the stars in the sky. People saw the "Most High" as a "Big Cloud with wind, fire and lightning." It is the Scriptures of the prophet Ezekiel that give the best picture, see chapter | 22 |.

2) On earth, there were two types of humans.

There was the perfect and innocent human in the Garden of Eden. It is the earthly paradise, somewhere well hidden.

There was also the ordinary human on earth, a bit like an animal.

3) Lucifer.

In the heavens (sky), an angel rebelled against God. His name was Lucifer. He wanted to take the place of God. He tried therefore to climb the sky to the Most High in order to make himself equal to God and take his Throne.

Lucifer was also in the earthly paradise (the Garden of Eden). He took the form of a snake and tempted the perfect and innocent human. This is the narrative of Adam and Eve. Then, the perfect human disobeyed the regulations (the Law) of God.

4) God has banished the perfect human from the Garden of Eden.

The perfect human, now fallen, has been driven out of the earthly paradise and found himself on the surface of the earth where ordinary humans resided.

5) God has banished Lucifer from the heavens (sky).

Lucifer, now fallen, has been called Satan, which means "the Adversary of God." He took with him the other fallen angels, called demons. God made them fall from the heavens (sky) on the earth and they burned down, a little like shooting stars. Their ashes penetrated into the ground and death appeared. The world of Satan and his demons is called "**the abyss of the Sheol**." We also call it "hell" which means: very deep under the ground. See article |3-D|. Since that time, Satan is prowling on earth to tempt humans to do evil. It is the Scriptures of the prophets Isaiah and Ezekiel that give the best picture, see chapter |22|.

Let's take a minute to go further in this idea...

In article |3-D|, we saw the old concept of body and soul. The body is an envelope, and the soul is the life principle inside this envelope. We can imagine that this concept is similar for Lucifer. The angelic body of Lucifer was burned when he fell from the sky and his soul entered the ground. It is the same for other fallen angels (demons). Since Lucifer (Satan) no longer has an angelic body, this explains why he only has the role of "tempting" the human. Since a demon no longer has an angelic body, this explains why he only remains for him to possess a human body in order to continue doing evil.

6) Reproduction (sexuality).

The once-perfect human (Adam and Eve), now fallen, has known reproduction. They had 3 sons.

Cain, one of the sons, killed his brother Abel. He became the first murderer.

On the other hand, as adults, the sons of Adam and Eve married ordinary humans and had children. So the once-perfect human and the ordinary human have mixed together.

7) The human has done more and more evil.

Subsequently, humans became worse and worse. God repented of having made them and this is the narrative of Noah (the Flood). Subsequently, the good humans repopulated the earth. The human has still perverted himself (to do evil) and this is the narrative of the Tower of Babel. This being the project of the human to go up in a tower to proclaim himself equal to God. A little like Lucifer had done before in the heavens.

8) The Son of God (Messiah).

Subsequently, the Son of God came on earth (Jesus) to Save humanity of eternal death under Satan's control. By his death on the cross, Jesus obtained from his Father, the forgiveness of the sins of humanity.

9) Until the end of time...

In the meantime, the souls are at the Sheol (the abode of the dead).

The Son of God will return with his holy angels to fight the Forces of Evil (Satan and his demons) and throw them into the lake of fire (eternal hell).

Subsequently, all souls will present themselves for the Last Judgment. Jesus will separate the souls. Good souls will go for a resurrection of life. Bad souls will go for a resurrection of judgment, so in the lake of fire with the devil.

10) A New World.

Eventually, God will rebuild a "New World" where evil and death do not exist. God will take the good souls and give them a new body.

Finally, the New Creation will live happily with God for eternity.

To go further:

You can use the words I have given in order to search on the Internet. Some Christian movements have a website for their catechism.

B) Another more realistic and modern model please!

In the Bible, we now know that the first narratives (the Garden of Eden, Cain and Abel, Noah, the Tower of Babel) are symbolic and inspired by God to people with very little science.

In the model presented above in **A)**, there are insurmountable problems:

- 1) Jesus affirms that there is nothing eternal in man. The human being is made of flesh and blood.
- 2) Jesus does not say that he has come to save all humanity, but only those who follow his Way.
- 3) Jesus says that there is only God the Father who is Eternal (Immortal). To live forever, a person must unite with God through his Breath of Life (the Holy Spirit). So, this suggests that entities (ghosts, demons, devil, etc.) cannot be immortal and by the very fact, the idea of their existence is questioned.
- 4) The eternal hell is a concept of Greek mythology. It does not come from the Jews.

In this perspective, the model presented above in **A)**, is much more inspired by Greek mythology than the revelations of Jesus...

| 18-B | An old model of more than 500 years made with some words that have confused everything

A) A bit of confusion right from the start...

1) We must be realistic, in the Old Testament, there are not only texts that come from true prophets sent by God. There are also texts made from scratch by some dishonest chief priests who wanted to scare the people and get rich. Why do you believe that God was seen as an avenger and punisher when in reality he is without any evil? If you want to be confused, you only have to read the book of Job where God is counseled by his lawyer (Lucifer) to his Heavenly Court!

2) The Jews had been invaded by the Roman Empire. The soldiers had no pity. Revenge is human and can also be written in the texts of the Bible...

3) 270 years B.C., there were already many Scriptures that passed by the hand of the Greeks. The most beautiful example is the Septuagint. The Greeks were very strong in mythology. They had a bundle of invented words that did not follow the thought of the Jewish people whom Jesus taught. Subsequently, some interpretations and translations obviously added a little bit of trouble.

The confusion was the main reason for the crucifixion of Jesus. People were falsely waiting for a "messiah of anger." It is obvious that dishonest chief priests and the Romans wanted to quickly get rid of this possible "threat!"

B) "The Judgments of God."

One of the biggest sources of error was thinking that God is punisher and avenger. The Jews held this idea firmly. We see that this idea was able to make its way also in the New Testament with the book of Revelation (Apocalypse).

C) "The Gehenna of Fire."

As for the famous Gehenna that burns forever. In fact for Jesus, the Gehenna was a simple real dump at the exit of the city that burned everything. Sulfur was added to make it burn better. This is where the famous idea of the sulfur smell of hell came from...

D) The expression "at the end of time."

This expression did not exist in Hebrew at the time of Jesus.

In reality, the expression used had no connection with the end of anything. The expression meant:

- ° For the time it lasts;
- ° When it will be the moment;
- ° When God will have decided it.

E) The word "soul."

In the days of Jesus, the word soul meant: "the breath of life or the human breath."

On the other hand, the Greeks thought that the human was of double natures: the mortal body and the immortal soul. For them, the soul was a part of the human being who came out from his body at death like a ghost. Again there were obviously confusions in interpretations and translations.

Currently, we know that human life is autonomous on Earth without God. The human being has a biological body that is mortal and that creates its equally mortal consciousness. When you read this book, you are in your consciousness and it is active. When you sleep, your body is at rest and your consciousness is at rest too.

F) From yesterday to today...

The body and the soul follow a philosophical model. There is the container and its contents. The container being our human body. The content being our soul. In philosophy, the soul is an "essence." An "essence" is a non-palpable life principle that operates autonomously, but does not require a body. We could say that the soul, the ghost, the spirit and even the devil (the spirit of evil) are "essences." The difficulty is that they are not palpable! So, what do we do to prove that they exist or not? We cannot catch them, put them in a box or even analyze them with measuring instruments...

People have always seen "spirits" in 2 contradictory ways:

- 1) On the one hand, we cannot feel a "spirit" because it is not palpable and it passes through us without even noticing it. Before my {birth of the Spirit} in March 2016, when I went to mass and religious people said that I had received "the Spirit of God" in me even if I had not felt anything, I could not contradict them because a "spirit" does not feel ...
- 2) On the other hand, according to some religious people, we can be possessed by a "bad spirit." A ghost can even move objects in a haunted house.

So, are "spirits" palpable or not?

Are they palpable when it suits us and not palpable when it does not suit us anymore?

I have always believed that a "spirit" was not palpable until the day of my {birth of the Spirit}. In article |13-J|, the Lord made me discover that the Holy Spirit is always palpable. So, if the other "spirits" (ghosts, demons, etc.) really exist, they are palpable too! When a person says it was the devil who blew him to do evil, then the person would have actually felt the "devil's breath" in his ear. What I strongly doubt!

It is easy to understand that there is only one reality and many superstitions. So, we have some cleaning up to do...

| 18-C | What is the idea of the devil in the Bible?

A) Generally in the Bible.

Christianity whose root is Judaism is a **monotheistic** religion. This means that there is **only one Godhead**. God being Holy (without any evil), it has always been difficult to understand where evil comes from. Basically, **the great Inventor of evil** is called by different names: the devil, the evil one, Satan, Belzebul, Lucifer, etc. It is important to understand that **he is not a divinity of evil**, because we would come out of monotheism. See article |18-F|.

B) In the Old Testament.

For the Jews, the human being could only be good since created by God. There could be no evil inside the human being. Then evil came from outside the human being. The evil one was an ancient creature of God, a fallen angel (Lucifer) long ago. So in the days of Jesus, people really believed that the evil one (or devil) existed. The evil one tempted humans to do evil. The human doing evil was doomed to death because he did not respect the Law of God. To guard against the evil, the Jews practiced purification rituals with water. This was to ensure that unclean spirits do not enter into them.

C) The New Testament.

Jesus arrives with new and disturbing ideas...

Jesus told people that to obtain Eternal Life, one must first make a Way of conversion from the heart, from the bad human being to the good human being.

The Pharisees are the ones who oppose this idea of Jesus the most. They have always practiced purification rituals, so they can only be righteous, without sins. Jesus tells them that their rituals of purification are useless. Jesus tells them that evil comes from their inner self, from their lust, and therefore from themselves.

Jesus uses the name "Satan" more than other names. Satan is a symbol that means "the Adversary of God."

The evil one is associated with death, some even call the evil one, the Death. The human body has succumbed to the temptation of the evil one, so the human body must die under the ground.

Jesus is the Messiah (the Savior). Only Jesus was able to not succumb to the temptation of the evil one. He has conquered Death. He is the Resurrection. In following his Way, his disciples receive an {anointing} which is the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. This {anointing} is a real mark in the chest of the person, it is not abstract. St-John says in his Epistles that this {anointing} preserves from the devil therefore that the person is preserved from sin too. On the other hand, St-Paul says in his Epistles that sometimes he does the wrong thing he does not want to do, and sometimes he does not the good thing he wants to do. Personally, I know that St-Paul's thinking is more realistic. A human always does a little evil, it is inevitable.

Jesus does not reveal how and when the resurrection will take place. He simply says to trust the Power of his Father.

On the other hand, the book of Revelation (Apocalypse) of John of Patmos (not St-John) will imagine the end of the world. At the end of time, Jesus will return to separate the Living from the dead. Jesus will use this mark (the anointing) which is inscribed in the "book of life." Those who are not enrolled in the "book of life" will be thrown into the lake of fire with the devil and demons. The Death will be destroyed. Those who are enrolled in the "book of life" will live eternally in the Peace of God on earth, which will then be renewed (without any evil).

D) In the Bible, where does evil come from?

1) The Bible has never been very clear about the exact identity of Satan. **On the other hand, it says very well where does evil come from!**

2) If we look at an excerpt from the narrative of Noah (the Flood) in the Old Testament:

OT	Genesis	6,5-6	Then the LORD saw that the wickedness of man was great on the earth, and that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. The LORD was sorry that He had made man on the earth, and He was grieved in His heart. (1)
----	---------	-------	---

(1) Here, we see that evil is coming out of the human.

3) If we look at 2 New Testament texts:

NT	Epistle of St-James	1,13-15	Let no one say when he is tempted, "I am being tempted by God"; for God cannot be tempted by evil, and He Himself does not tempt anyone. But each one is tempted when he is carried away and enticed by his own lust. Then when lust has conceived, it gives birth to sin; and when sin is accomplished, it brings forth death. (1)
----	---------------------	---------	---

(1) Here, we see that evil is coming out of the human.

NT	St-Matthew	15,16-20	Jesus said, "Are you still lacking in understanding also? "Do you not understand that everything that goes into the mouth (1) passes into the stomach, and is eliminated? "But the things that proceed out of the mouth come from the heart, and those defile the man. "For out of the heart (2) come evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, slanders. "These are the things which defile the man; but to eat with unwashed hands does not defile the man."
----	------------	----------	---

(1) The Jews of the time of Jesus were very superstitious. They believed that there were **unclean spirits** outside of them. Before eating, they washed their hands or if you want, they purified their hands of these unclean spirits. This so as not to bring into themselves these unclean spirits and to be tormented by these demons that caused human malice and various diseases. Now with biology, we know that these unclean spirits are somehow microbes and viruses and that there are no demons in there.

(2) Jesus teaches that the evil we do is actually from ourselves and not from unclean spirits.

4) If we look at an excerpt from the prophet Ezekiel:

OT	Ezekiel	36,24-27	"For I (God) will take you from the nations, gather you from all the lands and bring you into your own land. "Then I will sprinkle clean water on you, and you will be clean; I will cleanse you from all your filthiness and from all your idols. "Moreover, I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit within you; and I will remove the heart of stone from your flesh and give you a heart of flesh (1). "I will put My Spirit within you and cause you to walk in My statutes, and you will be careful to observe My ordinances.
----	---------	----------	---

(1) Ezekiel already said that the new religion of God would be a matter of the heart.

E) A tempter in freedom...

So how can God ask us to be responsible for ourselves, if he leaves this powerful "Tempter" at liberty around us?

F) Who is Satan?

The Bible never says clearly who Satan is. Nor in the text of the Garden of Eden. Nor in the 14th chapter of the book of Isaiah. Nor in the 28th chapter of the book of Ezekiel. For more details, see this book in chapters | 21 and 22 |.

Satan simply means "the Adversary of God." So every human being who does not do the Will of God (to do only good) is somehow his adversary. Unfortunately, we then see all humanity! We now understand why the Son of God (Jesus) saw little "Satans" everywhere on earth...

Jesus even compared St-Peter to Satan ... so do not worry too much!

NT	St-Matthew	16,21-23	From that time Jesus began to show His disciples that He must go to Jerusalem, and suffer many things from the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised up on the third day. Peter took Him aside and began to rebuke Him, saying, "God forbid <i>it</i> , Lord! This shall never happen to You." But He turned and said to Peter, "Get behind Me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to Me; for you are not setting your mind on God's interests, but man's."
----	------------	----------	---

G) What is the meaning of the original sin of the human?

See also article | 12-C |.

In the Bible we see the concept of original sin through the narrative of the Garden of Eden. God forbade Adam and Eve to eat the forbidden fruit, the famous apple. In reality, the apple is the symbol of "doing evil." Basically, it means: to revel in (eat) the "fruit of evil" or "to love to do evil."

Did you know that the word "perversion" simply means "to love to do evil?" It has no sexual significance at all. It is our society that has made the connection between the two.

Let's go back to the text of the Garden of Eden. It is easy to see the great rigidity of the Hebrew thought of about 3,000 years ago. A simple little woman (Eve) naked and innocent in a garden. She does only a small disobedience by eating an apple and this is the **terrible Disaster**! God is Angry and humanity is banished! We are very far from the forgiveness of the Father that Jesus reveals to us. Then we see well the mentality of the author in this narrative...

In reality, the meaning of the original sin is simple...

The human has a free and autonomous life on earth that is not united to the Will of God (which is to do good only). So from birth to adulthood, the human is able to pervert himself on his own (to do evil).

The original sin simply has the following meaning: "not to want to ally oneself on earth with the Will of God in order to do only good."

1) We see it with Jesus:

NT	St-John	6,38	"For I have come down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will of Him who sent Me (God the Father).
----	---------	------	---

2) We see it with the Blessed Virgin Mary:

It is said that Mary did not have her original sin when she gave birth to Jesus. Look closely at the text below:

NT	St-Luke	1,34-38	Mary said to the angel, "How can this be, since I am a virgin?" The angel answered and said to her, "The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you; and for that reason the holy Child shall be called the Son of God. "And behold, even your relative Elizabeth has also conceived a son in her old age; and she who was called barren is now in her sixth month. "For nothing will be impossible with God." And Mary said, "Behold, the bondslave of the Lord; may it be done to me according to your word (1)." And the angel departed from her.
----	---------	---------	---

(1) Mary had renounced her original sin by doing the Will of God.

To receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or his {birth of the Spirit}, the person must renounce his original sin. Why? This is because the person cannot be assisted by God if he wants to lead his life alone. In a certain way, the {birth of the Spirit} is made by giving his human life to his Creator (God) so that in exchange, he gives us his Eternal Life already on earth.

On the other hand, if we look at the promises of Christian baptism, it is also to give up one's original sin.

- ° To renounce evil;
- ° To be guided by the Word;
- ° To belong to Christ (or to God).

H) Why did not Jesus just explain everything?

Jesus tried well, but for this, people had to be ready to hear and understand! But the Jews of the time of Jesus had a very rigid mentality and Jesus had to work with that. Even the apostles understood the meaning of the mission of Jesus only after His resurrection. It would not be an exaggeration to say that during the first half of his mission, the disciples of Jesus followed him much more for the idea of "the messiah of wrath" than for their conversion from the heart. At least 2 of his apostles out of the 12 were true revolutionaries, Simon the Zealot and Judas Iscariot. They were not all sweet like St-John. It needed men determined and tough, because they were going to be persecuted...

I) In short:

In the Bible, there is no clear indication of where the devil came from. No author of the Bible is able to define it. The general idea is associated with:

- ° Physical illness;
- ° Psychic illness;
- ° Suffering and evil;
- ° Superstitions;
- ° The lack of knowledge of the people of the time.

|18-D| What does modern science say about the devil?

A) Physics.

The devil has not been found, either under the ground, in the sky, or even in space.

B) Biology.

We know that human genetics is sealed. The human body is as it is now and for 35,000 years. The human being has not evolved. God created the human body like that. So, **the human body cannot be bad**. The human being has an independent life. He is born innocent and he needs to be educated. Without education, he can do good or evil without any problem. The center of the human brain must ensure its survival and is focused on itself from birth. By nature, the human being is selfish. It is his mother's affection and education that makes him loving and sociable.

In neuropsychology (study of the brain), we know that the human brain has more than 100,000,000,000 living cells interconnected. There is more communication in a single human brain than there is in all phones on Earth together! It is then unthinkable that a being (the devil, the fallen angel, etc.) having not built the human being can have access to such biological complexity. Mentally, it is almost impossible for human beings to have outside influences. Only the Creator can have access to human consciousness.

We know that it is through the activity of our human body that our consciousness is produced. The human being has a consciousness as mortal as his body. Through genetics, we know that life is spreading on Earth from parents to children. God has made autonomous living beings in the past who have spread themselves without him until now. It is easy to see it in another way. Animals also have life. Do they have an "immortal soul" that ascends to God? Before the 1800s, superstition was very common. It is science through observation that has brought logical thought. Modern science has proven that life on Earth is autonomous. It spreads alone. In reality, God only makes a few miracles here and there to prove his existence, and science sees in it only a few inexplicable exceptions. I am sorry, but in science there are no exceptions! If we are unable to explain something, it is because we have false concepts in our heads. Unless finding our Creator disturbs our lifestyle...

C) Psychology.

In chapter |16|, we have already identified the idea of the devil.

I make a summary:

The human brain has a (life drive) and a (death drive). During the construction of the child's brain, his life depends entirely on his mother.

Good care allows the child to stay alive. Bad care leads to death. The good mother is associated with the fairy (sweetness). The bad mother is associated with the witch (suffering).

The vital need of the child for his mother gives rise to the idea of a great dependence.

Subsequently, the child associates his father with a being: male; outside; not very well-known; of great strength (power); having an influence on his mother and therefore on himself.

Since the child's life is very dependent and the child has no real knowledge of the outside, the exaggeration or the myth will appear naturally to define the danger.

Now let's do the list of important words: death; bad; suffering; dependence; male; outside; not very well-known; power; influence; exaggeration; myth; danger.

If you only have one word to summarize everything, which one would you use? I only see one, **the devil!**

|18-E| One of my Manifestations of the Holy Spirit about the devil

In rereading article |13-M|, the message of the Lord was: "the devil is the fear of death in our head and Jesus has the power to drive it away by giving us Eternal Life."

A) If we go a little further...

More fully, we could say that the devil is the mental (psychic) personification of the actor who leads us to biological death.

Finally, in psychoanalysis, we could say that the devil is the personification of the (death drive) that is natural.

B) Then why does Jesus on earth have the devil as his adversary?

- 1) The devil is the actor who brings the human being to death in the ground.
- 2) Jesus is the Actor who brings the human being to Life in the Kingdom of his Father.

|18-F| A little logic and conclusion of the research

A) The possible and the impossible.

As already stated in article |13-M|:

- 1) It is possible to prove that something exists.

For example, it is enough to find a cat to prove that this animal really exists.

In chapter |5|, I proved that God really exists.

- 2) On the other hand, it is **impossible** to prove that something → does not exist.

It is simply because we would have to search every corner of the universe to make sure that "this something" is not there anywhere...

→ So, it is impossible to prove that the devil does not exist!

On the other hand, we have seen in article |5-Q| that there is no incoherence in the laws of physics (that govern our world, the universe and Earth). Therefore, our world has only one Author in the image of his **perfect** laws. This gives us proof that Satan is not a divinity of evil as stipulated in article |18-C|. Moreover, we also see that even if Satan existed somewhere, **he has no influence in our world**. Why? It is obvious that a "supreme being of Evil" in our world (having perfect laws) would take a "nasty pleasure" in trying to destroy the balance in all of this. What modern science has not yet found after more than 100 years of research.

B) Who finances life?

For Jesus: God is the Creator, the only Perfect One and holds the Eternal Life.

So logically, since the devil is destructive, he would destroy himself...

Do you want proof?

- a) The history of nature on Earth has been working without humans for about 4,000,000,000 years.
 - b) The current human is about 35,000 years old, which represents only 0.0001% of the history of nature.
 - c) Industrialization is about 200 years old, which is less than 0.000 01% of the history of nature.
- Environmentalists keep repeating to pay attention to nature. Otherwise, the human extinction awaits us in 100 years... So we can see that destruction does not make anyone live long!

At that moment, for the devil to exist, God would have to finance the existence of the devil. In this case, God would give himself misery, it makes no sense!

Here is what Jesus said:

NT	St-Mark	3,24-25	"If a kingdom is divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand. "If a house is divided against itself, that house will not be able to stand.
----	---------	---------	--

Impossible to break the deadlock...

See articles | 18-A | and | 3-D | .
The only solution would be that the "soul" of Satan is immortal.
→ But this time, we would go back to Greek mythology...

C) Where is the freedom to live?

From this influence of the devil, the human would not be responsible for himself before his Creator. This is an important problem, because **God's greatest law for life is its freedom.**

D) Research conclusion:

- 1) The human is the only one responsible for evil on earth.
- 2) The devil comes from the normal and necessary psychic construction of our human brain.
- 3) The devil is the personification of our fear of death in our head.
- 4) This fear is natural and structuring so that the human being defends himself and stays alive.
- 5) In our society, we have police officers to keep the bad guys on the right track. On the other hand, police officers did not always exist (as in the days of the early Christians). So, it was essential to have something powerful, everywhere, invisible to ensure this function. Yes, the fear of the devil was very practical!
- 6) At worst, if the devil really exists somewhere, he has no influence on us anyway...

| 18-G | Very important warning!

One of the purposes of this book is to help you get your {birth of the Spirit}. So you have to be careful not to go too fast with "the idea of the devil that does not exist," **because it could really harm you...**

I repeat:

1) The devil as a "supernatural and immortal being of Evil" does not exist.

On the other hand...

2) The devil as "the natural actor who brings us to human death" **really exists**, because all humans die one day.

3) The human is the only one responsible for evil on earth.

Finally:

For a person to have his {birth of the Spirit}, he must go through a step called "repentance."

In fact, this repentance is organized around the realization that without the Forgiveness of God, a person will definitely die in the ground.

Since awareness of the **possibility of dying** is there, then it is inevitable that the idea of the devil (associated with the fear of death) is also present in the head of the person.

So, the idea of the devil is not bad at all!

On the contrary, it is an idea that allows us to stay alive on earth and gives us a very good help to get Eternal Life...

↑ (Essential articles)	They are necessary for understanding the next chapter.
↓ (Optional articles)	They give additional information.

| 18-H | What does history say about the devil?

From all eras and civilizations, humans have thought that there is a being of Evil. He is represented in different forms. The best-known form is the one with the ugly human appearance with horns and a forked tail.

In history, where is the climax of evil? Yes, wars!

We know that the Second World War was the most devastating. Hitler had even been called the Antichrist.

It was recently published that Hitler and his soldiers were all drugged, among others, with amphetamines. They had brains like "zombies." After taking these drugs, some plane pilots even served as human bombs against strategic military targets.

Who does evil? Still the human!

For go further:

Internet Keywords	Combat Drugs; Hitler; amphetamine; drugged troops.
-------------------	--

|18-I| The near-death experience (NDE) that involves demons

Important note to readers:

For those who are sensitive, I advise you not to read this article. It is not necessary in order to understand this book.

A) The near-death experience (NDE) to hell.

Some people (who have had a near-death experience) have seen demons. You can see testimonials on the Internet.

Internet Keywords	1) Near-death experience; hell exists; income from hell; testimony; NDE.
Video (Google, YouTube)	1) Expérience de mort éminente ; mort imminente ; l'enfer existe ; revenu de l'enfer ; témoignage ; EMI.

Personally, I am absolutely convinced that these people have seen what they say and it was very scary!

Here, I give 2 explanations. The first is based on my personal knowledge of God. The second is on the basis of science.

1) Based on my personal knowledge of God:

Before continuing reading, start by reviewing article |13-M|. This is one of my Manifestations of the Holy Spirit concerning information about the devil. The conclusion was: "the devil is the fear of death in our head and Jesus has the power to drive it away by giving us Eternal Life."

On the other hand, there is something very important. The experience of "fear of death" is very stimulating to understand that deep down we do not want to die at all. It is normal, we are living beings who struggle to stay alive.

God being our Creator and Life and knowing that he is very intelligent and loves all of us, so here is something I see. God could simply give an ultimate boost during a (near-death experience) to help the person return to the right way and finally discover God. It is when we pass near to lose something (here our mortal life) that we discover all its importance (God is the Life). Remember that God is a Parent and that without knowing it, he does a lot for us every day. We only have to look at our beautiful planet Earth (the garden God has given us). The misfortune here comes from us humans.

2) On the scientific basis:

The best explanation resides in how the brain works. When a person dies, he is very poor and extremely afraid! It is normal for myths (devil, demons and vampires) to appear in the person's mind to identify the opponent. This gives an incredible boost in the body to fight and stay alive!

|18-J| Exorcism

Important note to readers:

For those who are sensitive, I advise you not to read this article. It is not necessary in order to understand this book.

A) For people who are scared of exorcism.

It is important to know that with every Christian baptism, there is one without knowing it. Here I give you an excerpt from St-Paul sometimes used during a Christian baptism.

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	1,13-14	For He (1) rescued us from the domain of darkness (2), and transferred us to the kingdom (3) of His beloved Son, in whom we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins.
----	--------------------------------------	---------	---

(1) God

(2) The devil and hell.

(3) Eternal Life with God.

B) For exorcism, I give you here 2 titles on the Internet.

1) Here is the title of an authenticated video that deals with this subject.

→ It is true that this video is quite impressive.

Internet Keywords Video (Google, YouTube)	1) True Exorcism filmed and authorized by the Church. 1) Véritable Exorcisme filmé et autorisé par l'Église. 2) The only authentic Catholic exorcism filmed for TV. 2) Le seul exorcisme catholique authentique filmé pour la TV.
--	--

2) Here is the title of a video that is not authenticated.

→ Personally, I do not know if this video is just a montage or not. However, it is well documented and impressive. It gives a good overview of the subject of exorcism.

Internet Keywords Video (Google, YouTube)	1) Exorcism, devil and demons, paranormal documentary. 1) Exorcisme, diable et démons, documentaire paranormal.
--	--

C) To look for explanations.

In chapter | 16 |, we have looked briefly at the stages of structuring the human brain from childhood.

In reality, there are many possible "personality disorders" to explain the symptoms that are found in possession cases. Whether it is a psychic blockage or even taking substances (drugs, strong medicines, etc.).

→ The hysteria neurosis seems to be the most targeted cause by medical specialists.

I give you some basic references if you want to go further in this search.

Internet Keywords	1) Wikipedia Hysteria neurosis 1) Wikipédia Hystérie 2) Wikipedia Exorcism 2) Wikipédia Exorcisme
Internet Keywords Video (Google, YouTube)	1) Hysteria, body language. 1) L'hystérie, langage du corps.

D) In short:

There are so many "personality disorders" of all kinds that have been discovered by science (psychoanalysis, psychiatry, neuropsychology, etc.) for the last 100 years that all these testimonials and videos cannot prove (without any doubt) that the devil really exists.

Introduction to the Scriptures

| 19 | The Bible

It is very important to read the Gospels (New Testament) at least once a year. People often think that they are too big to do it. That is not true, the smallest one is St-Mark's with about 20 pages and the other three are about 40 pages each. If a person wants to read the most complete Gospel, he can take the one of St-Luke and then continue with the book of Acts of the Apostles that follows it. Originally, these two texts formed only one Gospel.

On the other hand, the Epistles (New Testament) are very valuable and sometimes provide important information on understanding of the Gospels.

It does not matter if you do not understand everything precisely, but it is important to read them because these texts are inspired by the Holy Spirit. If you want to receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit} one day, you have to make an effort.

For this book, I have included 4 chapters with important explanations. Chapters | 21 and 22 | deal with the essentials of the Old Testament. Chapters | 23 and 24 | deal with the essentials of the New Testament.

| 19-A | General plan of the New Testament

The New Testament is made by assembling different books (or texts).

A) The Epistles.

They are letters to nascent Christian movements. They come from St-Paul, St-Peter, St-John, St-James, etc. In general, the Epistles of the apostles are older than the Gospels.

St-Paul was a man of action both Jewish and Roman. St-Paul wrote to give courage to the early Christians who were persecuted. His Scriptures have often been interpreted for exaggeration or poetry. Although his Scriptures on the mystery surrounding Christ present strong images, the fact remains that the foundation is very real.

On the other hand, there is very little talk about St-James. He was one of the Twelve who spoke most directly (without mystery). He has a clear thinking and comes out downright of the thoughts of Judaism of his time. He explains that evil comes from the bottom of the human being. He explains that God does not tempt anyone to do evil. He explains that God is Holy (without any evil). He explains that a person cannot have received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} and not act (to do works). He explains that the word "to believe that saves" mentioned by St-John does not mean "to think," but rather to really engage as a disciple of Jesus.

B) The 4 Gospels (St-Matthew, St-Mark, St-Luke, St-John).

Each of the Gospels is the work of many years to write **the oral tradition** that Jesus transmitted to his apostles.

- ° The Gospel of St-Mark is the oldest. It is dated around the year 0060;
- ° The Gospel of St-John is the most recent. It is dated around the year 0110;
- ° The Gospels of St-Luke and St-Matthew are dated around the years 0070 to 0080.

C) The Acts of the Apostles.

This text is simply the continuation of the Gospel of St-Luke. At the beginning, they formed together only one text. It was separated in the New Testament for some reason. St-Luke was a Greek converted by St-Paul. St-Paul was one of the greatest pillars of the nascent Christian communities because it was he who founded the largest number.

D) The book of Revelation (Apocalypse).

It is a text that should not have been in the New Testament. See article | 20-B |.

| 19-B | We can separate the Gospels into 3 themes

A) Jesus said, "I am 1) the Way, 2) the Truth, 3) the Life."

1) The Way of conversion of the heart → It is to follow Jesus by becoming one of his disciples. It is to convert to his teachings. It is giving up evil. It is looking for the realities from above. It is also to become humble in order to obtain the Forgiveness of one's sins. It is to make God the central point of his life. Finally, it is giving one's life to God so that he helps us to lead it, because there is only God who does no evil (Holy). **The Way** is made by human action that must be sincere.

2) The Truth → God really exists. Jesus is the human Incarnation of the Word (Son) of God on earth.

3) The Life → Jesus offered his human life. He died on the cross to pay the price of the sins of every saved human being. He is the one whom the Father Resurrected and Glorified. He is the one who gives "His Bread of Life" to every saved human being by the {birth of the Spirit}. Subsequently, it is to live as a {God's child} on earth. It is beginning to receive the inheritance of God that will continue after life here on earth.

B) Where are these 3 themes in the Gospels?

The Gospels of St-Matthew, St-Mark and St-Luke have substantially the same content. The first was written by St-Mark who was the secretary of St-Peter. The other two are an adaptation according to the people to whom it was addressed. St-Matthew wrote for the Jews. St-Matthew was originally a person of bad life. So he worked very hard on the Way of conversion and this is reflected in his Gospel. St-Luke wrote for the Gentiles (non-Jews, Greeks). These 3 Gospels mainly deal with themes: **1) the Way and 2) the Truth.**

The Gospel of St-John is very special. It is the revelations about the deep reality of Jesus. It deals mainly with the themes: **2) the Truth and 3) the Life.** St-John being a very good man, he talks very little of the theme: 1) the Way of conversion. This is the most recent Gospel. Since the Way of Conversion has already been treated by the other evangelists, he has concentrated his efforts to talk of the mystery surrounding Jesus.

The book of Acts of the Apostles is the second part of the Gospel of St-Luke. This text tells the story of how the Gospels were put into **practice** in the life of the early Christians. These are not beliefs but real actions on the ground.

| 19-C | Background of the New Testament

A) A difficult time.

Let us not forget that these Scriptures come from the time of the persecution of small emerging Christian communities. You had to be very determined to become a Christian, because some people could even be put to death!

Moreover, the Jews of the time formed family clans around their religion. If a person became a Christian, he would certainly be rejected by his family. Then, the apostles formed Christian communities to welcome and hide them. They were all brothers and sisters in Christ. **Their Scriptures are as hard as the reality they have lived.**

B) An adapted interpretation.

We cannot interpret these Scriptures properly without giving a basic idea of the political and religious context in which the events unfolded as well as the mentalities of the time. It is for this reason that these texts are difficult to read for people of our time.

C) I give you here a general image to situate you.

The Romans were conquerors. These are the first in human history to have a professional army. The soldiers were not farmers or traders. In times of peace, soldiers trained in war and built roads to enlarge the Empire. Rome lived on the tax collection of its conquered peoples. Basically, the Roman Empire was the largest parasite of the time.

God's people were Israel. The people had been conquered by the Roman Empire about a century before Jesus was born. For the Romans, the people of Israel were very difficult to govern because there were many revolutionaries called Zealots. So to contain them, the Roman guard was very numerous, pitiless, intolerant, murderous.

The people of God also had a king named Herod, whose ideas of greatness had to be maintained. The people reproached the king and his court for not respecting the Law of God and consequently for bringing misery upon the whole people. It must be remembered that the First Covenant of God is established with Abram for the whole people. It is only the 2nd Covenant established by the Son (Jesus) that is between God and a particular individual.

The religion of the time was very strong and governed the whole life of the people. The chief priests were rich and had a sumptuous Temple, that of Jerusalem. The most important religious party was the Pharisees. They had a set of extremely rigid laws (about 600) that Jesus had repeatedly opposed. Jesus even told the Pharisees that they lay the burden of these laws on the people, but that they themselves do not respect them. Jesus even called them hypocrites...

There was too much to pay: Roman taxes; the taxes of their king; gifts and offerings to maintain the rich people of the Temple (chief priests). Then the people lived in the greatest poverty. It is for this reason that the people followed Jesus with his wonders. The people did not have much to eat and many of them were sick: lame; blind; paralytic; lepers; etc. I am making a little parenthesis for the case of the "so naughty prostitutes" of the time. We have to get back to the context. The majority of these women did not do this out of cheerful heart. A woman without her father, husband or family was without any resources. So, they had the choice between prostituting themselves or starving!

The mentality of the time about God was falsely maintained for the benefit of the powerful. God is a king who loves glory. God is punisher and avenger. The beloved ones of God are rich and healthy. They are his righteous ones. The unloved ones of God are poor and sick, because God has abandoned them to their miseries, they are sinners.

In this context, the poor people are abandoned by all, even by their own God!

In addition, the people are very superstitious. Without a purification ritual, a person could even absorb an unclean spirit while eating. A person could be possessed of one or more demons. Diseases came from their own sins or those of their parents. These people lived in constant fear. In reality, they did not live, but rather tried to survive in all that...

They need hope!

This hope, they find it in the ancient Scriptures that tell of the coming of a messiah (a liberator), possibly like Moses once. The people are waiting impatiently to restore order in Israel and to expel the Roman Empire. The people care more than anything for this idea of the messiah who will solve all their problems. For them, it will be a "messiah of anger with the sword in his hand." It is for this false perception of the messiah that Jesus was crucified. Jesus is not the messiah that the people wanted. In the beginning, even the apostles were misled by this false idea. In the beginning, the apostles follow Jesus, because this one talks about a kingdom that comes and whose apostles want a place. Afterwards, Jesus will bring them to make a "3-year conversion Way of the heart," these are the texts of the Gospels. At the end of the mission of Jesus, the apostle Judas Iscariot does not want to give up this false idea of the "messiah of wrath" and delivers Jesus to the chief priests for Jesus to explain himself and for God to intervene with "the fire from heaven (sky)" to the favor of Jesus. What God will not do, because he is Holy (without any evil). Jesus is then put to death and his apostles are disoriented. Jesus was abandoned by God, so he cannot be the expected messiah! The apostles will hide, because there is no hope. The apostle Judas Iscariot even goes to hang himself. The disciples of Jesus having the most faith are the holy women. The Apparitions of the Risen Jesus are first made to them.

After the Apparitions of the Risen Jesus, the apostles ask Jesus the moment when he will return to restore order to Israel. The idea of the "messiah of wrath" is well encrusted and does not let them go even when Jesus is about to leave them for his Ascension to his Father. Later, this idea (well encrusted) will be the inspiration of the strange text of the Revelation (Apocalypse) by "John of Patmos" which has nothing to do with the apostle St-John. See article |20-B|. The vision is that Jesus will return on earth at the end of time with his angels to fight the Evil Forces (the devil, demons and damned human beings) and to throw them all into the lake of eternal fire.

→ **The next articles in this chapter are important in order to reframe the Scriptures for us now.**

| 19-D | 1st important key to understanding the Scriptures (justice for the poor)

To understand the Scriptures, you **need keys** that simplify everything.

Let's start:

A) In everyday life, a person could have a thousand excuses for not finding Jesus Christ:

- ° He did not have enough education;
- ° He did not have the chance to acquire knowledge;
- ° When he was a child, he was not in the right religion;
- ° He had a life of misery.

So here is what Jesus answers:

NT	St-Matthew	5,2-10	He opened His mouth and <i>began</i> to teach them, saying, "Blessed are the poor in spirit (1), for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. "Blessed are those who mourn, for they shall be comforted. "Blessed are the gentle, for they shall inherit the earth. "Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, for they shall be satisfied. "Blessed are the merciful, for they shall receive mercy. "Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God. "Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called sons of God. "Blessed are those who have been persecuted for the sake of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.
		11,25-30	At that time Jesus said, " I praise You, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that You have hidden these things from <i>the</i> wise and intelligent and have revealed them to infants. "Yes, Father, for this way was well-pleasing in Your sight. "All things have been handed over to Me by My Father; and no one knows the Son except the Father; nor does anyone know the Father except the Son, and anyone to whom the Son wills to reveal <i>Him</i> . "Come to Me, all who are weary and heavy-laden, and I will give you rest. "Take My yoke upon you and learn from Me, for I am gentle and humble in heart, and you will find rest for yours souls (1). "For My yoke is easy and My burden is light."

(1) Here, the meaning of "**spirit or soul**" is our human interior, our deepest feelings.

To support what is written in the Gospel of St-Matthew, I will tell you about a testimony that I saw on the Internet. A guy in prison, said his life was over. He said that his conversion had been difficult, because he had done a lot of evil in his life and he blamed himself. Subsequently, he shouted from the bottom of his heart to God. The guy said, "God came to visit him in prison." I know that the Presence of God is the Holy Spirit. During his testimony, he pointed to his heart in his chest. For me, here is a sign that says a lot... It is the mark of the "seal of Jesus" for the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. On the other hand, this guy did not give me the impression of knowing what he had really received ... Yes, the Eternal Life!

You see, it depends on us only. In misfortune, we approach God as Jesus said. So misery does not take us away from God, it brings us closer! Those who go away are those who do evil and not those who are in misery...

The message is: God rewards those who are thirsty for peace and justice.

Personally, if I had not had some misery in my life, I would not have had my {birth of the Spirit}. See article | 12-D | .

B) In short:

The injustice and misery created by our human world are, without knowing it, "a stepladder to reach out to God." With God, everything makes sense! Without God, nothing makes sense...

| 19-E | 2nd and 3rd important keys (only God is Holy and Living)

A) God alone is Holy.

In the Bible, everything you read about God that is not: "Love, Holiness (without any evil) and Forgiveness." This is not the reality of God, but the human thought of that time about God. Only Jesus came to set the record straight on the knowledge of his Father.

B) God alone is Living.

A very important notion is that God alone is Life. Without God, life does not exist on Earth. If you are alive right now, it is because God has deposited life here in the beginning. There is no life or Life without God, for he is the only Source.

The closer you come to God, the closer you get to Life.

On the contrary, if you move away from God, you also move away from life, so you go in the direction of death.

| 19-F | 4th important key (God does not punish the bad one, but reward the good one)

A) Judgments.

In the Old Testament. Judaism easily had the "Judgments of God" in its mouth. God always punished the bad one. Christianity has sometimes carried this bad perception of God with it. We only have to think of the famous vision of the "Last Judgment" in the Revelation (Apocalypse), where Jesus will return with his angels to throw the devil, the demons and damned human beings in the lake of fire (eternal hell). The problem is that it does not go with the revelations of Jesus about the Holiness of his Father.

Here is the reality. From the New Testament, Jesus gives the revelation that God does not punish the bad one, but reward only the good one!

Let me explain. God alone is Living. God alone is Holy (without any evil). So, how to punish a person? There is only one solution! Simply not to allow this person to live indefinitely. In short, God does not eternally finance the lives of people who do evil. It is for this reason that the inheritance of human life is at most 120 years old. To obtain more than that, one must take the Way of the Son of God to Eternal Life.

I believe that in fact, God has never really punished anyone. In the Old Testament, sometimes the Hebrew people did not do what God asked. So, without knowing it, the people surrounded themselves with false gods and riches which were the envy of the invaders. If the people had only a poor little stone temple and no wealth, this would not have interested the invaders. The people could have lived in peace on their lands...

B) 1st Covenant (Old Testament)

This Covenant (with Abraham) was, to obtain a territory and some earthly protection for the Hebrew people **if they did what God asked them to do**. But the people began to kill the prophets sent by God and to pray to idols. The people did not respect the Covenant, God has simply removed his protection. It must be understood that this was not a punishment of God, but a consequence of the decision of the people to abandon God!

C) 2nd Covenant (the New Testament)

This Covenant (with Jesus Christ) is still very poorly understood by Christians today.

This Covenant is not to save a people or a nation or even to save the whole of humanity. **It is a Covenant between God and any particular human being who desires it.** In short, the Covenant is simply between God and a disciple of Jesus.

- ° It is the human commitment to follow the Way indicated by Jesus;
- ° Subsequently, the {gift of the Holy Spirit} on earth;
- ° Finally, the reward of Eternal Life after biological death.

Unfortunately, Christian movements made promises to their followers that had absolutely nothing to do with it. They imagined that being a Christian came with divine protection on earth or assurance for all our little misfortunes! So, there are Christians who are still angry with God for their little everyday misfortunes. They say to themselves, "If God really existed, there would not be so much evil on earth!" In truth, they have understood nothing! No, if humanity did what God wants (to do good only), there would not be much evil on earth... I repeat, on earth, every human being has a choice to make. The choice between doing good or evil. And this in complete freedom in front of his Creator (God).

Let's look at a small part of the history of the apostles...

They have all been martyred and God did not "hit" their attackers! 1) But where are their attackers now? They are in dust (in the ground). 2) Where are the apostles? They are in the Kingdom of God.

You see, God only rewards the good one of his Eternal Life. For the bad one, all that remains for him is to finish his inheritance of mortal life on earth, his choice being made!

| 19-G | Why does Jesus often speak in parables in the Gospels?

- ° So that those who want to understand the teachings of Jesus ask questions, inquire and seek;
- ° So that those who do not want to understand leave on their own and thus do not create problems.

NT	St-Matthew	13.10-16	And the disciples came and said to Him, "Why do You speak to them in parables?" Jesus answered them, "To you it has been granted to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it has not been granted. "For whoever has, to him <i>more</i> shall be given, and he will have an abundance; but whoever does not have, even what he has shall be taken away from him. "Therefore I speak to them in parables; because while seeing they do not see, and while hearing they do not hear, nor do they understand. " In their case the prophecy of Isaiah is being fulfilled, which says, "You will keep on hearing, but will not understand, you will keep on seeing, but will not perceive; for the heart of this people has become dull, with their ears they scarcely hear, and they have close their eyes, otherwise they would see with their eyes, hear with their ears, and understand with their heart an return, and I would heal them." "But blessed are your eyes, because they see; and your ears, because they hear.
----	------------	----------	--

Jesus said that one of his missions on earth was to tangibly fulfill the Scriptures. Here, it was to fulfill a prophecy of the prophet Isaiah quoted by St-Matthew.

In short, Jesus says that a person must begin by wanting to hear his Word. Later, through his commitment and inner efforts, he must succeed in his conversion from the heart. From this point, Jesus will be able to heal the person from death to Eternal Life.

| 19-H | Why did Jesus come on earth and die on the cross?

A) His coming on earth.

Jesus is the human Incarnation of one of the 3 Persons of God. He is the Word of God made flesh on earth.

God had prepared the Hebrew people (the Jews) for his coming into the world. Jesus is the Messiah announced in the Old Testament. St-Paul said that the whole Bible tells us about God's plan and the coming of his Son on earth.

The patriarchs and the prophets began the teaching work of God. They formed a people and gave it operating laws. Jesus came to finish the teaching and to put the Law of God in their hearts. This is done by the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit}. This explains the "seal of Jesus" in the chest. See article | 13-E |.

The Incarnation of the Son of God (Jesus) has demonstrated to people of Judaism that:

- ° The **human body** is not fallen (bad);
- ° God is not punisher and avenger, but God loves every human being and can forgive him;
- ° God also suffers from evil that humans do on earth;
- ° God comes on earth to share our joys as our sorrows;
- ° God comes on earth (humanly) to show, by his example, how to live as a child of God on earth.

B) The death of Jesus on the cross.

Jesus was crucified to demonstrate the wrongdoing of humans. This is to demonstrate perfectly (divinely) the guilt of humans. Humans doing evil to a person (the Son of God) who has never committed evil (Holy).

The day the chief priests of the Sanhedrin concluded that Jesus should die. It is by this same conclusion (at death) that the Father has made his own Judgment identical for humanity. Jesus said, see the lower reference of St-John, "If I had not come (here on earth) and spoken (Jesus is the Word) to them, they would not have sin." At that moment, all humanity was condemned to death in the ground.

Remember in the book of Exodus with Moses. It was by the judgment pronounced by Pharaoh himself that God returned exactly the same judgment against the people of Pharaoh. Jesus said, see the lower reference of St-Matthew, "For in the way you judge, you will be judged!"

Afterwards, Jesus went to Calvary to take, not his condemnation, but to take our human condemnation and die for every human being who longs to be Saved by Christ.

For the divine injustice of his sacrifice, his Father gave him a (divine) reward as great, that of giving the "Breath of Eternal Life" to every human being whom Jesus wants (to each of his disciples).

NT	St-Matthew	7,1-2	"Do not judge so that you will not be judged. "For in the way you judge, you will be judged; and by your standard of measure, it will be measured to you.
	St-John	15,21-26	"But all these things they will do to you for My name's sake, because they do not know the One (1) who sent Me. "If I had not come and spoken to them, they would not have sin (2), but now they have no excuse for their sin. "He who hates Me hates My Father also. "If I had not done among them the works which no one else did, they would not have sin; but now they have both seen and hated Me and My Father as well. "But <i>they have done this</i> to fulfill the word that is written in their Law, 'they hated me without a cause.' "When the Helper (3) comes, whom I will send to you from the Father, <i>that is</i> the Spirit of truth (3) who proceeds from the Father, He will testify about Me,

(1) Humans do not want to recognize their Creator (God).

(2) By the death of Jesus (Holy), humans perfectly prove their guilt to do evil in front of God.

(3) The Holy Spirit will confirm that Jesus is telling the Truth.

NT	St-John	3,14-18	"As Moses lifted up the serpent (1) in the wilderness , even so must the Son of Man be lifted up; so that whoever believes will in Him have eternal life. "For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes (2) in Him shall not perish, but have eternal life. "For God did not send the Son into the world to judge the world, but that the world might be saved (3) through Him. "He who believes in Him is not judged; he who does not believe has been judged already (4), because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.
----	---------	---------	--

(1) At the time of the Exodus (Moses), the Hebrew people (at that time in the desert or **the wilderness**) were sometimes bitten by snakes. Since people were dying, God had made a permanent miracle for the people. Moses had **lifted up** a stick in the form of a bronze snake (**the serpent**) in the desert. If a person was bitten, he only had to look at the bronze snake and by his faith in God he was healed and would not die. Here, Jesus who was lifted up on the cross is compared to this bronze snake that heals from death. If a person has faith in Jesus and his Father, he will not die.

- (2) The word "believe" of St-John is all that must be done in order to obtain his {birth of the Spirit}. This is not the modern term that looks like "I think."
- (3) The work of Jesus is to save the person for Eternal Life.
- (4) A person who is not saved by Jesus is already judged. Yes, to die in the ground since we are all born mortal. It is for this reason that one must {be born of the Spirit}.

3) In short:

- a) To demonstrate in a perfect (divine) way the malice of humanity before the Goodness of God. In fact, that day, it was not Jesus who was sentenced to death. But the whole humanity that has been judged before his Creator for his crimes committed against himself.
- b) To demonstrate the freedom of humans on earth to commit evil on their own. To demonstrate also the respect of this human freedom by his Creator (God) who has suffered the consequences.
- c) To remove from the mind of Judaism the false idea that God is punisher and avenger.

C) Jesus did not suffer alone on the cross.

- 1) In the Gospel of St-Matthew, at the death of Jesus, there is one of his words that is surprising.

NT	St-Matthew	27,46	About the ninth hour Jesus cried out with a loud voice, saying, "Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is, "my God, my God, why have you forsaken me?" (K)
----	------------	-------	---

Some people thought that God had abandoned his Son. But sometimes, it is good to see what is written at the bottom of the page of the Bible (Jerusalem 1973 Editions du Cerf). In (K): "Real cry of distress, but not of despair, this complaint borrowed from Scripture is a prayer to God and it is followed in the Psalm by the joyful assurance of the final triumph."

- 2) It is necessary to know that God is the Perfect Trinitarian Unity (Father, Son, Holy Spirit). **When one suffers, it is God (in its entirety) who suffers.** Then everyone understood the suffering of the Son (Jesus) on the cross, but who understood the suffering of his Father during the event! I give you a simple example. In a hospital, when a child is suffering, parents suffer just as much!

Explanation of the Scriptures

|20| Properly interpret the Scriptures

In chapter |19|, I gave you 4 fundamental keys. In this chapter, I prepare you even more for reading the most important texts of the Bible that will be addressed in the next 4 chapters.

|20-A| Help of the Holy Spirit

Without the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, we can only do simple interpretations of the Bible. Why? Because the Bible was inspired by God and therefore, one must be guided by his Spirit to understand with precision.

So no one should interpret the Bible strictly without his {birth of the Spirit} because the risk of misinterpretation is inevitable. This can even have serious consequences, here are some examples...

A) To take fright and exaggerate the strength of the Scriptures.

- 1) To lock yourself in order to cut yourself off from the famous temptations of the world.
- 2) To cut any sexuality that the brain needs to regenerate itself, see chapter |16|.
- 3) To fear the idea of the devil to such a point, to create constant and unsustainable psychological fears. In the past, we know that some Christians even went so far as to self-injury, believing falsely that their bodies were bad.

In this way of exaggeration, how many people have suffered needlessly?

B) To minimize the meaning of the Scriptures.

- 1) To intellectualize the scriptures and become emotionally cold. This is the opposite of what Jesus asks.
- 2) To miss out on what is important as the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is always a real Manifestation. This minimization has put many Christians to sleep (as I was), thinking falsely that they have little to do to go to the Kingdom of God.

By this minimum path, it remains only to continue to sleep forever...

|20-B| Some Bible texts need filtration

It is very important to acquire some basics to read the scriptures. If you see a piece of text where God seems punisher and avenger, well this piece of text is Judaism and not Christianity. Jesus said that there is only God who is Good (Holy). This piece of text is simply tainted by human darkness. God never takes pleasure in making a person suffer, even a bad person.

A) In the Old Testament.

- 1) For the texts of Genesis.

The first texts of Genesis (until Abraham) are symbolic texts inspired by God to people more than 2,000 years ago. These people had no knowledge of modern science. The narratives of Creation; the Garden of Eden; Cain and Abel; Noah (the Flood); the Tower of Babel are not historical facts, but symbolic texts. From Abraham, we know that these are historical facts with people who have truly lived.

On the other hand, it is necessary to be careful to put aside these symbolic texts by saying, "It is not that at all!" On the contrary, these texts are super important! Each of these texts represents a reality of human history. These texts are not the beginning of history, but the symbolization of entire human history, from the beginning to the end! I give you two examples. God walking in the Garden of Eden is Jesus in the year 0030! This is the inspiration I got when I prayed to the Lord to help me with the narrative of the Garden of Eden.

We must be careful about the mentality of the Bible writers. Some believed that God was punisher and vengeful while Jesus gave the revelation that God is only goodness.

2) For the texts of the Exodus (Moses).

This text is very beautiful, but there is something that is illogical in the center. We read that when Moses went to deliver the Hebrew people from the hand of Egypt, Moses begins by obtaining a prodigy of God, it is one of the 10 plagues of Egypt. After the 3rd prodigy, Pharaoh then wants to release the people in slavery and there strangely, God does it on purpose to harden the heart of Pharaoh who does not want to let the people go now! Thereafter, the cycle begins again, a punishment and a hardening of the heart of Pharaoh. As I told you, God is only goodness and has no malice! So, how to explain this strange cycle (punishment/hardening)? It is simple, it is normal that people in slavery (for 400 years) dream of revenge and that it is reflected in their texts. It is also normal that Pharaoh does not want to let hundreds of thousands of Hebrew slaves (who work for free) leave because the Egyptians will have to start working.

On the other hand, in the same text of the Exodus, I have seen the great patience of God for the Egyptian people. God does one prodigy at a time, he does not crush the Egyptians! They only have the consequence of their decisions and their own stubbornness. In the end, Pharaoh will even order a cruel punishment for the Hebrew people, the death of the first-born children. This will turn against Pharaoh and the Egyptian people. Later, Jesus will say that we should not judge anyone, because it is by our own judgment that we will be judged ourselves.

B) In the New Testament.

1) For the Epistles of St-Paul.

As already mentioned in article |1-E| , how can we talk about the Way of Jesus without referring to the misinterpretations that some have made of the Epistles of St-Paul? I dedicated article |20-D| only on this subject.

2) For the text of Revelation (Apocalypse).

Over the centuries, this text has always been enigmatic. Some people contested it. In my study before writing this book, I looked at this text that I had heard about, but that I had never read. After only a few pages of reading, I realized that this text was too strange. There was too much hate! This did not match the values of goodness of Jesus.

- a) St-John was the sweetest apostle, he could not have written this text...
- b) From my experience of my {birth of the Spirit}, God is only Goodness...
- c) In the book of Acts of the Apostles, which is the continuation of the Gospel of St-Luke, it is said that even Jesus does not know the details of the end of the world. So, how could this John know it by visions that Jesus would have given him?

NT	Acts of the Apostles	1,6-7	So when they had come together, they were asking Him, saying, "Lord, is it at this time You are restoring the kingdom to Israel?" He said to them, "It is not for you to know times or epochs which the Father has fixed by His own authority;
----	----------------------	-------	--

Reading the first pages of the book of Revelation (Apocalypse) and feeling them, it gave me the impression that the author was a Christian tortured in the depths of a dungeon who lived martyrdom! So, I closed this text and I did some research...

Internet Keywords	1) Interbible, the Revelation or Apocalypse does not come from John 1) Interbible, l'Apocalypse n'est pas de Jean
-------------------	--

Here, around 1950, theologians finally realized that this text of Revelation (Apocalypse) was written by a single author who is John of Patmos in the year 0095. The apostle St-John being died in the year 0043, so he could not be the author of it!

By cons in article |29-D| , I will still take a look at the Revelation (Apocalypse) for you...

| 20-C | A few words and basic expressions of the New Testament

One must pay attention to the words and expressions of the New Testament. Why? Because they depend on the translation of 2,000 years Scriptures with a mentality and a culture very different from ours.

See article | 3-D | for meanings in the Bible of: 1) the spirit, 2) the soul and 3) the heart.

Now, let's go a step further with some additional terms.

Words and expressions	Simple explanations
Sin	To do something wrong in the eyes of God. For the Jews, sin was often associated with disease. If a person was sick, it was because he had accumulated too many sins. It is for this reason that Jesus forgives sins and the person is healed. Jesus had given the power to forgive sins to his apostles since they were getting healings from God.
The original sin	It is through this sin that the human has been doomed to mortal condition. Jesus has the power to forgive original sin since it is he who gives Eternal Life. To obtain this forgiveness, the Christian must fulfill all the promises of his baptism. See articles 12-C and 18-C .
Sin against the Holy Spirit	It is to make one's own way of life and not to follow the Way of Jesus. See article 12-A . This prevents receiving the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. This sin is not forgivable because the person cannot receive the Breath of Eternal Life from God.
Flesh	It is the human body. It is good because created by God. On the other hand, for the Jews (the flesh) meant sometimes (the sin). So, you have to pay attention to the meaning of the sentence.
Carry one's cross	It is when a person chooses to do good on earth and to follow the Way of Jesus. Then the other people will make him a bit of misery and that is normal. On the other hand, it does not mean to be martyred! See article 9-E .

↑ (Essential articles)	They are necessary for understanding the next chapter.
↓ (Optional articles)	They give additional information.

| 20-D | Some advanced New Testament words and expressions

A) The advanced terms come mainly from St-Paul in his Epistles.

As mentioned in article | 3-D |, everyone can simply interpret the Scriptures. By cons, one needs his {birth of the Spirit} to give a precise interpretation.

In the past, some of the St-Paul's terms have been misinterpreted. So much so that it even justified the appearance of religious communities cloistered for life in order to make them saints (holy). Personally, I cannot believe it yet, inflict such suffering on oneself...

B) Let's go back to St-Paul...

Yes, St-Paul is passionate, but the fact remains that his Scriptures are accurate although very colorful. Let's look together at the 4 most mysterious expressions you will find in his Epistles.

Warning! I give you here expressions in French translated into English. Be careful, these expressions may not be written exactly this way in your English Bible.
° The sin of the flesh.
° To be dead to this world or no longer to be part of this world. See (2) of the Epistle of St-Paul below.
° Mortification. See (4) of the Epistle of St-Paul below.
° You died to sin on the cross with Christ.

I say it for people who are depressed. I also say it for people who take everything literally. **Do not take fright, stay calm!** The day you have your {birth of the Spirit}, you will understand everything. So, take good care of yourself.

C) I start by giving 2 excerpts and afterwards, I will explain them.

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Ephesians	5,29	for no one ever hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it (1),
----	-------------------------------------	------	--

(1) We realize that St-Paul does not talk about making big sacrifices or even to suffer!

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	3,1-12	Therefore if you have been raised up with Christ (1) , keep seeking the things above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God. Set your mind on the things above, not on the things that are on earth. For you have died (2) and your life is hidden (3) with Christ in God. When Christ, who is our life, is revealed, then you also will be revealed with Him in glory. Therefore consider the members of your earthly body as dead (4) to immorality, impurity, passion, evil desire, and greed, which amounts to idolatry. For it is because of these things that the wrath of God will come upon the sons of disobedience, and in them you also once walked, when you were living in them. But now you also, put them all aside: anger, wrath, malice, slander, <i>and</i> abusive speech from your mouth. Do not lie to one another, since you laid aside the old self (5) with its <i>evil</i> practices, and have put on the new self (1) who is being renewed to a true knowledge according to the image of the One who created him — <i>a renewal</i> in which there is no <i>distinction between</i> Greek and Jew, circumcised and uncircumcised, barbarian, Scythian, slave and freeman, but Christ is all, and in all. So, as those who have been chosen of God, holy (6) and beloved, put on a heart (7) of compassion, kindness, humility, gentleness and patience;
----	--------------------------------------	--------	--

When we read this last excerpt, we ask ourselves a lot of questions and that is normal. First of all, we need to know that St-Paul is writing here a summary of his thought, because no one talks in public in this way.

Subsequently, you should know that there is a major contradiction in this excerpt. At the beginning, St-Paul talks as if his followers had each had their {birth of the Spirit}. Strangely, a few sentences later, St-Paul talks as if his followers did not believe in God since their conversion has not even begun yet. So, there is an impossibility. All steps must be successful in order to obtain from God his {birth of the Spirit}.

To explain this text, which does not follow the order of the steps, I see only one possibility. The followers of St-Paul lie to him and pretend to have received the Visit of the Holy Spirit. Why? Just to get a good place in the community. Yes, it is human, but it does not help St-Paul. So, he writes here a catch-up text to make them move a little bit...

In reality, his text is good, but you need some explanation to understand it.

See the corresponding reference number in the excerpt above:

(1) Here is the feeling that we have 3 days after our {birth of the Spirit}. Yes, the feeling of being resurrected with Christ already on earth.

(2) In St-Paul's reasoning, when a person is born of the Spirit or from above, then he is dead on earth. Let's say that it is poetic, but it is not applicable in the real, because our human body did not vanish into smoke! On the other hand, St-Paul is not wrong, it is true that we feel this feeling (not to be part of the world of earth) during the 6 weeks following our {birth of the Spirit}. But it is because the Love of God is so strong, you have no idea! No happiness on earth equals its Presence! Afterwards, we realize that we also have a life to continue on earth! As St-Paul says so well, yes, we must continue our life on earth, but we must behave as a {God's child}. I summarize this by saying that we must keep one eye on earth and the other in Heaven at the same time!

The garden of God:

The best comparison I can give you is that our world looks like an apple tree. Each human being is like a small, unripe apple. God lets the little apples ripen without influencing them. As our Creator (alone without any evil) is not visible here on earth, this creates a great lack. Obviously, every human being can take advantage of it and do whatever evil he wants. The bad human being does not seek his Creator and automatically contributes to our world of injustice. On the other hand, the good human being seeks his Creator, because there is too much evil around him and he does not know what to do. He needs God's help to direct his life. The good human being begins to detach himself from our (bad) world like a ripe fruit from the tree. God never draws on the fruit to detach it. The fruit is ready when the person gives (from the bottom of his heart) and (without return) his life to God. It is a bit for this reason that St-Paul says that the person is dead to our world (that is doing evil). God collects the fruit through the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. The person is reborn a {God's child} here and naturally helps others on the Way of Jesus as I do in this book for you. This maturation can be the work of a lifetime, so do not wait. Rituals and great impulses of adoration give nothing, because God is not purchasable. We must do the work that the Lord asks.

(3) To clarify the thought of St-Paul, I give you an excerpt from St-John.

NT	St-John	17,21-23	that they may all be one; even as You, Father, <i>are</i> in Me and I in You, that they also may be in Us, so that the world may believe that You sent Me. "The glory which You have given Me I have given to them, that they may be one, just as We are one; I in them and You in Me, that they may be perfected in unity, so that the world may know that You sent Me, and loved them, even as You have loved Me.
----	---------	----------	---

We see that St-Paul and St-John talk about the Unity of God and His children. In Unity, evil does not exist. It is for this reason that God is Holy.

(4) When St-Paul talks about the "mortification," he gives a list of things that are wrong and should not be done. Look closely at his list. These are not trivial things. It is not to eat 2 desserts in a restaurant instead of 1. It is not to tell a little unimportant lie from time to time. No, his list is made up of serious things. In reality, if a person does what is mentioned in this list, he does not have his {birth of the Spirit}. Why? Because one must give up evil sincerely and give one's life to God even more sincerely to obtain it. In addition, God reads in the heart and lies are useless. The person doing things on this list simply does not believe in God and his conversion is not even started. See the chart below for the simplified definition of "mortification."

(5) "The old self" is the human person before his {birth of the Spirit}. St-Paul talks about 2 creations. The first creation is our human birth (5) on earth and the second creation is our {birth of the Spirit}, "the new self" (1).

(6) According to St-Paul, every person who has had his {birth of the Spirit} is a member of the people of saints (holy). Thank you, St-Paul, for your compliment. By cons, I do not think I will get any human praise for this book on the Truth. It must be known that at the time of the apostles, the whole Christian community was part of the people of saints (holy). It was only several hundred years later that some Christian movements reserved this title for martyrs. In reality, in St-Paul's thinking, it is God (the Holy One), who has the capacity to make someone saint (holy). St-Peter says the same thing in article |28-D|.

(7) Here, St-Paul talks about some "gifts" received at the {birth of the Spirit}. See articles |15-A and 15-C|. In reality, no personal sacrifice is necessary to obtain these qualities or "gifts" because they come with the {birth of the Spirit}. In the past, for a religious person who did not know what this text talks about, the only way to reach these famous qualities (which St-Paul mentions) was to fight oneself. While in reality, it was only a question of obtaining (the Holy Spirit's Visit) to have them gratuitously...

|20-E| A dangerous expression that coming out from where?

Perhaps you have already heard the strange expression: "You must not live on your brother's blood!"

I searched for this expression in the Bible and I did not see it. On the other hand, suppose that it is really somewhere or that it is written in another form.

So, what does this expression mean?

- 1) In the Old Testament, blood represented the interior of the human being and thus **his life**.
- 2) It is impossible for this expression to be related to a blood transfusion. Why? Blood transfusions did not exist when the Bible was written. **So that is not it.**
- 3) In reality, it is only that God does not want someone **to enslave another person**. The best biblical image is the slavery of the Hebrews in Egypt. See the book of Exodus. Remember that for God, the greatest Law of life is his freedom. This Law of God is so great that it alone explains why God does not punish the wicked on earth, because he also has the right to his choice like the others.

Explanations of the most important texts of the Bible

| 21 | The Old Testament, some important texts of Genesis

To obtain your {birth of the Spirit}, you must read important texts from the New Testament and the Old Testament. These texts being inspired by the Holy Spirit, they prepare you to receive him.

In this chapter, I have chosen texts from the Old Testament (Judaism) that are directly related to the New Testament (Christianity).

| 21-A | The story of all humanity told by God

The first narratives of Genesis are:

- ° Creation;
- ° The Garden of Eden;
- ° Cain and Abel;
- ° Noah (the Flood);
- ° The Tower of Babel.

We know that these narratives are not historical facts. These are symbolic narratives that God inspired.

Contrary to what people think, these narratives are not the beginning of humanity. No, they are the story of humanity as a whole, from beginning to end, pictorially told.

To tell the story in order, I have to place the narratives rather like this:

- ° The narrative of Creation will be explained in article | 21-B |;
- ° The narrative of the Garden of Eden will be explained in article | 21-C |;
- ° The narrative of Cain and Abel will be explained in article | 21-D |;
- ° The narrative of the Tower of Babel will be explained in article | 21-E |;
- ° The narrative of Noah (the Flood) will be explained in article | 21-F |.

In the next articles of this chapter:

These are excerpts from the Bible (New American Standard). See article | 0-H |.
They come from the website: http://www.lexilogos.com/bible_multilingue.htm
The explanations I give are in parentheses () below the verses.

|21-B| Creation of the heavens and the earth

I report here an excerpt from Genesis, chapter 1 of the Bible (New American Standard).

Genesis 1. First narrative of Creation.

1.	In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. (*) More than 2,000 years ago, people had no notion of modern science. So, God inspired them with texts adapted and able to pass through all epochs. Even now, we can see striking similarities with modern discoveries. For the people of that time, there were 3 places. Generally: A) The earth is the world where humans live. B) The sky (or the heavens) above them is the world where the angels live. C) The "Most High" well above the sky is the Abode of God alone.
2.	The earth was formless and void, and darkness was over the surface of the deep, and the <u>Spirit (1) of God</u> was moving over the surface of the waters. (*) We see that in the beginning there was nothing (nothingness). We know in physics that before the advent of the Big Bang, it was nothingness. Energy, matter and time did not exist. (1) In French (Bible of Jerusalem), this is: " <u>a wind of God.</u> " Remember that the word "Spirit" means "Wind" in Greek.
3.	Then God said, "Let there be light"; and there was light. (*) The link with the Big Bang is easy to make. The Big-Bang is a fireball that came out of a point in space and burned 10,000 years before matter appeared.
4.	God saw that the light was good; and God separated the light from the darkness. (*) We see the contrast between the Big Bang and nothingness, so the darkness of space.
7.	God made the expanse, and separated the waters which were below the expanse from the waters which were above the expanse; and it was so. (*) For the people there was: the blue waters of the sea and the blue waters of the sky.
11.	Then God said, "Let the earth sprout vegetation: plants yielding seed, <i>and</i> fruit trees on the earth bearing fruit after their kind (1) with seed in them"; and it was so. (1) In modern science, Darwin's theory of evolution has proved false. In genetics, we know that species (the kinds) have a sealed genetic code. The species were therefore created really individually.
16.	God made the two great lights, the greater light to govern the day (1), and the lesser light to govern the night (2); <i>He made</i> the stars (3) also. (1) The Sun. (2) The Moon. (3) In the Bible, what exactly is a star is not well defined. Here, the stars are small lights to illuminate Earth. In other texts, they can be associated with angels.
26.	Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; and let them rule over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the sky and over the cattle and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth." (*) The human is the representative of God on earth. As God does no evil to the human, then the human must not do evil to the nature which God has been entrusted to him.
27.	God created man in His own image, in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them. (*) Men and women are equal and complementary. They are the only beings on earth with self-awareness and the ability to discern between good and evil.
28.	God blessed them; and God said to them, "Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth, and subdue it; and rule over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the sky and over every living thing that moves on the earth." (*) We see in this text that reproduction (sexuality) is good, since it is created by God.
29.	Then God said, "Behold, I have given you every plant yielding seed that is on the surface of all the earth, and every tree which has fruit yielding seed; it shall be food for you;

(*) In science, we know that at the very beginning, humans did not eat meat. Humans only ate vegetables and fruits.

[21-C] The Garden of Eden (the earthly paradise)

I report here an excerpt from Genesis chapters 2 and 3 of the Bible (New American Standard).

Genesis 2. Second narrative of Creation. The earthly paradise.

1.	Thus the heavens and the earth were completed, and all their hosts. (*) At this time, God was seen as a King and not as a Father.
2.	By the seventh day God completed His work which He had done, and He rested on the seventh day from all His work which He had done.
3.	Then God blessed the seventh day and sanctified it, because in it He rested from all His work which God had created and made. (*) For the Jews, the Sabbath was very important because it was consecrated to God.
5.	Now no shrub of the field was yet in the earth, and no plant of the field had yet sprouted, for the LORD (1) God had not sent rain upon the earth, and there was no man to cultivate the ground. (*) Here we see that the products of the earth depend on the gift of God and the work of the human. (1) Be careful, the English translation (LORD) changes the meaning of the name of God. His name is Yahweh , which means the Eternal .
6.	But a mist used to rise from the earth and water the whole surface of the ground. (*) This flow represents the graces that God gives for his creation.
7.	Then the LORD God formed man of dust (1) from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life (2); and man became a living being. (1) The human comes from inert or dead matter. He returns to it (inert) after his biological death. (2) God gives life to the human through a breath: A) God gives the first life to the human for a maximum of 120 years, it is a short and deadly breath. B) God gives the second Life to the human. It is by a "very long Breath of his Eternity" in the nostrils that God gives the {birth of the Spirit}. This is really the way it happens even now.
8.	The LORD God planted a garden toward the east, in Eden; and there He placed the man whom He had formed. (*) The Garden of Eden is not a mythical place. On the contrary, it is our planet Earth, the human has always remained here.
9.	Out of the ground the LORD God caused to grow every tree (1) that is pleasing to the sight and good for food (2); the tree of life (3) also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of the knowledge (4) of good and evil. (1) A "tree" represents a "source" of something. (2) It is the food source that God gives to humans like vegetables and fruits. (3) It is the Source of Eternal Life that is the central point of creation. This Source is the Holy Spirit, the Breath of Eternal Life that God wants to give to every human being who does good and rejects evil. (4) It is a source very well known to the human. The word "knowledge" has nothing to do with the word "to know." No, the word "knowledge" here means " to do the action of. " Here, this is doing the action of evil. Evil on earth did not come from thinking about it, but from actually doing it.
14.	The name of the third river is Tigris; it flows east of Assyria. And the fourth river is the Euphrates. (*) All this is to show the splendor and grandeur of God. The four arms are to indicate that God is the source of life, everywhere, always beautiful, generous and precious.
15.	Then the LORD God took the man and put him into the garden of Eden to (1) cultivate (2) it and keep (3) it. (1) Here, we see the intention of God. (2) "To cultivate" is God's intention to "educate" the human. He does it through the Law given to Moses and the teaching of all prophets and Jesus. (3) "To keep" represents God's intention to "make the human being a child of God to bring him into his Kingdom."
16.	The LORD God commanded the man, saying, "From any tree of the garden you may eat freely;

17.	but from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat from it you will surely die."
	(*) These last 2 verses represent the Law of God. The human has the freedom to do all the good things he wants, but must not do evil, because God does not finance the lives of those who do evil for a long time. Then the person who does evil on earth will have only the time of his mortal life and not the Eternal Life.
18.	Then the LORD God said, "It is not good for the man to be alone; I will make him a helper suitable for him."
	(*) Here, the human being is a relationship being.
21.	So the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall upon the man, and he slept; then He took one of his ribs and closed up the flesh at that place.
22.	The LORD God fashioned into a woman the rib which He had taken from the man, and brought her to the man.
	(*) We know in biology that women have one more rib than men. This is surely related to pregnancy for the protection of the internal organs of the mother and fetus.
23.	The man said, "his is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh; she shall be called woman, because she was taken out of man."
	(*) Man and woman must love and respect each other since they were created to be together.
24.	For this reason a man shall leave his father and his mother, and be joined to his wife; and they shall become one flesh.
	(*) It is the marriage to make sure that the child of their union has all that it takes to develop.
25.	And the man and his wife were both naked and were not ashamed.
	(*) Here, it is the innocence of human creation. The human being is born on earth as a child (so, always innocent). The child does not know evil yet, but he will discover it.

Genesis 3. Continued...

1.	Now the serpent (1) was more crafty than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said to the woman, "Indeed, has God said, 'You shall not eat from any tree of the garden (2) '?"
	(1) The serpent (snake) represents, "the adversary of God (to do good)." In reality, this adversary of God is the human lust that drives him to do evil to have more. (2) It is the human temptation to do evil.
2.	The woman said to the serpent, "From the fruit of the trees of the garden we may eat;
3.	but from the fruit of the tree which is in the middle of the garden, God has said, 'You shall not eat from it or touch it, or you will die.' "
	(*) The last 2 verses are the awareness of the Law of God and its consequence.
4.	The serpent said to the woman, "You surely will not die!
	(*) Here, it is not to take God seriously and to doubt him.
5.	"For God knows that in the day you eat from it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil."
	(*) It is to believe that God is a liar and selfish wanting to reserve everything for himself.
6.	When the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was a delight to the eyes, and that the tree was desirable to make <i>one</i> wise, she took from its fruit and ate; and she gave also to her husband with her, and he ate.
	(*) It is giving in to the temptation. It is making the decision to do the wrong thing and even to enlist others.
7.	Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves loin coverings.
	(*) The Jews were very prudish. We know that human sexual desire is very strong. We also know that as long as the child is not a teenager, it is easy to educate. Subsequently, as a teenager, keeping the teenager in the regulation is not easy. So, the author simply makes the connection between the desire to do evil and sexual desire.
8.	They heard the sound of the LORD God (2) walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and the man and his wife hid (2) themselves from the presence of the LORD God among the trees of the garden.
	(1) This is obviously the fear of punishment after doing wrong.

	(2) By the way, who is God walking in the garden? It is the Son of God (Jesus) who came to walk on earth in the year 0030.
9.	Then the LORD God called to the man, and said to him, "Where are you?"
10.	He said, "I heard the sound of You in the garden, and I was afraid because I was naked; so I hid myself."
11.	And He said, "Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten from the tree of which I commanded you not to eat?"
	(*) We see that sin is not about (thinking about it), but about (doing evil).
12.	The man said, "The woman whom You gave to be with me, she gave me from the tree, and I ate."
13.	Then the LORD God said to the woman, "What is this you have done?" And the woman said, "The serpent deceived me, and I ate."
	(*) Through these last 2 verses, we see the human's inability to recognize that it is he who does evil on earth. The man puts his fault on the woman who in turn puts her fault on the serpent (snake). The serpent or Satan being the "imaginary bad friend" of the human on whom he puts the blame of his own sins since millennia.
14.	The LORD God said to the serpent, "Because you have done this, Cursed are you more than all cattle, And more than every beast of the field; On your belly you will go, And dust you will eat All the days of your life;
15.	And I will put enmity Between you and the woman, And between your seed and her seed; He shall bruise you on the head, And you shall bruise him on the heel."
16.	To the woman He said, "I will greatly multiply Your pain in childbirth, In pain you will bring forth children; Yet your desire will be for your husband, And he will rule over you."
17.	Then to Adam He said, "Because you have listened to the voice of your wife, and have eaten from the tree about which I commanded you, saying, 'You shall not eat from it'; Cursed is the ground because of you; In toil you will eat of it All the days of your life.
18.	"Both thorns and thistles it shall grow for you; And you will eat the plants of the field;
	(*) From these last 5 verses, we see that it is by the freedom of the human and his capacity to do evil that death has arrived in our world. The human then became a fallen and mortal being. This vision of misfortune on earth is that of Judaism more than 2,000 years ago.
19.	By the sweat of your face You will eat bread, Till you return to the ground, Because from it you were taken; For you are dust, And to dust you shall return."
	(*) We see that the human being is completely material and mortal. The human being has nothing immortal in him as an "eternal soul." This misconception comes from Greek mythology and not from the Jews.
22.	Then the LORD God said, "Behold, the man has become like one of Us (1), knowing good and evil (2); and now, he might stretch out his hand, and take also from the tree of life (3), and eat, and live forever"--
	(1) The Old Testament already recognized that God could be a multiple individual. Afterwards, Jesus will reveal that God is Trinitarian (Father, Son, Holy Spirit). (2) There is a misunderstanding. Here, the word " knowing " has the meaning of " doing ." In reality, God has all "Absolute Knowledge" to never do evil (he is Holy). As the human does not have this "Absolute Knowledge," he must be guided by the Word of God (Jesus). (3) The tree of life is the Holy Spirit. Without the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, a person cannot have access to the Kingdom of God.
23.	therefore the LORD God sent him out from the garden of Eden, to cultivate the ground from which he was taken.
24.	So He drove the man out; and at the east of the garden of Eden He stationed the cherubim and the flaming sword which turned every direction to guard the way to the tree of life.
	(*) Since the human can do evil, there is a great gulf, an abyss, or an impossibility of crossing between the earth and the Kingdom of God.

|21-D| Cain and Abel

I report here an excerpt from Genesis chapter 4 of the Bible (New American Standard).

Genesis 4. Narrative of Cain and Abel.

1.	Now the man had relations with his wife Eve, and she conceived and gave birth to Cain, and she said, "I have gotten a manchild with <i>the help of</i> the LORD."
----	---

	(*) God is the Source of all life. It is the story of the transmission of life on earth.
2.	Again, she gave birth to his brother Abel. And Abel was a keeper of flocks, but Cain was a tiller of the ground.
	(*) This is the story of the origin of breeders and farmers.
3.	So it came about in the course of time that Cain brought an offering to the LORD of the fruit of the ground.
	(*) This is the story of the origin of worship rendered by the human to his Creator.
4.	Abel, on his part also brought of the firstlings of his flock and of their fat portions. And the LORD had regard for Abel and for his offering;
5.	but for Cain and for his offering He had no regard. So Cain became very angry and his countenance fell.
6.	Then the LORD said to Cain, "Why are you angry? And why has your countenance fallen?
7.	"If you do well, will not <i>your countenance</i> be lifted up? And if you do not do well, sin is crouching at the door; and its desire is for you, but you must master it."
	(*) Of these last 4 verses, God wants a sincere worship, which Abel does, but not Cain.
8.	Cain told Abel his brother. And it came about when they were in the field, that Cain rose up against Abel his brother and killed him.
	(*) This is the story of the origin of the first murder.
9.	Then the LORD said to Cain, "Where is Abel your brother?" And he said, "I do not know. Am I my brother's keeper?"
10.	He said, "What have you done? The voice of your brother's blood is crying to Me from the ground.
	(*) Life is given by God and no one has the right to remove it.
11.	"Now you are cursed from the ground, which has opened its mouth to receive your brother's blood from your hand.
12.	"When you cultivate the ground, it will no longer yield its strength to you; you will be a vagrant and a wanderer on the earth."
	(*) These 2 verses are revealing. They represent the (defilement of evil of the human) which is spread in creation and which prevents God from giving in abundance the goods of his generosity.
13.	Cain said to the LORD, "My punishment is too great to bear!
14.	"Behold, You have driven me this day from the face of the ground; and from Your face I will be hidden, and I will be a vagrant and a wanderer on the earth, and whoever finds me will kill me."
15.	So the LORD said to him, "Therefore whoever kills Cain, vengeance will be taken on him sevenfold." And the LORD appointed a sign for Cain, so that no one finding him would slay him.
	(*) We see the righteousness of God and his goodness even for those who do evil.
16.	Then Cain went out from the presence of the LORD, and settled in the land of Nod, east of Eden.
	(*) This is the story of the origin of the pagans.
26.	To Seth, to him also a son was born; and he called his name Enosh. Then <i>men</i> began to call upon the name of the LORD.
	(*) This is the story of the origin of Judaism (the Jews).

| 21-E | The Tower of Babel

I report here an excerpt from Genesis chapter 11 of the Bible (New American Standard).

Genesis 11. The Tower of Babel.

1.	Now the whole earth used the same language and the same words.
	(*) This is a reflection of our modern era of communication.
2.	It came about as they journeyed east, that they found a plain in the land of Shinar and settled there.
3.	They said to one another, "Come, let us make bricks and burn <i>them</i> thoroughly." And they used brick for stone, and they used tar for mortar.
	(*) This is a reflection of the know-how of our modern technology.
4.	They said, "Come, let us build for ourselves a city, and a tower (1) whose top <i>will reach</i> into heaven (2), and let us make for ourselves a name (3) , otherwise we will be scattered abroad over the face of the whole earth."
	(1) This is just like the gigantic towers of the largest cities in the world.

	<p>(2) By getting closer to the sky (the heavens), the human tries to demonstrate his power and to make himself equal to God.</p> <p>(3) From the 1900s, this is what happened. Science and technology have tried to make our Creator (God) disappear and become our new god.</p>
5.	The LORD came down to see the city and the tower which the sons of men had built.
6.	The LORD said, "Behold, they are one people, and they all have the same language. And this is what they began to do, and now nothing which they purpose to do will be impossible for them.
	(*) Here we see the image of industrialization and globalization.
7.	"Come, let Us go down and there confuse their language, so that they will not understand one another's speech."
8.	So the LORD scattered them abroad from there over the face of the whole earth; and they stopped building the city.
9.	Therefore its name was called Babel, because there the LORD confused the language of the whole earth; and from there the LORD scattered them abroad over the face of the whole earth.
	<p>(1) Here is the story of civilizations and languages.</p> <p>(2) We see that humans have disunited one another because of evil they have done.</p> <p>(3) In the narrative of the day of Pentecost (book of Acts of the Apostles, New Testament), God unites the human to him again by the gift of the Holy Spirit, the gift of tongues, baptism in the name of his Son Jesus, and the early Christian communities.</p>

| 21-F | Noah (the Flood)

I report here an excerpt from Genesis chapters 6 and 7 of the Bible (New American Standard).

This article is related to article | 24-U | of the Gospel of St-Matthew.

Genesis 6. Noah (the Flood).

3.	Then the LORD said, "My Spirit shall not strive with man forever, because he also is flesh; nevertheless his days shall be one hundred and twenty years."
	(*) This life time is also what the science of genetics has found.
4.	The Nephilim were on the earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God came in to the daughters of men, and they bore <i>children</i> to them. Those were the mighty men who <i>were</i> of old, men of renown.
	<p>(*) Here is an unimportant legend.</p> <p>By the science of genetics, we know that human beings are made in one block because their 25,000 sealed genes prevent them from evolving. The human being is the fruit of a work, he is a creation. The present human being is the last modern man. It appeared "suddenly" about 35,000 years ago and has remained the same ever since. The human is the crowning of God's work on Earth.</p>
5.	Then the LORD saw that the wickedness of man was great on the earth, and that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.
	(*) Here, we clearly see that evil comes from the bottom of the human.
6.	The LORD was sorry that He had made man on the earth, and He was grieved in His heart.
7.	The LORD said, "I will blot out man whom I have created from the face of the land, from man to animals to creeping things and to birds of the sky; for I am sorry that I have made them."
	(*) This is in the image of the end of the world.
8.	But Noah found favor in the eyes of the LORD.
	(*) This is in the image of the people of {God's children} that Jesus Christ allows to become.
9.	These are the records of the generations of Noah. Noah was a righteous man, blameless in his time; Noah walked with God.
	(*) Noah is good in the eyes of God and does his Will (to do good).
11.	Now the earth was corrupt in the sight of God, and the earth was filled with violence.
12.	God looked on the earth, and behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted their way upon the earth.

13.	Then God said to Noah, "The end of all flesh has come before Me; for the earth is filled with violence because of them; and behold, I am about to destroy them with the earth. (*) Here we clearly see that evil comes from the human and not the devil. See chapter 18 .
14.	"Make for yourself an ark of gopher wood; you shall make the ark with rooms, and shall cover it inside and out with pitch. (*) The ark is the symbol of Jesus the Savior.
15.	"This is how you shall make it: the length of the ark three hundred cubits, its breadth fifty cubits, and its height thirty cubits.
17.	"Behold, I, even I am bringing the flood of water upon the earth, to destroy all flesh in which is the breath of life, from under heaven; everything that is on the earth shall perish. (*) This is in the image of the end of the world.
18.	"But I will establish My covenant (1) with you; and you shall enter the ark (2) --you and your sons and your wife, and your sons' wives with you (3). (1) Here, it is in the image of the Eternal Covenant concluded by the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross. (2) The ark is the symbol of Jesus the Savior. (3) The disciples of Jesus are like this little family who found grace in the eyes of God.
19.	"And of every living thing of all flesh, you shall bring two of every <i>kind</i> into the ark, to keep <i>them</i> alive with you; they shall be male and female.
22.	Thus Noah did; according to all that God had commanded him, so he did. (*) Noah does the Will of God as Jesus asks his disciples.

Genesis 7. Continued...

1.	Then the LORD said to Noah, "Enter the ark, you and all your household, for you <i>alone</i> I have seen <i>to be</i> righteous before Me in this time. (*) The "righteous" of the Old Testament are the "saints" of the New Testament.
4.	"For after seven more days, I will send rain on the earth forty days and forty nights; and I will blot out from the face of the land every living thing that I have made."
10.	It came about after the seven days, that the water of the flood came upon the earth.
13.	On the very same day Noah and Shem and Ham and Japheth, the sons of Noah, and Noah's wife and the three wives of his sons with them, entered the ark,
17.	Then the flood came upon the earth for forty days, and the water increased and lifted up the ark, so that it rose above the earth.
20.	The water prevailed fifteen cubits higher, and the mountains were covered.
21.	All flesh that moved on the earth perished, birds and cattle and beasts and every swarming thing that swarms upon the earth, and all mankind;
22.	of all that was on the dry land, all in whose nostrils (1) was the breath (* of the spirit *) of life , died (2). (* ----- *) Note: this little piece of sentence does not exist in the Jerusalem Bible. (1) Here we see the true Jewish definition of the word "soul." In this definition, even animals have a "soul." The soul is simply our breathing, our deadly biological life. (2) This is in the image of the end of the world.
23.	Thus He blotted out every living thing that was upon the face of the land, from man to animals to creeping things and to birds of the sky, and they were blotted out from the earth (1); and only Noah was left, together with those that were with him in the ark (2). (1) After our life on earth, the human simply dies like animals and plants with nothing more. (2) Living, there are only those who have ascended into the ark of Jesus the Savior to the Kingdom of God.

| 22 | The Old Testament, some important texts of the prophets

To obtain your {birth of the Spirit}, you must read important texts from the New Testament and the Old Testament. These texts being inspired by the Holy Spirit, they prepare you to receive his Visit.

In this chapter, I have chosen texts from the Old Testament (Judaism) that are directly related to the New Testament (Christianity).

In the next articles of this chapter:

These are excerpts from the Bible (New American Standard). See article | 0-H |.
They come from the website: http://www.lexilogos.com/bible_multilingue.htm
The explanations I give are in parentheses () below the verses.

| 22-A | The New Covenant

I report an excerpt from the Prophet Jeremiah, chapter 31 of the Bible (New American Standard).

Jeremiah 31. The New Covenant.

The personal remuneration	
28.	"As I have watched over them to pluck up, to break down, to overthrow, to destroy and to bring disaster, so I will watch over them to build and to plant (1)," declares the LORD (2).
	(1) God asks the human to make efforts to remove evil in him and put good. (2) LORD (Yahweh) is the name that the Jews gave to God. This Name means the Eternal (Past, Present, Future).
29.	"In those days they will not say again, 'The fathers have eaten sour grapes, And the children's teeth are set on edge.'
	(*) In the Old Testament. People believed that they suffered for the sins of others. Some even thought that if they were sick, it was to pay for the sins of their parents.
30.	"But everyone will die for his own iniquity; each man who eats the sour grapes, his teeth will be set on edge.
	(*) God removes this false idea of having to pay for the sins of others. In front of God, a person is only responsible for herself.
The New Covenant	
31.	"Behold, days are coming," declares the LORD, "when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah,
	(*) This is the 2nd Eternal Covenant, written in the New Testament.
32.	not like the covenant which I made with their fathers in the day I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt, My covenant which they broke, although I was a husband to them," declares the LORD.
	(*) This is the First Covenant concluded with Abraham, written in the Old Testament. The exit from the land of Egypt was made with Moses (book of Exodus).
33.	"But this is the covenant (1) which I will make with the house of Israel (2) after those days," declares the LORD, "I will put My law within them and on their heart (3) I will write it; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people.
	(1) The 2nd Eternal Covenant. (2) With the Jewish people and then extended to all other humans who wish to be part of it. (3) At the {birth of the Spirit}, a person is filled with the Holy Spirit who causes his heart to dilate. See article 13-D .
34.	"They will not teach again, each man his neighbor and each man his brother, saying, 'Know the LORD,' for they will all know Me (1), from the least of them to the greatest of them," declares the LORD, "for I will forgive their iniquity, and their sin (2) I will remember no more."
	(1) The Holy Spirit is the Spirit of truth that Jesus spoke, "He will be your Intercessor and he will teach you everything." How do you think I can write a book as complete as this one? The {inspiration} does not come from me.

(2) Here is the forgiveness obtained by Jesus Christ on the cross for those who will be saved. Beware, this forgiveness is not for all humanity, why else follow the Way of Jesus?	
Permanence of Israel	
35.	Thus says the LORD, Who gives the sun for light by day And the fixed order of the moon and the stars for light by night, Who stirs up the sea so that its waves roar; The LORD of hosts is His name:
(*) God is the Creator and the owner of the Earth. It is his living garden in the lifeless universe (space) that surrounds us.	
36.	"If this fixed order departs From before Me," declares the LORD, "Then the offspring of Israel also will cease From being a nation before Me forever."
37.	Thus says the LORD, "If the heavens above can be measured And the foundations of the earth searched out below, Then I will also cast off all the offspring of Israel For all that they have done," declares the LORD.
(*) Of the last 2 verses. Never could the Jewish people imagine that the Covenant of God will no longer be exclusive to them alone, but will extend to every human being who desires it.	

|22-B| Vision of the chariot of Yahweh

I report an excerpt from the prophet Ezekiel, chapter 1 of the Bible (New American Standard).

This article is related to article |23-G| of the Gospel of St-John.

Ezekiel 1. Vision of Yahweh's (LORD's) chariot.

4.	As I (1) looked, behold, a storm wind was coming from the north, a great cloud (2) with fire flashing forth continually and a bright light around it, and in its midst something like glowing metal in the midst of the fire.
(1) The prophet Ezekiel. (2) God was seen as dwelling in the "Most High," much higher than the heavens where the angels dwell. The power of God was such that there was only fire to represent it. As God is a Wind, he then presents himself as a storm having fire in his center. This description resembles the beginning of the narrative of the day of Pentecost in the book of Acts of the Apostles.	
5.	Within it there were figures resembling four living beings. And this was their appearance: they had human form.
6.	Each of them had four faces and four wings.
(*) It is to show that celestial creatures are well above nature.	
8.	Under their wings on their four sides <i>were</i> human hands. As for the faces and wings of the four of them,
(*) It is to indicate that God is everywhere. He acts in all 4 directions.	
9.	their wings touched one another; <i>their faces</i> did not turn when they moved, each went straight forward.
(*) This is to indicate the perfect unity of celestial creatures.	
10.	As for the form of their faces, <i>each</i> had the face of a man; all four had the face of a lion on the right and the face of a bull on the left, and all four had the face of an eagle.
(*) God shows that He is the Creator of all beings on earth as in the heavens.	
12.	And each went straight forward; wherever the spirit (1) was about to go, they would go, without turning as they went.
(1) Spirit means: "Breath or Wind." Celestial beings are propelled by the power of God's Breath.	
16.	The appearance of the wheels and their workmanship <i>was</i> like sparkling beryl, and all four of them had the same form, their appearance and workmanship <i>being</i> as if one wheel were within another.
(*) The chariot of Yahweh is above all knowledge and human imagination. From a geometrical point of view, two wheels in one another describe a sphere. It is as if the wheels of Yahweh's chariot were precious stones (jewels).	
18.	As for their rims they were lofty and awesome, and the rims of all four of them were full of eyes round about.
(*) The wheels of the chariot of Yahweh are so large that they connect the earth and the sky (the heavens) a little like the rainbow.	

22.	Now over the heads of the living beings <i>there was</i> something like an expanse, like the awesome gleam of crystal, spread out over their heads.
26.	Now above the expanse that was over their heads there was something resembling a throne, like lapis lazuli in appearance; and on that which resembled a throne, high up, <i>was</i> a figure with the appearance of a man (1).
	(*) We see the Kingship of God. (1) It is the Son of God who will take the human condition (Jesus).
28.	As the appearance of the rainbow (1) in the clouds on a rainy day, so <i>was</i> the appearance of the surrounding radiance. Such <i>was</i> the appearance of the likeness of the glory of the LORD (Yahweh). And when I saw <i>it</i> , I fell on my face and heard a voice (2) speaking.
	(1) This is the omen of the 2nd Covenant in the image of the rainbow in the narrative of Noah (the Flood). (2) It is the Son (Jesus) who is the Word of God.

| 22-C | Vision of the book

The Blessed Virgin, in many of her Apparitions, says that the majority of Christians are indifferent to the Life project of Christ and his Father. They do not follow the Way of Jesus and do not make their conversion from the heart. They do not enter within themselves the Word of God that allows them to heal them from death. They do not read the New Testament and are scared of what is written inside or read only the passages that suit them. As I said before, in Quebec I do not think there are more than 1 in 1,000 Christians who have obtained the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, and religious people do not seem to increase this average.

With such a small distribution (less than 1/1000), I do not believe that one day this book is taken seriously in Christianity. At best, I believe this book may become a "curiosity." Why? Christianity is not ready to hear the Truth. The majority of Christians pray to God for physical healing to continue their small human activities without God. Christians are willing to invest a little time in rituals and worship songs, but they do not want to invest their lives. If a Christian does not put his life in the hand of God, God does not give himself the right to unite his own Life with the life of this person by the {gift of the Holy Spirit} for Eternity. Thinking about it, about 1/4 of the world's population is Christian, if everyone had the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, the face of our society would have changed...

The difficulty of following God is not recent and is part of human history. 2,500 years ago, the prophet Ezekiel talks about the same problem in Judaism. I will only repeat a few bits of his text and I will make the link with this present book written for Christianity. The text will seem difficult, perhaps a little exaggerated, unfortunately it is not at all...

I report an excerpt from the prophet Ezekiel, chapters 2 and 3 of the Bible (New American Standard).

Ezekiel 2. Vision of the book.

1.	Then He said to me, "Son of man, stand on your feet that I may speak with you!"
	(*) God calls the prophet, "Son of man." Jesus being the Word of God, he will also use this expression to say that he is the Messiah expected by the people.
2.	As He spoke to me the Spirit entered me and set me on my feet; and I heard <i>Him</i> speaking to me.
	(*) Here, the Spirit is the strength of God.
3.	Then He said to me, "Son of man, I am sending you to the sons of Israel (1) [...]"
4.	"I am sending you to them who are stubborn and obstinate children (2) [...]"
	(1) The Israelites of old are now the Christians. (2) Christians do not make their conversion of the heart.
7.	"But you shall speak My words to them whether they listen or not [...]"
	(*) Whether Christians listen or not, it does not matter. See article 13-I .
10.	When He spread it out before me, it was written on the front and back, and written on it were lamentations, mourning and woe.
	(*) This book serves to tell the Truth and set the record straight. To go to the Kingdom of God, every Christian must make sincere efforts.

Ezekiel 3. Continued...

4.	Then He said to me, "Son of man, go to the house of Israel (1) and speak with My words to them (2). (1) Christianity. (2) This book.
6.	nor to many peoples of unintelligible speech or difficult language, whose words you cannot understand. But I have sent you to them who should listen to you;
7.	yet the house of Israel (1) will not be willing to listen to you (2) , since they are not willing to listen to Me (3). Surely the whole house of Israel is stubborn and obstinate. (1) Christianity. (2) This book. (3) Jesus.
10.	Moreover, He said to me, "Son of man, take into your heart all My words which I will speak to you and listen closely.
11.	"Go to the exiles, to the sons of your people, and speak to them (1) and tell them, whether they listen or not (2), 'Thus says the Lord GOD.' " (1) This is the distribution of this book directly to everyone. (2) Everyone has the freedom to hear or not. But God also has the freedom to Save or not.

|22-D| The dry bones

I report an excerpt from the prophet Ezekiel, chapter 37 of the Bible (New American Standard).

This article is related to article |23-G| of the Gospel of St-John.

Ezekiel 37. The dry bones.

1.	The hand of the LORD (Yahweh) was upon me, and He brought me out by the Spirit (1) of the LORD and set me down in the middle of the valley; and it was full of bones (2). (1) It is the breath or the action of God that brings Ezekiel into a Vision. (2) It is a valley where the inhabitants are dead and only their bones remain on the ground.
2.	He caused me to pass among them round about, and behold, <i>there were</i> very many on the surface of the valley; and lo, <i>they were</i> very dry.
3.	He said to me, "Son of man (1), can these bones live?" And I answered, "O Lord GOD, You know (2)." (1) God calls the prophet, "Son of man." Jesus being the Word of God, he will use this same expression to say that he is the Messiah expected by the people. (2) These bones are surely dead except that Ezekiel has total trust in God.
4.	Again He said to me, "Prophecy over these bones and say to them, 'O dry bones, hear the word (1) of the LORD.' (1) The Word of Yahweh (Lord) is the Son (Jesus). He alone has the power to give Eternal Life to a human being.
5.	"Thus says (1) the Lord GOD to these bones (2), 'Behold, I will cause breath to enter (3) you that you may come to life (4). (1) The Word is the Son of God (Jesus). (2) These are the "spiritual deaths" that we are before our {birth of the Spirit}. (3) It is the Holy Spirit (the Breath of Life of God). (4) It is resurrecting or being born again.
6.	'I will put sinews on you, make flesh grow back on you, cover you with skin and put breath in you that you may come alive; and you will know that I am the LORD.' "
7.	So I prophesied as I was commanded; and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and behold, a rattling; and the bones came together, bone to its bone.
8.	And I looked, and behold, sinews were on them, and flesh grew and skin covered them; but there was no breath in them.
9.	Then He said to me, "Prophecy to the breath, prophecy, son of man, and say to the breath, 'Thus says the Lord GOD, "Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe on these slain, that they come to life." (*) Of the last 4 verses.

	A) We see the connection with the (miracle of Lazarus's return to life) by Jesus. B) We also see the link of the promise of the resurrection with Christ.
10.	So I prophesied as He commanded me, and the breath came into them, and they came to life and stood on their feet, an exceedingly great army. (1) They were so numerous that they were roped like an army.
11.	Then He said to me, "Son of man, these bones are the whole house of Israel (1); behold, they say, 'Our bones are dried up and our hope has perished. We are completely cut off.' (2) 1) We can make the connection with Christians even now. (2) God is the only hope of Life.
13.	"Then you will know that I am the LORD (Yahweh), when I have opened your graves and caused you to come up out of your graves, My people.
14.	"I will put My Spirit within you and you will come to life (1), and I will place you on your own land. Then you will know that I, the LORD, have spoken and done it (2)," declares the LORD.' "
	(1) It is God's promise to live eternally with him. (2) God always keeps his promises. The {birth of the Spirit} is still available even after 2,000 years.

| 22-E | The source of the Temple

I report an excerpt from the prophet Ezekiel, chapter 47 of the Bible (New American Standard).

Ezekiel 47. The source of the Temple.

1.	Then he (1) brought me (2) back to the door of the house (Temple) (3); and behold, water (4) was flowing from under the threshold of the house (Temple) toward the east, for the house (Temple) faced east. And the water was flowing down from under, from the right side (5) «of the house (Temple), from south of the altar. (1) God. (2) Ezekiel. (3) The Temple is the Son of God (Jesus). In the Jerusalem Bible, the word used is Temple (house). (4) On earth, water is recognized as a purifying and invigorating source. Here this water represents the Holy Spirit, Purifying Source and Source of Eternal Life. This is the promise obtained from the Father through the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross. (5) During the crucifixion, Jesus was pierced on the right side by a spear and water came out of it.
2.	He brought me out by way of the north gate and led me around on the outside to the outer gate by way of <i>the gate</i> that faces east. And behold, water was trickling from the south side.
3.	When the man went out toward the east with a line in his hand, he measured a thousand cubits, and he led me through the water, water <i>reaching</i> the ankles. (*) Here, Ezekiel finds that there is little water near the source, the Temple.
4.	Again he measured a thousand and led me through the water, water <i>reaching</i> the knees. Again he measured a thousand and led me through <i>the water</i> , water <i>reaching</i> the loins.
5.	Again he measured a thousand; <i>and it was</i> a river that I could not ford, for the water had risen, <i>enough</i> water to swim in, a river that could not be forded. (*) Of the last 3 verses. I point out that as Ezekiel moves away from the Temple, the river (water) increases. In nature, we logically know that there cannot be more water after the source. So where does this increase come from? Jesus will give the explanation in (St-John: 12,24), "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless a grain of wheat falls into the earth and dies, it remains alone; but if it dies, it bears much fruit." Here, it is the comparison with the sacrifice of one (Jesus) who gives Eternal Life for every saved human being. Then from the little water of the Temple (here, Jesus), many will be saved around the world (here, a river). It is also the meaning of the multiplication of the loaves in (St-John: 6). Jesus is the little piece of living bread that is offered and whose life is multiplied for all those who will be saved.
6.	He said to me, "Son of man, have you seen <i>this</i> ?" Then he brought me back to the bank of the river.
7.	Now when I had returned, behold, on the bank of the river there <i>were</i> very many trees on the one side and on the other.

	(*) This water given by Jesus gives Life.
8.	Then he said to me, "These waters go out toward the eastern region and go down into the Arabah; then they go toward the sea (1), being made to flow into the sea, and the waters <i>of the sea</i> become fresh.
	(1) It is the Dead Sea that contains no life. It represents all peoples apart from the people of Israel, therefore the Gentiles who do not know God. God will extend the 2nd Covenant to every human being who desires it on earth.
9.	"It will come about that every living creature which swarms in every place where the river goes, will live. And there will be very many fish, for these waters go there and <i>the others</i> become fresh; so everything will live where the river goes.
	(*) It is evangelization throughout the world.
10.	"And it will come about that fishermen (1) will stand beside it; from Engedi to Eneglaim there will be a place for the spreading of nets. Their fish will be according to their kinds, like the fish of the Great Sea, very many.
	(1) St-Peter was called by Jesus: "a fisherman of men."
11.	"But its swamps and marshes will not become fresh; they will be left for salt.
	(*) It is the human beings who will not have taken the Way of Jesus and who will not have brought into them "the water of life of God" (the Holy Spirit). For them, there is nothing after death in the ground.
12.	"By the river on its bank, on one side and on the other, will grow all <i>kinds of</i> trees for food. Their leaves will not wither and their fruit will not fail. They will bear every month because their water flows from the sanctuary (Temple), and their fruit will be for food and their leaves for healing."
	(*) This "water of life" is the Holy Spirit who heals from death and gives Eternal Life. Jesus gives the explanation in (St-John: 4,14): "but whoever drinks of the water that I (Jesus) will give him shall never thirst; but the water that I will give him will become in him a well of water springing up to eternal life."

↑ (Essential articles)	They are necessary for understanding the next chapter.
↓ (Optional articles)	They give additional information.

| 22-F | Satire on the death of a tyrant

I report an excerpt from the prophet Isaiah, chapter 14 of the Bible (New American Standard).

This text is one of those used by the early Christians to define the origin of the devil. The devil is seen as an angel from the heavens (Lucifer) who rebelled against God and who was cast down into hell (under the ground). See article |18-A|.

Isaiah 14. Satire on the death of a tyrant.

3.	And it will be in the day when the LORD gives you rest from your pain and turmoil and harsh service in which you have been enslaved,
4.	that you will take up this taunt (satire) (1) against the king of Babylon (2), and say, "How the oppressor (tyrant) (3) has ceased, And how fury has ceased!
	(1) A satire is an exaggerated poem about the wickedness of a person to show his madness. (2) Here the wicked person is the king of Babylon. (3) The satire begins with the arrogance of the king and ends with his death in hell with the devil.
5.	"The LORD (1) has broken the staff of the wicked (2), The scepter of rulers (3)
	(1) Here, Yahweh (LORD) is the name of God. (2) The bad guys kick people. (3) This staff of torture is the scepter of the king of Babylon.
6.	Which (1) used to strike the peoples in fury with unceasing strokes, Which subdued the nations in anger with unrestrained persecution.
	(1) The king of Babylon
7.	"The whole earth is at rest and is quiet; They break forth into shouts of joy.
	(*) The king of Babylon is dead now, evil is over.
8.	"Even the cypress trees rejoice over you, and the cedars of Lebanon, saying, 'Since you were laid low, no tree cutter comes up against us.'

	(*) Even the trees are happy with the death of the king, because he also devastated the forests.
9.	"Sheol (1) from beneath is excited over you to meet you when you come; It arouses for you the spirits of the dead (2), all the leaders of the earth; It raises all the kings of the nations from their thrones.
	(1) The Sheol (under the ground) had 4 depths. The deepest was the abyss where the devil and his demons resided. (2) The demons of the abyss (hell) were eager to meet the king.
10.	"They will all respond and say to you, 'Even you have been made weak as we, You have become like us.
	(*) The king is a demon now like the others.
11.	'Your pomp (1) and the music of your harps Have been brought down to Sheol; Maggots are spread out as your bed beneath you And worms are your covering.' (2)
	(1) The king with all his splendor. (2) The king's body is decomposing in the ground.
12.	"How you have fallen from heaven (1), O star (2) of the morning, son of the dawn (3)! You have been cut down to the earth, You who have weakened the nations (4)!
	(1) This time, the king is compared to the devil who is a fallen angel whom God has brought down from the heavens (the sky). (2) Angels have sometimes been compared to the stars in the sky. (3) Here, we are talking about the biggest star. The devil was the greatest angel in the heavens, his name was Lucifer. (4) Here, the comparison comes back to the king who is the conqueror of human nations.
13.	"But you (1) said in your heart, 'I will ascend to heaven (2); I will raise my throne (3) above the stars of God, And I will sit on the mount of assembly In the recesses of the north. (4)
	(*) Here, the comparison continues between the king and the devil. (1) Lucifer. (2) The heavens were the abode of angels. (3) Lucifer wanted to go to the Most High to take the Throne of God. (4) This verse is like the narrative of the Tower of Babel. The human had tried to make himself equal to God just as Lucifer had tried it before him.
14.	'I (1) will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will make myself like the Most High.' (2)
15.	"Nevertheless you (1) will be thrust down to Sheol (3), To the recesses of the pit.
	(1) Lucifer. (2) God. (3) The Sheol (under the ground) had 4 depths. The deepest was the abyss where the devil and his demons resided.
16.	"Those who see you will gaze at you, They will ponder over you, saying, 'Is this the man who made the earth tremble, Who shook kingdoms,
	(*) Here we return to the king.
17.	Who made the world like a wilderness And overthrew its cities, Who did not allow his prisoners to go home?'
	(*) All the evil that the king did.
18.	"All the kings of the nations lie in glory, Each in his own tomb.
	(*) Each one resides where he deserves.
19.	"But you (1) have been cast out of your tomb (2) Like a rejected branch, Clothed with the slain who are pierced with a sword, Who go down to the stones of the pit Like a trampled corpse.
	(1) The king of Babylon. (2) For the Jews, the righteous man rested in a tomb so that his body would not be defiled. On the other hand, the miscreant was left on the battlefield or put in a dump. The "Gehenna of fire" that Jesus spoke of was a dump where sulfur was inserted to make it burn better, hence the smell given to hell.
20.	"You will not be united with them in burial (1), Because you have ruined your country, You have slain your people. May the offspring of evildoers not be mentioned forever.
	(1) The king is not a righteous man, so he has not been put to the tomb.

| 22-G | The fall of the king of Tyre

I report here an excerpt from the prophet Ezekiel, chapter 28 of the Bible (New American Standard).

This text is one of those used by the early Christians to define the origin of the devil. The devil is seen as an angel from the heavens (Lucifer) who rebelled against God and who was cast down into hell (under the ground). See article | 18-A |.

Ezekiel 28. The fall of the king of Tyre.

11.	Again the word of the LORD came to me saying,
12.	"Son of man (1), take up a lamentation (2) over the king of Tyre (3) and say to him, `Thus says the Lord GOD, "You had (4) the seal of perfection, Full of wisdom and perfect in beauty.
	(1) God calls the prophet, "Son of man." Jesus being the Word of God, he will use this same expression to say that he is the Messiah expected by the people. (2) A lament is like a satire, an exaggeration. See article 22-F . (3) The king of Tyre will be compared to the devil or to Lucifer. (4) Lucifer was an angel of great value in the eyes of God.
13.	"You (1) were in Eden, the garden of God; Every precious stone was your covering (2): The ruby, the topaz and the diamond; The beryl, the onyx and the jasper; The lapis lazuli, the turquoise and the emerald; And the gold, the workmanship of your settings and sockets, Was in you. On the day that you were created They were prepared (3).
	(1) Lucifer took the form of the serpent (snake) in the Garden of Eden to tempt Eve. (2) Here, the beauty of the serpent's mantle is compared to the beauty of the angel Lucifer. You only have to look at photos of the most colorful snakes in the sun and you will see as little gems set in his skin and golden lines around. (3) All this beauty is the work of the Creator (God).
14.	"You were the anointed cherub (1) who covers, And I placed you there. You were on the holy mountain of God; You walked in the midst of the stones of fire (2).
	(1) Lucifer in the heavens was one of the most beautiful and greatest angels. (2) God has cherished Lucifer more than all the other angels by placing Lucifer closest to the Throne of God.
15.	"You were blameless in your ways From the day you were created Until unrighteousness was found in you. (1)
16.	"By the abundance of your trade You were internally filled with violence, And you sinned (2); Therefore I have cast you as profane From the mountain of God. And I have destroyed you (3), O covering cherub, From the midst of the stones of fire.
	(1) Lucifer did evil by tempting Eve. (2) Lucifer rebelled against God to take his Throne. (3) God made Lucifer (fallen) and hurled him down from the heavens.
17.	"Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty; You corrupted your wisdom by reason of your splendor (1). I cast you to the ground (2); I put you before kings, That they may see you.
	(1) Lucifer by his vanity thought himself greater than God. (2) No creature equals its Creator.
18.	"By the multitude of your iniquities, In the unrighteousness of your trade You profaned your sanctuaries (1). Therefore I have brought fire from the midst of you; It has consumed you (2), And I have turned you to ashes on the earth (3) In the eyes of all who (4) see you.
	(1) Here, it is to do evil. (2) The fire of hell consumed Lucifer. (3) It is through the ashes of Lucifer spread into the ground that death has come on earth. (4) The other angels of the heavens.
19.	"All who know you among the peoples Are appalled at you; You have become terrified (1) And you will cease to be forever (2)."
	(1) Lucifer became the Terror, the devil. (2) The devil can no longer be redeemed by God. He is fallen forever. He resides in hell for eternity.

| 23 | The New Testament, the Gospel of St-John

This chapter aims to remove as much as possible the mystery in the Gospel of St-John. It does not have the function of explaining the Gospel verse by verse, but of choosing only the mysterious verses and explaining them as simply as possible. If the same mystery is repeated even further in the text, then I put only small indications or I let you think for yourself.

The Gospel of St-John is really different from the 3 others. It is a Gospel that focuses on the mystery of God (Father, Son, Holy Spirit). It is a Gospel of revelation and not of conversion like the 3 others. This mystery, St-Paul gives additional details in his Epistles.

A) Here is a small map of the Gospels similar to article | 19-B |.

Jesus says in (St-John: 3,5), "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit, no one can enter the Kingdom of God."

Generally:

1) The Gospels of St-Matthew, St-Luke and St-Mark focus on the human reality of "to be born of water." The Gospel of St-Matthew will be presented in chapter | 24 |.

2) The Gospel of St-John focuses on the mystery of "to be born of the Spirit." It is presented in this chapter | 23 |.

B) Summary of the great steps of "to be born of water" and "to be born of the Spirit."

See chapter | 12 |.

The "to be born of water":

1) Awareness of the evil we do. 2) Repentance or deep regret. 3) The desire to change our human life in truth and goodness only. 4) The practice of this kindness and truth in everyday life. In one sentence, "to be born of water" is: "the conversion of a bad human being into a good human being."

In short, the person chooses to do good, to learn and **to follow concretely** the Word of Jesus (the Gospels).

The Holy Spirit can perform miracles following a prayer or even without any request. Miracles, healings and wonders are made by God to increase the person's faith so that he asks himself the question if God is really there. The person is always free to believe or not in the wonders he has experienced. At the time of Jesus, many Pharisees did not want to recognize the wonders that Jesus performed, because they would have lost their precious power.

The "to be born of the Spirit":

5) One must first fulfill one's promises of "to be born of water." In this Way, sooner or later, the person will feel the need to get help from God, because doing good on earth is not easy! 6) The person must seek God and conclude that he really exists because nature exists.

7) Then the Holy Spirit intervenes and allows him to "truly believe in God." The person now believes in God as much as in the presence of his nose in his face. 8) By mirror effect, the idea of the devil will then appear naturally in the consciousness of the person.

9) Thereafter, the Holy Spirit will give **psychological help** to the person. It will not be tangible Manifestations. It will only be (feelings in the person) that will appear as he progresses. 10) The person will discover that he is mortal and that he does not deserve the Forgiveness and the Eternal Life that Jesus can offer him. Without God, it is death... so the thought of the psychic actor appears "the devil." 11). The person must then make a choice, put his full trust in God or not. It will require humility. Afterwards, to be successful, the person conscientiously asks God to help him lead his life because he does not feel able to do it alone. In one sentence, the person gives his life to God.

If all the steps are done **correctly**, the Holy Spirit (the Breath of God's Life) will actually manifest himself in the coming days. It took me about 3 days.

12) There is then a union between the life of the person and the Eternal Life of God, this is the {birth of the Spirit}. The person becomes a {God's child} and an heir to the Kingdom of God. Afterwards, God helps his {child} on earth.

Note:

It is important to understand that you cannot go over the steps. If you are in step 3) and want to go directly to step 11)... well, it will not work. The Lord never burns the steps, you must be 100% ready.

You surely think that all these steps are not nothing! You are right. But Eternal Life is not nothing too! To have Eternal Life is a choice, it is a divine Reward, it must be longed for.

In the next articles of this chapter:

These are excerpts from the Bible (New American Standard). See article |O-H|. They come from the website: http://www.lexilogos.com/bible_multilingue.htm The explanations I give are in parentheses () below the verses.

|23-A| St-John 1. Prologue

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 1 of the Bible (New American Standard).

1.	In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.
2.	He was in the beginning with God.
3.	All things came into being through Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being.
	(*) Of the last 3 verses. (1) The Son of God (Jesus) is the Word or the Word of God. (2) The Son has always existed because he is one of the 3 Persons of the Holy Trinity (Father, Son, Holy Spirit). (3) At the beginning of Genesis (Old Testament), it is the Son who Pronounces creation.
4.	In Him was life, and the life was the Light of men.
	(1) The Son of God is the Way that leads to Life.
5.	The Light (1) shines in the darkness (2), and the darkness did not comprehend it (3).
	(1) The Son of God gives generously. (2) Our human world of wickedness. (3) Humans crucified the Son of God (Jesus) on the cross.
6.	There came a man sent from God, whose name was John.
7.	He came as a witness, to testify about the Light, so that all might believe through him.
8.	He was not the Light, but <i>he came</i> to testify about the Light.
	(*) The prophet John the Baptist did a preparatory work on the people before Jesus began his mission.
9.	There was the true Light which, coming into the world, enlightens every man.
	(*) The Son of God was incarnated (Jesus) on earth by the Power of the Holy Spirit and was carried by the Blessed Virgin Mary.
10.	He was in the world, and the world was made through Him, and the world did not know Him.
	(*) Although the Word (Jesus) has Pronounced creation, the human does not want to recognize his Creator.
11.	He came to His own, and those who were His own did not receive Him.
	(*) Jesus will say, "No one is a prophet in his own country!"
12.	But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become children of God, <i>even</i> to those who believe in His name,
	(*) A person who follows the Way of Jesus receives the {birth of the Spirit}. This makes him a {God's child}.
13.	who were born, not of blood nor of the will of the flesh nor of the will of man, but of God.
14.	And the Word became flesh (1), and dwelt among us, and we saw His glory, glory (2) as of the only begotten from the Father, full of grace and truth.

	(1) The Incarnation of the Son of God on earth in human form (Jesus) was made by the Will of the Father and the Action of the Holy Spirit and not by human reproduction. (2) The apostles testify that Jesus is really the Son of God. They saw the Apparitions of the Risen Jesus.
15.	John testified about Him and cried out, saying, "This was He of whom I said, 'He who comes after me has a higher rank than I, for He existed before me.' "
	(*) The prophet John the Baptist also testifies that Jesus is really the Son of God.
16.	For of His fullness we have all received (1), and grace upon grace (2).
	(1) The apostles were filled with the Holy Spirit at the day of Pentecost. (2) God is very generous with his gifts.
17.	For the Law was given through Moses (1); grace and truth were realized through Jesus Christ (2).
	(1) The 2 stone Tables of the 10 Commandments given by God to Moses (Exodus). (2) By the Word of God (Jesus) and the Holy Spirit, the Law of God passes from the stone to the heart of the human being.
18.	No one has seen God at any time; the only begotten God who is in the bosom of the Father, He has explained <i>Him</i> .
	(*) See chapter 10 .

|23-B| St-John 1. The testimony of John

24.	Now they had been sent from the Pharisees.
25.	They asked him, and said to him (1), "Why then are you baptizing, if you are not the Christ (2), nor Elijah, nor the Prophet?" (3)
	(1) Here, it is the prophet John the Baptist who announced the coming of the Messiah. (2) The word Christ means that he has received the Anointing of the Spirit of the Father . This is the Messiah that the Jews were expecting. It is for this reason that Jesus of Nazareth is called Jesus Christ. On the other hand, when a person receives the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, it is the anointing of the Spirit of Jesus . This is the anointing that is described in (1st Epistle of St-John: 2,27). When a person receives this anointing of the Spirit of Jesus, he receives the title of {God's child}. It is only after the real attainment of this anointing that Jesus allows the person to teach in his name as I do in this book. During the history of Christianity, many religious people have taught Christianity by imagining that the anointing of the Spirit of Jesus does not feel in them (for real). They just did not have it to guide them in their work! Then, Christianity was spread away from the Gospels as shown in article 2-B . Christianity began to be free of expression only since the 1960s. Then the {God's children}, too few and without any power, never had a say in redressing the situation. That is why this book. To know how this anointing occurs concretely, see article 13-D . (3) Elijah was a great prophet. The Scriptures of the Jews awaited the return of a prophet like him. This was realized by the prophet John the Baptist.
26.	John answered them saying, "I baptize in water, <i>but</i> among you stands One whom you do not know.
	(*) John the Baptist baptizes in the water. Water represents human purification. This baptism is a mark of repentance for one's faults (sins). The baptism of water is accomplished by the conversion of the heart of the person (on the Way of Christ), not by a ritual.
27.	" <i>It is</i> He who comes after me, the thong of whose sandal I am not worthy to untie."
28.	These things took place in Bethany beyond the Jordan, where John was baptizing.
29.	The next day he saw Jesus coming to him and said, "Behold, the Lamb of God (1) who takes away the sin of the world!
	(1) Here, it is Jesus who sacrificed his life on the cross for the Forgiveness of the sins of those who will be saved and not for the whole world. The word "world" in this verse means that this Forgiveness can be offered to any human being who follows the Way of Christ.
30.	"This is He on behalf of whom I said, 'After me comes a Man who has a higher rank than I, for He existed before me.'

	(*) John the Baptist says that Jesus (not as a human being, but as the Son of God) has always existed.
31.	"I did not recognize Him, but so that He might be manifested to Israel, I came baptizing in water."
32.	John testified saying, "I have seen the Spirit descending (1) as a dove out of heaven, and He remained upon Him.
	(1) Jesus was Anointed by the Spirit of the Father to be the Messiah (Savior).
33.	"I did not recognize Him, but He (1) who sent me to baptize in water said to me, 'He upon whom you see the Spirit descending and remaining upon Him, this is the One who baptizes in the Holy Spirit.' (2)
	(1) God.
	(2) Here, we see clearly that it is Jesus who baptizes in the Holy Spirit and not religious people. See article 3-E .
49.	Nathanael answered Him, "Rabbi, You are the Son of God; You are the King of Israel."
50.	Jesus answered and said to him, "Because I said to you that I saw you under the fig tree, do you believe? You will see greater things than these."
51.	And He said to him, "Truly, truly, I say to you, you will see the heavens opened and the angels of God ascending and descending on the Son of Man."
	(1) Here, Jesus already announced his Ascension at the end of his mission on earth. See (Acts of the Apostles: 1,9-11).

| 23-C | St-John 2. The wedding in Cana/Stay in Jerusalem

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 2 of the Bible (New American Standard).

1.	On the third day there was a wedding in Cana of Galilee, and the mother of Jesus was there;
2.	and both Jesus and His disciples were invited to the wedding.
3.	When the wine ran out, the mother of Jesus said to Him, "They have no wine."
4.	And Jesus said to her, "Woman, what does that have to do with us? My hour has not yet come."
	(*) Here, this text is quite hard on the part of a son for his mother. But that is not the meaning, because Jesus obviously loved his mother. The text stresses that Jesus is only under the authority of God the Father. No human being has authority over him, even his mother.
11.	This beginning of <i>His</i> signs Jesus did in Cana of Galilee, and manifested His glory, and His disciples believed in Him.
12.	After this He went down to Capernaum, He and His mother and <i>His</i> brothers (1) and His disciples; and they stayed there a few days.
	(1) The hypothesis adopted by the footnote of the (1977 Jerusalem Bible of Editions du Cerf) is that "his brothers" were actually his cousins. I see another possibility. At that time, we know that every married woman had children to get help in the house. Likewise, every married man had children to get help in his work and to ensure the survival of his family. Here, as Mary had only one son (Jesus) whose mission will not be (to take care of his parents), it is very likely that Mary and Joseph adopted orphans to found a larger family and necessary to its maintenance. Thinking about it, with the Roman soldiers, it certainly should not miss orphans among the Jews...
24.	But Jesus, on His part, was not entrusting Himself to them, for He knew all men,
25.	and because He did not need anyone to testify concerning man, for He Himself knew what was in man.
	(*) Jesus knows that the bottom of the human is not pure, because the human commits evil easily.

| 23-D | Let's look at how to enter the Kingdom of God

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 3 of the Bible (New American Standard).

St-John 3. The interview with Nicodemus.

1.	Now there was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews;
2.	this man came to Jesus by night and said to Him, "Rabbi, we know that You have come from God <i>as</i> a teacher; for no one can do these signs that You do unless God is with him."
	(*) Only God can perform miracles.
3.	Jesus answered and said to him, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born again (1) he cannot see the kingdom of God."
	(1) In the Jerusalem Bible it is stated: "to be born from above." (*) Jesus says that to go to a world, one must first be born there. The Son of God had to be born humanly on earth (our world) to teach humans. So to go to Heaven, you have to (be born from above) too.
4.	Nicodemus said to Him, "How can a man be born when he is old? He cannot enter a second time into his mother's womb and be born, can he?"
5.	Jesus answered, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water (1) and the Spirit (2) he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.
	(1) This is repentance and conversion of the heart that is associated with John Baptist's baptism of water. (2) This is the {birth of the Spirit} given by Jesus.
6.	"That which is born of the flesh is flesh (1), and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit (2).
	(1) What is born of the human being is a (mortal human's child). (2) What is born of the Spirit (God) is spirit, a (God's child). Following the example of Jesus, as one must be born humanly to come into our human world. It is also necessary to be born spiritually to enter the Kingdom of the spirits/Spirit.
7.	"Do not be amazed that I said to you, 'You must (1) be born again.' (2)
	(1) This {birth of the Spirit} is obligatory. (2) In the Jerusalem Bible it is stated: "to be born from above."
8.	"The wind blows where it wishes and you hear the sound of it, but do not know where it comes from and where it is going; so is everyone who is born of the Spirit."
	(*) The person born of the Spirit (the Breath of Life) is released from death.
9.	Nicodemus said to Him, "How can these things be?"
10.	Jesus answered and said to him, "Are you the teacher of Israel and do not understand these things?
11.	"Truly, truly, I say to you, we (1) speak of what we know and testify of what we have seen, and you (2) do not accept our testimony.
	(1) The Son and the Father. (2) The human.
12.	"If I told you earthly (1) things and you do not believe, how will you believe if I tell you heavenly things?
	(1) Jesus states that this {birth of the Spirit} is well on earth.
13.	"No one has ascended into heaven, but He who descended from heaven: the Son of Man.
	(1) Only Jesus, the Son of God, has seen the Kingdom of God.
14.	"As Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness (1), even so must the Son of Man be lifted up (2);
	(1) Moses had lifted up a bronze serpent, so that whoever is bitten by a serpent (snake) in the wilderness should be healed from death by looking at that bronze serpent with faith in God. (2) In the same way, every human being is healed of his mortal condition by looking at Jesus on the cross with faith in God.
15.	so that whoever believes will in Him have eternal life.
	(*) The famous word "believe" of St-John does not mean "to think," but to do everything it takes to have his {birth of the Spirit}.

16.	"For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him shall not perish, but have eternal life.
17.	"For God did not send the Son into the world to judge (1) the world, but that the world might be saved (2) through Him.
	(1) The Son does not judge anyone to die on earth, because it is already the biological condition of the human. (2) The Son has the mission to Save those who follow his Way.
18.	"He who believes in Him is not judged (1); he who does not believe has been judged already (2), because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.
	(1) Whoever follows the Way of Jesus will have his {birth of the Spirit}. (2) Whoever does not follow the Way of Jesus will not go further than the earth from which he was born.
19.	"This is the judgment, that the Light has come into the world, and men loved the darkness rather than the Light, for their deeds were evil.
20.	"For everyone who does evil hates the Light, and does not come to the Light for fear that his deeds (1) will be exposed.
21.	"But he who practices the truth comes to the Light (2), so that his deeds may be manifested as having been wrought in God."
	(1) The Last Judgment is on earth now on the basis of what we do. See chapter 29 . (2) During the {birth of the Spirit}, we see the Light enter into us , see article 13-D .

|23-E| St-John 3. Ultimate testimony of John

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 3 of the Bible (New American Standard).

31.	"He who comes from above (1) is above all, he who is of the earth is from the earth (2) and speaks of the earth. He who comes from heaven is above all.
	(1) Jesus, the Son of God, comes from heaven and speaks of heavenly things. (2) Humans are of the earth and speak of things of the earth.
32.	"What He has seen and heard, of that He testifies; and no one receives His testimony.
	(*) For humans, Jesus is often mistaken for a madman.
33.	"He who has received His testimony (1) has set his seal to <i>this</i> , that God is true.
	(1) These are the apostles and all who have had their {birth of the Spirit} like them.
34.	"For He whom God has sent speaks the words of God; for He gives the Spirit without measure.
	(*) It is Jesus the Word of God who makes the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.
35.	"The Father loves the Son and has given all things into His hand.
	(*) It is Jesus who has all the powers.
36.	"He who believes in the Son has eternal life; but he who does not obey the Son will not see life, but the wrath of God (1) abides on him."
	(1) It is the biological human condition to die in the ground.

| 23-F | St-John 4. The revelation of the Savior of the world to the Samaritans

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 4 of the Bible (New American Standard).

10.	Jesus answered and said to her, "If you knew the gift of God, and who it is who says to you, 'Give Me a drink,' you would have asked Him, and He would have given you living water."
11.	She said to Him, "Sir, You have nothing to draw with and the well is deep; where then do You get that living water?"
13.	Jesus answered and said to her, "Everyone who drinks of this water will thirst again; (*) The human being is mortal like everything on earth.
14.	but whoever drinks of the water that I will give him shall never thirst; but the water that I will give him will become in him a well of water springing up to eternal life." (*) The living water is the Holy Spirit.
21.	Jesus said to her, "Woman, believe Me, an hour is coming when neither in this mountain nor in Jerusalem will you worship the Father. (*) A person can pray from home, because God is everywhere.
23.	"But an hour is coming, and now is, when the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth; for such people the Father seeks to be His worshipers. (*) God does not want a human religion with objects and rituals. God wants to be in relationship with a person. It is through the {gift of the Holy Spirit} that this relationship of (Father to child) will be established.
24.	"God is spirit (1), and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth (2)." (1) God Presents himself as a Wind (Spirit). (2) A person must seek the {gift of the Holy Spirit} to pray better.
36.	"Already he who reaps (2) is receiving wages and is gathering fruit (3) for life eternal; so that he who sows (1) and he who reaps may rejoice together. (*) Earth is like a garden whose workers are the Father and the Son. (1) The Father once created the garden and sowed the human. Jesus says that the Father is the Sower. (2) Through his Word, the Son makes the human mature. (3) Through the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, Jesus allows a human being to become a {God's child}. Jesus then calls himself the Harvester (Reaper) for Eternal Life.
47.	When he heard that Jesus had come out of Judea into Galilee, he went to Him and was imploring <i>Him</i> to come down and heal his son; for he was at the point of death.
48.	So Jesus said to him, "Unless you <i>people</i> see signs and wonders, you <i>simply</i> will not believe." (*) The human is very incredulous, he needs great evidence to believe in God. It is for this reason that the first part of this book is to prove that God really exists. See chapters 5 and 6 .

|23-G| St-John 5. Speech on the work of the Son

This article is related to articles |22-B| and |22-D|.

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 5 of the Bible (New American Standard).

19.	Therefore Jesus answered and was saying to them, "Truly, truly, I say to you, the Son can do nothing of Himself, unless <i>it is</i> something He sees the Father doing; for whatever the Father does, these things the Son also does in like manner.
20.	"For the Father loves the Son, and shows Him all things that He Himself is doing; and <i>the Father</i> will show Him greater works than these, so that you will marvel.
21.	"For just as the Father raises the dead and gives them life, even so the Son also gives life to whom He wishes.
	(*) This is related to article 22-D of the prophet Ezekiel.
22.	"For not even the Father judges anyone, but He has given all judgment to the Son,
	(*) The Last Judgment belongs to the Son, for he is the Word by whom the Father pronounces it.
23.	so that all will honor the Son even as they honor the Father. He who does not honor the Son does not honor the Father who sent Him.
24.	"Truly, truly, I say to you, he who hears My word, and believes Him who sent Me, has eternal life, and does not come into judgment, but has passed out of death into life.
25.	"Truly, truly, I say to you, an hour is coming and now is, when the dead will hear the voice of the Son of God, and those who hear will live.
	(*) These last 2 verses are directly related to article 22-D of the prophet Ezekiel.
26.	"For just as the Father has life in Himself, even so He gave to the Son also to have life in Himself;
	(*) It is the Breath of Eternal Life of God (the Holy Spirit).
27.	and He gave Him authority to execute judgment, because He is <i>the</i> Son of Man.
	(*) Jesus calls himself the King who was to come into the world. See article 22-B of the prophet Ezekiel.
28.	"Do not marvel at this; for an hour is coming, in which all who are in the tombs (1) will hear His voice,
	(1) This is directly related to article 22-D of the prophet Ezekiel.
29.	and will come forth; those who did the good <i>deeds</i> to a resurrection of life, those who committed the evil <i>deeds</i> to a resurrection of judgment.
	(*) This verse will be clarified in article 29-B .
30.	"I can do nothing on My own initiative. As I hear, I judge; and My judgment is just, because I do not seek My own will, but the will of Him who sent Me.
	(*) The Last Judgment belongs to the Son, for he is the Word by whom the Father pronounces it.
31.	"If I <i>alone</i> testify about Myself, My testimony is not true.
36.	"But the testimony which I have is greater than <i>the testimony of</i> John; for the works which the Father has given Me to accomplish--the very works that I do--testify about Me, that the Father has sent Me.
	(*) These are all the healings, miracles and wonders that Jesus does.
37.	"And the Father who sent Me, He has testified of Me. You have neither heard His voice at any time nor seen His form.
	(*) In the book of Exodus (Moses), it is the Son of God who speaks through the miracle of the Burning Bush.
38.	"You do not have His word (1) abiding in you, for you do not believe Him (1) whom He (2) sent.
	(1) The Word is the Son of God (Jesus). (2) God the Father.
39.	"You search the Scriptures because you think that in them you have eternal life; it is these that testify about Me;
	(*) Jesus is the Word, He is the Inspiration of the Scriptures (the Bible). Since the chief priests did not believe in Jesus, they did not believe in the Scriptures they had in their hands.
41.	"I do not receive glory from men;
43.	"I have come in My Father's name, and you do not receive Me; if another comes in his own name, you will receive him.
44.	"How can you believe, when you receive glory from one another and you do not seek the glory that is from the <i>one and only</i> God?

(*) Of the last 3 verses.

That is why this book will disturb many people! Do people want human benefits for themselves or seek the Truth? Each one his inheritance, the earth (mortal) or the Heaven (Eternal).

|23-H| St-John 6. Speech in the synagogue of Capernaum

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 6 of the Bible (New American Standard).

25.	When they found Him on the other side of the sea, they said to Him, "Rabbi, when did You get here?"
26.	Jesus answered them and said, "Truly, truly, I say to you, you seek Me, not because you saw signs (2), but because you ate of the loaves and were filled (1).
	(1) Here is a great message of Jesus for all Christians. People pray to God for work or physical healings. They run around the world where there were once miracles to have the chance to be healed as well. They are like the people that Jesus is speaking here who have eaten bread, but who do not want to go further in their approach... (2) Jesus makes signs (miracles) not to physically heal people, but to give them the faith necessary to receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit} who heals from death! The Way of Jesus is not made to heal the human body, but to obtain the Kingdom of God. Jesus said, "It is the spirit that gives life, the flesh is of no use." For God, the physical body he has given us is only a time-limited form of life in order to make our choice. A) God for Life. B) Or, our own way for the time remaining on earth.
27.	"Do not work for the food which perishes, but for the food which endures to eternal life, which the Son of Man (1) will give to you, for on Him the Father, God, has set His seal." (2)
	(1) Jesus said, "Start by looking for the realities from above, and the other things on earth will be given to you in addition." (2) The seal of the Father is the Anointing that enables Jesus to be the Christ (Messiah, Savior). See article 23-B .
35.	Jesus said to them, "I am the bread of life; he who comes to Me will not hunger, and he who believes in Me will never thirst.
	(*) Jesus is the Way, the Truth and the Life.
36.	"But I said to you that you have seen Me, and yet do not believe.
	(*) People even today are very incredulous.
37.	"All that the Father gives Me will come to Me (1), and the one who comes to Me I will certainly not cast out (2).
	(1) The Father is the Sower. (2) The Son is the Harvester (Reaper).
38.	"For I have come down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will of Him who sent Me.
39.	"This is the will of Him who sent Me, that of all that He has given Me (1) I lose nothing, but raise it up on the last day.
	(1) It is those who follow the Way of Jesus.
44.	"No one can come to Me unless the Father who sent Me draws him; and I will raise him up on the last day.
	(*) It is the Father who allows a person "to truly believe in God" in order to allow him to finalize the Way of Jesus.
51.	"I am the living bread that came down out of heaven; if anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever (1); and the bread also which I will give for the life of the world (3) is My flesh (2)."
	(1) The Son of God has the power to give Eternal Life through the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. (2) The sacrifice of the body of Jesus on the cross for the Forgiveness of sins. (3) Any human being who follows the Way of Jesus and not the whole world.
56.	"He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him.
57.	"As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who eats Me, he also will live because of Me.
	(*) Of the last 2 verses. The Holy Spirit is the "Breath of Eternal Life that flows between the Father and the Son" and which God shares with every human being saved by his {birth of the Spirit}.
60.	Therefore many of His disciples, when they heard <i>this</i> said, "This is a difficult statement; who can listen to it?"
66.	As a result of this many of His disciples withdrew and were not walking with Him anymore.

	(*) The Way of Jesus is difficult because it requires listening to the Word, giving up evil and doing good in everyday life. On the other hand, if we thought about it well, without the Existence of God, we would not exist ourselves. So why not recognize the importance of God in our lives?
67.	So Jesus said to the twelve, "You do not want to go away also, do you?"
68.	Simon Peter answered Him, "Lord, to whom shall we go? You have words of eternal life.
69.	"We have believed and have come to know that You are the Holy One of God."
	(*) Jesus is the Son of God, the expected Messiah.

|23-I| St-John 12. Jesus announces his glorification by his death

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 12 of the Bible (New American Standard).

23.	And Jesus answered them, saying, "The hour has come for the Son of Man to be glorified.
	(*) Glorification is the action of the Father in order to "render God" the Son. The mission of the Son was: his Incarnation on earth (Jesus); his teaching; the fulfillment of the Scriptures; the sacrifice of his death; his Resurrection; his Apparitions. After his mission accomplished, Jesus returns to the Father through Ascension. Afterwards, the Father Glorifies Jesus so that he becomes again the Son (the Word of God) that he was before. After his totally fulfilled mission, the Father fulfills the promise made to the Son, the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, and this is the narrative of the day of Pentecost.
24.	"Truly, truly, I say to you, unless a grain of wheat (1) falls (2) into the earth and dies, it remains alone; but if it dies (3), it bears much fruit (4).
	(*) This verse is very short, but very colorful. (1) The Son of God is this grain of wheat from the heavens. (2) The Son "fell" from the heavens on earth due to his Incarnation (Jesus). (3) If Jesus dies on the cross for the Forgiveness of sins. (4) Then, Jesus can give the Breath of Life to those who follow his Way.
25.	"He who loves (2) his life loses it, and he who hates (3) his life in this world (1) will keep it to life eternal.
	(1) For Jesus, our world is bad because it hates Truth and does not want to recognize his Creator. (2) For Jesus, if a person loves his life on earth, it is because he loves doing evil. Then the person will have only this earthly life and not the reward of Eternal Life. (3) For Jesus, the person who loves justice and the Truth will realize that our world rejects him. He will therefore hate his life on earth and turn to God to listen to his Word and receive the reward of Eternal Life.
26.	"If anyone serves Me, he must follow Me (1); and where I am (2), there My servant will be also; if anyone serves Me, the Father will honor him (3).
	(1) Every Christian must follow the Way of Jesus (to make his teachings). (2) Jesus is in the Kingdom of God, so his disciple will be too. (3) Then the Father will send the Holy Spirit to the disciple of Jesus to unite him with Them (Father and Son).
27.	"Now My soul has become troubled; and what shall I say, 'Father, save Me from this hour'? But for this purpose I came to this hour.
28.	"Father, glorify Your name." Then a voice came out of heaven: "I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again."
29.	So the crowd of <i>people</i> who stood by and heard it were saying that it had thundered; others were saying, "An angel has spoken to Him."
30.	Jesus answered and said, "This voice has not come for My sake, but for your sakes.
31.	"Now judgment is upon this world; now the ruler of this world (1) will be cast out.
	(1) The "Ruler of this world" is the evil that the human does and that brings him to his own end (his death in the ground). Jesus, through the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, will allow people who want it to free themselves from death.
32.	"And I, if I am lifted up from the earth (1), will draw all men (2) to Myself."
	(*) Here, Jesus makes an allusion. He is like the bronze serpent who was lifted up (1) in the desert by Moses to heal from death every (2) human being who has faith in God.
33.	But He was saying this to indicate the kind of death by which He was to die.
	(*) The crucifixion.

|23-J| St-John 14. The goodbyes

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 14 of the Bible (New American Standard).

8.	Philip said to Him, "Lord, show us the Father, and it is enough for us."
9.	Jesus said to him, "Have I been so long with you, and yet you have not come to know Me, Philip? He who has seen Me has seen the Father; how <i>can</i> you say, 'Show us the Father'?"
10.	"Do you not believe that I am in the Father, and the Father is in Me? The words that I say to you I do not speak on My own initiative, but the Father abiding in Me does His works."
(*) As mentioned in chapter 10 , the best explanation is: The Father is the Internal of God. He is the Will of God. The Son is the External of God. He is the Word of God. The Holy Spirit is Cohesion or Union between the Internal and the External of God. He is the Breath of God. To communicate, we know that we must always go through an external means (ear, word, etc.). (1) Then, here Philip speaks indeed to the Father (the Internal of God) through the Son (the External of God).	
15.	"If you love Me, you will keep My commandments."
16.	"I (1) will ask the Father, and He will give you another (2) Helper, that He may be with you forever;
(*) Helper (Paraclet) means Intercessor. (1) The first Helper (Paraclete) is the Son of God (Jesus). (2) The other Helper (Paraclete) is the Holy Spirit, the Eternal Breath (with you forever).	
17.	<i>that</i> is the Spirit of truth (1), whom the world cannot receive, because it does not see Him or know Him, <i>but</i> you know Him because He abides (2) with you and will be in you (3).
(1) This is another name for the Holy Spirit. (2) It is rather like the footnote of the Jerusalem Bible, 1977 Editions du Cerf: "who will be in you at the day of Pentecost." (3) It is the anointing of Christ in the chest.	
18.	"I will not leave you as orphans; I will come to you."
(*) The Holy Spirit is the Unity between the Father and the Son. He also unites the people who receive him in them through the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. In this way, the Son returns by the Holy Spirit to his disciples.	
19.	"After a little while the world will no longer see Me, but you <i>will</i> see Me; because I live (1), you will live also. (2)
20.	"In that day you will know that I am in My Father, and you in Me, and I in you. (3)
(1) These are the Apparitions of the Risen Jesus. (2) This is the promise of the resurrection of his disciples. (3) This is the {gift of the Holy Spirit} at the day of Pentecost of the apostles.	
21.	"He who has My commandments and keeps them is the one who loves Me; and he who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and will disclose (1) Myself to him."
(1) The first Manifestation of the Holy Spirit was made grandly at the day of Pentecost of the apostles. Thereafter, it is done individually by the {birth of the Spirit}.	
22.	Judas (not Iscariot) said to Him, "Lord, what then has happened that You are going to disclose Yourself to us and not to the world?"
(*) This is because, to obtain the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, one must follow the Way of Christ. What the world does not do.	
23.	Jesus answered and said to him, "If anyone loves Me, he will keep My word; and My Father will love him, and We will come to him and make Our abode (1) with him."
(1) It is the anointing of Christ in the chest.	
26.	"But the Helper, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all that I said to you."
(*) When a person receives the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, he has the permission of Christ to teach, for his teaching is guided by the Spirit. That is why this book.	
28.	"You heard that I said to you, 'I go away, and I will come to you.' If you loved Me, you would have rejoiced because I go to the Father, for the Father is greater than I."
29.	"Now I have told you before it happens, so that when it happens, you may believe."

	(*) Jesus informs his apostles of the events to come. There will be: his crucifixion, his Resurrection, his Apparitions, his Ascension and then the day of Pentecost.
30.	"I will not speak much more with you, for the ruler (1) of the world is coming, and he has nothing in Me; (2)
	(1) This Ruler is human death. (2) Jesus is the Resurrection. To go further, see chapter 30 .

| 23-K | St-John 16. The coming of the Helper (Holy Spirit)

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 16 of the Bible (New American Standard).

1.	"These things I have spoken to you so that you may be kept from stumbling.
2.	"They will make you outcasts from the synagogue, but an hour is coming for everyone who kills you to think that he is offering service to God.
	(*) Here, there is an allusion to Saul, a Pharisee, who persecuted the early Christians. Glorious Jesus made an Apparition to Saul. Subsequently, he became a Christian under the name of St-Paul. See the book of Acts of the Apostles.
7.	"But I tell you the truth, it is to your advantage that I go away; for if I do not go away, the Helper (1) will not come to you; but if I go, I will send Him to you.
	(1) (The Helper, the Paraclete, the Spirit of Truth or the Holy Spirit) is the reward promised by the Father for the mission of the Son on earth.
8.	"And He, when He comes, will convict the world concerning sin and righteousness and judgment;
	(*) The Holy Spirit allows to discover the Truth.
9.	concerning sin, because they (1) do not believe in Me;
	(1) Many human beings do not take the Way of Jesus.
10.	and concerning righteousness, because I go to the Father and you no longer see Me;
	(*) Jesus will be Glorified by the Father for his mission and will not come back as a human being, but through the Spirit of Truth. "Spirit" being the Breath of God. "Truth" is the name that Jesus gives himself.
11.	and concerning judgment (1), because the ruler (2) of this world has been judged.
	(1) It is Jesus who holds the Last Judgment between the Living (for Heaven) and the dead (in the ground). (2) This is all the evil that humans do and condemn them to death.
12.	"I have many more things to say to you, but you cannot bear <i>them</i> now.
13.	"But when He, the Spirit of truth, comes, He will guide you into all the truth; for He will not speak on His own initiative (1), but whatever He hears (2), He will speak; and He will disclose to you what is to come.
	(1) It is not the Breath (the Holy Spirit) who is the Word but the (Son). (2) The Holy Spirit does not speak, but allows to internalize the Word of God.
14.	"He will glorify Me, for He will take of Mine (1) and will disclose <i>it</i> to you.
	(1) By the {birth of the Spirit}.

|23-L| St-John 17. Prayer

To read this prayer, you must know that in the New Testament, there are many meanings to the word "**world**."

- ° It can designate "all the human beings who do evil."
- ° It can designate "many people."
- ° It can also refer to the world in which we are: "on Earth."

So, you have to interpret the meaning of the verses in order to understand what it is all about...

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 17 of the Bible (New American Standard).

5.	"Now, Father, glorify Me together with Yourself, with the glory which I had with You before the world was. (*) Jesus will become again the (Word of God) or the (Son of God) as before being born on earth.
6.	"I have manifested Your name (1) to the men whom You gave Me out (2) of the world (3); they were Yours and You gave them to Me, and they have kept Your word. (1) God. (2) It is the apostles and all the disciples who believe, listen to the Word and follow the Way of Jesus. (3) Here, it is the world (who do evil).
9.	"I ask on their behalf; I do not ask on behalf of the world (1), but of those whom You have given Me; for they are Yours; (1) Jesus does not pray or intercede for the world (who do evil).
10.	and all things that are Mine are Yours, and Yours are Mine; and I have been glorified in them. (*) God is Holy (without any evil) due to his Unity.
11.	"I am no longer in the world (1); and yet they themselves are in the world (2), and I come to You. Holy Father, keep them in Your name, <i>the name</i> which You have given Me, that they may be one (3) even as We <i>are</i> . (1) Jesus will soon leave the earth. He will be put to death. Later, he will Resurrect, make Apparitions and return to his Father by the Ascension. (2) The disciples will stay on earth. (3) Jesus prays to his Father that his disciples may receive the Holy Spirit who is the link of Unity with God.
12.	"While I was with them, I was keeping them in Your name which You have given Me; and I guarded them and not one of them perished but the son of perdition (1), so that the Scripture would be fulfilled. (1) It was Judas Iscariot who betrayed Jesus.
13.	"But now I come to You; and these things I speak in the world so that they may have My joy (1) made full in themselves. (1) Complete joy is felt at the {birth of the Spirit}. See article 13-D .
14.	"I have given them Your word; and the world has hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. (*) Here, it is the world (who do evil).
15.	"I do not ask You to take them out of the world (1), but to keep them from the evil <i>one</i> (2). (1) Jesus says that the apostles will remain on earth. (2) This time, Jesus specifies the meaning.
17.	"Sanctify them in the truth; Your word is truth. (*) To sanctify is the verb "to make holy." "Truth" is another name for Jesus. Jesus is Holy by the Bond of Unity to his Father. The apostles will be holy by the bond of unity to Jesus. It is for this reason that Jesus says, "You in me and me in the Father." This will be done after the Ascension of Jesus. The apostles will receive the anointing of the Spirit of Jesus at the day of Pentecost. This anointing is indicated in (1st Epistle of St-John: 2.27). When a person receives this anointing, he receives the title of {God's child}.
18.	"As You sent Me into the world, I also have sent them into the world. (*) Here, it will be the turn of the apostles to announce the Good News on earth. It is also for this reason that this book has been written for you.
20.	"I do not ask on behalf of these alone, but for those also who believe in Me through their word;

	(*) Here, every human being that will follow the Way of Christ.
21.	that they may all be one; even as You, Father, <i>are</i> in Me and I in You, that they also may be in Us, so that the world may believe that You sent Me.
	(*) The Holy Spirit is the Breath of Life of God that Unites all those who are saved.
22.	"The glory which You have given Me I have given to them, that they may be one, just as We are one;
23.	I in them and You in Me, that they may be perfected in unity, so that the world may know (1) that You sent Me, and loved them, even as You have loved Me. (2)
	(1) By the {birth of the Spirit}, the person becomes a witness of the Resurrection of Jesus Christ, the Son of God. (2) During the {birth of the Spirit}, we feel the Love of God. See article 13-D .

| 23-M | St-John 20. Apparitions to the disciples

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-John, chapter 20 of the Bible (New American Standard).

19.	So when it was evening on that day, the first <i>day</i> of the week, and when the doors were shut where the disciples were, for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood in their midst and said to them, "Peace <i>be</i> with you."
20.	And when He had said this, He showed them both His hands and His side. The disciples then rejoiced when they saw the Lord.
21.	So Jesus said to them again, "Peace <i>be</i> with you; as the Father has sent Me, I also send you."
22.	And when He had said this, He breathed on them and said to them, "Receive the Holy Spirit. (1)
	(1) Many Christians wonder why Jesus gives the Holy Spirit twice. A first time in this excerpt of St-John and a second time in the narrative of the day of Pentecost (book of Acts of the Apostles). It should be known that the Gospel of St-John was completed about 40 years after the book of Acts of the Apostles. Here, the Gospel of St-John simply confirms with a very abbreviated text that the apostles actually received from Jesus the promise of the Father, the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, which is written in detail in the book of Acts of the Apostles. → The {gift of the Holy Spirit} is not given twice, but only once .

| 24 | The New Testament, the Gospel of St-Matthew

St-Mark wrote the first Gospel. It is the shortest of the four. St-Mark was the secretary of St-Peter.

The Gospel of St-Luke is the one with the most historical details. St-Luke was a Greek and the secretary of St-Paul. This Gospel was written for the Gentiles (they are the non-Jews of the time). The book of Acts of the Apostles and the Gospel of St-Luke formed only one document at the origin. It was separated into 2 in the New Testament.

The Gospel of St-Matthew was written for the Jews. The Jews of the time of Jesus had a rigid mentality. St-Matthew was a tax collector considered by the Jews as a man of bad life. Then the rigidity and the difficulty of conversion appear in his Gospel.

The Gospels of St-Matthew, St-Mark and St-Luke have substantially the same content. These are Gospels that focus particularly on the **conversion** of the person. On the other hand, there are also some beautiful mysteries to look at.

In this book, I chose to explain the Gospels of St-Matthew and St-John.

A) I give you the little map of the Gospels of chapter | 23 |.

Jesus says in (St-John: 3,5): "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit, no one can enter the Kingdom of God."

Generally:

1) The Gospels of St-Matthew, St-Luke and St-Mark focus on the human reality of "to be born of water." The Gospel of St-Matthew is presented in this chapter | 24 |.

2) The Gospel of St-John focuses on the mystery of "to be born of the Spirit." It has been presented in chapter | 23 |.

B) Summary of the great steps of "to be born of water" and "to be born of the Spirit."

See the beginning of chapter | 23 |.

| 24-A | Conversion, a necessary step

St-John talks little about the conversion because he was a good man. In short, St-John says that we must follow the prescriptions of Jesus (the Word). On the other hand, St-Matthew talks about the work of conversion in detail.

Personally, I have always been true in my personal life and with people. To do evil or take advantage of people never interested me. So my conversion was not very exhausting.

However, here is a list of things I found difficult:

1) Why our society easily rejects people who are: gentle, understandable, generous, always ready to help, etc. As if they were idiots or easy people to exploit. It is so hard to bear! At one time, I even thought that I would have to eliminate these "great defects of goodness" in order to succeed in society.

2) In our society, we all have quite high standards of success: a big job, a nice house, a lot of money. For many people, if we do not run towards these standards, we are stupid.

3) We are so surrounded by technology that we do not seek God. We do not need him, and we do not have the time either. We have too many beautiful and interesting things to see!

4) Our consumer society does not want to hear about God anymore: in the street, at school, at work or on television. God, it is for the enlightened! For once, I agree! Jesus calls the {God's children}, the little lights in the great darkness of our world.

Thank you Lord!

| 24-B | Pay attention to some expressions

A) The expression: "to be filled with the Holy Spirit."

We must be careful of this expression which St-Luke often writes in his Gospel and in the book of Acts of the Apostles. In reality, St-Luke uses this expression to simplify his text and to say that "the Holy Spirit is at work." This expression comes from St-Paul who uses it a lot in his Epistles.

B) The expressions: "demons and unclean spirits."

At the time of Jesus, the Jews did not know the microbes and viruses that circulate everywhere. These were discovered by Louis Pasteur (1822-1895). The Jews knew that wars, deaths and rot caused serious health problems. Since they did not have modern science in order to understand, they called it all the "unclean spirits." So when a person was very sick, it was because an unclean spirit had entered the person. Unlike what people think, the Jews did not pass their hands in the water to wash them, but rather to perform a cleansing ritual to chase unclean spirits and not to absorb them through food. The diseases were not well known either. If a person had any seizure (epilepsy, hysteria, and many others) and that he was rolling on the floor lamenting, then it was definitely the "possession of a demon!"

Note:

We must be realistic, even though Jesus is the Son of God, he had to speak the same language of the people of his time otherwise no one would have understood...

C) In conclusion.

You have to know how to interpret the Scriptures so as not to take fright!

In the next articles of this chapter:

These are excerpts from the Bible (New American Standard). See article | 0-H |.
They come from the website: http://www.lexilogos.com/bible_multilingue.htm
The explanations I give are in parentheses () below the verses.

| 24-C | St-Matthew 3. Preaching of John the Baptist/Baptism of Jesus

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 3 of the Bible (New American Standard).

1.	Now in those days John the Baptist came, preaching in the wilderness of Judea, saying,
2.	"Repent (1), for the kingdom of heaven (2) is at hand."
	(1) Making the firm decision to change one's life to do good is crucial. (2) The Kingdom comes to humans through Jesus Christ.
6.	and they were being baptized by him in the Jordan River, as they confessed their sins.
	(*) The baptism of water is to go from the bad human being to the good human being.
7.	But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming for baptism, he said to them, "You brood of vipers, who warned you to flee from the wrath to come?"
	(*) Before the time of Jesus, the Jews saw God as a King and a Judge with a divine anger. So they were waiting for a "messiah of anger" to remove all the injustices in Israel.
8.	"Therefore bear fruit in keeping with repentance;
	(*) It is not a matter of having a momentary desire to repent. We must put goodness into practice around us at every moment of our life. It is not a good action a week and here it goes, see you next week!
10.	"The axe is already laid at the root of the trees; therefore every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire.
	(*) This is the announcement of the Last Judgment since the Messiah is coming soon.
11.	"As for me, I baptize you with water (1) for repentance, but He who (3) is coming after me is mightier than I, and I am not fit to remove His sandals; He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit (2) and fire (4).
	(*) A baptism is a new beginning. The person is immersed in something that purifies him. (1) Purification by water occurs through the desire and effort of the human being to convert and be good.

	<p>(2) Purification by the Holy Spirit occurs by the action of God alone on the human being.</p> <p>(3) The Messiah, the Son of God (Jesus). He alone baptizes in the Spirit (and not religious people).</p> <p>(4) Fire is the symbol of the Power of God. God burns the sins of the person by the purifying fire of His Holiness. It is the sacrifice of Jesus (on the cross) that will allow this forgiveness or purification.</p>
12.	"His winnowing fork is in His hand, and He will thoroughly clear His threshing floor (1); and He will gather His wheat (2) into the barn (3), but He will burn up the chaff (4) with unquenchable fire (5)."
	<p>(1) It is the Last Judgment that belongs only to the Son of God alone, for he is the Word who commands this Judgment.</p> <p>(2) These are the {God's children} by the {birth of the Spirit}.</p> <p>(3) The Kingdom of God.</p> <p>(4) Human beings who have not had their {birth of the Spirit}.</p> <p>(5) They die in the ground simply without anything more. For the human being, death in the ground is part of his natural condition (he is extinguished). But in the eyes of God (the Lord), this human being is a loss forever.</p> <p>(*) Earth is the garden of God.</p>
13.	Then Jesus arrived from Galilee at the Jordan <i>coming</i> to John, to be baptized by him.
14.	But John tried to prevent Him, saying, "I have need to be baptized by You, and do You come to me?"
15.	But Jesus answering said to him, "Permit <i>it</i> at this time; for in this way it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness." Then he permitted Him.
	(*) The Son is the master (teacher) who demonstrates to the human being (by his example) the Way to become (son or daughter of God). See chapter 10 .
16.	After being baptized, Jesus came up immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened, and he saw the Spirit of God descending as a dove <i>and</i> lighting on Him,
	(*) The word Christ means that he has received the Anointing of the Spirit of the Father . He is the Messiah . It is for this reason that Jesus of Nazareth is called Jesus Christ. See article 23-B .
17.	and behold, a voice out of the heavens said, "This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well-pleased."

| 24-D | St-Matthew 4. Temptation in the desert (wilderness)/Return to Galilee

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 4 of the Bible (New American Standard).

1.	Then Jesus was led up by the Spirit (2) into the wilderness (desert) (1) to be tempted by the devil.
	<p>(*) Here, this narrative is symbolic. Why? Because St-Matthew shows us a human exaggeration. Nobody can live in the desert for 40 days while fasting (going without food), because his kidneys would block and death would be fast. In addition, logically, the apostles could not know this story, because at that time, Jesus did not yet have a single apostle. Here the apostles affirm that Jesus, although the Son of God, is also a human being on earth, because he can be tempted like all of us. This story demonstrates the inner struggle of Jesus, his perfect resistance against the forces of Evil and his test before the beginning of his mission.</p> <p>(1) For the Jews, the desert is the place that represents death (snake, scorpion, excruciating heat, lack of water and food). Since death is present, so is his personification, the devil.</p> <p>(2) In Ezekiel, the expression "led by the Spirit" means "taken away in a Vision or in a mystical experience."</p>
2.	And after He had fasted forty days and forty nights, He then became hungry.
	(*) This is the symbol that Jesus is perfectly resistant to temptation.
3.	And the tempter came and said to Him, "If You are the Son of God, command that these stones become bread."
	(*) This demonstrates the humility of the Son of God. He has Power, but uses them only in the Will of his Father.
4.	But He answered and said, "It is written, 'Man shall not live on bread alone (1), but on every word (2) that proceeds out of the mouth of God.' "
	<p>(1) If he desires, the human being is not limited to a mortal life.</p> <p>(2) Jesus is this Word that gives Eternal Life to every human being who follows his Way.</p>
5.	Then the devil took Him into the holy city and had Him stand on the pinnacle of the temple,
6.	and said to Him, "If You are the Son of God, throw Yourself down; for it is written, 'He will command his angels concerning you'; and 'on their hands they will bear you up, so that you will not strike your foot against a stone.' "

	(*) This refers to the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross. It is the temptation not to become "the Lamb of God" which is the Will of the Father.
7.	Jesus said to him, "On the other hand, it is written, 'You shall not put the Lord your God to the tests.' "
	(*) It is the superiority of God over all his creatures even those fallen like the devil (Lucifer).
8.	Again, the devil took Him to a very high mountain (1) and showed Him all the kingdoms of the world and their glory; (2)
	(1) In the Old Testament, God is often called the God of the mountain. (2) It is the false god of wealth and human power.
9.	and he said to Him, "All these things I will give You, if You fall down and worship me."
	(*) It is the temptation of the greed pushed to the extreme of which the devil (Lucifer) has himself succumbed.
10.	Then Jesus said to him, "Go, Satan (1)! For it is written, 'You shall worship the Lord your God, and serve Him only.' "
	(1) Satan means "the Opponent of God." Jesus said, "You cannot serve 2 masters, God and money."
16.	"The people who were sitting in darkness saw a great light (1), and those who were sitting in the land and shadow (2) of death, upon them a light dawned."
	(1) The light is Jesus in the darkness of our human lives. (2) This is the Resurrection of Jesus, his victory over the grave (the Sheol).

[24-E] St-Matthew 5. The Beatitudes

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 5 of the Bible (New American Standard).

3.	"Blessed are the poor in spirit (1), for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.
	(1) It is humility.
4.	"Blessed are those who mourn, for they shall be comforted.
5.	"Blessed are the gentle, for they shall inherit the earth.
6.	"Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, for they shall be satisfied.
7.	"Blessed are the merciful, for they shall receive mercy.
8.	"Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God.
9.	"Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called sons of God.
10.	"Blessed are those who have been persecuted for the sake of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.
	(*) These 8 verses represent the effort of the birth of water: gentleness, righteousness, mercy, goodness of heart, artisan of peace, etc. A person who does good in our world will surely be rejected by other human beings whose purpose is the lust for objects and power. This person is rejected by humans, but welcomed by God who possesses all these qualities of goodness and which God then wants to make him, his {child}. For God, a human being only passes the test (examination) of his life if he chooses good despite injustice.
11.	"Blessed are you when <i>people</i> insult you and persecute you, and falsely say all kinds of evil against you because of Me.
	(*) Here, it is mainly the apostles who were martyred.
12.	"Rejoice and be glad, for your reward in heaven is great; for in the same way they persecuted the prophets who were before you.
	(*) The apostles and all {God's children} are the sequel of the prophets of the Old Testament.
16.	"Let your light shine before men in such a way that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father who is in heaven.
	(*) Each one who follows the Way of Jesus is a light for others.
17.	"Do not think that I came to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I did not come to abolish but to fulfill.
	(*) Jesus fulfilled on earth the Word that He Himself inspired to the prophets in the Scriptures.
27.	"You have heard that it was said, 'You shall not commit adultery';
28.	but I say to you that everyone who looks at a woman with lust for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart.
	(*) The thinking of the Jews at the time was very prudish. This verse is not the temptation to think about it a bit, because in psychology we know that a person does not control the film of his thoughts. On the other hand, a

	person controls his actions. So, the meaning of this verse is: "to make plans and put them into action to tempt the other one in order to get what I want."
29.	"If your right eye makes you stumble, tear it out and throw it from you; for it is better for you to lose one of the parts of your body, than for your whole body to be thrown into hell.
30.	"If your right hand makes you stumble, cut it off and throw it from you; for it is better for you to lose one of the parts of your body, than for your whole body to go into hell.
	(*) The thinking of the Jews at the time was very rigid. In a modern way, it means: "if there is something wrong that tempts you, do not stay there , because your desire is much stronger than your human thought." In short, if you do not leave, your desire will make you succumb, it is only a matter of time.
37.	"But let your statement be, 'Yes, yes' or 'No, no'; anything beyond these is of evil.
	(1) This verse means: to follow the Way of Jesus, one must practice righteousness. (2) Have you noticed that the Messages that I have had from the Lord in chapter 13 are very short? On the other hand, they are rich in meaning.
45.	so that you may be sons of your Father who is in heaven; for He causes His sun to rise on <i>the</i> evil and <i>the</i> good, and sends rain on <i>the</i> righteous and <i>the</i> unrighteous.
	(*) God gave life to the human on earth generously and without asking anything in return. We live every day in his graces. We are all free to do good or evil, to follow the Way of Jesus or not. God does not punish anyone for his choice.
48.	"Therefore you are to be perfect, as your heavenly Father is perfect.
	(1) God is perfect because he is Holy (without any evil). (2) In the science of physics, we also see the perfection of the Creator through the constancy and precision of the laws of the universe.

|24-F| St-Matthew 6. Make alms secretly/The true prayer/Abandon ourselves to Providence

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 6 of the Bible (New American Standard).

1.	"Beware of practicing your righteousness before men to be noticed by them (1); otherwise you have no reward (2) with your Father who is in heaven.
	(1) For God, being superficial is useless. God loves the truth and reads in the heart. (2) The reward of Eternal Life.
8.	"So do not be like them; for your Father knows what you need before you ask Him.
	(1) To make his list of material gifts in prayer to God gives nothing. What you need to ask is help on the Way of conversion to get your {birth of the Spirit}. (2) Even though the Lord knows what we need before asking, it is necessary to pray anyway to stay in touch with Him.
9.	"Pray, then, in this way: 'Our Father (1) who is in heaven, Hallowed be Your name.
	(1) One must not see God as inaccessible and far away. On the contrary, he is our Creator, our Father. You can see God as a Parent and even a Mother if you want. God is not sexed like us. Jesus said that in Heaven, we will all be like angels.
10.	'Your kingdom come. Your will be done, On earth as it is in heaven.
	(*) This verse is not a prayer for God, but a message for ourselves. This is to make us understand that if people did the Will of God on earth as it is done in Heaven, evil on earth would not exist since a long time...
11.	'Give us this day our daily bread.
	(*) Without knowing it, God always gives us a help in life. Sometimes, that is really not what we want humanly. On the other hand, a time of lack of work can be taken as a time to search for God in order to obtain his {birth of the Spirit}. That is the gift I got! Another person may be sick and use this time to discover God and even to be healed by him. When we approach God, he always makes us beautiful gifts of life/Life. God loves you much more than you believe! Except that he does not allow himself to take with him (in his Kingdom) people who do not like him and who hide from him.
12.	'And forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors.
	(*) It is to forgive others so that God forgives us.

13.	'And do not lead us into temptation, but deliver us from evil. [For Yours is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever. Amen.]'
	(1) This verse clearly indicates the belief of the Jews about the devil (the Tempter). See chapter 18 . (2) On the other hand, what is really important in this verse is that God does no evil to anyone. So if you have trouble, look for the cause elsewhere. God has laid down life on earth and it is autonomous without him. Therefore, no one is safe from accidents or illness, you have to be careful...
14.	"For if you forgive others for their transgressions, your heavenly Father will also forgive you.
15.	"But if you do not forgive others, then your Father will not forgive your transgressions.
	(*) Genuine forgiveness to all who have hurt you is necessary for your {birth of the Spirit}. To help you make this forgiveness, see article 27-D .
26.	"Look at the birds of the air, that they do not sow, nor reap nor gather into barns, and yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not worth much more than they?
28.	"And why are you worried about clothing? Observe how the lilies of the field grow; they do not toil nor do they spin,
30.	"But if God so clothes the grass of the field, which is <i>alive</i> today and tomorrow is thrown into the furnace (1), <i>will He</i> not much more <i>clothe</i> you? You of little faith!
31.	"Do not worry then, saying, 'What will we eat?' or 'What will we drink?' or 'What will we wear for clothing?'
32.	"For the Gentiles (2) eagerly seek all these things; for your heavenly Father knows that you need all these things.
33.	"But seek first His kingdom and His righteousness (3), and all these things will be added to you.
	(*) Even though these verses are simple, Jesus gives us a great lesson in life. Whether from the time of Jesus or our time (today), we live on farming. So we have to work to get our food. The speech of Jesus then seems to us the opposite of common sense. We know that humans began farming about 10,000 years ago. Before, the human was a hunter-gatherer. The human did not have a job. The human took directly into nature what he needed. That is what Native Americans did, only 400 years ago! Did you know that the first form of pollution really did not appear in the 1800s or even 1900s? No, the first form of pollution began when humans began farming 10,000 years ago. You will tell me, how? In biology, we know that nature is made to produce on its own. Whenever humans intervene in nature to produce more, nature becomes unbalanced. Since the 2000s, we have noticed that pollution is present. Some even said, "Can humans produce anything on earth without polluting?" Without going into solutions to curb pollution, I simply want to point to an important reality in the speech of Jesus. How does he know that the human is in a garden (the earth) that produces all alone and that we do not have to intervene to eat? I already said that Jesus was the first psychologist. But would he also be the first ecologist? Looks like Jesus has all the solutions! You have here a further proof that Jesus is the Son of God. He is the Word by which Creation has been pronounced. He knows how to live here to be in harmony. (1) Jesus says that the garden of the earth is only passing (mortal). (2) People whose earthly goods are the priority do not believe in God. (3) Jesus suggests that we rather work on our conversion of the heart in order to obtain Eternal Life.

| 24-G | St-Matthew 7. Do not judge/Amazement of the crowd

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 7 of the Bible (New American Standard).

2.	"For in the way you judge, you will be judged; and by your standard of measure, it will be measured to you.
	(*) God will judge you as you judge others. So, you have to be careful.
6.	"Do not give what is holy to dogs, and do not throw your pearls before swine, or they will trample them under their feet, and turn and tear you to pieces.
	(*) Here is a very misunderstood verse of those who announce God. In the past, many religious people have been beaten trying to convert people who did not want to know anything. The "Holy of God" is only for those who want to hear. Christians have the job of spreading the Good News only. Then you have to accept the choices of others!
7.	"Ask, and it will be given to you; seek, and you will find; knock, and it will be opened to you.
8.	"For everyone who asks receives, and he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks it will be opened.
	(*) Every person who seeks God will find him and he will manifest himself concretely by the Holy Spirit.

13.	"Enter through the narrow gate; for the gate is wide and the way is broad that leads to destruction, and there are many who enter through it.
14.	"For the gate is small and the way is narrow that leads to life, and there are few who find it.
	(*) Keep the Bible (Word) in your hand. As some Apparitions of the Blessed Virgin say so well: "religion is human." There is only Jesus Christ who Saves. Remember that no religious people can make an effort for you. So, stand up and seek God. I advise you to book an hour a day to your search in peace (reading, film, testimony, singing, prayer, etc.). I assure you that the Kingdom of God is there really, you absolutely do not waste your time. Work sincerely and you will be rewarded!
21.	"Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' (1) will enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father (2) who is in heaven <i>will enter</i> .
	(1) The Lord wants sincerity and not rituals. (2) The Father's Will is for the person to make his conversion of the heart.
28.	When Jesus had finished these words, the crowds were amazed at His teaching;
29.	for He was teaching them as <i>one</i> having authority, and not as their scribes.
	(*) Look at the Manifestations I have had in chapter 13 . Messages are always very brief.

| 24-H | St-Matthew 8. Multiple healings/The storm calmed

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 8 of the Bible (New American Standard).

2.	And a leper came to Him and bowed down before Him, and said, "Lord, if You are willing, You can make me clean."
3.	Jesus stretched out His hand and touched him, saying, "I am willing; be cleansed." And immediately his leprosy was cleansed.
	(*) We see that for the Jews there was a close link between sin and sickness. It was the accumulation of sins that made one sick. Jesus has the power to cleanse the person of his sins so the disease disappears.
13.	And Jesus said to the centurion, "Go; it shall be done for you as you have believed." And the servant was healed that <i>very</i> moment.
	(*) To get a miracle, you have to trust God.
21.	Another of the disciples said to Him, "Lord, permit me first to go and bury my father (1)."
22.	But Jesus said to him, "Follow Me, and allow the dead to bury their own dead (2)."
	(1) We see here that the words used by Jesus are too hard. So, you have to be careful and understand the mentality of the time. For the Jewish tradition, religion is a clan (family). If a person wants to follow another religion (here Jesus') and not that of his family, he could be excluded. So Jesus tells the person that he has to choose between him and his family. In our time, this kind of situation is very rare. For readers that have this kind of problem, I invite you to read article 7-A . (2) Jesus says that if the person does not follow his Way, he will not have Eternal Life. Jesus being the Son of the Eternal (Yahweh), he already sees these people as dead without him. Do you have any idea how I know this detail? It is simple, for a period of about six weeks after my {birth of the Spirit}, when I looked at people who did not have it, that is the feeling I had. They were dead (spiritually), but they did not know it! After, I tidied up this feeling in my head and it disappeared. They have the right to follow the Way of Christ or not, and I have the right not to be unhappy about it. See article 13-F .
24.	And behold, there arose a great storm on the sea, so that the boat was being covered with the waves; but Jesus Himself was asleep.
	(*) Jesus trusts, eyes closed, in God the Father. He invites us to do the same.
25.	And they came to <i>Him</i> and woke Him, saying, "Save <i>us</i> , Lord; we are perishing!"
	(*) Jesus is the expected Savior (the Messiah).
26.	He said to them, "Why are you afraid, you men of little faith?" Then He got up and rebuked the winds and the sea, and it became perfectly calm.
	(*) Even in difficulties, you have to trust God. In the eyes of God, everything on earth has its usefulness. Here, Jesus wanted to see the faith of his apostles.

|24-I| St-Matthew 9. Healing of a paralytic/Meals with sinners

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 9 of the Bible (New American Standard).

5.	"Which is easier, to say, 'Your sins are forgiven,' or to say, 'Get up, and walk'?"
6.	"But so that you may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins"--then He said to the paralytic, "Get up, pick up your bed and go home."
(*) We see that for the Jews there was a close link between sin and illness. It is the accumulation of sins that makes one sick. Jesus has the power to forgive sins since the disease disappears.	
13.	"But go and learn what this means: 'I desire compassion, and not sacrifice,' for I did not come to call the righteous, but sinners."
(*) Jesus says that what is important is the sincerity of the heart and not the sacrifice or the rituals.	

|24-J| St-Matthew 10. Mission of the Twelve

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 10 of the Bible (New American Standard).

14.	"Whoever does not receive you, nor heed your words, as you go out of that house or that city, shake the dust off your feet.
(*) Even now, if a person does not want to hear about God, you have to leave him there.	
15.	"Truly I say to you, it will be more tolerable for <i>the</i> land of Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment than for that city.
(*) The Last Judgment will be addressed in chapter 29 .	
16.	"Behold, I send you out as sheep in the midst of wolves; so be shrewd as serpents and innocent as doves.
(*) When we talk about God, we must do it intelligently.	
17.	"But beware of men, for they will hand you over to <i>the</i> courts and scourge you in their synagogues;
(*) Here, not all human beings, but those who are bad.	
20.	"For it is not you who speak, but <i>it is</i> the Spirit of your Father who speaks in you.
(*) Jesus says that the apostles will be helped by the {gift of the Holy Spirit} at the day of Pentecost.	
23.	"But whenever they persecute you in one city, flee (1) to the next; for truly I say to you, you will not finish <i>going through</i> the cities of Israel until the Son of Man comes.
24.	"A disciple is not above his teacher (2), nor a slave above his master.
(1) During Christian history, how many religious people have not understood these verses and have been beaten needlessly or even killed for their faith rather than running away? Nobody can work for God if he is dead! (2) Jesus is the Master and no Christian is above. For the crucifixion of Jesus, God did not intervene. On the other hand, some religious people falsely believed that God would intervene for them against their tormentors. Many Christians have even lost faith by believing that if God did not intervene, it was because he did not exist. It must be understood that the earth is an autonomous world given by God. To give is not to resume. The human is free to do good or evil. The human freedom to do evil of one person can obviously hurt another person. It is for this reason that God gives the Reward of Eternal Life to those who follow him. On earth justice does not exist, because the human does not want to listen to what God asks, to do only good. So the human only has to blame himself for his misfortune...	
28.	"Do not fear those who kill the body but are unable to kill the soul (2); but rather fear Him who is able to destroy both soul and body in (1) hell.
(*) Pay attention to this verse because it has a connection with the Revelation (Apocalypse). For the Last Judgment, see chapter 29 . In short, for Jesus, life on earth is worthless compared to Eternal Life. So, do not miss it... (1) In the Jerusalem Bible, the word indicated is: " Gehenna ." See the explanations I gave for this word in chapter 18 . (2) See the explanations I gave for the word "soul" in article 3-D .	
30.	"But the very hairs of your head are all numbered.

	(*) In the past, many people have misunderstood this verse. They thought that after their Christian baptism, misfortune was over for them on earth. Yet Jesus had just said that they would be martyred for their faith like himself. Here, Jesus simply says that if a person follows his Way, he will not get lost because it leads to Eternal Life.
33.	"But whoever denies Me before men, I will also deny him before My Father who is in heaven. (*) A person who does not believe in God cannot go to the Kingdom of God.
34.	"Do not think that I came to bring peace on the earth; I did not come to bring peace, but a sword.
35.	"For I came to set a man against his father, and a daughter against her mother, and daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law;
36.	And a man's enemies will be the members of his household.
37.	"He who loves father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me; and he who loves son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me.
	(1) We see here that the words used by Jesus are too hard. So, you have to be careful and understand the mentality of the time. For the Jewish tradition, religion is a clan (family). If a person wants to follow another religion (here Jesus') and not that of his family, he could be excluded. So Jesus tells the person that he has to choose between him and his family. In our time, this kind of situation is very rare. For readers that have this kind of problem, I invite you to read article 7-A . (2) For Jesus, if a person wants to have Eternal Life, this goal must be first in his life, before material goods and even want to please his family. Jesus calls the person from his condition of "man's child" to become a {God's child}. It is a new Family! It is for this reason that Jesus said, "Who are my brothers, my sisters and my mother?" In reality, it is those who will be united to him for the Kingdom of God.
38.	"And he who does not take his cross and follow after Me is not worthy of Me. (*) It is true that seeking the truth and doing good on earth are not easy. Obviously, this is not the way to make the most money!
39.	"He who has found his life will lose it (1), and he who has lost his life for My sake will find it (2). (1) The person who follows his own human way of lust (power, money, consumer goods) will succeed his life on earth, but will have no more than that. (2) The person who follows the Way of conversion of the heart of Jesus will have Life.

|24-K| St-Matthew 11. Question about John the Baptist/Jesus master debonair

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 11 of the Bible (New American Standard).

7.	As these men were going <i>away</i> , Jesus began to speak to the crowds about John, "What did you go out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken by the wind? (*) The prophets are not entertainments. Their messages are important.
12.	"From the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffers violence, and violent men take it by force. (*) It is the violence of the chief priests who had the prophets sent by God executed (killed), while these prophets announced the coming of the Messiah (Jesus).
20.	Then He began to denounce the cities in which most of His miracles were done, because they did not repent.
21.	"Woe to you, Chorazin! Woe to you, Bethsaida! For if the miracles had occurred in Tyre and Sidon which occurred in you, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. (*) The primary purpose of God's miracles is to shake the human. This facilitates repentance and increases one's faith.
25.	At that time Jesus said, "I praise You, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that You have hidden these things from <i>the</i> wise and intelligent and have revealed them to infants. (*) We must be humble to welcome the Word of God.
29.	"Take My yoke upon you and learn from Me, for I am gentle and humble in heart, and you will find rest for your souls. (*) Here, the word "soul" means the interior of the human being, it is to feel at peace.

|24-L| St-Matthew 12. Jesus and Beelzebub/The sign of Jonah

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 12 of the Bible (New American Standard).

25.	And knowing their thoughts Jesus said to them, "Any kingdom divided against itself is laid waste; and any city or house divided against itself will not stand.
26.	"If Satan casts out Satan, he is divided against himself; how then will his kingdom stand?
(*) It is easy to understand that God (only Eternal) does not maintain the life of the devil. See chapter 18 .	
31.	"Therefore I say to you, any sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven people, but blasphemy against the Spirit shall not be forgiven.
32.	"Whoever speaks a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him; but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, either in this age or in the <i>age</i> to come.
(*) The sin against the Spirit is simply not to want, or not to work to receive his {birth of the Spirit}. This sin is fatal because the person cannot enter the Kingdom. The Holy Spirit being the Breath of Eternal Life of the Father.	
40.	or just as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the sea monster (1), so will the Son of Man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth (2).
(1) A whale.	
(2) The Resurrection of Christ in 3 days.	

|24-M| St-Matthew 13. Why Jesus speaks in parables

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 13 of the Bible (New American Standard).

11.	Jesus answered them, "To you it has been granted to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it has not been granted.
12.	"For whoever has, to him <i>more</i> shall be given, and he will have an abundance; but whoever does not have, even what he has shall be taken away from him.
(*) When someone speaks in parables, those who want to understand ask additional questions and those who do not want to understand go away on their own.	
15.	For the heart of this people (1) has become dull, with their ears they scarcely hear, and they have close their eyes, otherwise they would see with their eyes, hear with their ears, and understand with their heart and return, and I would heal them (2).
(1) People do not want to change their lives. They do not want to convert.	
(2) Jesus cannot heal them from their mortal condition to give them Eternal Life.	

|24-N| St-Matthew 15. Discussion on traditions/Healing of a Canaanite

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 15 of the Bible (New American Standard).

8.	This people honors me with their lips, but their hearts is far away from me.
9.	But in vain do they worship me, teaching as doctrines the precepts of men."
(*) How many Christians participate in the mass this way! Jesus asks for the sincerity of the heart and not rituals.	
10.	After Jesus called the crowd to Him, He said to them, "Hear and understand.
11.	" <i>It is not</i> what enters into the mouth <i>that</i> defiles the man, but what proceeds out of the mouth, this defiles the man."
(*) The Jews believed that the human could only be good (because created by God). By their rituals, they made a barrier against unclean spirits and demons. Then, they remained pure and they had no conversion to do. Jesus says that due to the freedom of the human, what defiles the human is his own actions that come out of his own inner self.	
14.	"Let them alone; they are blind guides of the blind. And if a blind man guides a blind man, both will fall into a pit."
(*) According to Christ, it is not permitted to guide followers when we have not received concretely the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. This explains the dispersion of Christianity, see article 2-B .	
25.	But she came and <i>began</i> to bow down before Him, saying, "Lord, help me!"

26.	And He answered and said, "It is not good to take the (1) children's bread and throw it to the dogs (2)."
27.	But she said, "Yes, Lord; but even the dogs feed on the crumbs which fall from their masters' table."
28.	Then Jesus said to her, "O woman, your faith is great; it shall be done for you as you wish." And her daughter was healed at once (3).
(1) The Jews.	
(2) The non-Jews, therefore the Gentiles.	
(3) In reality, Jesus came on earth to heal from death anyone who follows his Way and not only for the Jews.	

|24-O| St-Matthew 16. Profession of faith/Condition to follow Jesus

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 16 of the Bible (New American Standard).

15.	He said to them, "But who do you say that I am?"
16.	Simon Peter answered, "You are the Christ, the Son of the living God."
(*) Peter is the first to recognize Jesus as the Son of God.	
17.	And Jesus said to him, "Blessed are you, Simon Barjona, because flesh and blood did not reveal <i>this</i> to you, but My Father who is in heaven.
(*) To truly believe in (God and his Word) is a gift that God makes to a person for his efforts. This is not human.	
18.	"I also say to you that you are Peter, and upon this rock I will build My church (1); and the gates of Hades (2) will not overpower it.
(1) In the note at the bottom of the Jerusalem Bible: the word "church" is defined as "the assembly of the chosen people." They are those who are marked by the {anointing} or the {seal of Jesus} given by the Holy Spirit.	
(2) Hades is the place where the human body rests after death, yes under the ground. A person who has his {birth of the Spirit} is not subject to death since he has received the Breath of Eternal Life in him.	
19.	"I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven; and whatever you bind (1) on earth shall have been bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth shall have been loosed (2) in heaven."
(*) This text is a symbol. The Kingdom is not that of men, but that of God. By these last 3 verses, some Christian movements even imagined that they were holding the gates of the Kingdom of God in their hands. The lack of humility is blatant here.	
(1) We know that when the first person enters a house, he must have the key to the door. By comparison, St-Peter is the symbol of this first person of the 2nd Covenant.	
(2) Since it takes a Gospel (the Word) to believe and follow the Way of Christ in order to go to the Kingdom, then St-Peter will have the power to transmit this Gospel to a person able to receive it or not. That is where the verbs (to bind or loose) come from. The first written Gospel is that of St-Mark at the request of St-Peter.	
22.	Peter took Him aside and began to rebuke Him, saying, "God forbid <i>it</i> , Lord! This shall never happen to You."
23.	But He turned and said to Peter, "Get behind Me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to Me; for you are not setting your mind on God's interests, but man's."
(*) St-Peter being the one who holds the "famous symbolic key of the Kingdom" has just been put back in its place! He is only a human being and it is the Father, the Will.	
24.	Then Jesus said to His disciples, "If anyone wishes to come after Me, he must deny himself, and take up his cross and follow Me.
(*) In our life, the Way of Jesus must be the priority. Power, money and possessions, though very useful, must be secondary. It does not mean having nothing as some religious people have imagined. It means that God comes first. Without knowing it, all that is on earth belongs to our Creator (God) who shared it with us. So, if a person around us is in need, we help him...	
27.	"For the Son of Man is going to come in the glory (1) of His Father with His angels, and will then repay every man according to his deeds (2).
28.	"Truly I say to you, there are some of those who are standing here who will not taste death until they see the Son of Man coming in His kingdom (3)."
(1) It is the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.	
(2) It is the Last Judgment. To go further, see chapter 29 .	

(3) It is the day of Pentecost of the apostles. This event will be grand in order to inaugurate the 2nd Covenant of God. By this event, about 3,000 Jews will receive the initiation of baptism of water in the name of Jesus and begin their conversion.

| 24-P | St-Matthew 17. Transfiguration/the lunatic

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 17 of the Bible (New American Standard).

1.	Six days later Jesus took with Him Peter and James and John his brother, and led them up on a high mountain by themselves.
2.	And He was transfigured before them; and His face shone like the sun, and His garments became as white as light.
3.	And behold, Moses and Elijah appeared to them, talking with Him.
(*) Jesus prepares his apostles for a very difficult event of faith, his death on the cross. Here, Jesus shows 3 apostles his true divine nature. In several Bible narratives, it is stated that at the Apparition of an Angel, he looks like a human with a bright white garment. In the book of Exodus, it is written that when Moses spoke with Yahweh in the tent of meeting, Moses came out with a luminous face and then covered his face.	
5.	While he was still speaking, a bright cloud overshadowed them, and behold, a voice out of the cloud said, "This is My beloved Son, with whom I am well-pleased; listen to Him!"
(*) In the Old Testament, the Presence of God was made by the concrete sign of the Bright Cloud.	
16.	"I brought him to Your disciples, and they could not cure him."
17.	And Jesus answered and said, "You unbelieving and perverted generation, how long shall I be with you? How long shall I put up with you? Bring him here to Me."
(*) Jesus had given the (power to heal) to his apostles. But they were too attached to their superstitions and did not have enough faith in Jesus. For the apostles, the " <u>to truly believe</u> " will be done only after seeing the Risen Jesus.	
20.	And He said to them, "Because of the littleness of your faith; for truly I say to you, if you have faith the size of a mustard seed, you will say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there,' and it will move; and nothing will be impossible to you.
(*) Here, it is a symbol. It is to show that with God nothing is impossible. For those who would be tempted to believe that after their {birth of the Spirit}, they will be able to do wonders as they please, you are mistaken! It is the Father who is the Will and not the human. If God wants to go through you to do "wonders," you will do it . It will then be an honor that God will give you and do not expect the honors of humans, you will not have any and they will even try to destroy your works so as not to change their precious mentalities. It is necessary to know that a prodigy always passes by the Will of God and continues in your hands. You will always be the discoverer and not the one who takes the initiative. As I said before, the {inspiration} of this book does not come from me. Without him, I would not have done anything.	

|24-Q| St-Matthew 18. Who is the greatest? / Parable of the ruthless debtor

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 18 of the Bible (New American Standard).

1.	At that time the disciples came to Jesus and said, "Who then is greatest in the kingdom of heaven?"
2.	And He called a child to Himself and set him before them,
3.	and said, "Truly I say to you, unless you are converted and become like children, you will not enter the kingdom of heaven.
4.	"Whoever then humbles himself as this child, he is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven.
(*) Here, Jesus talks about humility as a child before his parent. God calls us to be {God's children} and not to want to crush others. For God, everyone has equal importance. This passage of Scripture is very important. This is the major cause that the {birth of the Spirit} is rare. See how a 7-year-old has a kind heart, you must try to look like him. The Kingdom of God is a place without any evil. There is only God who is without any evil. So to go to this place, it is necessary that the person already wants to make the directives of God on earth. As a child comes under the authority of his parent (to be guided). As the person must put himself under the authority of the Word of God and follow his Way to be welcomed in the Kingdom. The difficulty is that on earth we do not know what a world is without evil, so evil is inevitable. God does not ask us to be perfect, but to work for good despite the evil that surrounds us. He asks us to be little lights in the night. God knows our weaknesses, they ask us to improve and he always forgives people who are sincere.	
18.	"Truly I say to you, whatever you bind on earth shall have been bound in heaven; and whatever you loose on earth shall have been loosed in heaven.
(*) This has already been treated in (St-Matthew: 16,19). See article 24-O .	
19.	"Again I say to you, that if two of you agree on earth about anything that they may ask, it shall be done for them by My Father who is in heaven.
(1) Jesus does not address this message to us (Christians who are now reading) his Gospel. No, Jesus is addressing this message to his apostles directly because they will have a great mission to do and God will be there to support them. Remember that Jesus always sent his apostles by two. (2) For the subject of prayer, see chapter 26 .	
35.	"My heavenly Father will also do the same to you, if each of you does not forgive his brother from your heart."
(*) We see that we must absolutely forgive others if we want to obtain the Forgiveness of God.	

|24-R| St-Matthew 19. Promised reward

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 19 of the Bible (New American Standard).

12.	"For there are eunuchs who were born that way from their mother's womb; and there are eunuchs who were made eunuchs by men; and there are <i>also</i> eunuchs who made themselves eunuchs for the sake of the kingdom of heaven. He who is able to accept <i>this</i> , let him accept <i>it</i> ."
(*) As a man, Jesus is not married because of his divine mission (Son of God). Reproduction is for mortals and not for the one who is the Word of the Eternal. To go further, see article 16-F .	
17.	And He said to him, "Why are you asking Me about what is good? There is <i>only</i> One who is good; but if you wish to enter into life, keep the commandments."
(*) Jesus says that only the Father is Goodness.	
21.	Jesus said to him, "If you wish to be complete (1), go <i>and</i> sell your possessions and give to <i>the</i> poor, and you will have treasure in heaven; and come, follow Me (2)."
(1) Jesus says "if you want to be complete (or perfect)," not that to follow him you must have nothing at all. (2) In fact, Jesus asks that God be a priority and that objects be secondary.	
23.	And Jesus said to His disciples, "Truly I say to you, it is hard for a rich man to enter the kingdom of heaven.
(*) So, imagine in our North American society that lacks nothing, it will not be easy to put the objects in the second row to have the Kingdom of God!	

24.	"Again I say to you, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle (1), than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God."
	(1) Here, the translation is bad. At the time of Jesus, "the eye of a needle" was the name of a very narrow passage from which the camels had to bend down to cross it. This verse means that you have to be small and humble to enter the Kingdom, which the rich have difficulty doing...
27.	Then Peter said to Him, "Behold, we have left everything and followed You; what then will there be for us?"
	(*) At this time, the apostles still believed that Jesus would be a "messiah of anger" that would restore order in Israel and expel the Romans. At first, the apostles did not follow Jesus by "goodness of heart," but rather to have a place of power in the new kingdom announced by the prophets and Jesus. Why do you think there were two revolutionaries among the apostles, Simon the Zealot and Judas Iscariot? The apostles did not know that this Kingdom was in fact Eternal Life with God and not a particular place on earth. Throughout his mission, Jesus remained a little mysterious to help his apostles evolve and not lose them. There is always a difference between what we want humanly and what God knows good for us. So Jesus does not say everything and lets people find out. Why do you think that Jesus asked them, "For you, who do you believe that I am?" It was to see where they were in their ideas and their work of conversion...

[24-S] St-Matthew 22. Parable of the feast/The resurrection of the dead

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 22 of the Bible (New American Standard).

14.	"For many are called (1), but few <i>are</i> chosen (2)."
	(1) By the initiation of Christian baptism. (2) By the {birth of the Spirit}. It only depends on your efforts.
28.	"In the resurrection, therefore, whose wife of the seven will she be? For they all had <i>married</i> her."
29.	But Jesus answered and said to them, "You are mistaken, not understanding the Scriptures nor the power of God.
30.	"For in the resurrection they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are like angels in heaven.
	(*) On earth, we are in an autonomous world (mortal) because we have a free choice to make. Here, sexuality is necessary to propagate life like a flame that spreads in the grass of a field. The Kingdom is a World bound to the Eternal Source, God the Father. God creates life and maintains it by his Breath (the Holy Spirit). Jesus says that the Kingdom of God is a Spiritual World like the angels. Currently, in the science of physics, we know that all material is automatically temporal and deadly. In this case, the World of God is obligatorily immaterial to be timeless (eternal). Was Jesus also the first physicist on earth?
31.	"But regarding the resurrection of the dead, have you not read what was spoken to you by God:
32.	'I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? He is not the God of the dead but of the living."
	(*) Jesus says that God alone is the Source of all life.

[24-T] St-Matthew 23. Hypocrisy and vanity of the scribes and Pharisees

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 23 of the Bible (New American Standard).

8.	"But do not be called Rabbi; for One is your Teacher (1), and you are all (2) brothers.
	(1) Jesus Christ. (2) All brothers and sisters by his {birth of the Spirit}.
9.	"Do not call <i>anyone</i> on earth your father; for One is your Father, He who is in heaven.
	(1) Again, Father by the {birth of the Spirit}.
12.	"Whoever exalts himself shall be humbled; and whoever humbles himself shall be exalted.
	(*) It takes humility and sincerity to go to the Kingdom of God.
13.	"But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, because you shut off the kingdom of heaven from people; for you do not enter in yourselves, nor do you allow those who are entering to go in.
	(*) Here, each Christian must stick to the Word (the Gospels).
24.	"You blind guides, who strain out a gnat (1) and swallow a camel (2)!"
	(1) To take fright with nothing. Example: the chastity of religious people.

	(2) Make big mistakes without seeing it. Example: not realizing that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a real Manifestation and not poetry when it is indicated in several places in the Scriptures.
37.	"Jerusalem, Jerusalem, who kills the prophets and stones those who are sent to her! How often I wanted to gather your children together, the way a hen gathers her chicks under her wings, and you were unwilling.
	(*) God did try to educate the people of the 1st Covenant, but they did not want to.
38.	"Behold, your house is being left to you desolate!
	(*) After the crucifixion of Jesus, the Spirit of God will no longer live in the Temple of Jerusalem. This stone Temple was destroyed by the Romans in the year 0070. From the day of Pentecost around 0033, the Spirit of God resides in the hearts of the apostles and disciples through the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, these are his new temples of flesh and not of stones.

|24-U| St-Matthew 24. The advent of the Son of man will be manifest/Stay awake so you do not get surprised

Let's look at how the Last Judgment is seen by the apostles. The Son of man was the mysterious name that Jesus gave himself to show that he is the expected Messiah in the Old Testament.

Jesus being the Word of God, it is he who Pronounces the Last Judgment of God.

I report here an excerpt from the Gospel of St-Matthew, chapter 24 of the Bible (New American Standard).

The advent of the Son of Man will be manifest.	
26.	"So if they say to you, 'Behold, He is in the wilderness,' do not go out, <i>or</i> , 'Behold, He is in the inner rooms,' do not believe <i>them</i> .
	(*) The return of Jesus will not be done in a human way.
27.	"For just as the lightning comes from the east and flashes even to the west, so will the coming of the Son of Man be.
	(*) The return of Jesus will be mystical and without giving any warning.
28.	"Wherever the corpse is, there the vultures will gather.
	(*) It is a sentence to indicate that this is a decisive advent between Life and death.
Cosmic extent of this advent.	
29.	"But immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light, and the stars will fall from the sky, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken.
30.	"And then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of the sky with power and great glory.
31.	"And He will send forth His angels with a great trumpet and they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of the sky to the other.
	(*) Of these last 3 verses, we could glimpse the end of the world, but that is not it. This is to indicate that the advent will be great.
The moment of this advent.	
32.	"Now learn the parable from the fig tree: when its branch has already become tender and puts forth its leaves, you know that summer is near;
33.	So, you too, when you see all these things, recognize that He is near, <i>right</i> at the door.
34.	"Truly I say to you, this generation will not pass away until all these things take place.
	(*) We see that this advent of the Son of man was done during the generation of the apostles. In reality, this advent is the day of Pentecost of the apostles. There was the Wind, the Bright Cloud and the Fire. Everything was there. On this day alone, 3,000 Jews began their conversion by the baptism of initiation in the name of Jesus. A week later, the small Christian community was already 5,000 people.
35.	"Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words will not pass away.
	(*) For these words are of God.
36.	"But of that day and hour no one knows, not even the angels of heaven, nor the Son, but the Father alone.
	(*) For God the Son is the Word, but God the Father is the Will. It is the Father who decides the best moment.
Stay awake so you do not get surprised.	

37.	"For the coming of the Son of Man (2) will be just like (3) the days of Noah (1). (1) It is the narrative of Noah (the Flood). See article 21-F . (2) It is the {gift of the Holy Spirit} as (at the day of Pentecost). (3) This marks the comparison between the two advents. To go further, see chapter 29 .
38.	"For as in those days before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark,
39.	and they did not understand until the flood came and took them all away; so will the coming of the Son of Man be. (*) Here, people saw Noah making his ark. People took him for a fool and continued their little human life without worrying about anything. To go further, see chapter 29 .
40.	"Then there will be two men in the field; one will be taken and one will be left.
41.	"Two women <i>will be</i> grinding at the mill; one will be taken and one will be left. (*) The {birth of the Spirit} is obtained from one person, but not from the other.
42.	"Therefore be on the alert, for you do not know which day your Lord is coming. (*) Although baptized Catholic at 3 months and confirmed at 11, I had my {birth of the Spirit} spontaneously at 45 years old without knowing that it existed!
43.	"But be sure of this, that if the head of the house had known at what time of the night the thief was coming, he would have been on the alert and would not have allowed his house to be broken into.
44.	"For this reason you also must be ready; for the Son of Man is coming at an hour when you do not think <i>He will</i> . (*) The person who does not have his {birth of the Spirit} must not linger in order to work to obtain it, for no one knows when he is going to die and after that it will be too late .

| 25 | Celebration of the Word

The celebration of the Word (the mass) is important in order to gather the Christians and to grow their faith.

Even if you are from a "Christian movement **A**," nothing prevents you from going to the celebration of another "Christian movement **B**." All Christians celebrate the same Jesus Christ. **Even though the celebration is different, God always works the same way for everyone.** No Christian movement has power over the Holy Spirit. See article | 3-A |. Why? Our human world is in our human hands and the World of God is in the hands of God.

In reality, **the celebration of the Word** is a good way to **prepare oneself**.

Imagine for a moment:

- 1) If I had the {memorial of the communion with Christ} of article | 13-G | without the preparation of the Eucharistic communion at the church.
- 2) If I had my {birth of the Spirit} of article | 13-D | without the preparation of my catechesis telling me that I already have the {gift of the Holy Spirit} at my baptism Christian.

→ Then, I would have been totally lost, thinking that I had an illness or that I was haunted!

Personally, I was very well prepared. By cons, the thing that confused me is to realize that I had not received anything yet! I can assure you that if people really received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} at Christian baptism, the churches of Quebec would be crowded at all masses and none of them would fall into ruin...

So in this chapter, I invite you to prepare yourself...

| 25-A | Real phrases or poetry?

I give you a few phrases spoken during a Christian celebration.

- ° In your **Presence** Lord, it is true happiness;
- ° Our **Light** and our Salvation is the Lord;
- ° Let the Spirit of God **illuminate our hearts**;
- ° May the **Peace** of God be with you;
- ° May the **fire of God's love** be in your hearts;
- ° That the **Breath** of God gives us the necessary strength in our life;
- ° The Holy Spirit **who dwells in us**;
- ° God **Loves** us;
- ° God is **Holy**.

Before my {birth of the Spirit}, these phrases were for me only poetry. Afterwards, I really began to understand them because they were lived, real...

Later, I spoke about my Manifestations of the Holy Spirit with some religious people. I was sure that these Manifestations were frequent for them. They told me that it was quite rare. **I could not believe it!** What I got is far from extraordinary! **This is only the promise of the {gift of the Holy Spirit} for every disciple of Jesus!**

|25-B| Some basic knowledge of the celebration of the Word (the mass)

A) First of all.

This celebration is primarily a reminder of the Word of Jesus in the Gospels. Since St-Paul is a great founder, there are also some verses from his Epistles.

There are also the dogmas (these are secondary beliefs) of the Christian movement in particular (Catholic, Orthodox, Anglican, Protestant, and others) that may be more than 500 years old. So, the exact formula of the celebration depends on the Christian movement.

I tell you, you must study the Gospels, it is capital! They have only between 20 and 40 pages each. Afterward, you must read at least the beginning of the book of Acts of the Apostles to see and understand that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a **real Manifestation**. Obviously, you cannot be a Christian if you do not know the teachings of Christ...

To help you with the {inspiration} of the Holy Spirit that I have had, I give you the explanation of the mysterious verses of 2 Gospels, that of St-John and that of St-Matthew in chapters |23 and 24|. For historical explanations, see the translator's notes at the bottom of the Bible. The strength of the translator is the origin of the words used and the customs of the time. The strength of the [inspiration] of the Holy Spirit that I give you here is to understand the meaning of the Word and how to apply it now in 2017.

The Manifestations of the Holy Spirit I received in chapter |13| confirm the Gospels in 2017.

B) Here I give you the minimum of what you need to know in order to understand a celebration.

1) For the Old Testament (the first Covenant).

There is only One God.

God is the Creator. See article |21-B|.

God created the human free and innocent. See article |21-C|.

The human has perverted himself (to do evil). See articles |21-D and 21-E|.

God established the first Covenant with the Hebrew people to enlighten all nations. See Abraham in Genesis.

God has educated his people by giving him Laws. See the book of Exodus.

God says he does not want rituals, but sincerity of heart. See the texts of the prophets in chapter |22|.

2) For the New Testament (the second Covenant).

God sent His Son Jesus on earth. See the 4 Gospels.

The Father is the Will of God. The Holy Spirit is the Breath of Life of God. The Son is the Word of God.

Jesus is the Word of God made man on earth to reveal to the world, the Truth about God and his Plan of Eternal Life for every human being who follows his Way.

The human body of Jesus was made of the Will and Breath of God and not of the human will.

The angel Gabriel appeared to the Blessed Virgin Mary to know if she wanted to carry (in her womb) the Son of God (Jesus). What she accepted. The Son of God has taken our human condition to witness to the Truth of God and to proclaim the Kingdom.

Jesus, surrounded by his 12 apostles and about 70 disciples, taught a new doctrine, Christianity, a religion **of the heart** responsible for oneself.

The foundations of the doctrine are love and respect: of God, of others and of oneself.

The only One who is Perfectly Good (Holy) is God.

Evil comes from the bottom of the human. The human on earth who is deprived of the Presence of God is obviously attracted by the lust of power and material goods to the detriment of the well-being of other humans.

The human is made of flesh and blood. There is no "eternal soul" floating inside or coming out like a ghost at death.

Jesus presents himself to humans as the Word and the one who gives of his Bread of Eternal Life.

The person who puts this Word into himself and receives his Bread by the {gift of the Holy Spirit} will have Eternal Life in the Kingdom of his Father.

Eucharistic communion is the Memorial of the Sacrifice of the Body of Jesus on the Cross. Jesus gave his life for us.

The cup of wine is the Memorial of the Second Covenant established by the Sacrifice of Jesus. Jesus shed his blood for us.

C) In her Apparitions, the Blessed Virgin has said several times that we must put the Word in ourselves.

In short, here is what it consists of:

- 1) To believe in God. It is to recognize that nature on earth is the work of our Creator (God).
- 2) To believe in the Gospels. It is to recognize that Jesus is the Word of God and our Savior.
- 3) To convert oneself. It is to recognize that Jesus is the only Way to the only Truth towards the only Life. It is to reject evil of which the human is the sole author and to apply the teachings of Christ every day in our life.
- 4) To belong to God. It is putting our life in the hand of God so that he helps us to lead it. He alone holds the Absolute Knowledge in order to always make the right choice of action.
- 5) To receive the Bread of Life in oneself. This is done by the Action of God only during the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. Afterwards, the person is born to a new life that begins on earth and continues in the Kingdom of God after his pilgrimage on earth.

| 25-C | If I were a pastor and had only one homily to tell you

Here is...

Ask yourself these questions. Who does my life belong to? You will tell me, "To yourself." Who leads my life? Of course, you will tell me again, "Yourself!"

Surely you all want to go to the Kingdom of God. So since you drive your life yourself, do you know the road to go there? You are mortal, so if you drive your life alone, you will die. But God is Eternal, so if you let yourself be led by him, he will bring you to Eternal Life...

You say to yourself, God is so Good, he will take me to his Home anyway! It is unfortunately impossible...

You have all been baptized Christians. Why were you baptized? Surely because you believe in God. But by what telltale signs do we know that we believe in him?

You must look at nature with admiration and recognize the work of God everywhere. For parents and grandparents, you have to look at your children and grandchildren as gifts that God has entrusted to you. Nature on earth is the "garden" that God has given to all of us whether we are strong or weak. Since God is the origin of life on earth, we all live in his graces every day. Moreover, each of us would not exist without him, for he alone is Alive. Not wanting to have God in his life is as foolish as being on a lake and making holes in the hull of his boat, saying, "I am well paid to do it so I continue." The greatest proof that God exists is that our universe appeared from nothingness in a fireball (the Big Bang) that sterilized everything. The fundamental law of Pasteur's biology says that life cannot come from what has been sterilized. So since we are all alive, the Living God really exists too.

Now, what are our baptismal promises?

- ° To reject evil;
- ° To follow the teaching of Christ;
- ° To belong to Christ or God.

And what are the promises of God in return?

- ° The Manifestation of the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit};
- ° The Eternal Life in the Kingdom of God at the end of our days on earth.

For God to fulfill His Promise, we must first fulfill our promise.

1) What is: to reject evil?

I give you some examples. It is wanting to live in harmony with others. It is practicing justice. It is not to take advantage of others to accumulate objects or power. It is to be honest and straight.

2) What is: to follow the teaching of Christ?

It is to study the Gospels (the Word). It is to conform and to act daily with his prescriptions. Do you know what the word "faith" means? It means "to commit to the Way of Jesus" and not "I think."

3) What is: to belong to Christ or God?

I ask you: what is the basis of life? Yes, freedom. Why do you believe that God is so absent on earth? Why do not we see him on every street corner? It is because he lets us do what we want with the life he gave us. Then by what right can he bring us into his kingdom if we do not belong to him? Is he a thief of life? Understand that no one can go to his Kingdom if he does not give him his life. Respect for his own law prevents him from doing so. God cannot unite His Life (the Holy Spirit) to our life if we do not sincerely desire it. A bond of belonging between himself and us must exist. God must become our Father and we must truly become his {children}.

Concretely, we passed our Christian examination when our promise of baptism is fulfilled in our heart! Words from the lips have no value for God. Now, to pass our Christian examination, we must ask God for help, we must know how to pray. See chapter | 26 |.

In prayer, you must be humble and sincere.

1) You must pray to God to give you the ability to pray to him in his own way.

2) You must ask him to increase your ability to believe in him.

3) You must ask God for the necessary strength to sincerely forgive all those who have hurt you. Of course, you do not have to stand next to them to get them to do it again.

4) You must ask for peace in your mind.

5) God alone is Perfect. He always knows what to do. Obviously, if we were really able to run our lives alone, then we would have a nice, clean planet! But it is the opposite, earth is so polluted that ecologists do not know what to say! We succeed in building gigantic cities and ascending to the Moon, but we fail what is most precious, life, since we destroy it. Will God take with him into his Kingdom of Life the destroyers? You must then ask God to guide your life. You must sincerely deposit your life in his hand.

6) Ask him the ability to love him, because no one knows how to love like him.

7) Humanly, God calls us to heal from death, because we can do evil here. So in all humility, tell him that you are mad and that he comes to heal you of your human folly. Tell him you are lost without him. Tell him that you do not want to live without him by your side. Tell him that you need him, that you are weak and stupid. In reality, in front of Him, we are all like that...

8) During our journey on earth, we all go through deserts where life and death confront one another. Whether it is a lack of work, all forms of addiction, illness, our departure sooner or later from earth. Without realizing it, God always accompanies us whether in our successes or in our failures. But what exactly are our human failures? Without knowing it, they are Salutory. In reality, all the failures of our life are a "stepladder" to reach the hand of God. Our desperation here on earth added to our hope in him is the cry of the heart necessary for him to come and save us! When we have tried everything and we are unable to continue, let us shout to him and he will come to give us hope and his Breath of Life.

God loves us so much, you cannot imagine it!

| 25-D | I give you the great points of the recipe to get your {birth of the Spirit}

See also chapter | 12 |.

- 1) You must practice what Jesus asks of you every day to the point of noticing that people reject you because you are good and honest, and it is not in this way that people get rich.
- 2) You strive, but you cannot join what Jesus asks with the criteria of success of our society.
- 3) You forgive everyone and make the choice to continue to be good and honest, even though it seems to you that you do not succeed much in the eyes of our society.
- 4) Afterward you seek God truly, that he may come to help you.
- 5) After your search, you are 100% convinced that he exists.
- 6) Finally, you give him your life to guide it, because you do not know what to do with it anyway. **See the note below.**

That is it, you have succeeded what your Creator asked you to do.

7) Then, without knowing it, the Lord will take you into his charge to finalize your conversion and give you his Gift of Life. You will be reborn to a new life as a {God's child} on earth.

Note from the step 6):

You can see earth as a tree and every human being as a bud. The bud develops and can become a fruit. God picks up the fruit only when it is ready to fall from the tree by itself. God does not tear you from the tree, you quietly detach yourself from it. You are then ripe for the Kingdom of God, hence the {birth of the Spirit} already on earth. **God gives you a second Life on earth that is much more interesting!** Success in society becomes secondary because the Lord accompanies you.

| 26 | Prayer

Prayer is very important. For those who are not comfortable with prayer, know that: reading passages from the Bible; talking about God to the people around us; humming songs of God are also prayer for him. Why? God is always beside us now without us seeing him. We could say that God is the Supreme Consciousness. You can talk to one of your relatives and say that you would like God help you (this without the slightest inner prayer) and you will notice 2 weeks later that you have received what you needed! Why? This is because God gives us little signs sometimes and it is up to us to recognize them, because he lets us be free to find him or not.

| 26-A | I give you a piece of advice for prayer

I have noticed that my prayers are (more answered) when I speak in a low voice. As if God is not really going to hear our mental babbling in our head. God being our Creator, he knows that we do not have complete control over this babbling. On the other hand, we control our actions like the words that come out of our mouth. So, he is listening to us. That is the explanation I found, so I give it to you...

| 26-B | Who should we pray and how should we do it?

To answer these questions, let us look at what the Gospels write:

NT	St-Matthew	6,5-15	"When you pray, you are not to be like the hypocrites; for they love to stand and pray in the synagogues and on the street corners so that they may be seen by men. Truly I say to you, they have their reward in full. "But you, when you pray, go into your inner room, close your door and pray to your Father (1) who is in secret, and your Father who sees <i>what is done</i> in secret will reward you. "And when you are praying, do not use meaningless repetition as the Gentiles do, for they suppose that they will be heard for their many words. "So do not be like them; for your Father knows what you need before you ask Him (2) . "Pray, then, in this way: `Our Father (3) who is in heaven, Hallowed be Your name. `Your kingdom come. Your will be done, On earth as it is in heaven. `Give us this day our daily bread. `And forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors. `And do not lead us into temptation, but deliver us from evil. [For Yours is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever. Amen] ` <u>"For if you forgive others for their transgressions, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. "But if you do not forgive others, then your Father will not forgive your transgressions.</u>
	St-John	4,21-24	Jesus said to her, "Woman, believe Me, an hour is coming when neither in this mountain nor in Jerusalem will you worship the Father. "You worship what you do not know; we worship what we know, for salvation is from the Jews. "But an hour is coming, and now is, when the true worshipers will worship the Father (4) in spirit and truth (5) ; for such people the Father seeks to be His worshipers. "God is spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth."
		16,23-27	"In that day you will not question Me about anything. Truly, truly, I say to you, if you ask the Father for anything in My name, He will give it to you. "Until now you have asked for nothing in My name; ask and you will receive, so that your joy may be made full. "These things I have spoken to you in figurative language; an hour is coming when I will no longer speak to you in figurative language, but will tell you plainly of the Father. "In that day you will ask in My name (6), and I do not say to you that I will request (7) of the Father on your behalf; for the Father Himself loves you (8) , because you have loved Me and have believed that I came forth from the Father.
	St-Luke	18,18-19	A ruler questioned Him, saying, "Good Teacher, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?" And Jesus said to him, "Why do you call Me good? No one is good except God alone (9) .
	Acts of the Apostles	10,25-26	When Peter entered, Cornelius met him, and fell at his feet and worshiped <i>him</i> . But Peter raised him up, saying, "Stand up; I too am just a man (10). "

Here are the main ideas extracted:

- (1) Pray to your Father.
- (2) For your Father knows what you need before you ask Him.
- (3) Our Father who is in heaven, Hallowed be Your name.
- (4) The true worshipers will worship the Father.
- (5) In spirit and truth. (This is the Holy Spirit).
- (6) You will ask in My name. (This is Jesus).
- (7) I (Jesus) do not say to you that I will request of the Father on your behalf.
- (8) For the Father Himself loves you.
- (9) No one is good except God alone.
- (10) But Peter raised him up, saying, "Stand up; I too am *just* a man."

Now, let's answer our questions:

A) Whom should we pray?

- (1) Pray to your Father.
- (2) For your Father knows what you need before you ask Him.
- (3) Our Father who is in heaven, Hallowed be Your name.
- (4) The true worshipers will worship the Father.
- (8) For the Father Himself loves you.
- (10) But Peter raised him up, saying, "Stand up; I too am *just* a man."

Only God.

B) Do we need the intercession of another person?

- (2) For your Father knows what you need before you ask Him.
- (7) I (Jesus) do not say to you that I will request of the Father on your behalf.
- (8) For the Father Himself loves you.
- (9) No one is good except God alone.
- (10) But Peter raised him up, saying, "Stand up; I too am *just* a man."

No.

C) How should we pray?

- (2) For your Father knows what you need before you ask Him.
- (3) Our Father who is in heaven, Hallowed be Your name.
- (5) In spirit and truth. (This is the Holy Spirit).
- (6) You will ask in My name (6). (This is Jesus).

We must pray with confidence, humility and gratitude.
We must ask the Father's help to send us the Holy Spirit to guide us in our prayer.
When it is really important, we can make requests to the Father in the name of his Son (Jesus).

D) What should we ask and what will we receive?

(2) For your Father knows what you need before you ask Him.

God will only give us what is really good for us.

Although the Lord knows our needs, it is important to pray to him and entrust him with our requests regularly.

Why?

1) Prayer allows you to stay in touch with the Lord in order to gain moral support.

2) The Lord constantly sees the evil that the human is doing on earth. The Lord suffers enormously and it is his great capacity to love that allows him to endure all this without putting an end to our world. So, we must understand that in the eyes of the Lord, our suffering is very little compared to his own. Then we have to remind him from time to time that we are weak and that we need him. It is true that you can obtain something from the Lord without any request. But in general, we know that a child who often asks his or her parent is much more likely to be answered than a child who asks for nothing...

Never deprive yourself of praying and asking...

|26-C| A little guide, how to pray in order to get what we really need

The difficulty is that even if our request seems good to us, if in the eyes of God it is not, we will not have it. So since we are not perfect to make such a perfect request, we must know how to pray...

A) In summary:

- 1) To be sincere in your approach.
- 2) To take time to meditate (to gather one's thoughts).
- 3) To ask God for forgiveness for the evil you do without even realizing it sometimes.
- 4) To be a humble child in front of your loving parent.
- 5) To confide in God and say what is wrong with your life.
- 6) To give God the freedom to answer you or not.
- 7) To be patient and try to see what you can do for yourselves.
- 8) To understand that only God knows what is good for you.
- 9) To understand that only God knows what to do.
- 10) To understand that only God knows when to act, so you have to be patient...
- 11) It is important to remember to ask for "gifts" such as patience, peace, the ability to love, etc.
- 12) Thank God for everything he gives you even if you do not understand at the time.

You will be surprised what you will get!

B) I give you an example of kindness and patience.

In the Old Testament, God promised a son (Isaac) to Abraham and Sarah (his wife) because she was sterile. Do you know when the promise of God came true? 12 years later. Why? The Lord wanted to experience the faith of Abraham because he had a great plan for him (the 1st Covenant) in order to establish his people.

|26-D| List of songs with video editing

A good way to pray is to listen and hum songs. It is very pleasant and relaxing.

Here is a list of Internet keywords (Google and YouTube)	
I will lift my eyes (with lyrics)	Find in my life your Presence
Lamb of God	You are the song I sing
You raise me up (with lyrics)	In your hands
This is the air I breathe (with lyrics)	Gethsemane song

The chaplet of divine mercy in song	Talk to me - Love Jesus
Almighty God	Father, I love you
Give me courage, Lord	Gethsemane
Adonai	Open my eyes Lord
Light of the world	Look at the star
Humble heart's cry (with lyrics)	Jesus Christ you are my life - Son of God
Lead me Lord	Covenant worship - How great (Lyric Video)
Come Holy Spirit	I am a child of God
Lord God of Abraham	Sorry forgiving Lord
Shout to the Lord (with lyrics)	Nearer, my God, to thee
The most beautiful "Ave Maria" I've ever heard	Psalm of creation

| 26-E | List of useful prayers

Before starting this article, I will tell you about one of the biggest evils of our society. **The stress!**

It is difficult to concentrate on prayer when we are stressed out. So a little rest time is needed. Why? In psychology, we know that prolonged stress produces paralyzing hormones that block the pain in our head. Since there is only one conduit of feelings, which says "blocked suffering" also says "pleasant feelings to live blocked" at the same time. In the long run, this can lead to memory loss and depression. As the brain has become rigid, it no longer repairs itself and becomes unhappy. This being the major cause of the overconsumption of our society. It needs a lot of compensation to support its suffering...

I tell you, our brain is a wonder that needs our good care!

Now, let's go back to prayer...

Here is a list of simple sentences that show you how to pray. Use the ones that you like (only according to your level of belief) and complete with your inspiration of the moment. Do not feel obliged to go further than your sincerity. Praying is not a chore. You have to take a little time each day.

I recommend you use the word **Lord**. The Name is simple and as God is Trinitarian, it can go for all 3 as ONE God. God is neither male (Man) nor female (Woman). Jesus said there is no gender in the Kingdom of God. So when you pray, see the Lord as your Father, your Mother or your Creator, the One with whom you can tell everything.

A) Simple basic prayer sentences:

- 1) Lord, I apologize for not praying to you as often as you would like.
- 2) Lord, I am tired this evening, but tomorrow I will pray unto you, I promise!
- 3) Lord, forgive me for the evil I do.
- 4) Lord, I know I am not as good as you would like. Help me to become better.
- 5) Lord, help me to forgive others, the evil they have done to me.
- 6) Lord, give me peace in my head.
- 7) Lord, increase in me my patience.
- 8) Lord, help me to discover you.
- 9) Lord, help me to trust you.
- 10) Lord, I am scared to live, come rescue me!
- 11) Lord, I have little confidence in this human world, but I trust you!

- 12) Lord, take my suffering, I am no longer able to bear it alone!
- 13) Lord, give me the strength to help others.
- 14) Lord, thank you for all the help you give me.
- 15) Lord, forgive me for not knowing how to recognize your help in my life.
- 16) Lord, I know that Jesus said that the body is very little compared to the {gift of the Holy Spirit} that you want to do to me. I know that with you, nothing is impossible. So, I trust you. Please give me better health so that I can believe more in you.
- 17) Lord, thank you for being healthy.
- 18) Lord, I pray you for my family, so that it may be more united in your peace.
- 19) Lord, help me and my family members to believe in you.
- 20) Lord, thank you for this book that I have in my hands because it comes from you.

B) Simple intermediate prayer sentences:

- 21) Lord, allow me to see the misery around me to bring the help that I can.
- 22) Lord, I understand that this time of my sickness is a time set aside to discover you, and to finally have the grace of my {birth of the Spirit}.
- 23) Lord, I understand that this time of my lack of job is a time set aside to discover you, and to finally have the grace of my {birth of the Spirit}.
- 24) Lord, I apologize for not taking enough time for you.
- 25) Lord, I do not deserve you to take time for me.
- 26) Lord, help me to pray better to you.
- 27) Lord, I do not deserve that you love me. On the other hand, I know that, whatever my sin, you are always there for me by your Forgiveness.
- 28) Lord, I do not deserve that you be dead on the cross for me.
- 29) Lord, I am only a stupid human, I need you to guide me, because I do not know what to do.
- 30) Lord, help me to love you as you love me.
- 31) Lord, give me the strength to understand the suffering of others and to respond to it.
- 32) Lord, forgive me for making you suffer, for I often deaf to your Word (the Gospels).
- 33) Lord, I am sick physically, can you please heal me? Then, I will make of the healing that you grant me a sign of your Presence and of your Love around me.
- 34) Lord, begin by healing me of my spiritual blindness not to know you enough. Then, if you want, heal me physically. Then I will be able to testify to your Presence and your Love to the people who surround me.
- 35) Lord, heal me when you want, O Lord, in your time and not in mine. I love you so much!

C) Use a precious help, Psalms in the Bible.

Sometimes we do not know what to say to the Lord, we lack inspiration. Then the Bible is very precious.

Inside, in the Old Testament, there is a book called Psalms, which has 150 readings. The mere act of reading and internalizing them is a prayer. The Lord is Love and he asks you to open your heart to him. To do this, you need to put a little time. In these Scriptures, if you see Yahweh or Adonai, it means God or Lord.

D) Have an answer from God.

Many people say to themselves, "I pray, but God does not answer me!"

This is not entirely true...

The Gospels, the Acts of the Apostles and the Epistles are very precious tools.

These inspired texts are the Word of God. **Jesus left us his Word.** So we just have to read it to find the answers to our questions and get the necessary encouragement...

Did you notice that during my Manifestations of the Spirit of chapter | 13 |, I always needed to use the New Testament texts to understand? Then the message is simple, everything is there! We only have to look inside it to find the answers we need...

In short, reading the texts of the Bible (Old or New Testament) is also prayer.

E) Simple sentences of advanced prayers:

Now, I give you prayers that I naturally made of myself some time before my {birth of the Spirit}. I do not give them to you to learn or recite them, but only to look at them. I give them to you to show you at what level of belief you must feel naturally before the Lord grants you your {birth of the Spirit}. We must know that we humans, we deserve nothing from God. It is God who gives us access to him. No great sacrifice is necessary! Your sincerity and openness of heart for him are sufficient.

Know that the Lord can give us real psychological help! If you do not have patience, ask him and he will give you some. If you do not know how to love, ask him and he will give you the ability. If you do not know how to pray, ask him and he will teach you how to say the most beautiful prayers of the heart. Yes, they will, of course, be madness for man, but Wisdom for God.

Let's go.

36) Lord, forgive me for the evil that I sometimes do without knowing it.

37) Lord, I apologize for making you suffer from my wickedness.

38) Lord, I need your peace in my head.

39) Lord, I need you to help me lead my life, because only you always know what to do. I do not know...

40) Lord, I am lost without you, I need you.

41) Lord, only you are perfect, come to heal me of my human folly.

42) Lord, I do not want to live without your Presence beside me.

43) Lord, help me to love you more, because only you know how to love.

44) Lord, I need to feel your Presence always in my life. Never go away from me.

45) Lord, I do not have much to tell you tonight. Just let me sleep in your arms tonight.

46) Lord, let me understand what you expect from me.

47) Lord, I would like to testify about you, but I do not have the strength to do it.

48) Lord, I do not deserve to see your face at the end of my days on earth. I deserve nothing from you.

49) Lord, my life is yours and it will always be yours.

50) Lord, I need your life in me.

For those who now know that the {birth of the Spirit} exists (what I did not know before).

51) Lord, make me feel your Love in me to increase my love for you.

52) Lord, my life is yours. Please give me my {birth of the Spirit} so that I may live in you and you in me.

53) Lord, I give you my life for you to give me your Life (the Holy Spirit).

54) Lord, make me your {child} so that I Live Eternally with you.

55) Lord, I belong to you forever.

F) To help you be more sincere in your prayers.

God is the Source of all life. If you exist right now, it is because he exists too. If you eat, it is because you eat what he has deposited for all of us on Earth. As I told you, Earth was totally sterile (lifeless), 4 billion years ago.

God is Love and Freedom! He does not allow himself to unite his Eternal Life (the Holy Spirit) with the little mortal life he has given you if you do not give it to him sincerely and forever. God is not a thief! I know it is hard to take, but it is the pure Truth. For those who want to go to their {birth of the Spirit}, the more sincere you are, the faster it will be.

G) Prayer during the Eucharist.

The Eucharist is the memorial of the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross. He gave his human life for us. He shares with us his Eternal Life (the Holy Spirit) that he receives from the Father.

I had 2 Manifestations of the Holy Spirit during the Eucharist, one for the communion with the Body and one for the communion with the Blood of Christ. See article | 13-G |. In principle, I will not receive any other Eucharistic Manifestation for the rest of my life.

At the mass, this memorial is very important and a Christian must prepare himself. To help you, I give you the way I prepare myself and an example of prayer.

Here are:

1) I go to get the Eucharist bread, I put it in my hand then I go back to my bench without eating it. Back at my bench, I take a moment to pray to the Lord in my head.

<u>2) An example of prayer:</u>

Lord, I do not deserve your life. I deserve nothing from you. Forgive me for the evil I do. Lord, I am not capable of loving you the way you love me. I do not have much to offer you, I am only a little human being of nothing at all. But my life is yours and it will always be. Help me to do your commandments every day. Never separate me from your life. I do not want to live without you, because I would be lost without you. Thank you for all the graces you give me each day. Please protect my family and give it your Peace. Amen.

3) Now, I eat the Eucharist bread.

H) For those who are seriously ill.

From the bottom of your heart, ask a small extension of life to the Lord in order to reach his hand.

I will help you with an example of prayer:

Lord, my life is coming to an end and I am scared ... I often hurt, I am tired, I am sick and I really need you! I still have not received your Life, the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, because I am not yet ready to receive it. I do not want to be deprived of your Face. I need hope and you are my God. Lord, would you give me the grace to obtain a little extension of life so that I may prepare myself sincerely? Lord, help me to truly believe in you so that I may end my conversion from the heart and offer you my life so that you may unite it to your Life. Thank you for granting me this favor by the love of your Son Jesus. I defer to you and put all my hope in your hand.

Repeat this prayer every evening and add your inspiration of the moment.

Now, do not waste any time and work hard on the conversion Way of Jesus.

The Lord will give you your chance, for sure, **but do not play with him**, he knows your heart more than yourself!

This prayer is not to heal your body and return to amuse you with the distractions of our world! No, this prayer is to obtain a small extension of life in order to heal from death and obtain Eternal Life. Life on earth is only a passage, do not forget it...

Trust him and you will be rewarded, be assured!

If you do not get anything, it is because you do not believe enough in God or do not work hard enough on the Way of conversion of Jesus. Chapters |5 and 6| can help you.

|26-F| What can I ask God?

A) First.

We must ask for psychological help to support us in our Way of conversion. You have to ask him the ability: to forgive; to be good; to have peace in oneself; to know better to pray; to be more patient; the ability to love better; to be more charitable; to be more humble.

B) Second.

We can ask for physical healings or small miracles. But that is not part of the 2nd Covenant, so you have to be patient and confident. These healings and miracles are mainly to help us really believe in him. The step of (to truly believe in God) will be necessary to finalize your Way of conversion in order to obtain your {birth of the Spirit}. For God, reaching your {birth of the Spirit} is important because he is the Life. He would like to share his Life with you forever. For him, a physical healing does not have much value comparatively with the Eternal Life. On the other hand, if you need a little help to advance in your faith, **he will give it to you**. Also, it is possible that what you receive will not be exactly what you requested. Why? It is because God only does perfect things! Your requests may seem perfect for you and not be perfect for him! Then, he will give you the gift you really need and not necessarily the one you have imagined! Be humble enough to thank him for the gift he will give you. God is not a Parent who spoils his children. God is a Parent who educates his children so that they may grow up.

|26-G| How can I ask God for things?

At your {birth of the Spirit}, you will really understand that Earth and nature are the good of God. Without knowing it, we live in his good since our childhood. You do not have to be hard on God because your life does not go your way! God created all this out of pure generosity so that all living beings are free and happy. It is we humans who run our society as we please. If we are not happy with our fate, let us give our hand to build better and do not blame God.

So, ask for everything you really need humbly and lovingly and you will never miss the essentials in your life.

A) Basic prayer.

1) Preparation.

We have to take some time. At least five minutes.

We must meditate (to gather one's thoughts).

I advise you to pray in a low voice and not in your head. Personally, I realized that my prayers are (more answered) in this way.

2) The fundamental.

Start by asking God for forgiveness. He alone is perfect.

Ask him peace in your head. Without peace, we cannot pray sincerely.

Ask him to help you pray.

Ask him to help you become better.

Tell him that you need him in your life.

Tell him to show you how to love in his own way (God himself and others).

Tell him what is bothering you in your life.

Ask him humbly for help in his own way. Nobody fully understands the Wisdom of God, so let him act in his own way...

Thank him for all the benefits he gives you even if you do not see it at the moment.

Thank him for your human life even if you sometimes suffer.

Note:

In the Gospels, the verses that tell of the Way of Conversion are easy to understand. You do not need to understand the "mysteries of God" to make your conversion of the heart. There is nothing mysterious about becoming a good person, straight and honest. I had my {birth of the Spirit} when I knew no mystery.

B) Advanced prayer.

1) For the step of "to truly believe in God."

Lord, help me in my search for you...

Here are some suggestions:

Get inspiration from chapters | 5 and 6 |. They count several miracles.

Get out of your daily stress and go for a walk in nature. Nature is God's Creation so you see his goodness and greatness inside. Take your time, use your senses to soak up the benevolent presence of nature. Nature is the garden of God. Learn to look at each plant and animal as a little being that God has created for us. Walk in his garden and take the time to enjoy his peace...

Get out in the evening by a beautiful starry sky. Lie down on the ground and take the time to contemplate the sky. You imagine yourself! We are on the only blue planet in the universe...

Look at your children or grandchildren. Contemplate the innocence of their eyes. God has entrusted them to you...

Take a moment to thank the Lord for the food on your table.

(*) The Lord will not do the work for you, you must seek him ardently.

2) To complete the step of "baptism or birth of water."

Lord, help me to complete my Way of conversion to you.

Lord, help me to become a better person.

Lord, I am a sinner and I do not deserve your Life. I only deserve to end my life in the ground and never see your Face!

Lord, I do not trust our world that does evil easily (our evil human world).

Lord, I trust only you.

3) For the preparation of the {birth of the Spirit}:

Lord, I need you in my life.

Lord, I need you always near me.

Lord, I do not want to live without you.

Lord, I am nothing without you.

Lord, my life is yours forever.

Lord, I would like to testify about you around me, but I am not able to do it.

This is the cry of the heart that I made to obtain my {birth of the Spirit}. By cons, these are not magic sentences! **You will only have it through a deep and sincere preparation.**

You cannot lie to God because he reads in your heart! If you do not receive your {birth of the Spirit}, continue working on:

- ° Your step of "truly believing in God";
- ° Your Way of conversion;
- ° Your willingness to take action for God in your life;
- ° To give your life to the Lord.

One day when you are really ready, the Holy Spirit will Manifest to you as he did to me.

There are no magic recipes. There is only you in front of God.

Notes:

Do not be afraid to use the prayers of Christian movements other than your own (Catholic, Orthodox, Protestant, Anglican or others), because all Christians pray to the same God and Father. You should know that there are only a few beliefs and traditions that change from one Christian movement to another.

There are many websites offering free prayer. Just search with the keywords: "Christian prayers, Christian prayer songs." This is the case of the Mouvement Cursillos Francophone du Canada (MCFC) which lists several hundred written prayers and videos of prayer songs.

It is important to reserve at least (30 minutes for prayer every 3 days) in order to get out of your daily worries and get closer to the Lord.

| 27 | Additional topics

Here I discuss small subjects that do not need the complete elaboration of a chapter.

| 27-A | The Blessed Virgin Mary

In 2017, sexism should no longer exist in Christianity. Man and woman were made by God to complement each other. Everyone should be proud of it. Moreover, everyone should recognize the qualities of each other that are so important to life and its maintenance on earth.

For the Blessed Virgin Mary. There is, of course, nothing in the New Testament to ask for her intercession in front of God. On the other hand, there have been many Apparitions of her and there are some still today. So rigidity is fine, but there are undeniable facts and we must remain flexible.

As the New Testament says nothing, I will try to say something...

I unfortunately know that many children on earth did not have a very loving image of their father. So, how can you easily believe in the Heavenly Father's Love? On the other hand, in general, most children had a pretty loving image of their mother. It would make sense to think that in order to circumvent this human problem, God the Father asked the human mother of Jesus to become **a spokeswoman for God's Love**. She would be, in a way, **the feminine face of God** for all humans who need it. Christians had the image of the Father and the Heavenly Son. On the other hand, Christians did not have the image of a Heavenly Mother.

I see a very beautiful message from the Lord in the Apparitions of the Blessed Virgin Mary.

A) Who was she?

She was not of a religious order or even of one of the many current Christian movements. She did not fight the devil and demons. She had no power or money. She was not an apostle (a man). She was a loving woman. She was a devoted mother. She was sensitive and fragile. She was humble. She was looking for the truth. She gave her life to God.

B) She gives us a beautiful lesson of humility.

In the group of the disciples of Jesus, she is present, but silent. The Gospels tell very little about her, so we do not know much about her.

Yet with her many Apparitions, God raised her to the rank of "Ambassador of faith." When she appears, people say that she is so Beautiful! Mary says that she is Beautiful because she Loves!

You see the Love of God and his Reward for those who trust him and follow him...

C) There is a question to ask.

Why some Christian movements did not give women a full place (example for the priesthood) when God raised a woman to the title of "Ambassador of faith?" It is good to remember that the first Apparitions of the Risen Jesus were made to the holy women and not to the holy apostles.

So, let's ask ourselves the question in our lives, is power more important than **truth**?

D) Nowadays, why does Mary appear to us?

Mary is not supposed to give us messages since the Father has given us the Holy Spirit as Intercessor. Mary is supposed to be happy in Heaven without all our human worries. On the other hand, her Presence here on earth is undeniable since there have been miracles of her. Then, why does she Appear? I give you a little summary of his most recent messages. Mary encourages Christians: to trust in God; to give priority to her Son Jesus in our life; to gather one's; to pray and to

convert. On second thought, all this is already in the New Testament, so why does she tell us that? The answer is simple: Mary does catechesis to Christians. Why? Christians do not read the Gospels and some Christian movements have even dissociated themselves from the Gospels since a long time. Many Christians do not believe enough in God since they do not receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. Unfortunately, many Christians want physical healings in order to return to have fun in our society... deep down they do not want to convert.

|27-B| Charismatic movements

Personally, I had my {birth of the Spirit} spontaneously at night when I was ready and God decided it.

On the other hand, I believe that being part of a charismatic movement can help a person to prepare by meditation, prayers and songs. **It is very good...**

You must understand that no human being can give you the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. So, the laying on of hands is only a concrete sign on your part to show that you want to receive it, **it is a preparation.**

In the assembly, "those who play the fake pretence" do not receive more than others. In addition, it takes credibility off the movement and harms those who need the strength of the group. **So, stay true!**

For the "speaking in tongues," here is what St-Paul says about it:

NT	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	14,18-19	I thank God, I speak in tongues more than you all; however, in the church I desire to speak five words with my mind so that I may instruct others also, rather than ten thousand words in a tongue.
		14,27-28	If anyone speaks in a tongue, <i>it should be</i> by two or at the most three, and <i>each</i> in turn, and one must interpret; but if there is no interpreter, he must keep silent in the church; and let him speak to himself and to God.

The message I have had from the Lord is that the {birth of the Spirit} is always done in the same way. See article |10-I|. Then, speak with the language you want (in tongues or other), the Lord understands them all! In reality, a language is a code. The Lord does not need a code, he reads the feelings directly into the human brain.

|27-C| Becoming a better person/A good help on the Way of conversion of Jesus

It is true that our society operates according on the basis of appearance. It is much easier to "look like" than it is to really be someone. Beautiful clothes, a nice car, a fake smile, beautiful stereotypical phrases and "the trick is done," it is the way of ease...

In reality, Jesus asks to become a good person: true, honest, fair, charitable, caring, kind, etc. So many people wonder how to do the "feat" that Jesus asks...

The answer is simple: wanting it and putting it into practice every day.

Whatever the field (climbing, running, etc.), you have to practice the proverb: "practice makes perfect." It is by striving to become patient that one becomes very patient in the long run. It is by striving to be honest in small things that one becomes honest also for great things. Your body has the ability to train. Your brain also has the same ability to train. Someone who cultivates selfishness becomes more and more selfish. Someone who cultivates altruism becomes more and more altruistic. **You become what you cultivate in you.**

To go further, see chapter |16|.

|27-D| The difference between forgiveness and reconciliation

- 1) Forgiving everyone is a **necessary** step for the {birth of the Spirit}.
- 2) On the other hand, reconciliation with the person who has harmed us **is not** necessary for the {birth of the Spirit}.

A) Why?

This is because it is impossible to be reconciled with:

- ° A person who does not want;
- ° A person who does not believe that he has wronged you;
- ° A person who is dead.

Reconciliation does not depend solely on oneself, but on the other as well. We would then be blocked to have our {birth of the Spirit}.

B) What to do...

Forgiveness is personal.

I can forgive someone in my heart without him knowing it.

- ° To forgive, it is not to keep resentment for this person;
- ° To forgive, it is not to desire revenge;
- ° To forgive, it is to accept the other as he is.

However, accepting the other (as he is) does not mean staying in touch with that person who is hurting you. You are free to be close to a person or not. Jesus does not ask to play martyrdom!

C) I give you a psychology tip for forgiveness.

Do you know that there are people who really like to do evil and they do it consciously? In psychology, a person with this personality disorder is called "a pervert" and it is a real psychic problem.

Contrary to what people believe, perversion and sexuality have absolutely no connection. Perversion is "doing evil and loving to do it," that is all. In reality, we can do evil in every facet of our lives.

There are only 2 major categories of people who do evil:

1) A person who does not realize it. This is the vast majority of cases...

So, you cannot keep resentful to a person who is in ignorance!

2) A person who has a perverse personality disorder. It is rare, but it exists...

So, you cannot keep resentful to a person who is sick! Stay away from this person because he will destroy you...

D) To trust people too easily.

Unfortunately, many people are 2 faces. There is the appearance and there is the inside of the person.

Many people have realized that they can get more than one situation by playing on two boards at the same time. We find the greatest evidence in the field of business.

In psychology, there is even an expert of the double face, it is the manipulator. It is the master of fine words and beautiful clothes. He plays the caring person until you get caught up in his trap. Basically, you are the fly in his spider web.

I give you 2 tips:

1) What is pressing so much?

Before making a commitment, take the time to find out who you are dealing with. It takes at least 3 months to know a person. Moreover, it is only in difficult times that we really discover who the other is. In short, everyone is nice when it is going well. The opposite is not always the case.

2) Jesus said, "We recognize a tree by its fruits."

Let's go back to forgiveness...

I wanted to show you here that sometimes we have trouble forgiving because we have been too fast. We wanted to believe so much that people took advantage of it.

In reality, it is the fault of whom exactly, the other or ourselves?

E) In some cases, to obtain peace in us, it is even necessary to forgive oneself.

Often, the difficulty of people who do not forgive resides in the firm belief that they can predict the future. If I had known! If I could go back!

1) Sometimes they are very responsible people. They are responsible for everything even future events.

2) Sometimes they are very rigid people who do not allow themselves to make a mistake. But it is human to make a mistake and everyone does it!

3) Sometimes they are people who do a lot of guilt. In psychology, guilt is very destructive because the person can get sick.

F) If your parents hurt you...

Tell yourself that their own parents hurt them long before you. So they took this evil and passed it on to you. It is very likely that you may pass this evil on to your own children who will be angry with you one day. At that time, it is obvious that you would like your children to forgive you. So, do it for your own parents too! If your parents are always hurting you, you do not have to stay next to them.

G) In short.

Jesus said to stop doing evil, because evil only causes evil. Understand that the hate you have inside destroys your body much more than the one that hurt you. Many people are sick because they do not forgive others. Sometimes it happens that it is our own guilt that destroys us. So, to find peace, we must forgive everyone without exception and even to ourselves. When you forgive, you can do it alone in your head without telling anyone. In addition, you do not have to stay beside those who hurt you unless you like to suffer!

If you need help, go see a psychologist.

| 27-E | A Manifestation of the Spirit about forgiveness

Note:

This article was added to the work at the end of 2023.

I had the {gift of the Spirit} in March 2016. Afterwards, for a period of about 4 months, I had the patience of an angel! Afterwards, my impatience started again little by little. Of course, I am human like everyone else, and our unfair society is not easy for anyone and tends to wear down our patience over time. So, at the end of November 2023, I realized that I had accumulated little resentments here and there over the last few years.

Here is my Manifestation of the Spirit of December 3, 2023:

In the night, I slept and thought of nothing in the dark. I felt that the Breath of God filled my heart. I then began to remember all my little accumulated resentments. As the continuous Breath entered my heart, I felt that the Goodness of God is infinite. I felt that being a {God's child}, I too had to forgive and forget my little accumulated resentments. In the morning, my resentments no longer existed.

In article |17-B|, I explained that in psychology, there is a close link between our capacity to suffer and to love. In this Manifestation of December 3, I admit to having been truly disconcerted by the infinite Goodness of God! Obviously, this explains God's great ability to endure our evil world. Becoming a {God's child} also means understanding that our Heavenly Father suffers far more than we do, but always forgives.

| 28 | The same message since 2,000 years

| 28-A | A religion or a relationship

What Jesus asks is much more than a religion. A religion, it is human... with objects and rituals. Jesus wants a real **relationship** already on earth with you. Following Jesus is a way of living of every day. It is deciding to be part of his big family right now.

The Way of Christ is difficult. Why? It is because the evil that humans do is very present and affects everyone. So, you have a choice to make. Are you going to become a **child of light** or of darkness? For children of darkness, why do you want to go to Heaven? Why go to a place without evil if you do not already want to work in this direction on earth? Without an effort and an ardent desire, no one goes to Heaven!

You tell yourself that the steps of the {birth of water} toward the {birth of the Spirit} are not... nothing. You are right! But Eternal Life is not either... nothing! To have Eternal Life is a choice, it is a Reward.

Unfortunately, many Christians have been put to sleep by some Christian movements as I was myself. Yes, it is very insecure to seek the truth. On the other hand, with God, lies do not bring anyone anywhere!

In this book, I told you the truth. It is up to you to make your decision. The message that the Lord has asked me to do is in your hands...

| 28-B | God's plan in a simple and pictorial way

You can compare our Earth to a **garden** from which God comes to gather beautiful flowers for his House. Will you become one of his beautiful flowers to please him? If you decide yes, he will help you grow. You have all your human life at your disposal so that God will come and tell you that He will bring you with Him by the mark of the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.

The {gift of the Holy Spirit} is really a mark that Christ makes in our chest. It does not hurt at all. This mark is an {anointing} that feels inside concretely. St-Paul calls it "the seal of Jesus Christ." By this {anointing}, the person is really born to a new Life as a {God's child}. In a way, he becomes the mature fruit that can be taken out of the **garden** at the end of his pilgrimage on Earth.

On the other hand, if the maturation is not sufficient during the human life, the {anointing} is not granted. Then the person, or the fruit not mature enough, ends his human life in the **garden** that gave birth to him, Earth.

| 28-C | What is a mystic?

You have to be careful with the word "**mysticism**."

A) To initiate you...

I will show you my (English translation) of an excerpt from a definition of this French website:
<https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mystique>

<u>My English translation of the excerpt</u>	<u>The original excerpt in French</u>
"Mysticism" is what relates to mysteries, hidden or secret things. The term is primarily religious, and is used to describe or refer to spiritual experiences of the order of contact or communication with a transcendent reality undetectable by common sense. [...] The notion of mysticism was developed in Christianity in connection with a biblical conception and more particularly (St-Paul's conception) of the	Le « mysticisme » est ce qui a trait aux mystères, aux choses cachées ou secrètes. Le terme relève principalement du domaine religieux, et sert à qualifier ou à désigner des expériences spirituelles de l'ordre du contact ou de la communication avec une réalité transcendante non discernable par le sens commun. [...] La notion de mystique a été développée dans le christianisme en rapport avec une conception biblique et plus particulièrement paulienne (St-

mystery according to which (St-Paul) identifies with the revelation of God in Jesus Christ. With the meaning that the mystical adjective receives from this conception of mystery, it is Christianity as a whole that can be considered mystical.	Paul) du mystère selon laquelle ce dernier (St-Paul) s'identifie avec la révélation de Dieu en Jésus Christ. Avec le sens que l'adjectif mystique reçoit de cette conception du mystère, c'est le christianisme dans son ensemble qui peut être considéré comme mystique.
--	--

B) My definition in simple.

The word "mysticism" simply means "what is mysterious" or "very difficult to understand" or "**what is above nature.**" It was mainly (St-John and St-Paul) who introduced this mysterious way of writing.

C) Then why is the word mysticism scary?

The problem is not God, it is us (humans) with our stubbornness. If something comes out of our little human control, we become scared, we hide and we say that all this does not exist or that they are stories of illuminated people...

Ask yourself the following 3 questions:

- 1) Can Christians really believe that they can pray to a real and Living God who will never Present Himself sooner or later?
- 2) Can Christians truly think of being God's children without their Father ever having Presented Himself to them for real?
- 3) Can Christians really think of going to the Kingdom of their Heavenly Father without ever meeting or even knowing him before?

Then all who are truly {God's children} by their {birth of the Spirit} **are mystics, like me, by the way.**

| 28-D | What is the people of saints?

Here is what St-Peter writes:

NT	1st Epistle of St-Peter	1,14-16	As obedient children, do not be conformed to the former lusts <i>which were yours</i> in your ignorance, but like the Holy One (1) who called you, be holy yourselves also in all <i>your</i> behavior (2); because it is written, "You shall be holy (3), for I (3) Am Holy."
----	-------------------------	---------	--

- (1) God
- (2) Anyone who follows the Way of Christ.
- (3) Only the Holy Spirit makes one holy. Our own means and our own sacrifice will never make us holy.

Some Christian movements think there will be small saints and great saints in Heaven. I have bad news for them. A person receives his {birth of the Spirit} or not on earth. 1) We enter or 2) we do not enter and 3) we have our earthly life to decide and do the work requested by the Lord.

| 28-E | Where are the prophets after Jesus?

Many people say, "There are no prophets after Jesus!"

So, read this:

NT	St-Matthew	5,12-16	"Rejoice and be glad, for your reward in heaven is great; for in the same way they persecuted the prophets who were before you (1). "You are the salt of the earth; but if the salt has become tasteless, how can it be made salty <i>again</i> ? It is no longer good for anything, except to be thrown out and trampled under foot by men. " You are the light of the world. A city set on a hill cannot be hidden; nor does <i>anyone</i> light a lamp and put it under a basket, but on the lampstand, and it gives light to all who are in the house. " Let your light shine before men in such a way that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father who is in heaven.
----	------------	---------	--

- (1) {God's children} are the follow up to the New Testament of the Old Testament prophets.

The end of time

| 29 | The Judgment

St-John and St-Paul are the apostles who have most defined the mystery of God.

On the other hand:

If they had not been educated very young in the many superstitions (mainly Greeks) of their time. If they had known that the supernatural being of evil, the devil, does not exist. If they had known that all the cases of "possession" they saw were simply diseases. If they had known that humans themselves were destroying Earth's ecosystem.
--

Then, the conclusions on the Judgments of God would have been easy to make...

| 29-A | Punishment or Judgment of God?

In article | 19-F |, we saw an important key of God. From the New Testament, Jesus gives the revelation that God does not punish the wicked one, **he rewards the good one**.

Furthermore, what can we say about "the Judgments of God?"

When looking in the Bible, everything connects around the same basic concept:

The human is doing evil himself. God gives life to the good ones. God is very patient and firstly gives the wicked ones enough time to convert. If the wicked one does not do it, it is death at the end. I am talking about a biological (human) death, nothing more.
--

A) Let's look at some cases:

1) In the narrative of the Flood (Genesis 6,5 to 9,29), Noah and his family are good. The human beings in the area around them are bad. What happened? Noah took about 100 years to make his ark (his boat). All this time, bad people laughed at him. Bad people have had a fine inheritance of 100 years of human life. We see that God is generous to the ungrateful as Jesus said.

NT	St-Luke	6,35	"But love your enemies, and do good, and lend, expecting nothing in return; and your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the Most High; for He Himself is kind to ungrateful and evil <i>men</i> ."
----	---------	------	---

Although Noah surely tried to warn people that the Flood was coming, nobody listened judging that he was crazy! God rewarded the good one (Noah) by continuing his life. But the bad ones finally died swallowed up in the Flood. Yes, this is a symbolic narrative, but it reveals important things...

2) In the narrative of Sodom (Genesis: 18,16 to 19,29), the people of this city are very bad. The nephew of Abraham (Lot) established his family at the gates of this evil city without really knowing it. Lot's family is trying to do good. They ask people not to do evil. People do not listen to anything! Subsequently, angels appear to Abraham to tell him that they will destroy this city, because complaints have risen to God. Abraham asks God to spare the city. God accepts on condition that Abraham finds at least 10 good people inside the city. Abraham cannot find 10. The angels then ask Lot and his family to go out. The city is finally destroyed by the lava of a volcano.

3) In the book of Exodus (Moses). The Egyptians (the bad ones) enslaved the Hebrews (the good ones) for 400 years. God sent Moses to deliver them. God performs one miracle at a time (a plague of Egypt) to demonstrate to the king of Egypt (Pharaoh) that the God of the Hebrews is the only God who exists (the Creator of nature). The Egyptians have plenty of time to understand, but they do not want to. The strength of the miracles (the plagues of Egypt) increases gradually, but Pharaoh still does not let the slaves go. What is the last plague? Through the mouth of Pharaoh who orders the death of the firstborn of the slaves, God has taken this judgment of Pharaoh against himself. It is the first born of the Egyptians who died. Jesus said:

NT	St-Matthew	7,1-2	"Do not judge so that you will not be judged. "For in the way you judge, you will be judged; and by your standard of measure, it will be measured to you.
----	------------	-------	---

Later, Pharaoh let the slaves go. On the way, the slaves were at the edge of the sea. The Egyptian soldiers wanted revenge and to kill the slaves. God, by his Breath, opened the sea as a canal. God let the Hebrews pass by on the other side of the shore. Subsequently, the senseless Egyptian soldiers went after them into the canal. God closed the sea and the soldiers died.

In short, we see that the same basic concept is being repeated throughout the Bible.

|29-B| Why does the Gospel of St-John say that everyone resurrects for a Judgment?

In the Gospel of St-John, 2 verses are revealing:

NT	St-John	3,5-7	Jesus answered, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. "That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. "Do not be amazed that I said to you, 'You must be born again.'
		5,29	and will come forth; those who did the good <i>deeds</i> to a resurrection of life, those who committed the evil <i>deeds</i> to a resurrection of judgment.

How to explain the resurrection of everyone for a judgment when one must be born of the Spirit to see the Kingdom? In this case, the resurrection of judgment would give absolutely nothing since the person cannot see the Kingdom anyway!

I give 4 explanations:

1) It should be known that the Jews were waiting for a "messiah of anger" who would rid them of their invaders, the Romans. This messiah was going to solve all the problems in Israel and restore peace. People had been waiting for him for a long time and they were very firm in their ideas. Out of the question, the expected messiah could not forgive. Look carefully at what the apostles say to Jesus at the end of his mission just before His Ascension.

NT	Acts of the Apostles	1,6-7	So when they had come together, they were asking Him, saying, "Lord, is it at this time You are restoring the kingdom to Israel?" He said to them, "It is not for you to know times or epochs which the Father has fixed by His own authority;
----	----------------------	-------	--

Here the apostles know that Jesus is really the Messiah and cling to their old idea of restoring order. So, one day Jesus will come back with a punishment for the wicked ones. We see this idea in a few places in the Gospels. As for it, the book of Revelation (Apocalypse) imagines the Judgment in a terrible denouement between the Forces of Good and Evil. See article |29-D|.

2) Even after (the 3 years of Jesus' teaching), it is normal that the apostles, who were of Judaism stock, bring some of their influences in the New Testament. Remember that in Judaism, God is punisher and avenger. This is visible throughout the Old Testament.

3) For the early Christians of the time, life was very difficult. They were martyred. The wicked ones could not get away easily like this without punishment! Then they deserved a little eternal damnation! Yet Jesus said that we must forgive everyone and not do evil for evil!

4) For the Jews, after the death of the human body, the soul falls asleep in the abode of the dead (Sheol). See article |3-D|. Now the idea was that at the end of time, all souls will present themselves for the Last Judgment. Jesus will separate souls. The good souls will go for a resurrection of life. The bad souls will go away for a resurrection of judgment, damnation with the devil in eternal hell.

For further explanations, see articles |23-G| and |19-C|.

| 29-C | What is the Last Judgment and the Heavenly Court of Justice?

Here is the modern explanation of the "Last Judgment" and the "Heavenly Court of Justice" that some people who have had a **near-death experience** have glimpsed in talking with Jesus. See article | 6-O |.3

It must be known that the Last Judgment belongs to Jesus alone, for he is the Word who commands it.

NT	St-John	3,16-21	"For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him shall not perish, but have eternal life. "For God did not send the Son into the world to judge the world, but that the world might be saved through Him (1). "He who believes in Him is not judged; he who does not believe has been judged already (2), because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. "This is the judgment, that the Light has come into the world, and men loved the darkness rather than the Light, for their deeds were evil. "For everyone who does evil hates the Light, and does not come to the Light for fear that his deeds will be exposed. "But he who practices the truth comes to the Light, so that his deeds may be manifested as having been wrought in God."
----	---------	---------	--

(1) The Savior is Jesus Christ.

(2) In the Old Testament, in the narrative of the Garden of Eden. God had already judged humanity (by the symbol of: Adam and Eve) to a mortal life, deprived of the Eternal Life (by the symbol of: the tree of life in the middle of the garden). God deprived the human of eternal life due to disobedience to his law by committing evil (by the symbol of: eating the apple, the fruit of evil).

A) The Last Judgment is simply performed in the image of the symbolic text of the Flood, see article | 21-F |.

The symbol of "the ark" is Jesus Christ (the Savior).

The symbol of "Noah and his family" is the whole of {God's children} for the Kingdom of God.

The symbol of "ascending into the ark" is the {birth of the Spirit}.

The symbol of the "Flood" is the biological death on Earth quite normal like everything that lives on our planet.

This Last Judgment is not in the future, but well now and for 2,000 years already without the people being aware of it by the {gift of the Holy Spirit} spilled at the day of Pentecost.

B) The Heavenly Court of Justice.

At the moment, we are all (under study) before the "Heavenly Court of Justice" without knowing it. When It gives its Judgment for Life, the person on earth obtains his {birth of the Spirit}, because he receives the Breath of God's Life in his nostrils which gives his birth from above.

NT	St-John	3,3	Jesus answered and said to him, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless one is born again (1) he cannot see the kingdom of God."
----	---------	-----	--

(1) This is the {birth of the Spirit}. In other Bibles, it is also named: the {birth from above}, because this means to be born from the Breath of Life of God (from above).

In Christianity, you have surely heard the sentence: "At the end of time, he (Jesus) will return in his Glory to judge the living and the dead."

Here is what you need to know:

At the time of Jesus, the expression "the end of time" meant "in his time, when God will decide it" and not the end of anything.

The expression "in the Glory of God" simply means "in the Presence of God" as in the Great Joy of the Presence of the Breath of God at the {birth of the Spirit}. See article | 13-D |.

| 29-D | The Last Judgment in the book of Revelation (Apocalypse)

A) Let's take a quick look at the Revelation (Apocalypse).

It is obvious that this book would not be complete without a little trip to hell...

NT	Revelation of John of Patmos (1)	1,3	Blessed is he who reads and those who hear the words of the prophecy, and heed the things which are written in it; for the time (2) is near (3).
----	----------------------------------	-----	--

(1) John of Patmos and not St-John. See article | 20-B |.

(2) It is the return of Christ for the Last Judgment.

(3) We have not yet seen his return with the "fire from heaven" after 2,000 years. So where is the near?

NT	Revelation of John of Patmos	1,16	In His right (1) hand He held seven stars (2), and out of His mouth (3) came a sharp two-edged sword (4); and His face was like the sun shining in its strength.
----	------------------------------	------	--

(1) Here, it is the hand of Jesus.

(2) Each star is an angel associated with the 7 nascent Churches that the apostles have just founded.

(3) Jesus is the Word of God.

(4) **Insurmountable problem.** Jesus revealed that God is Holy (without any evil) and he proved it by his death on the cross while his Father did not intervene to punish the chief priests.

NT	Revelation of John of Patmos	20,14-15	Then death (1) and Hades (2) were thrown into the lake of fire. This is the second death, the lake of fire (3). And if anyone's name was not found written in the book (4) of life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.
----	------------------------------	----------	--

(1) The character of death is the devil and his demons.

(2) Hades, this is "under the ground" since Lucifer has been precipitated there. See article | 18-A |.

(3) It is the (Gehenna of fire) that Jesus talks about. In reality, the Gehenna is simply a real dump that burned at the exit of the city. Sulfur was added to it in order to help the fire, hence the smell. **On the other hand, the author talks about the Gehenna in a way that is out of context with the reality of the time of Jesus.** Here, the author talks about eternal hell.

(4) These are the people who are marked by the {anointing} of Christ (the Savior).

NT	Revelation of John of Patmos	2,10-11	'Do not fear what you are about to suffer. Behold, the devil is about to cast some of you into prison, so that you will be tested, and you will have tribulation for ten days. Be faithful until death (1), and I (2) will give you the crown of life (3). 'He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches. He who overcomes will not be hurt by the second death (4).'
----	------------------------------	---------	---

(1) Human death on earth.

(2) Jesus.

(3) Eternal Life.

(4) To be sent into eternal hell with the devil.

B1) Why is it spoken of 2 deaths?

After the death of the human body, the soul of the deceased falls asleep in the abode of the dead (Sheol) while waiting for the end of time. For the Last Judgment, God resurrects (comes alive again or awakens) all souls to bring them before him at the Heavenly Court. The Son is the Judge who separates the Living from the dead by his mark, the {anointing}. Only those who are marked with the {anointing} are inscribed in the book of life for the Kingdom of God.

The 2 deaths are:

1) The death of the human body in the ground.

2) The death of the soul which is not marked by the {anointing}.

Now, let's get out of John of Patmos's hell!

B2) On the contrary, Jesus says that God is Life.

NT	St-Matthew	22,32	"I Am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?" He is not the God of the dead but the living."
----	------------	-------	---

For the Jews at the time of Jesus, there were 2 important words: (**nephesh** and **pneuma**).

NT	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	15,44-47	it is sown a natural (5) body (1), it is raised a spiritual body (2). If there is a natural body, there is also a spiritual <i>body</i> . So also it is written, "The first man (3), Adam, became a living soul." The last Adam (4) <i>became</i> a life-giving spirit. However, the spiritual is not first, but the natural; then the spiritual. The first man is from the earth, earthy; the second man is from heaven (4).
Here, in this English Bible (New American Standard), the word (natural) (5) is used instead of the word (psyche) in the French Bible (Jerusalem).			

(3) Adam and Eve are the symbol of humanity (man).

(4) The last Adam is Jesus, the Son of God. It is through Jesus that the {God's children} are born, the new creation.

(*) Here is an excerpt from the footnote of the Jerusalem Bible, 1977 Editions du Cerf:

My English translation of the excerpt	The original excerpt in French
For St-Paul, as for the biblical tradition, the psyche (in Hebrew: nephesh) is the vital, natural (5) principle. But who must fade (erase) before the (in Hebrew: pneuma) so that the man (or the woman) finds the divine life again. This <u>substitution</u> , which is already taking shape during mortal life by the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, will obtain its full effect after death.	Pour St-Paul comme pour la tradition biblique, la psyché (en hébreux : néphesh) est le principe vital, naturel (5). Mais qui doit s'effacer devant le (en hébreux : pneuma) pour que l'homme (ou la femme) retrouve la vie divine. Cette <u>substitution</u> qui s'ébauche déjà durant la vie mortelle par le {don de l'Esprit-Saint}, obtiendra son plein effet après la mort.

For a chart of the terms "**nephesh** and **pneuma**," see chapter | 31 | . We can also see the substitution that St-Paul is talking about.

Let's look at the indications (1) and (2):

The terms "**nephesh** and **pneuma**" both mean "the principle of life or the breath of life."

The term "**nephesh**" is most often translated into English as "soul." St-Paul having done missions at the Greeks, he also gives it the name of "psyche." It is simply the breath of mortal human life (**natural**).

The term "**pneuma**" is most often translated into English as "spirit." It is the Breath of the Life of God or the Holy Spirit.

Chart for (1) and (2):

Form of life	Vital principle	Envelope
Human being on earth	Soul or psyche (or natural) or "nephesh"	Human body or psychic (or natural) body (1)
{God's child} in Heaven	Spirit or "pneuma"	Spiritual body (2)

(*) The {gift of the Holy Spirit} is "pneuma."

(1) Because of his trips at the Greeks, St-Paul uses the term "psychic (or **naturel**)" to talk about the human body.

(2) St-Paul says that the spiritual body is to be received at the end of time.

To go further, see article | 30-B | .

Conclusion: **there are 2 lives** and not 2 deaths.

1) A mortal human life. It is the equivalent of the word "**nephesh**" in Hebrew.

2) An Eternal Life given and fed by God to his {children}. This is the equivalent of the word "**pneuma**" in Hebrew.

C) Why did not Christians see that the Last Judgment is on earth since 2,000 years already?

Mainly:

- 1) The lack of science to shed light on superstitions and the devil as a real supernatural being.
- 2) The vanity of science to want to make God disappear and present itself as the solution to everything.
- 3) The precious human power to the detriment of Truth.
- 4) Humanly, not to want to question oneself.
- 5) To take those who have received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} as enlightened ones.

NT	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	2,14	But a natural (1) man does not accept the things (2) of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness (3) to him; and he cannot understand them, because they are spiritually appraised.
----	---	------	---

- (1) An ordinary human being (without his birth of the Spirit).
- (2) Of {God's children}.
- (3) This book will surely be a good example. It will surely be contested, because it shows that one must make efforts to go to the Kingdom of God. What very few Christians want to do.

| 29-E | The Judgment in Brief

Every human being has the ability to do evil by himself. Jesus says that evil is in the heart or inside of the human. As the human is God's adversary, it is the human (the little Satan) whom Jesus sees everywhere even through St-Peter. In reality, Satan is a symbol and the human is the only one responsible for evil here on earth.

Jesus came on earth to teach humans (the Way of conversion towards goodness), **these are the Gospels**. On earth, Jesus demonstrates the Goodness of God. On the other hand, the full human freedom to do evil is demonstrated by the fact that the Son of God died on the cross while the Father did not punish anyone by the "fire from heaven."

God being perfectly Good, since no human being is without sin, no human being can go to his Kingdom. His Son Jesus being the only one without any evil, his death on earth is an injustice in the eyes of the Father. The Father Resurrects Jesus with his body on the third day. Jesus makes Apparitions to his apostles and more than 500 people. Jesus finishes the teaching of his apostles. Jesus Ascends on the 40th day toward his Father and is Glorified. Then, he becomes the Son or the Word of God again. The injustice of his death on the cross is counterbalanced by a Gift from the Father. The Son receives from the Father: Forgiveness and the Source of Eternal Life (the Holy Spirit) for those who will follow His Way. The apostles after 3 years of conversion are ready to receive the promise of God. This promise is the {gift of the Holy Spirit} at the day of Pentecost (the 50th day). The word Pentecost means: "the time of the harvest." On that day, the Son brings the {gift of the Holy Spirit} to his apostles and gives them the "Strength from above" to begin their mission.

If we compare with the narrative of the Flood, in a simple way, this Breath of Life (the Holy Spirit) is equivalent to embarking on Noah's ark. The judgment is not forthcoming, it has been present for 2,000 years.

The Judgment is simple:

We receive the {birth of the Spirit} or not. For those who will not have it, there is nothing after biological death, quite simply.

Some Christians will say, "Why did no one tell us that we need our {birth of the Spirit} to go to Heaven?" In fact, I would not even need to say it or confirm it, it is already written in the New Testament! But who really wants to see it?

You have the chance to know it now, so you still have time! It is only a matter of sincerity and effort...

PART 2 OF THE WORK (RESEARCH, OPTIONAL READING)

Introduction to Part 2 (chapters |30 to 38|)

A) Instructions for this Part 2.

Very important:

Reading this Part 2 is OPTIONAL , you can skip to Part 3 (Essential), chapter 39 at any time.
You do not need to read this Part 2 in any way to actually obtain the {gift of the Holy Spirit} within you. Me, I got it in March 2016 when I did not know any of the mysteries of the Bible.
If you find that reading the research done in chapters 30 to 37 is too long and boring, it is possible (but very difficult) to read directly chapter 38 which brings together all the main points found.
If stepping outside the familiar ground of Christianity bothers you, then this Part 2 is not for you...

Who is this Advanced Part 2 for?

To a reader who wants to know everything and whose departure from the known terrain of Christianity does not bother him.
To a reader who has obtained the {gift of the Holy Spirit} and who wants to deepen what he has received from God.
To a theologian who wants to know the Manifestations of God that are hidden under the Scriptures of the Bible.

This Part 2 is a research that includes all the necessary details to justify it.

Whatever the Truth found, you do not have to be destabilized in your faith, because the Lord Jesus exists for real and he is next to you now, I confirm it to you 100%. Unfortunately, we are going to discover that the Bible did not "fall from the sky", but that it is the fruit of a long process to set up Judaism and then Christianity over the centuries. Rest assured that the Lord has helped me with other Manifestations of the Spirit to understand the Bible. In this Part 2, you will realize that as the research progresses, my acquired knowledge changes from 2017 to 2023. So if you come across information that you do not like at the moment, tell yourself that it can subsequently: progress, change or even be eliminated. The information is not fixed in this Part 2, because the Lord wants us to discover him.

I give you the best way to read this Part 2:

Simply by reading chapters 30 to 38 , one after the other. This Part 2 will seem a bit difficult to read, because it will require patience. So, I suggest you read it lightly without trying to understand everything in detail. Anyway, you will see that the subjects evolve. This is necessary in order to find the Truth. Do not worry if you do not understand everything at the moment, because chapter 38 will allow us to review the discoveries made while giving us an overview. Keep in mind that this book took me 5,000 hours to make and you can read it in just 40 hours, so do not go too fast or unfortunately you might get stuck!
--

B) History of the work.

It is very important to understand that this work was written in a progressive way in the image of a discovery over a period of 6 years (about 5,000 hours of work).

Parts 1 and 3	Each are Essential	The important message of the Lord.
----------------------	---------------------------	---

The work began in 2017. Originally, the Lord participated in it through just over 12 Manifestations of the Holy Spirit.

Chapters |1 to 29| and chapter |39| give the **essential** of the message of the Lord.

Part 2	Research (its reading is Optional)	The mysteries of the Bible solved.
---------------	---	---

It is important to know that the Bible is not a book, but a collection of several books. The Bible is a "library of books." It includes several books spread over a long period of time (from about 1200 years before Jesus until 110 years after Jesus). Each of the books of the Bible contains a **theology (a human science about God)** which can be different according to the time. Theology is the set of beliefs that forms the framework or structure of a biblical book. Each of the authors of the

books of the Bible wrote according to the beliefs of his time. It is for this reason that beliefs in the Bible move or change from book to book.

Since the New Testament theology is over 2,000 years old and our thinking has changed a lot since then, we need to build visual models of this theology in order to better understand it today. To do this, chapter |30| uses our current science to create **a modern model**. Chapter |31| uses ancient science from the time of the apostles to create **an ancient model**.

Chapter |32| was added to the work in 2019 after an advanced documentary research. It **Reveals** the exact identity of the Holy Spirit. Chapter |33| was added to the work in March 2021 after the Lord gave me another Manifestation of the Holy Spirit in January of that same year. This Manifestation certifies the identity of the Holy Spirit discovered in 2019. **Moreover**, this Manifestation unites or bridges (links) the Scriptures of the New Testament and the Scriptures of the Old Testament. At that time, I thought the work was completed by 2021...

From chapter |1| of 2017 to chapter |33| of March 2021, **the goal is** to unite the important Scriptures of the Bible, the sciences, and God. **This goal has been accomplished. Subsequently**, the Lord gave me 5 additional Manifestations of the Holy Spirit to Reveal to me that the work is still not complete and that there are still discoveries to be made. **In chapter |34| of 2022**, it is the exact identity of Jesus that is **Revealed**. For the Jews of the time, **Jesus was the Unthinkable!** For the early Christians, **Jesus was the One they did not even dare to imagine! This is where the endless mysteries of the Bible come from.**

For chapters |34 to 38|, **the goal changes**. This time, **the goal is to extract the Revelations** from the twenty or so Manifestations of the Holy Spirit that I have received since 2016. The Lord Revealed to me in 2021 that my Manifestations are the same as those given to the apostles, 2,000 years ago. So we can now go back in time (to the time of Jesus) and finally know what the apostles did not allow themselves to think, say and even less write!

With over 20 Manifestations of the Holy Spirit, an Apparition of the Lord Jesus, a Manifestation of Mary and the in-depth research of chapters |30 to 37|, chapter |38| brings together all the major points found.

I suggest you always read the book of the work with the highest number.

I give you the list of books of the work (the subjects are cumulative)		Chapters of the work	Publication
1	Christian baptism is an initiation, it does not open the gates of Heaven	1 to 4	2017
2	Yes, God really exists, proofs by sciences, miracles and healings	+ 5 to 6	2017
3	To go to Heaven, a Christian must take charge of his own life	+ 7 to 11	2017
4	The Holy Spirit is received by the Breath of God's Life through your nostrils	+ 12 to 15	2017
5	Here is how to ask for a healing or a miracle	+ 16 to 17	2017
6	Satan; Lucifer; Gehenna; Sheol; devil; hell; death	+ 18	2017
7	Concrete explanations of the Bible for all Christians	+ 19 to 24	2017
8	An essential Christian resourcing to find God	+ 25 to 28	2017
9	The Last Judgment is during your human life on earth	+ 29	2017
10	Resurrection; spiritual body; we must be born again on earth	Renumbered	2017
11	A modern model that unites science and the Bible	Renumbered	2017
12	Earth is God's garden of culture in order to get his children	Renumbered	2017
13	The Holy Spirit is in reality the Return of Jesus Christ in His Glory	Renumbered	2019
14	The Spirit of Christ must dwell in you, for it is He who brings you to Heaven	Renumbered	2021
15	I Am Jesus, the Mysteries of the Bible Solved	+ 30 to 35	Early 2022
16	To the Discovery of Jesus (Way, Truth and Life)	+ 36 to 37	Late 2022
17	Jesus, Light of the Kingdom of God	+ 38 to 39	2023
18	Jesus, Lord and Savior, Light of the world	17 articles added	2024
19	God really exists, He loves you, here's the proof	Lightened work	2024

If this Part 2 bothers you, be aware that you can skip to reading Part 3, chapter |39|, at any time.

A modern model

|30| The Resurrection

Chapters |30 to 38| are Optional. It is important to start by reading the introduction to Part 2. This chapter |30| was written in 2017.

|30-A| A quick look in the Bible about the Resurrection of Jesus

If we look at the end of the 4 Gospels for details of the Resurrection of Jesus, we quickly realize that the narratives are divergent. This is normal, because at that time the information was transmitted orally (through tradition) and in addition the first Gospel (St-Mark) was written about 30 years later.

It is obvious that we will never understand everything about the event of the Resurrection of Jesus. On the other hand, let's try to build something simple and coherent from the few pieces of information we have in our hands.

As the 4 narratives of the Resurrection of Jesus are very short (often less than half a page), I let you look at them and compare them...

A) Since they diverge all 4, I give you a short summary that tries to unify them.

- 1) Jesus died on the cross around 3 pm on the Friday before Jewish Passover.
- 2) At the foot of the cross, there were some holy women and at least one apostle, St-John. There were also 2 followers of Jesus who were religious people and who have opposed to the execution of Jesus. They are Joseph of Arimathea and Nicodemus.
- 3) After the death of Jesus, they took the body, coated it with spices, wrapped it in a shroud and put it in a new tomb carved into the rock that belonged to Joseph of Arimathea. As usual, they rolled a big stone in front of it. It should be known that this stone was placed for a period of 1 year during the decomposition of the soft parts of the body. Then, people would remove the stone to pick up the bones of the deceased and deposit another body there. **So no one was going to remove the stone before 1 year...**
- 4) To be sure that the disciples of Jesus do not come to steal the body and lie, the religious people and the Romans have permanently put guards before the big stone.
- 5) On the 3rd day at dawn (Sunday), in front of the guards (who was waiting), the stone miraculously withdrew by the Action of an angel. What is important is that no human touched the stone. It is reported that the guards were frozen as dead. Did they see Jesus come out of the tomb? I think they saw something, but did not say it! Since there was nothing left in the tomb, they left quickly to see their superiors, because they were scared of being punished severely. Their incredulous superiors, being scared of the Jews, invented a story to blame the disciples of Jesus.
- 6) Always that same Sunday, after the guards left leaving the tomb empty without anyone, the holy women arrived at the tomb. They arrived on the scene and finding the empty tomb and the stone rolled aside. They looked in the tomb. The body of Jesus was not there. They wondered what had happened. They wanted to go and tell it to the disciples. Either, one angel (or two) appeared to them inside the empty tomb, or they had an Apparition of Jesus on the way. What is certain is that they saw an Apparition and they had a message to convey to the apostles: Jesus was Risen!
- 7) The holy women transmitted the message to the apostles, but they did not believe them. This is the typical human behavior, we only believe what we see or almost...
- 8) Thereafter, for 40 days, there were many Apparitions of the Risen Jesus. It is clearly stated that Jesus had a Special Body. People could touch Jesus. Jesus could eat. Jesus could Appear and disappear from a room while the doors were locked. Jesus could show himself with his face (which everyone knew before his death) or with another face to test their faith.

9) For 40 days, Jesus finished his teaching to his apostles. Then, there was the Ascension where Jesus went to his Father, we have no specific details.

10) Afterwards, Jesus was Glorified by his Father and returned (the Son of God, the Word), that he was before his Incarnation on earth. Jesus presents himself as the Only Truth and the Only Judge of the Living. The Father being the Sower and the Son being the Harvester of the Living.

11) Jesus says that the Father will send a Helper (Intercessor), the Spirit of truth (the Holy Spirit) and that he will remind them of his teachings.

12) On the 50th day, that of the harvest of the fields, the Bright Cloud came from heaven (sky), and the Holy Spirit Manifested Himself by "tongues as of fire" on the heads of the apostles. This is the narrative of the day of Pentecost. Subsequently, many people had the {gift of the Holy Spirit} like me on March 14, 2016.

B) Let's look at some difficult details.

1) For the **Apparitions of Jesus**, are they:

a) Physically?

Or...

b) In the heads of people?

When we examine the Gospels, we feel that they are of all types at the same time. By the way, if we examine the most recent Apparitions of history. In the case of the Apparition of the Virgin to Juan Diego in article |6-F|, we know that this Apparition was done physically since there were 2 tangible marks: the flowers and the image of the Virgin printed in the mantle. We also know that the Apparition can be done in the head and physically together. In the case of the Apparition of Jesus to St-Paul, he even lost his sight! In the case of the Apparitions of the Virgin in Medjugorje in article |6-H|, the children reported being able to touch the veil and the hand of the Apparition (the Virgin).

Answer: all styles at the same time.

2) In the 4 Gospels, why are **the narratives of the Resurrection** of Jesus **so short**?

Logically for an event of this magnitude, the narratives should be long and very detailed. I had a dozen Manifestations of the Spirit and I wrote this complete book and not just a paragraph! In article |13-D|, you even have the details of my {birth of the Spirit} written 4 days later. So what was the problem? Yes, the way Jesus Presented Himself after His Resurrection! As we have just seen, the Apparition can be done either: physically; in the person's head; physically and in the person's head at the same time. Now, one must understand that the Jews of the time were convinced to resurrect with their human body on earth. In article |22-D|, it is easy to see that the Jews kept the bones of their deceased for God to put flesh back on these bones at the end of time. So, reliving in another World than earth was not one of the possible options!

Answer: the apostles understood that the Jews were unable to take the reality of events, so they had the wisdom to write little in order to keep the mystery.

For God, nothing is impossible, so he will always remain a little mysterious!

|30-B| What does St-Paul say about our resurrection?

Here is an important excerpt:

NT	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	15,44-51	it is sown a natural (13) body (1) , it is raised a spiritual body (2) . If there is a natural body, there is also a spiritual body. So also it is written, "The first man (3) , Adam, became a living soul (4) ." The last Adam (5) <i>became</i> a life-giving spirit (6) . However, the spiritual is not first, but the natural; then the spiritual. The first man is from the earth, earthy (7) ; the second man is from heaven (8) . As is the earthy, so also are those who are earthy; and as is the heavenly, so also are those who are heavenly. Just as we have borne the image of the earthy (9) , we will also bear the image of the heavenly (10) . Now I say this, brethren, that flesh and blood (11) cannot inherit the kingdom of God; nor does the perishable inherit the imperishable. Behold, I tell you a mystery; we will not all sleep, but we will all be changed (12) ,
----	---	----------	---

Here, in this English Bible (New American Standard), the word (**natural**) (13) is used instead of the word (**psyche**) in the French Bible (Jerusalem).

(*) Here is an excerpt from the footnote of the Jerusalem Bible, 1977 Editions du Cerf:

<u>My English translation of the excerpt</u>	<u>The original excerpt in French</u>
For St-Paul, as for the biblical tradition, the psyche (in Hebrew: nephesh) is the vital, natural (13) principle. But who must fade (erase) before the (in Hebrew: pneuma) so that the man (or the woman) finds the divine life again. This <u>substitution</u> , which is already taking shape during mortal life by the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, will obtain its full effect after death.	Pour St-Paul comme pour la tradition biblique, la psyché (en hébreux : néphesh) est le principe vital, naturel (13). Mais qui doit s'effacer devant le (en hébreux : pneuma) pour que l'homme (ou la femme) retrouve la vie divine. Cette <u>substitution</u> qui s'ébauche déjà durant la vie mortelle par le {don de l'Esprit-Saint}, obtiendra son plein effet après la mort.

For more details about the terms "**nephesh** and **pneuma**," see chapter |31|.

Let's go back to article |29-D| for this Epistle of St-Paul.

Chart for **(1)** and **(2)**:

Form of life	Vital principle	Envelope
Human being on earth	Soul or psyche (or natural) or "nephesh"	Human body or psychic (or natural) body (1)
{God's child} in Heaven	Spirit or "pneuma"	Spiritual body (2)

(*) the human breath is "nephesh." The {gift of the Holy Spirit} is "pneuma" or the Breath of God.

(1) Because of his trips at the Greeks, St-Paul uses the term "psychic (or **naturel**)" to talk about the human body.

(2) St-Paul says that the spiritual body is to be received at the end of time.

(3) Adam and Eve are the symbol of humanity (man).

(4) The living soul means the breath of human life. It is our mortal life on earth.

(5) The last Adam is Jesus, the Son of God

(6) This means that it is the Son of God who gives the Eternal Life (the Holy Spirit).

(7) One must first be born with a human body on earth.

(8) Then by the grace of the second (Jesus, the Son of God), we will have a spiritual body to enter the Kingdom.

(9) Here, it is our human body.

(10) Here, it is the spiritual body that we will have at the resurrection.

(11) St-Paul tries to make people of his day understand that we are not resurrecting with our human body.

(12) St-Paul talks about a Change (Transformation) from the (form of **life** we have on earth) to the (form of **Life** in the Kingdom). It is the spiritual body, see chapter | 10 |.

| 30-C | How to define the resurrection?

The best way to define this topic is to review basic knowledge of Christianity.

By making a simple Internet search on the word "resurrection," what do we find?

In box, here are **4 small excerpts** of the following French site:
[https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/R%C3%A9surrection_\(christianisme\)](https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/R%C3%A9surrection_(christianisme))

<u>My English translation of the excerpt</u>	<u>The original excerpt in French</u>
A) Wikipedia <u>Resurrection (Christianity)</u> (1) The word resurrection comes from the Latin "resurgere" which means to get up again, to rise again. (2) With a capital letter, the Resurrection refers to the physical passage of Jesus Christ from death, following his crucifixion, to the life manifested on the morning of Easter, the third day.	A) Wikipédia <u>Résurrection (christianisme)</u> (1) Le mot résurrection vient du latin " <i>resurgere</i> " qui signifie <i>se relever, se lever une nouvelle fois</i> . (2) Avec une majuscule, la Résurrection désigne le passage physique de Jésus-Christ de la mort, à la suite de sa crucifixion, à la vie manifestée le matin de Pâques, le troisième jour.

My comments:

- (1) Generally, it is the passage from death to life.
- (2) For Jesus, it was the passage from his human body that had died to "the form of Life that the apostles saw and recorded in the Gospels."

2nd excerpt from: [https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/R%C3%A9surrection_\(christianisme\)](https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/R%C3%A9surrection_(christianisme))

<u>My English translation of the excerpt</u>	<u>The original excerpt in French</u>
B) Wikipedia <u>Biblical meaning of the term</u> It (the resurrection) is generally designated, in the manuscripts and in the archetype in the original language, by the Greek word <i>ανάστασις</i> (anastasis), literally meaning "uplift (again)" or action to lift or to be lifted again, that is to say a lying position, evoking sleep, latency or abandonment,	B) Wikipédia <u>Signification biblique du terme</u> Elle (la résurrection) est généralement désignée, dans les manuscrits et dans l'archétype en langue d'origine, par le terme grec <i>ανάστασις</i> (<i>anastasis</i>), signifiant littéralement « (re)lèvement » ou action de lever ou d'être levé une nouvelle fois, c'est-à-dire à partir d'une position couchée, évoquant le sommeil, la latence ou l'abandon,

My comments:

In the box above, it is proposed different words that I will assemble:

Action of to be lifted from a lying position, evoking sleep, for once again (or for a new life).
--

Now, look at my testimony of my {birth of the Spirit} in article | 13-D |. I was in my sleep representing the mortal state of the human being. The Breath of Life of God came into my nostrils and filled my whole body so that I may be born to a new life as a {God's child}. I can see the connection with the very definition of the resurrection! Subsequently, there were 3 days of intensive prayers connecting with the Resurrection of Christ. Then my feeling of the time was like resurrecting with Christ here on earth. For several weeks, I had the very present mark of the "seal of Jesus" in the chest that St-Paul tells. Currently, even after a year, I only have to pray more than 20 minutes for the mark to come back weakly.

3rd excerpt from: [https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/R%C3%A9surrection_\(christianisme\)](https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/R%C3%A9surrection_(christianisme))

<u>My English translation of the excerpt</u>	<u>The original excerpt in French</u>
<p>C) Wikipedia <u>In nascent Christianity</u> The resurrection is therefore this object of the belief in the uplifting (raising) of the dead which was not shared by all the believers of Judaism at the time of Jesus, as the passage of (St-Matthew 22:23) shows us, for example: "That same day, some Sadducees came to find him. They claim that the dead do not resurrect. (...)" <u>Doctrinal implications</u> 1) The possibility of a miraculous return to physical life by the action of God (it is in fact the resuscitation of a terrestrial body rather than the resurrection in the proper sense of the term, see "resurrection" of Lazarus in (St-John 11,1-44). 2) The state of spiritual death of man, arising from the sin of Adam. With the example of Christ, the Resurrection represents the final victory of Life over Death as a redemptive work of Jesus for mankind. It also echoes the statements of Jesus according to which he came so that humanity may have life "in abundance" (St-John 10,10). 3) The future resurrection, properly speaking, in the last days, of the humans who will be destined either to Salvation or to Damnation.</p>	<p>C) Wikipédia <u>Dans le christianisme naissant</u> La résurrection est donc cet objet de la croyance au relèvement des morts qui n'était pas partagée par tous les croyants du judaïsme à l'époque de Jésus, comme nous le laisse par exemple comprendre le passage de (St-Matthieu 22,23) : « Ce même jour, des sadducéens vinrent le trouver. Ils prétendent que les morts ne ressuscitent pas. (...) » <u>Implications doctrinales</u> 1) La possibilité d'un retour miraculeux à la vie physique par l'action de Dieu (il s'agit en fait d'une réanimation d'un corps terrestre plutôt que d'une résurrection au sens propre du terme, cf. la "résurrection" de Lazare en (St-Jean 11,1-44). 2) L'état de mort spirituelle de l'homme, découlant du péché d'Adam. Avec l'exemple du Christ, la Résurrection représente la victoire finale de la Vie sur la Mort en tant qu'œuvre rédemptrice effectuée par Jésus pour le genre humain. Elle fait aussi écho aux déclarations de Jésus selon lesquelles il est venu pour que l'humanité ait la vie « en abondance » (St-Jean 10,10). 3) La future résurrection, proprement dite, lors des temps derniers, des humains qui seront destinés soit au Salut, soit à la Damnation.</p>

My comments:

For Jews who believed in the resurrection, they imagined coming back to life again with their human body. They wanted God to remove all evil on earth. They wanted God to destroy their enemies and all demons. Then, they wanted to be resurrected from their tomb with a human body (bones, flesh and blood) so that they could finally live happily on earth as in the narrative of the Garden of Eden from which God had expelled them in the beginning. The Jews were very superstitious, some believed in reincarnation, others believed in ghosts floating everywhere. So, the Jews absolutely wanted to see the resurrection in a human way (bones, flesh and blood) otherwise he would not have wanted to follow Jesus at all.

Then God had to demonstrate to the Jews that he is the Master of all life/Life!

At the end of the 4 Gospels:

- ° Jesus Resurrects with a Special Body;
- ° Jesus can pass through the walls;
- ° Jesus can eat fish
- ° People can touch the Body of Jesus;
- ° Jesus changes his appearance to test the faith of his disciples.

4th excerpt from: [https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/R%C3%A9surrection_\(christianisme\)](https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/R%C3%A9surrection_(christianisme))

<u>My English translation of the excerpt</u>	<u>The original excerpt in French</u>
<p>D) Wikipedia <u>Episodes reporting resurrections in the Bible</u> The Resurrection of Jesus, however, differs from these other instances of "resurrection" because for Christians, that of Christ is not a simple return to life on earth (resuscitation to a mortal life), but the transition to new</p>	<p>D) Wikipédia <u>Les épisodes relatant des résurrections dans la Bible</u> La Résurrection de Jésus diffère toutefois de ces autres instances de "résurrection" puisque pour les chrétiens, celle du Christ n'est pas un simple retour à la vie terrestre (réanimation à une vie mortelle), mais le passage à la vie</p>

life in God. According to the apostle Paul, those who will be resurrected as a result of Jesus Christ (or "in Jesus Christ") will be reborn to eternal life with a "spiritual body" different from the mortal body.	nouvelle en Dieu. Selon l'apôtre Paul, ceux qui ressusciteront à la suite de Jésus Christ (ou « en Jésus Christ ») renaîtront à la vie éternelle avec un « corps spirituel » différent du corps mortel.
---	---

My comments:

I am asking you a question. Who comes to make Apparitions on earth for a long time? Yes, the Blessed Virgin Mary! So, since a human being from 2,000 years ago appears to us, we have proof that the process of the Last Judgment and the resurrection has been on earth for a long time!

NT	St-Luke	1,34-38	Mary said to the angel, "How can this be, since I am a virgin (1)?" The angel answered and said to her, "The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow (2) you; and for that reason the holy (3) Child (4) shall be called the Son of God. "And behold, even your relative Elizabeth has also conceived a son in her old age; and she who was called barren is now in her sixth month. "For nothing will be impossible with God." And Mary said, "Behold, the bondservant of the Lord; may it be done to me according to your word (5)." And the angel departed from her.
----	---------	---------	--

Some will say to explain the Apparitions of the Virgin, "It is that the human body of Mary was brought to Heaven just like that of Jesus." **Impossible!** Why? Only the body of Jesus was conceived (2) by the Holy Spirit with the Manifestation of the Bright Cloud. Mary has a normal human body. Some others will say, "In her Apparitions, the Virgin called herself the Immaculate Conception." See article |6-K|. Yes, that is right! She was a virgin (1). The child in her womb comes from the Will (2) of God and not from the human. She gave birth (4) to a holy child (3) who is Jesus, the Son of God. Some others will say again, "To carry Jesus, she should not have original sin." Yes, that is still true! But what is original sin? It is human disobedience, symbolized by the narrative of Adam and Eve. At the moment when a person gives his life to God to help him lead it (5), his original sin is forgiven. See article |18-C|.

Note:

For those who want to go further, I will give an explanation of the title of the Immaculate Conception of the Blessed Virgin in article 33-D . Thereafter, I will finalize the explanation in article 34-D .
--

|30-D| For us, what is our mode of resurrection?

A) Now, I who had my {birth of the Spirit}, what can I say about it?

In order to find a modern unified explanation, I will:

- ° Use the Scriptures;
- ° Add what God made me feel during my Manifestations;
- ° Assemble everything using a little science and logic.

In a modern way, what is a body? It is a support of life.

In science, although our brain has been studied in depth, none of its parts have been identified as being the consciousness. The neuropsychologists have concluded that our consciousness is not tangible, it is the result of the functioning of the nervous system of our entire body. We can then define 2 things:

- ° Our support of life (our body);
- ° Our consciousness (our thoughts) which is the fruit of the activity of our support of life (our body).

I give you the modern point of view on the human being (since the 1900s) from article |3-D|, in point F).

Consciousness (1)	Human body (including the brain)	At death...
Mind	Support of biological life	Consciousness is extinguished with the death of the body.

(1) Consciousness is the fruit of the activity of the body including the brain.

It is important to understand that without our body, we do not have consciousness:

Contrary to Greek mythology, we do not have a dual nature that is separable as a body and a soul. **In reality, we have a simple nature.** Our body is the real and our consciousness (our thought) is only the activity of our body. Our thought cannot exist alone, we are biological organisms. I give you an example. You are in front of a television set, the image you see on the screen depends on the activity of the television set. If you electrically disconnect the television set, the image on the screen turns off. It is the same thing here. The human body is the equivalent of a television set. The consciousness is the equivalent of the image on the television set. As, it is impossible to have an image without the television set exists and is connected, as it is also impossible to have a consciousness without the body exists and is alive.

B) During the {birth of the Spirit}, something important happens, see article |13-D|.

When the Holy Spirit (Breath of Life and Light) enters the body through the nostrils, he fills the whole body even to the tip of the feet. Some people will say, "It is the human body that is immersed itself in the Eternal Life." Yes, I agree ... Except that there is a problem, all the human bodies of the apostles died on earth. So the answer is not enough and we must go further...

I give you my conclusion immediately before listing my 7 arguments.

The {birth of the Spirit} is a **Process**. The Breath of Life of God completely impregnates our support of life (the human body) in order to make (by an exact copy) the second support of Life, (the spiritual body).

In article |30-B|, St-Paul says that the spiritual body is to be received. We will see that in reality, he has already received it without knowing it! St-Paul could not notice it, because the old concept of the principle of human life, which we saw in article |3-D|, did not allow him to discover it. See also chapter |31|. He believed that his human body was an envelope which the Holy Spirit had Filled. St-Paul did not know that the human body is not an envelope, but that is the human body, the principle of life or the support of life!

Let's keep the logic of St-Paul:

- | |
|--|
| 1) The principle of life is "the soul." |
| 2) The Holy Spirit, by filling the interior of the human being, adds another principle of Life which is the " spirit ." |
| From a modern point of view, we know that it is the (human body) the principle of life or the support, so let's take again: |
| 1) The support of life is the "human body." |
| 2) The Holy Spirit, by filling the interior of the human being, adds another support of Life which is the " spiritual body ." |

Here are my 7 arguments:

- | |
|---|
| I give you the way I felt during the different Manifestations I had. See chapter 13 . |
| 1) During my {birth of the Spirit}, it was a different feeling from other Manifestations. Joy and Happiness were present, God showed me his Glory. Subsequently, all the other Manifestations did not have Glory (Joy, Happiness), but they were messages for this book. Before my {birth of the Spirit}, I played a bit of my electric guitar with distortion effect, which gives a hard sound. Afterwards, I became more sensitive internally (in my body) and I could not endure this effect. Then, I continued to practice without the distortion effect. I was able to put it back a little, about 6 months later, but I find it an emotionally exhausting effect. |
| 2) At my {birth of the Spirit}, the Light came into me and the Breath filled me completely all my body to the tiptoes. It gave me the impression of having passed in the "God's Photocopier ." |
| 3) At my {birth of the Spirit}, I felt reborn for a new life. I felt resurrected with Christ. |
| 4) After my {birth of the Spirit}, it is as if I discover a New World. |

5) After my {birth of the Spirit}, I had the "seal of Jesus" in my chest well present about 6 weeks. Subsequently, it disappeared gradually. By cons, currently, even after a year, I can make it reappear gently and temporarily if I pray more than 20 minutes.
6) During a period of about six weeks after my {birth of the Spirit}, I felt that the people around me were mortal, but that I had eternity before me. Subsequently, this feeling is gone.
7) During a period of about four months after my {birth of the Spirit}, I really had an angel's patience, as if impatience no longer existed in me. Subsequently, I started to get a little impatient again.

An undeniable fact:

What I want to show you here is that there is a decrease in the effect of the {birth of the Spirit}, as if the human body gradually resuming what it was before. It is as if the body had been " impregnated with the Fire of the Holy Spirit" and afterwards, it was returning quietly to its previous state...
1) A bit like the "flash" of a camera that we would accidentally have in our eyes and then we see "stars" for a while.
2) A bit like a sunburn. The skin is burned and then it comes back as before.
3) A bit like if the human body was a " negative " when the Breath and the Light of the Holy Spirit pass through it in order to make the {spiritual body}.

(*) Myself being a scientist, I cannot believe it! It is a Mystery of God's Science that goes beyond anything imaginable...

NT	St-John	3,6	"That which is born of the flesh is flesh (1), and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit (2).
----	---------	-----	--

(1) It is our human body.

(2) It is our {spiritual body}.

The explanation is that the human body and the Breath of Life impregnate each other to make a copy: **(human body/spiritual body)**. This is why God gives the {birth of the Spirit} only **when the conversion of the person is fully completed**.

Thereafter, no one can see this {spiritual body}, because it is not in our human world, but parallel to us in the World of God. From there, the consciousness has 2 supports of life/Life.

In this way, the character of the person (which makes it is me and not another person) remains intact. Whether here on earth or later in Heaven. This explains why a {God's child} thinks differently with one eye on earth and the other in Heaven. His consciousness is now fed by 2 supports. A mortal support and an eternal support. I have also noticed on several occasions that the "seal of Jesus" in my chest reappears gently and subtly when I write this book. It would be help or inspiration.

Finally...

At the end of life on earth, the first support of life (our human body) disappears into the ground, but our consciousness continues on the second support, our {spiritual body}, which is already united to God.

For an overview, see the summary chart in article |30-E|. For the confirmation that the {spiritual body} is really there, see article |30-F|.

| 30-E | Summary chart of our resurrection

Here are the general explanations of the chart.			
a) The 2 world/World are hermetically sealed from each other, hence the large central line of the chart below.			
b) The Holy Spirit is the Person of God who is the Living Bridge connecting the 2 world/World.			
c) The Holy Spirit Acts in both worlds, hence the absence of the central line at this place.			
d) For simplicity, the Holy Spirit is named: the Spirit .			
e) The arrows → ↑ ← ↓ represent the Action of the Spirit.			
f) The + indicate the addition of the {spiritual body} which gives to a {God's child} a partial consciousness of the reality of the New World.			
Here are the steps in the process.			
	<u>Human's world</u> form of life biological The Holy Spirit He is the (Living	<u>God's World</u> Form of Life Spiritual is everywhere Bridge)	
1) A human being (earth)	consciousness biological body		
2) God's help	consciousness biological body	← Action of the Spirit ← Action of the Spirit	Psychological help, inspiration. Miracles, healings.
3) {To be born again}	consciousness Breath and Light ← ↓ biological body →	← Action of the Spirit ↑ → {spiritual body}	<u>The {birth of the Spirit}</u> A) Beginning of the resurrection. "God's Photocopier" "Impregnation of 2 life/Life"
4) {God's child}	consciousness + biological body +	+ + {spiritual body}	It is not visible. On the other hand... the Spirit allows his Manifestation.
5) At death on earth	cons→ biological body	→ciousness {spiritual body}	Transfer of consciousness
6) In the God's Kingdom		consciousness {spiritual body}	B) Resurrection completed.

| 30-F | Confirmation that the spiritual body is actually there

Finally, I thought it would be nice to prove that my {spiritual body} is there really. But how to feel something that is not biological? So, I could not go further. The night after writing article | 30-E |, February 5, 2017, I had a little Manifestation that I considered unimportant, but which turned out to be the key...

Here is my little Manifestation of February 5, 2017.

My testimony of article | 13-P |.

I was sleeping in the dark and I was not thinking of anything. Suddenly, I felt a weak vibration in my body, but a strong enough vibration in my face that woke me up. I recognized one of the signs of my Manifestations of the Holy Spirit as in many others. However, there was no Wind or even a message. I said to myself, "There is no message in there, what is this vibration for?" Anyway ... and I went back to sleep.

I found the answer on February 6. The Holy Spirit is a Person of God, so he is external to us. He always begins by introducing himself: "I Am the Breath (Wind, Light, etc.)." However, this Manifestation of February 5, 2017, was only in me! So what woke me up? This made me think about details in my Manifestations that I did not understand...

It is by the comparison of all my Manifestations that I understood.

After my {birth of the Spirit}, I identified 3 main types of Manifestations:

- 1) An external Presence as the Breath only. There was no Glory (Joy, Happiness).
 - 2) Vibrations through my human body only.
 - 3) The presence of the "seal of Jesus" in my chest during the first 6 weeks. Subsequently, even after one year, I can make it reappear slowly and temporarily if I pray more than 20 minutes.
- 123) A combination of all 3 types at the same time.

In the list of 3 types. There is only in case 1) where there is an external Presence, then it is the Holy Spirit.

In cases 2) and 3), the Manifestations are only in me, then it is my {**spiritual body**} which is revealed to me.

By cons, there was a detail that I did not understand...

Why make me strongly vibrate the face and weakly vibrate the body? I understood it only on February 8th. The Lord wanted me to make the connection with the narrative of the Transfiguration in the Gospel of St-Matthew.

NT	St-Matthew	17,1-8	Six days later Jesus took with Him Peter and James and John his brother, and led them up on a high mountain by themselves. And He was transfigured (1) before them; and His face (2) shone like the sun, and His garments became as white as light. And behold, Moses and Elijah appeared to them, talking with Him. Peter said to Jesus, "Lord, it is good for us to be here; if You wish, I will make three tabernacles here, one for You, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah." While he was still speaking, a bright cloud overshadowed (3) them, and behold, a voice (4) out of the cloud said, "This is My beloved Son, with whom I am well-pleased; listen to Him!" When the disciples heard <i>this</i> , they fell face down to the ground and were terrified (5). And Jesus came to <i>them</i> and touched them and said, "Get up, and do not be afraid (6)." And lifting up their eyes, they saw no one except Jesus Himself alone (7).
----	------------	--------	---

- (1) In this narrative, Jesus reveals to his 3 apostles his **Spiritual Body** in him.
- (2) Here, it is to make the link with the vibration strong enough in my face during my Manifestation of February 5, 2017.
- (3) In the Old Testament, God had not yet revealed Himself in 3 Persons. Here, the Bright Cloud is the tangible sign of God's Presence for the Jews.
- (4) It is the message of God.
- (5) In the Old Testament, the Jews feared God because they thought him a punisher.
- (6) In the New Testament, Jesus reveals a God of Love and Forgiveness.
- (7) The Holy Spirit has now **veiled** the **Spiritual Body** of Jesus. So, his disciples only see his human body.

A) The spiritual body.

In the verse (St-John: 3,6), Jesus says, "Which is born of the **Spirit** is **spirit**."

If we replace the word "**spirit**" with "**spiritual body**," it gives:

What is born of the " Spiritual Body of the Son" is the " spiritual body of the {God's child}."

It is for this reason that at the {birth of the Spirit}, there is the Manifestation of the "seal of Jesus" in the chest.

Notes:

In his Epistles, St-Paul thought that the {spiritual body} was to be received at the end of time while without knowing it, he had already received it. At the time, the point of view on the human being (with a body and a soul) did not allow for St-Paul to make this discovery. Moreover, the certainty of the existence of the devil was an obstacle to him. It is for this reason that at the very beginning of the writing of this book, I had to take stock of the subject of the devil. See chapter 18 .
The existence of the devil and eternal hell is the first "weed" inserted into Christianity. This "weed" is the bad gift of the Greeks. With the idea of the devil, the Bible is incomprehensible. Without the idea of the devil, everything becomes clear! During the history of Christianity, the second "weed" is the forgetfulness that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a real

Manifestation. This time, it is a major problem! **The {gift of the Holy Spirit} is the heart of Christianity.** This is it that allows the unity of Christianity around the Gospels. The {gift of the Holy Spirit} is described as a tangible reality several times in the New Testament. This time, Christians still have no excuses not to see it. The greatest factor of forgetfulness is obviously the human power of royalty from the years 0300.

The first "weed" of the devil was the major cause of the witch-hunt of the 1500s.

The second "weed" of forgetting the (Spirit of Unity) has scattered Christianity. See article | 2-B |.

B) For the Son of God, he is begotten.

In our human body, we know that there is a progression: will (1) → breath (2) → word (3).

The comparison is the same: the Father is the Will (1) → the Holy Spirit is the Breath (2) → the Son is the Word (3).

The Eternal Source (God the Father) begets His Word (God the Son) by giving him its Breath (the Holy Spirit).

Why do we use the verb "to beget" for the Son of God? This is because the Son has always existed. God has always had a Word.

C) For a {God's child}, he is born.

See article | 30-G |. For his mission on earth, God the Father gives a **Spiritual Body** to his Son. This is from it that the **spiritual body** of a {God's child} is born. The Son shares with a {God's child} the same Breath that he receives from his Father (the Holy Spirit). The human being begins by (being born on earth) and then he has the possibility of being born as a {God's child} by uniting with God.

Only one possibility:

With the modern science that we have, that is the only explanation. Why? Only our human body is real. Our consciousness (our thought) is not a reality, but an activity. Then the Lord has no choice but to give us another {body} fit for His Kingdom already on earth to bring us with Him.

(*) Without the detective's method presented in article | 5-F |, it would have been impossible to reach this conclusion.

D) It was so simple...

It is like the opposite of the Greek thought of the time. A person does not have an eternal soul by being born humanly on earth. No, it is through the {birth of the Spirit} that God merges with the human body, an identical {spiritual body}, but fit for his World. In the Greek thought of the time, the soul was eternal by itself and could float everywhere (a ghost) at the death of the person. In the case the eternal soul would be evil, God would have to lock it up at the end of time with his evil friend the devil in hell forever! By cons, the {spiritual body} is different. Its life is communicated to it by the Holy Spirit (the Breath of Life). See the step 6 of the chart of article | 30-E | representing the final state of a {God's child} in the Kingdom. His human body remained in the ground.

| 30-G | A human being on earth/the Holy Trinity/the mission of Jesus/a {God's child}

Now, let's take another step to understand as much as possible these mysteries.

A) For a human being on earth.

In Genesis, God says that the human is created in his Image.

So, we can compare God to a human being...

We know that a human being has:

- 1) An **exterior** and an **interior**.
- 2) A thought and a living body that is real.

I will call the thought → mind .
I will call the body or the support → real .

3) A communication or a **union** between his interior and his exterior. Examples: his blood, his nerve impulses, his hormones, his breath.

4) Our **will** uses our **breath** to **speak** (word).

5) Our body is **real** and has a **power** that allows it **to act**.

Here is the chart for a human being:

exterior	union	interior	
word	← breath ←	will	mind
to act	← power ←	living body	real

B) Now, let's make the link between the human being and the 3 Persons of God.

If we transpose the chart above with the dogma for the Holy Trinity.

Here is the chart for God:

Exterior (Communicable, the Word)	Union (Communicable, the Breath)	Interior (The Existence)	
The Son (1) To Create (2), To Save (3)	← The Holy Spirit who transmits ← ← Strength and Life ←	The father Eternal Source	Mind
			Real

They form only one individual, one God. They live here in Perfect Communion.

NT	St-John	1,1-4	In the beginning was the Word (1), and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was in the beginning with God. All things came into being through Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being (2). In Him was life, and the life was the Light (3) of men.
----	---------	-------	--

(1) The Son, the Word. (2) To Create. (3) To Save.

C) The Son of God (Jesus) begins his mission on earth.

In order for the Son to come to teach on earth, he must become **an entire individual in himself**, it is Jesus. To do this, the Father dissociates the Son by giving him a special body. Yes, Jesus has a human body. On the other hand, Jesus shows to his Transfiguration and Resurrection that he has another "body hidden in him," his **Spiritual Body**. Jesus had 2 fused natures (**Spiritual Body/Human Body**). We also know that the Holy Spirit is the Living Bridge between the 2 world/World.

Here is the chart of the Incarnation of the Son:

	Exterior	Union	Interior	
World of God	→	↓ Holy Spirit	The Father Eternal Source	Mind
In Heaven				Real
On earth	Je-	↓	-sus	mind
World of humans	Spiritual Body	← →	human body	real
	His hidden nature	Union	His nature seen	

D) At the Resurrection of Jesus.

At the Resurrection, the human body of Jesus Resurrects. His double nature goes from:

1) (Spiritual Body/dead human body) to 2) (Spiritual Body/Resurrected human body).

During his Apparitions, Jesus completely reveals his dual nature to his disciples:

(Spiritual Body/Resurrected human body).

E) The Ascension of Jesus and his Glorification.

At the end of his mission, the Son returns to his place with the Father.

I recall the meaning of the verb "Glorify," it means "to Unite to God."

St-Paul gives the term "Glorious Body" for the Apparition that he saw long after the Son returned to his place with the Father. Here, I will keep his term. It must be understood that in this term, there is the following addition:

- ° The Resurrected human body;
- ° The Spiritual Body;
- ° Glorification of the Father in order to become One again in God.

In simple terms, the "Glorious Body" also has all the characteristics of the (Resurrected human body) and the (Spiritual Body) of Jesus during his mission.

Here is the new chart of the Holy Trinity **After** the mission of Jesus:

God			
External	Union	Internal	
The Son (the Word) Glorious Body (*)	← The Holy Spirit who transmits ← ← Strength and Life ←	The Father (the Will) Eternal Source (1)	Mind
			Real

(*) The Glorious Body is the "divine Reward" that the Father gave to his Son in exchange for his mission on earth, which ended in the injustice of his death on the cross while he did not commit any evil.

F) For the birth of the human being on earth.

Here is the chart:

1 individual

consciousness
human body

G) For the event of the {birth of the Spirit} on earth.

1) Here is the chart:

1 individual who is a {God's child}

GOD, an Individual in 3 Persons

{spiritual body} ←	consciousness	←	The Son (the Word)	Holy Spirit who transmits	Father (the Will)
	human body		Glorious Body	← the Breath	Eternal Source
His hidden nature	His nature seen				

Glorious Body = (Spiritual Body/Resurrected human body) Glorified by the Father.

This explains why the Christian **must give his life** to God. This is to establish unity.
This explains the intense sensation of the **Glorious Breath of the Eternal** during the {birth of the Spirit}.
This explains the feeling of having already **resurrected** with Jesus Christ on earth.
This explains the Manifestation of the **seal of Jesus** in the chest. It is the presence of the {spiritual body}.

NT	St-John	5,26-27	"For just as the Father has life in Himself, even so He gave to the Son also to have life in Himself; and He gave Him authority to execute judgment, because He is <i>the</i> Son of Man.
----	---------	---------	---

(1) Here, it is the Son who **gives** the Breath of Eternal Life **or not** for the Last Judgment.

NT	St-John	14,22-23	Judas (not Iscariot) said to Him, "Lord, what then has happened that You are going to disclose Yourself to us and not to the world?" Jesus answered and said to him, "If anyone loves Me, he will keep My word; and My Father will love him, and We (1) will come to him and make Our abode with him (2).
----	---------	----------	---

(1) The Father (the Eternal), the Holy Spirit (the Breath), the Son (the Glorious). It is for this reason (the Glorious Breath of the Eternal) during the {birth of the Spirit}, because the 3 Persons of God are Present. There is not only the Holy Spirit (the Breath).

(2) This can be seen, among other things, by the "seal of Jesus" in the chest.

2) We also see the link with the miracle of the multiplication of the loaves of Jesus.

NT	St-John	16,14	"He (1) will glorify Me, for He will take of Mine (2) and will disclose <i>it</i> to you (3).
----	---------	-------	---

(1) The Holy Spirit. (2) The Body of the Son is multiplied. (3) For give the {spiritual body} of a {God's child}.

This explains my 2 Eucharistic Manifestations at the Sunday mass. They were for the "Memorial of the Communion" to 1) the Body and to 2) the Blood of Jesus Christ. See article | 13-G |.

NT	St-Luke	22,19-20	And when He had taken <i>some</i> bread <i>and</i> given thanks, He broke it and gave it to them, saying, "This is My body which is given for you; do this in remembrance of Me." And in the same way <i>He took</i> the cup after they had eaten, saying, "This cup which is poured out for you is the new covenant in My blood.
	St-John	6,52-57	Then the Jews <i>began</i> to argue with one another, saying, "How can this man give us <i>His</i> flesh to eat?" So Jesus said to them, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in yourselves. "He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up on the last day. "For My flesh is true food, and My blood is true drink. "He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him. "As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who eats Me, he also will live because of Me.

H) Union in the World of God.

1) Here is the chart:

1 individual, a {God's child}		GOD, an Individual in 3 Persons		
consciousness {spiritual body}		The Son (the Word)	Holy Spirit who transmits	Father (the Will)
	union	Glorious Body	Strength and Life	Eternal Source

NT	St-John	17,21	that they may all be one; even as You, Father, <i>are</i> in Me and I in You, that they also may be in Us,
	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	12,12	For even as the body is one and <i>yet</i> has many members, and all the members of the body, though they are many, are one body, so also is Christ.

In short, the {God's children} are so united that they are like the many members of the Glorious Body of the Son.

In the Kingdom of God, it must be understood that for a {God's child} to have his own personality, he must have his own {spiritual body} which is the spiritual copy of his human body. The Son being the only one to have a **Body Merged with God** by His Glorification, the Breath of Life that He gives us passes through His Glorious Body. It is for this reason that St-Paul makes a comparison with the human body and its many limbs (arms, legs, etc.).

2) Here is the chart of several individuals in the Kingdom of God. They all share the same Breath of Life drawn from the Eternal Source of the Father.

In the Kingdom

Individuals:

Consciousness (John) {spiritual body} (4)	↑ Breath of Life (3) ↓	GOD, an Individual in 3 People		
Consciousness (Paul) {spiritual body} (4)		The Son (the Word) Glorious Body (2)	Holy Spirit (the Breath) who transmits Strength and Life (3)	Father (the Will) Eternal Source (1)
Consciousness (Mark) {spiritual body} (4)				

Tree of Life.

If we compare with a tree. (1) The Father is the nourishing soil. (2) The Son is the root and the trunk of the tree. (4) The children of God are the branches of the tree. (3) The Holy Spirit is the water that is taken from the soil, which changes into sap as it passes through the root and trunk to feed the branches.

The chart above gives the union and harmony of God with his spiritual beings. Each of the spiritual beings is unique and has his own personality. On the other hand, his life is fed by the Breath of Life of God. They all live in perfect relationship with God and others.

In other words, God and his spiritual beings form a Living Community.

1) Finally.

Human death, like the death of animals and plants, is part of nature on earth and everyone simply passes through it. **There is nothing wrong with that.** So for a human being, not having the Reward of Eternal Life does not take anything away from him, because God has already given him a human life. **It is a free inheritance that every human being spends as he pleases...**

Now to have more, Jesus asks us to make an effort and follow his Way...

|30-H| The thought of Jesus in brief

- 1) There is only God the Father who is Eternal. He is the Source of all life.
- 2) A being cannot live forever without the Father's Source of Life. Jesus (the Son) says that he draws his own Life from the Source of his Father. Then without wishing to fight with the superstitious mentality of his time, Jesus tells us in a subtle way that the devil and demons cannot exist.
- 3) Jesus says that evil comes from the heart of the human being, from its inner bottom. The human is doing evil on his own.
- 4) At the time of Jesus, many translations of Hebrew documents passed through the hands of the Greeks. The Greek words were tainted by their mythology. Although Jesus warned his contemporaries about the use of Greek concepts, some of them are still found in the New Testament. The worst concept is that of the "eternal soul" which floats everywhere like a ghost at the death of the person.
- 5) For Jesus, the human was (of flesh and blood) and he dies. The human had nothing eternal in oneself.
- 6) For Jesus, the "Gehenna of fire" was a real dump outside the city where everything was burned. To make sure that it burns completely, people added sulfur, hence the smell given to the symbolic image of the eternal hell of the 1500s.
- 7) Jesus says that God is a Wind. He is: Mighty, Living, Immaterial, Eternal and Free. In Greek, the word Wind or Breath is translated by Spirit.

8) Jesus says that he did not come on earth to Judge the world, but to Save it. Jesus is not the Judge (punisher) of those who do evil. Jesus is the Judge who ordains the Reward of the {gift of the Holy Spirit} to those who will Live.

9) Jesus gives the revelation that the Breath (the Spirit) gives Life (Eternal) and that the human body does not serve anything, because it is mortal.

10) Since God is Eternal, the human conception of time and space does not apply to him. On earth, we live in a world that is limited in time, because evil is possible and God does not support the lives of those who do evil for a long time. Human life is given for a maximum of 120 years.

11) God does not think like the human. His wisdom is generally taken as human folly.

12) A human being is born on earth (by the human life of his parents) and he is mortal. A {God's child} is born from the Breath of Life of God (the Spirit) in his nostrils. When the Spirit of God dwells in a temple, this temple cannot be destroyed. Jesus gives the following comparison: as we must be born on earth to live in our world, as we must be born from the Breath of God to live in the World of God.

| 30-I | Extraction of superstitions from the Bible which come mainly from Greek myths

We know that:

1) Satan. He is not a real being, but the great symbol of every adversary of God.

2) The devil. He is the great symbol of the Tempter. This actor as a "supernatural being of Evil" does not exist in a tangible or concrete way. In reality, he is an (imaginary being) that man used to put his own faults on him. He is a "personification" associated with our fears (in our head). On the other hand, **he really exists** as a "**psychic and natural actor**" who leads us to (biological) human death.

3) The Garden of Eden. This garden is actually, Earth. The human was born on Earth and God created him with the same body that he has right now. The human body is good. The human is not a fallen being and driven out of a "Paradise" in times past, due to the original sin. The original sin is not a condition of the human body. The original sin is simply the "human desire to lead one's life alone" without the help of God who holds the Absolute Knowledge in order to do only good. The original sin is not associated with sexuality because it is a natural human need to transmit life. Like any reality on Earth, sexuality can be expressed in (good) like in (evil). On Earth, every human being always makes his choice of action in (good or evil).

4) The soul. Falsely interpreted by the Greeks as the eternal human consciousness. In reality, for the Jews of the time of Jesus, the soul was only the (biological and mortal) breath of life of the human. The eternal soul does not exist. On the other hand, the human consciousness is the result (or the fruit) of the activity of the body and is extinguished with it (mortal).

5) The eternal hell. This is the place to put the devil and the (evil eternal souls). As the devil and the eternal soul do not exist, the eternal hell is useless and does not exist either. Some theologians say that the idea of the eternal hell would not come out of a Greek myth, but of a Germanic myth.

6) Judgment (of the Father). Humans are condemned to die on earth for evil they do. In reality, there is only God who is Perfectly Good. The human is created with an autonomous human life without God. Genetically, the human has been created like this since the beginning, 35,000 years ago. Deprived of the Presence of God, he does not have the capacity to do only good. Judaism of the Old Testament loved the idea of a punishing and vengeful God who delivered Judgments. Jesus revealed instead that God does not punish anyone. We know that biological death is the natural condition of all beings who live on earth.

7) The Last Judgment (of the Son). Jesus will return to Judge the Living and the dead at the end of time. The expression "at the end of time" actually means "in his time, when God will decide it" and not at the end of anything. Jesus said his role was not to judge the human being, but to save him. Jesus said that God is not the God of the dead, but of the Living. Jesus

talks about the necessity of a {new birth} on earth. St-Paul says that the person who has received the Breath of Life from God is already resurrected with Christ. I confirm that I had this Breath of Life on (March 14, 2016), and I felt {to be born again}, even resurrected with Christ. The Last Judgment is always in the present, now.

8) Jesus did not come on earth to forgive everyone's sins. No, only those who have recognized Jesus as their Master and Savior will be forgiven.

9) God is so Good that he will save everyone. No, there are 2 legacies.

A) That of a beautiful life without worrying about the Truth and evil that we do on earth.

B) That of following the Way of Jesus seeking the Truth and doing good. A life that begins with the {birth of the Spirit} and continues in the Kingdom of God.

10) Eternal Life is for everyone. No, Jesus talks about the worker in the vineyard of his Father. Eternal Life is not due for all human beings, but it is a great reward given to the {God's children}.

| 30-J | The end of the world.

Our universe and our Earth are autonomous without God. They are temporal and dead.

Scientifically, we now know that humans will be responsible (the author) for their own extinction due to pollution.

So, God will not have to come on earth and finish anything, we take care of it ourselves...

Finally, God does not need to lock up the devil, because he does not exist.

A) How will humanity end?

We know that humans quickly break nature. Ecologists talk about human extinction around the year 2100. What is most likely is that it will be done by (the too great) reduction of the capacity of the human to reproduce due to the absorption of pollutants in his organism. From the year 1900 to the year 2000 (in only 100 years), biologists estimate that the human remains to him only 10% of his capacity to reproduce that he had at the origin. Biologists estimate that at 1% of this original reproductive capacity, humans will be at the critical point of infertility expected around the year 2100.

Psychologists say that the problem of current pollution is primarily a problem of human thought. Human thought is made to react to a (serious problem) that he sees immediately there and not to (a serious problem) that will be there in 100 years! So, we sink little by little, we get used as we say...

B) What will happen to Earth when the human is gone?

The life that will remain on Earth (plants, animals, etc.) will continue to work without humans until our Sun extinguishes in about 5 billion years.

C) What will happen to the universe?

Because of the losses (the 2nd law of thermodynamics), our universe is mortal. Scientifically, we know with confidence that it will end one day in billions of years in a cold mass at absolute zero.

| 30-K | We all need the Earth, whether today or tomorrow!

The Lord Reveals that our world of Earth is hermetic and external to Him (the Creator). This is to ensure total freedom of choice. Modern science has discovered that the Earth is a living biological organism. The Earth has lungs which are trees and plants. The Earth has blood and veins which are water and rivers. The Earth has kidneys which are the swamps. The Earth has defense mechanisms, a bit like antibodies, which are viruses in order to balance its populations. Nature on Earth is a very complex biological organism that our Creator put in place 4 billion years ago and which has been functioning autonomously without Him all this time. **Simply put, nature on Earth is a living being like you and me!**

On the other hand, you are going to tell me, how can we save the Earth from pollution? To help us there is, of course, advice from environmentalists. On the other hand, a global solution exists, but as one of my biologist friends told me: "with our modern society, this solution is impossible!" Yes, I know, but I will tell you anyway... Humanity must no longer transform anything chemically or biologically. But humanity must harvest what nature produces by itself and adapt it to its needs. Simply put, we must let nature live and not possess and abuse it as humanity currently does. Humanity must no longer look at the Earth's garden as if it were stocks of fish and stocks of trees to be taken and sold! But humanity must look at the garden of Earth as a complete living being. A living being whose limbs cannot be cut off and sold without causing it to die. **If nature dies, humanity will die with it.** This affects everyone even now, because the future of our children depends on it...

An old model

|31| The {birth of the Spirit} seen from the old point of view

Chapters |30 to 38| are Optional. It is important to start by reading the introduction to Part 2. This chapter |31| was written in 2017.

|31-A| The old point of view of the Jews

Let's go back to article |3-D|, in point F).

Soul	Human body	At death...
Human breath given by God to Adam and Eve. Principle of life or support. Which drives the body.	It is pulled out of the ground and returns there after its death (dust).	Soul falls asleep in the abode of the dead (Sheol).

(*) For the Jews, the soul was seen as **the breath in the nostrils** of a person. This breath was given by God for a maximum of 120 years. After the human life, **the soul fell asleep** in the abode of the dead (Sheol).

The soul is the translation of the word "nephesh." It is the mortal vital principle that God has given to mankind. It is a "**short breath of life**" (mortal). See article |13-O|.

OT	Genesis	2,7	Then the LORD God formed man of dust (1) from the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life (2); and man became a living being.
----	---------	-----	---

(1) This is the envelope, the human body.

(2) This is the soul, the short (mortal) breath of life that God has given (for a maximum of 120 years).

In the Garden of Eden, the human (Adam and Eve) disobeyed the Law of God. This is the original sin.

OT	Genesis	3,22	Then the LORD God said, "Behold, the man has become like one of Us, knowing good and evil; and now, he might stretch out his hand, and take also from the tree of life (1), and eat, and live forever"
----	---------	------	--

(1) Here, by his original sin, the human has lost the right to Eternal Life that God intended to give him. The human has a life counted (mortal).

OT	Genesis	3,19	By the sweat of your face You will eat bread, Till you return to the ground, Because from it you were taken; For you are dust, And to dust you shall return."
----	---------	------	---

(*) The human comes from inert matter (dust). He returns there after his death.

|31-B| Let's look at the role of the Son (Jesus) and the Holy Spirit

The Son (Jesus) comes to teach on earth the Way of conversion of the heart so that his disciple can obtain the forgiveness of his sins including the original sin.

When the disciple has done his work of conversion of the heart and put his life in the hands of God, he gets this forgiveness. The Son then gives the Breath of Eternal Life. It is the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {birth of the Spirit}.

This time, it is by a "**really long Breath**" (Eternal) in the nostrils that the {birth of the Spirit} takes place. See articles |13-D and 13-O|. This is really the way it happens in practice. The disciple then becomes a {God's child}.

NT	St-John	3,6	"That which is born of the flesh is flesh (1), and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit (2).
----	---------	-----	--

(1) What is born of the human is a mortal human child.

(2) What is born of God is a {God's child}. Following the example of Jesus, since we must be born as a human being to come into our human world, we must also be born in spirit to enter the Kingdom of God who is Spirit.

The spirit is the translation of the word "pneuma." It is the Eternal vital principle of God (the Spirit).

→ The person then becomes a {God's child}, the old human chart changes to:

spirit (united to God) + the soul	human body	link forever
1st breath transmitted to human birth.	It is the dust from the ground.	A {God's child} is united to the
2nd Breath given by the {birth of the Spirit}.	It returns to the ground.	Son by the Holy Spirit.

NT	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	2,14	But a natural (1) man does not accept the things (2) of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him; and he cannot understand them, because they are spiritually (2) appraised.
----	---	------	--

(1) For St-Paul, "the natural man" is simply the ordinary human being. He has a soul.

(2) For St-Paul, "the spiritual man" is the human being who has obtained his {birth of the Spirit}. He has a soul and a spirit.

In the first chart, the principle of life or the support of life was the "**soul**." Now, by becoming a {God's child}, an additional principle of Life is added, the "**spirit**." By cons, contrary to what people think, the spirit does not float everywhere. He is eternal because he is united and fed by God. So, we cannot represent the spirit alone.

We must represent the whole with God:

One God in 3 Persons			A {God's child} on earth		
Father	Holy Spirit	Son	Breath of Life	spirit + soul	human body
Eternal	Breath of Life	Resurrected Body		2 principles of life/Life	It returns to the ground

The spirit of a {God's child} is linked to God for eternity by **the Breath of Life** which is called the Holy Spirit.

|31-C| At the death of the human body of a {God's child} and at the end of time

The new disciples asked St-Paul, with (what body) they will resurrect since their human body cannot go to Heaven. St-Paul made the logic that since there are (human bodies) for earth, there are also (spiritual bodies) for Heaven.

One God in 3 Persons			A {God's child} in Heaven		
Father	Holy Spirit	Son	Breath of Life	spirit	spiritual body
Eternal	Breath of Life	Resurrected Body		Principle of Life	It will be received at the end of time

A) If we simplify for a lot of {God's children} in Heaven:

St-Paul talks about the great unity between the Son of God and the {God's children}.

NT	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	12,12	For even as the body is one and yet has many members, and all the members of the body, though they are many, are one body, so also is Christ.
----	---	-------	---

For St-Paul, the {God's children} are so **united** that they are like the many members of the Resurrected Body of the Son.

NT	St-John	17,21	that they may all be one (1); even as You, Father, <i>are</i> in Me and I in You, that they also may be in Us, so that the world may believe that You sent Me.
----	---------	-------	--

(1) This **unity** is made by the Holy Spirit (the Breath of Life). It is the Holy Spirit who Unites the Father and the Son. It is also the Holy Spirit who unites the Son to the {God's children}.

Here is the chart, see article |30-G| in point H):

One God in 3 Persons			In Heaven {God's children}		
Father (1) Eternal	Holy Spirit (3) Breath of Life	Son (2) Resurrected Body	Breath of Life (3)	spiritual body of St-Peter (4)	
				spiritual body of St-John (4)	
				spiritual body of St-Paul (4)	

Additional Manifestations of the Holy Spirit (2019-2023)

| 32 | But who exactly is the Holy Spirit?

Chapters | 30 to 38 | are Optional. It is important to start by reading the introduction to Part 2. This chapter | 32 | was written in 2019.

| 32-A | Why are the mysteries of the New Testament so difficult to understand?

In the Gospel of John, verse 14,26, Jesus says: "But the Helper (the Paraclete), the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all that I said to you."

Then why does Christianity still not understand the mysteries of the New Testament even after 2,000 years? The answer is simple: it does not receive the Holy Spirit, otherwise it would understand!

What prevents Christians from understanding the New Testament is that they firmly believe they have received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} in their sacraments. Since they have not received anything, they interpret the New Testament as blinds.

From article | 24-N |.

NT	St-Matthew	15,14	"Let them alone; they are blind guides of the blind. And if a blind man guides a blind man, both will fall into a pit."
(*) According to Christ, it is not permitted to guide followers when we have not received concretely the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. This explains the dispersion of Christianity, see article 2-B .			

| 32-B | The Spirit of whom exactly?

Did you know that in the early Christian communities founded by the apostles, the name "Holy Spirit" did not exist? At that time, the names used were "Spirit of Christ" or "Spirit of Truth." Since Jesus is the Christ and the Truth, we could simply say, "Spirit of Jesus." Here is the proof...

NT	Acts of the Apostles	16,5-7	So the churches were being strengthened in the faith, and were increasing in number daily. They passed through the Phrygian and Galatian region, having been forbidden by the Holy Spirit (1) to speak the word in Asia; and after they came to Mysia, they were trying to go into Bithynia, and the Spirit of Jesus (2) did not permit them;
----	----------------------	--------	---

(*) Here, we see very clearly that the Holy Spirit is actually the Spirit of Jesus.

Note:

About a year ago, I was reading messages from the Blessed Virgin on the Medjugorje website. See article 6-H . Suddenly, I was surprised! In her message, the Blessed Virgin said to the people: "You must let my Son enter in you." We know that it is the reception of the Holy Spirit in us that saves. Then the Blessed Virgin had just confirmed the identity of the Holy Spirit, it is the Spirit of her Son, Jesus.			
--	--	--	--

From the Old Testament, Christians were very familiar with the word "Spirit" used by the prophets. To link the Old Testament to the New Testament, the first Christian translators decided to simplify all this by creating a global name: "Holy Spirit." "Spirit" means (Wind or Breath of the Presence) and "Holy" means (of God). Since the Son (Jesus) is also God, then the name "Spirit of God" (Holy Spirit) was ideal. On the other hand, the translators made some omissions here and there in the transcription of the New Testament. It is for this reason that there are still remains of the name "Spirit of Christ" in the Epistles of St-Paul and "Spirit of Truth" in the Gospel of St-John.

NT	St-Paul, Epistle to the Romans	8,9	...But if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ , he does not belong to Him.
----	--------------------------------	-----	---

NT	St-John	14,17	that is the Spirit of truth , whom the world cannot receive, because it does not see Him or know Him, <i>but</i> you know Him because He abides with you and will be in you.
----	---------	-------	---

In the beginning of the Gospel of St-John, it is stated that Jesus is the Word of God and that he is also God himself. In article |13-D|, I felt the Breath of the Presence of God. So, it is true that Jesus is also God. It is also for this reason that in Eucharistic miracles, when the priest asks that the Holy Spirit spread on the host, it miraculously changes into the body of Christ, therefore into the flesh and blood of Jesus, see article |6-I|. If we think about it properly, it is normal! The host receives the **Spirit of Jesus** then it becomes the **body of Jesus**!

To go further, I give you again my testimony of my 12th Manifestation of article |13-P|.

My testimony:

I was sleeping in the dark and I was not thinking of anything. Suddenly, I felt a weak vibration in my body, but a strong enough vibration in my face that woke me up. I recognized one of the signs of my Manifestations of the Holy Spirit as in many others. However, there was no Wind or even a message. I said to myself, "There is no message in there, what is this vibration for?" Anyway ... and I went back to sleep.

Here, we see a weak vibration in my body and a pretty strong vibration in my face. We have seen that this Manifestation is related to the Transfiguration of Jesus, see article |30-F|.

If I give you the message received in its most basic form, it gives: **"I am (Jesus) in you."**

NT	St-John	14,23	Jesus answered and said to him, "If anyone loves Me, he will keep My word; and My Father will love him, and We will come to him and make <u>Our</u> (1) abode with him.
		14,20	"In that day you will know that I am in My Father, and you in Me, and I (Jesus) in you (2).

(1) Here, it is to demonstrate that the Son and the Father are ONE in God.

(2) Here, we see very clearly the message I received: "I am (Jesus) in you."

Important note:

When I wrote the original work (2017), several passages in the New Testament Epistles made me think that the Holy Spirit was in fact the Spirit of Jesus, but I could not be perfectly convinced of it. **Then I wrote the original work with the dogma of the Holy Trinity currently recognized in Christianity so as not to confuse the readers.**

Afterwards, I did an in-depth research on this subject...

Conclusion, yes, the Holy Spirit is in fact the Spirit of Jesus. The Gospel of St-John speaks of the Spirit of Truth, Jesus is the Truth. The Epistles speak of the Spirit of Christ, Christ is Jesus. The passage (above) of the Acts of the Apostles directly mentions the expression "the Spirit of Jesus." The Gospel of John says that the Son of God (Jesus) is the Light of men. During my {birth of the Spirit}, I saw the Light entering in me. See article |13-D|. **This Light is that of the Resurrection of Jesus in the tomb.** My 12th Manifestation of the Spirit revealed that Jesus is in me. Then it is perfectly clear that the Holy Spirit is the Spirit of Jesus! When the Gospel of St-John states that Jesus is also God, he is absolutely right. At my {birth of the Spirit}, I felt the Breath of the Presence of God in me.

For the Jews, a Wind (Spirit) is a Divinity. Since there is only one Divinity that is Yahweh (the Eternal), it is for this reason that Jesus says that God is Spirit and that he and his Father are ONE. It is for this reason that St-Paul says that a person cannot belong to Christ if he has not received his Spirit (that of Christ).

In the time of the early Christians, the word "spirit" had not only the meaning of "breath of life" of a person, but also of his "presence", of his interior. In article |13-D|, I felt the "Breath" and the "Presence" of God. From the mouth of God comes out his Word. From the mouth of God comes out his Breath. Jesus being the Word of God, it is from his mouth that the Holy Spirit comes out. In simpler terms, it is obvious that it is Jesus who gives his own Spirit! It is for this reason that at the end of the Gospel of John, Jesus blows (with his mouth) the Holy Spirit on his apostles.

In the Bible, the Spirit is also described as the Power of God. In the Exodus (Moses), God opened the sea with his Breath. In a way, we could even see the Holy Trinity in the miracle of the burning bush (Moses). The Tree that burns and is not consumed is the Source (the Father, the Eternal). The Flame that rises from the Tree is the Breath, the Power of God. The Word that Moses hears and comes out of the Tree is the Son. It is also for this reason that during my 10th Manifestation of the Spirit of article |13-N|, I noticed in me: **"a vibration like the turbulence of a flame."**

My testimony:

In the middle of the next night, when I was sleeping in the dark and I was not thinking of anything, I felt a "beneficent vibration" inside me for about 5 minutes. The strength of this "beneficent vibration" came from the inside and not from the outside. It made me vibrate inside my body **like the turbulence of a flame, but at the temperature of the body**. Then, I said, "Thank you, Lord, I love You!" At the same time, "the turbulence of the beneficent vibration" has become at least twice stronger for about one minute! Then "the turbulence of the beneficent vibration" diminished and stopped. After, I felt in myself as if the inside of my body was still vibrating a little. This sensation lasted most of the night.

|32-C| Holy Trinity

Some Christians see the Father and the Son as the 1st and 2nd Person of God, but they do not see the Holy Spirit as being the 3rd Person of God. On the Internet, I even saw a theologian ask this question: "Who is the Holy Spirit, who is this Person exactly?"

Even I, who have obtained the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, have had difficulty answering it...

A) I give you the reasons:

- 1) In the New Testament, the names (Spirit of Truth, Spirit of Christ and Spirit of Jesus) have been changed by the name (Holy Spirit). In this way, a significant part of the meaning of this name has been lost. This happened in the 2nd century AD. The name (Holy Spirit) did not exist in the time of the apostles.
- 2) Each church (founded by one or more apostles) had its own Gospel. One church had Mark's, another had John's, and so on. During the first four centuries, these Gospels were somewhat modified according to the evolution of the dogmas (beliefs) of each of the churches. At the end of the Gospel of St-Matthew, the baptism of water is done in the names of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit. Whereas in the time of the apostles, the baptism of water was done in the name of Jesus only.
- 3) The dogma of the Holy Trinity (3 Persons in 1 only God) appeared with the church of the emperor Constantine. This dogma did not exist at the time of the apostles. Once again, this dogma was drawn mainly from the end of the Gospel of St-Matthew with the baptism of water in the names of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit. The reasoning of the bishops of Constantine was simple: since only a person has a name, then the Holy Spirit is also a Person...
- 4) My 12 Manifestations of the Spirit did not occur in the same way. Only the Manifestation of the {birth of the Spirit} contains happiness, the Breath, the Presence of God and his Glory. The other Manifestations include only the Breath without any Presence of God. So I had to try to understand the mechanism of my Manifestations in chapter |30|.
- 5) In the New Testament, the Father is seen as the **Will** of God. Jesus said that he was doing the will of God. This model of God (**Will**, **Breath** and **Word**) suggests that God is not a visible and material reality, but an invisible and immaterial reality. In the same way, the science of physics teaches us exactly the same thing. Everything that is visible and material is deadly. Then God (the Eternal) is obviously invisible and immaterial. In a simple way, to know God, **he** must reveal himself to us through himself, through **his Spirit**.
- 6) In the 1st Epistle of St-John, one of the oldest dated from the 0040's, it is spoken not of 3 Persons in God but simply of 2, the Father and the Son. St-John also speaks of the **anointing of Christ who** teaches everything. Can an anointing be a person who teaches?
- 7) St-Paul wrote that Christ is the first Son of God and that those who are {born of the Spirit} after him are {God's children}.
- 8) St-Peter wrote that we {are born} through the Resurrection of Christ.

As you can see, talking about the realities of God is not easy...

So how do we find a solution to unite all these mysteries? The only explanation I found is the one shown in chapter |30|.

B) Now, 3 words that need to be better defined.

For the first time in this work, I will make an important distinction between 3 words:

- ° Spirit;
- ° Breath (Wind);
- ° Person.

In my first Manifestation of the Spirit of article | 13-D | , we really see the very definition of the word Spirit: "it is the **Breath of the Presence of a Person.**"

Note:

It is the Visions of Ezekiel that give the best image of the Spiritual World (God and his spiritual beings), see article | 22-B | .

C) In summary:

	Human world (on earth)	Spiritual World
Support of life (its reality)	(a) (deadly) matter that surrounds us	(c) the Breath (Wind) (immaterial and eternal) felt during a Manifestation of the Spirit
A person	(b) biological human body	(d) a spiritual body

- (a) For our human world, the support of life (its reality) is matter (the ecosystem of the Earth).
- (b) For our human world, each being has a biological body. This body is autonomous (it is not connected to God), so it is mortal.
- (c) For the Spiritual World, the support of Life (its reality) is the Breath (Wind). The Breath comes out of the Eternal Source (the Father).
- (d) For the Spiritual World, each of the beings has a spiritual body. This body is not autonomous (it is connected to the Breath of God), so it is eternal.

By analogy: as matter is the reality of our world, as the Breath (Wind) is the reality of the Spiritual World. I know this is not easy to understand, but after 4,000 hours of work, it is the only conclusion I have in order to explain all the mysteries.

NT	St-John	3,6	"That which is born of the flesh is flesh (1), and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit (2).
----	---------	-----	--

- (1) It is the birth of the human body in order to live on earth.
- (2) This is the {birth of the Spirit}. To be born, we must, of course, receive a body. It is the birth of the {spiritual body} in order to live in the Kingdom of God.

D) I give you two examples:

- 1) When the Blessed Virgin appeared to Bernadette Soubirous. There was first a wind (breath) and then the Blessed Virgin appeared, see article | 6-K | . At first, we see that the Spiritual World arrives or that the support of life (the Breath) arrives. Subsequently, the spiritual body of the Blessed Virgin Appears.
- 2) During the {birth of the Spirit}, the Breath enters the person first. Subsequently, the Glorious Body of Jesus is felt.

E) The only possible logical explanation.

During the {birth of the Spirit}, the person {is born again} because he receives a {spiritual body}. Here the person receives in him the **Spirit of the Son** (the Breath of a Person, the Son). After the {birth of the Spirit}, since the person has a {spiritual body}, the Son can make a message directly. From the Spiritual Body of the Son to the {spiritual body} of the {God's child}.

Since the Support of the reality of the Spiritual World is the Breath (Wind), then the messages are simply made through the Breath (Wind). This time we do not feel the Glorious Body. The message is made directly. The Son can make a Manifestation directly through the {spiritual body} of the {God's child}. See the vibrations of my Manifestation of the Spirit of article |13-N|.

The Breath (Wind) is not a Person. The Breath is the Power of the Father. The Breath is the Spiritual World created and maintained by the Source (the Father). The Breath is the Life Support of spiritual beings, it is their World, their Reality.

F) Evidences.

To have a Person, you need a Body. 1) The Son has his Glorious Body. 2) The Father is the Eternal Source.

To have a Spirit, you need 2 things: 1) the Breath (the Spiritual World) and 2) a Person (a spiritual body).

G) Conclusion.

There is:

The Father is the Eternal Source (the first Person). The Father is much more than a Person, he is Existence itself.

The Breath is the (Power of the Father). It is more specifically the Support of the Spiritual World (the support of spiritual beings). The Breath is not a Person, but the Spiritual Reality given by the Father (**Existence**).

The Son has his Glorious Body (the second Person).

The Father Manifests himself by the Spirit of the Father.

The Son Manifests himself by the Spirit of the Son (or the Spirit of Jesus).

There are not **3** Persons in God, but **2** People and **1** Breath (Wind).

The Son is nourished by the Breath of the Father. The {God's child} is nourished by the Breath of the Son.

NT	St-John	6,57	"As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father , so he who eats Me, he also will live because of Me .
----	---------	------	--

For the Holy Trinity (3 Persons), the theologians of the emperor Constantine confused a Person (the Father, the Son) with the Divine Power or the Support of the Spiritual World (the Breath or the Wind).

H) Since Christianity is accustomed to the dogma of the Holy Trinity...

It is still possible to see 3 People in God. To do this, we must change our point of view and count the number of **life forms** in God.

1) 1st Person: the Father, the Eternal Source .
2) 2nd Person: the Son manifesting himself in his form of human life (Jesus on earth).
3) 3rd Person: the Son manifesting himself in his form of Spiritual life after his Resurrection and Glorification. The Son manifests himself through the Breath (Wind) of his Presence (the Spirit of the Son or the Holy Spirit).

By the human incarnation of the Son (Jesus), God no longer has only a divine nature, but also a human nature. Here we see the Holy Trinity coming out again. We also see the Plan of God: to allow a human who follows the Way of his Son to become {God's child}.

The Father is the internal (the Invisible) of God. He is the Eternal Source of Existence.

The Son is the external (the Visible) of God. He is both God and human. He has a Divine Body (the Glorious Body) and a human body (Jesus walking on earth). It is He who makes the link between the Father and the human being. In simple terms, the Son has 2 forms of life (Divine and human).

NT	St-John	14,6	Jesus said to him, "I am the Way, and the Truth, and the Life; no one comes to the Father but through Me.
----	---------	------	---

|32-D| A small readjustment of the original work is important

Taking into account the latest findings of articles |32-B and 32-C|.

For chapters |1 to 31|:

1) When I speak of the Holy Spirit as the Breath of the Presence of God ↓ In reality, it is the Spirit of Jesus . The word "Spirit" means: the Breath (Wind) of the Presence of a Person (a spiritual body). Here, it is the Breath (Wind) of the Presence of the Glorious Body of the Son.
2) When I speak of the Holy Spirit as the Breath (Wind) only ↓ In reality, the Breath (Wind) is the (Power of the Father). It is more specifically the Support of the Spiritual World (the support of spiritual beings). The Breath (Wind) is not a Person, but the Spiritual Reality given by the Father (Existence).
In simple terms, we could say that the Breath (Wind) alone is the Spiritual Reality of the Kingdom of God and that each of the people who inhabit this Kingdom has a spiritual body. Without the Breath (Wind), there is no Spiritual World. Without the spiritual body, there is no one in this World.

To show you that a small readjustment is not complicated...

Here is the chart of article |30-G| readjusted:

	God			
{God's child}	Power of the	Son	Power of the	Father
spiritual body	← Breath (Wind)	Glorious Body	← Breath (Wind)	Eternal Source
{birth of the Spirit}	The Spirit of the Son or (the Holy Spirit)		The Spirit of the Father	

In this chart, the Father and the Son do not share the same Spirit, for the Father and the Son would then have to be the same Person. Once again, the bishops of Constantine were mistaken. No, the Father shares his **Breath** with his Son. And it is this **Breath** that the Son shares with the {God's children}.

In the Bible, the best image of the Spirit of the Father is given during the Transfiguration of Jesus on the mountain. This Manifestation occurs by the **Bright Cloud** that descends on Jesus and a Voice is heard.

NT	St-Matthew	17,5	While he was still speaking, a bright cloud overshadowed (1) them, and behold, a voice out of the cloud said, "This is My beloved Son, with whom I am well-pleased; listen to Him!"
----	------------	------	--

(1) Here, it is evident that the **Bright Cloud** (Old Testament) is the **Spirit of the Father**.

Thereafter, the best image of the Manifestation of the Son is at Pentecost.

NT	Acts of the Apostles	2,1-4	When the day of Pentecost had come, they were all together in one place. And suddenly there came from heaven (sky) a noise like a violent rushing wind, and it filled the whole house where they were sitting. And there appeared to them tongues as of fire distributing themselves, and they rested on each one of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit (1)...
----	----------------------	-------	---

(1) Here, it is the **Spirit of the Son**.

In addition, about a year ago, I happened to find on the Internet an interesting piece of text from a study by a theologian who had analyzed (word for word) the Epistles of St-Paul. The theologian came to the conclusion that St-Paul spoke of 2 Breaths of God. The first Breath of God Raised Jesus from the dead. The second Breath of God being that of Pentecost. The theologian seemed a little confused in his conclusion. But in reality, his conclusion was good. There are:

- 1) The **Breath (Wind)** of the Presence of the Father (the Spirit of the Father) who Raised Jesus from the dead.
- 2) The **Breath (Wind)** of the Presence of Jesus (the Spirit of the Son or the Holy Spirit) Manifested at Pentecost.

In short, who is the Holy Spirit?

The Holy Spirit is the (Wind or Breath) of the Presence of the Son (the Glorious Body of Jesus Christ) Risen and Glorified by the Father.

General note:

When I started writing this work, I wanted to go see one of my former catechism teachers from high school. He is a theologian, he has a master's degree in theology. I wanted to show him some of my preliminary texts to find out what he thought of them. That same evening at the end of my prayer to the Lord, I had a "flash" and I felt this: **"this book is between you and Me only."** I was surprised! I understood that the Lord would give me the necessary {inspiration} and that no one should interfere with my work. In reality, through Manifestations of the Spirit, God gives explanations (Revelations) of his Reality (his mysteries). So brewing the mysteries of the Scriptures of the Bible without the help of the Holy Spirit gives nothing. Worse still, this has mixed Christianity! It is for this reason that this work has been so difficult to write. I had to clean up the many Christian dogmas (beliefs) that have been forged over the centuries...

Rewriting the work is not desirable... Why?

As written in article |32-C|, during the first four centuries, the Gospels have been somewhat modified according to the evolution of the dogmas (beliefs) of each of the churches. For example, the church of emperor Constantine adjusted the texts of the New Testament in order to standardize its dogmas (beliefs), especially that of the Holy Trinity. In simple terms, the dogma of the Holy Trinity has been embedded in the Bible. Obviously, I cannot use the Bible to prove that the dogma of the Holy Trinity is not correct! It is the Lord who gives his **Revelations** to whoever he wants!

Note of 2023:

For this present chapter written in 2019, I did well not to rewrite the work! From 2021 to 2023, I will have a little more than 8 additional Manifestations of the Spirit Revealing even more to me... As I specified in article |0-A|, the work is written progressively in the image of a discovery. So the reader, like me (the author), has to learn as chapters go along. Recently, I realized that the Lord not only inspired this work, but also structured it over a period of 6 years. **So, we have to be patient and not skip the steps!**

|32-E| The Spiritual World

The most intriguing statement of Jesus is:

NT	St-John	6,51-57	"I am the living bread that came down out of heaven; if anyone eats of this bread, he will live forever; and the bread also which I will give for the life of the world is My flesh." Then the Jews <i>began</i> to argue with one another, saying, "How can this man give us <i>His</i> flesh to eat?" So Jesus said to them, "Truly, truly, I say to you, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, you have no life in yourselves. "He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up on the last day. "For My flesh is true food, and My blood is true drink. "He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood abides in Me, and I in him. "As the living Father sent Me, and I live because of the Father, so he who eats Me, he also will live because of Me.
----	---------	---------	--

(*) See article |13-F|.

How to explain such a statement? We understand that this is not a human idea. On the other hand, since I had 2 Manifestations of the {memorial of communion with Christ} (Body and Blood), see article |13-G|, so this statement of Jesus is real. Here is my explanation:

Jesus does not seem to care much about his human body. In (St-John: 6,63), Jesus said: "It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh (the human body) profits nothing. Jesus also said: "if I had not come into this world."

Jesus being the Son of God, his own nature is obviously his form of Spiritual Life, his human body is only his incarnation on earth. So in his affirmation, Jesus speaks of his form of Spiritual Life. Humanly, we know that flesh is our body. We have seen in article |30-G| that the Son has a Glorious Body. Then by analogy, the **Glorious Body** is the "**flesh**" of which Jesus speaks. For the Jews, at the time of Jesus, blood is the fluid inside the body that gives life. We have seen that the **Breath** is the Vital Power that comes out of the Father (the Source) and feeds the spiritual beings (the spiritual bodies). Then by analogy, the **Breath** of Eternal Life is the "**blood**" of which Jesus speaks. In summary, "**the body and blood of Jesus**" is simply the **Spirit of Jesus** (his form of Spiritual Life). Since the verbs "eat and drink" mean to bring something into oneself, then "eat the body and drink the blood of Jesus" means "to bring into oneself the Spirit of Jesus." Humanly, since we bring food within us to live. Then by analogy, we must bring within us the Spirit of Jesus to Live Eternally.

|32-F| The return of Jesus at the end of time for the Last Judgment

In the New Testament, it is spoken of 2 returns of Jesus (after his death on the cross).

- 1) There is the return of the Risen Jesus to his apostles and disciples.
- 2) There is the return of Jesus in his Glory to Judge the Living and the dead (at the end of time).

In Christianity, this second return has always been mysterious. The book of Revelation describes this advent in a rather terrible way. Christianity is still waiting for this second return.

In article |32-B|, we have seen that the Holy Spirit is in fact the Spirit of Jesus.

At the time of Jesus, the expression "at the end of time" simply meant "when God will decide it" and not at the end of anything.

If we use the key sentence: "Jesus will return in his Glory to Judge the Living and the dead (~~at the end of time~~)".

- 1) "Jesus will return in his Glory"...

The word "**Glory**" has the meaning of "**the Presence of God**." We know that the Presence of God is "**the Spirit of one of the Persons of God**." So Jesus in his Glory is: **the Spirit of Jesus**.

- 2) "... to Judge the Living and the dead."

Jesus said: "It is the Spirit who gives **Life**; the flesh (the human body) profits nothing (the human is **mortal**)".

Here is what it gives: "Jesus will return in his Glory (**the Spirit of Jesus**) to Judge the Living (**give his Spirit**) and the dead (**do not give his Spirit**)".

Then we see clearly that this second return of Jesus was made at Pentecost and that it is still done (at the present time) by the {birth of the Spirit} as mentioned in chapter |30|. This Judgment of Jesus is not in the future, but always in the present. Hence the title of book number 13: The Holy Spirit is in reality the Return of Jesus Christ in His Glory.

Note:

The apostles were Jews (Judeo-Christians), for them the notion of body and soul did not exist, it was not thinkable! The human being is of flesh and blood only. This thought of the soul comes from the Greeks converted to Christianity (the Gentile-Christians). Then the apostles could not imagine the New World announced by Jesus elsewhere than on earth. On the other hand, Jesus had told his apostles that he will return (in his Glory) during their lifetime. Then the apostles waited (in their lifetime) for the end of our bad world and the building of the New World over it. With science, we know that everything that is material is automatically mortal. Then the New World is spiritual (immaterial). Since the New World is spiritual, then the return of Christ in his Glory is also spiritual. As the Holy Spirit is in fact the Spirit of Christ (Jesus) then the return that Jesus promised to his apostles really happened during the lifetime of the apostles, yes at Pentecost! It must also be said that the idea (of the body and the soul) of the Greeks converted to Christianity (the

Gentile-Christians) is not good either. With science, we know that the human body is biological and autonomous. So the concept of the soul in Christianity is false too. To have access to the (spiritual) Kingdom of God, there remains only the concept of {born again} with a spiritual body, there is no other solution. In fact, after his Resurrection, Jesus had given the solution to his apostles because he had a Body passing through walls. On the other hand, even if some apostles had found the solution, they would not have been able to say it, because the Jews would not have listened and followed them. At the time of the early Christians, the idea of the coming of the messiah of anger (Old Testament) to restore order in Israel was very strong in the Jewish mentality. The physical (human) coming of the messiah on earth could not end on the cross! Then the messiah of anger would come back later (with a two-edged sword as imagined in the book of Revelation of John of Patmos) in order to avenge the suffering of Christians caused by persecution.

On the other hand, for some theologians, since the return of Jesus on earth has not been done after 2,000 years, the explanation is that this famous return would be done simply through the presence of Christian movements. Here, the lack of humility is obvious! After imagining themselves having the power to give the Holy Spirit in their sacraments, they now imagine themselves to be the return of Jesus! I would like to point out that the Apparitions of the Blessed Virgin were made to children and not to the clergy (who have always been quite incredulous about these Apparitions)! The proof, do you know that there are only 15 Apparitions of the Blessed Virgin approved out of a total of 5,000 Apparitions declared in the course of history!

|32-G| The book of Revelation

I watched on the Internet some theological reports about the book of Revelation, of which here is the most interesting:

Internet Keywords (YouTube)	Série de 12 émissions de Gérard Mordillat et de Jérôme Prieur avec de nombreux théologiens et spécialistes chrétiens et juifs. <u>Je vous donne uniquement les titres de 4 émissions sur 12 :</u> 1) TV arte, L'Apocalypse 1/12, La synagogue de Satan Français VOF 2) L'Apocalypse 2 de 12, L'incendie de Rome 3) Le Sang Des Martyrs, La Révélation n°3 4) L'Apocalypse 12 de 12, Après l'apocalypse	Series of 12 programs by Gérard Mordillat and Jérôme Prieur with numerous Christian and Jewish theologians and specialists. <u>I only give you the titles of 4 out of the 12 programs:</u> 1) TV arte, The Apocalypse 1/12, The Synagogue of Satan 2) Revelation 2 of 12, The Burning of Rome 3) The Blood of the Martyrs, Revelation n°3 4) Revelation 12 of 12, After the apocalypse
-----------------------------------	---	---

Here are the important points:

- 1) Its author is John of Patmos and not St-John. John of Patmos does not seem to have read the Gospel of St-Luke, of which Jesus says that only the Father knows the details of the end of time...
- 2) This book comes from a conflict between the first churches. Between (Christians of Jewish origin) and (Christians of pagan origin or the Gentiles). John of Patmos had the vision that Christianity was only for the Jews and that it was a sacrilege to convert the Gentiles. Then in his vision, Jesus was going to come down from Heaven to set Christians on the right path.
- 3) The majority of the concepts in the book of Revelation are already known in the Old Testament, the Gospels and the Epistles. In his book, John of Patmos only pictures these concepts.
- 4) The prophets of the Old Testament wrote texts of the apocalyptic type (whose subject is the end of time). We also find several apocalyptic passages in the Gospels and Epistles. St-Peter says that Jesus promised them a New World (a new earth and a new sky). Consequently the apostles imagined that at the end of time, God had to melt our earth and our sky to build another (of peace and justice).

NT	St-Peter, 2nd Epistles	3,10-11	But the day of the Lord will come like a thief, in which the heavens (the sky) will pass away with a roar and the elements will be destroyed with intense heat , and the earth and its works will be burned up. Since all these things are to be destroyed in this way, what sort of people ought you to be in holy conduct and godliness,
	St-Matthew	24,29	"But immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light, and the stars will fall from the sky , and the powers of the heavens will be shaken.

The early Christians lived in expectation of an end of the world for very soon and that they would see the return of Christ during their lifetime. It is for this reason that John of Patmos writes that the return of Christ is near.

NT	St-Paul, 1st Epistle to the Thessalonians	4,17	Then we who are alive and remain will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and so we shall always be with the Lord.
----	---	------	--

5) Christians have been persecuted. Rome was named the great Babylon (the place of perdition). The emperor of Rome has been named, the Antichrist, the Beast, etc.

In conclusion:

The book of Revelation pictures many beliefs of the time as well as conflicts between Christian churches and the desire for revenge due to persecution.

| 32-H | The apocryphal Gospels

In the year 313, only 4 Gospels were recognized by the great church (that of emperor Constantine). These are the 4 canonical Gospels. On the other hand, historians speak of about 50 other Gospels that have been hidden. These are the apocryphal Gospels. Personally, I have watched several reports on the Internet of these apocryphal Gospels. There are not really more revelations about Jesus than there are in the 4 canonical Gospels. However, there are 2 interesting points. A first point is that women held a place as important as men in the first Christian communities. A second point is that there is no hierarchy (priests, bishops, etc.) in the early Christian communities. The only important thing that Jesus asks of those who have received his Spirit: to testify of his Resurrection, to teach and to speak on his behalf. This is because they have received his {unction} to do so, as I am doing now for you. When a person receives the Breath of the Presence of Jesus (the Holy Spirit) then it is normal for that person to be a witness of the Resurrection of Jesus.

In addition, on the Internet, theologians say they have not been able to determine the exact words of Jesus in the Gospels. They say that the evangelists made Jesus speak. In reality, the theologians have not understood that the evangelist, by receiving the Spirit of Jesus (the Breath of Jesus Presence) in him, then becomes the hand through which the Risen Jesus continues to give his message. I have already said that the {inspiration} of this present work does not come from me, I am only writing...

| 32-I | The Gospels of the Bible

The Gospels of the Bible are the teaching texts for initiates of Christianity, those who entered the early Christian communities. We could say that a Gospel is a book of learning or method, it is a summary or a synthesis. These texts have a lot of strength because Jesus speaks. The initiated Christian follows the Word of his Master. On the other hand, we see that the mysteries of the Gospels are difficult to define because they "move or slide". This is because the Gospels have been somewhat modified by the churches to adjust to their dogmas over time. At present, the most recent texts of the New Testament are transcriptions dating back to about the year 0800. So finding precisely in the Gospels the exact words that Jesus said on earth seems a little illusory. In fact, the most accurate writings of the New Testament are the Epistles and the Acts of the Apostles, because they were written by a single person (St-Paul, St-James, etc.). These writings have a better logic. Since they are not of primary importance, then it is obvious that the growing churches do not seem to have paid much attention to them and therefore they have been changed very little. It should be known that the evangelists wrote the mysteries of the Gospels mainly from the Epistles and Acts of the Apostles. Remember that St-Luke (evangelist)

was the secretary of St-Paul (author of Epistles) and that St-Mark (evangelist) was the secretary of St-Peter (author of Epistles).

This present work would not have been possible to write without the Epistles and Acts of the Apostles, because they are more precise, contain more details and have obviously been less biased than the Gospels during the history of Christianity.

|32-J| History of Christianity

I watched several reports on the Internet about the history of Christianity. In our time (the 2000s), religion is completely separate from politics (at least in Canada). We know that between the years 0300 and 1800, religion led politics and society.

Internet keywords (YouTube)	1) 2,000 years of Christianity, a historical documentary. 1) 2 000 ans de christianisme, documentaire historique. 2) Documentary: The Hidden History of the Bible that the Vatican hides from us. 2) Documentaire : L'Histoire Cachée de la Bible Que Nous Cache le Vatican. History Of Jesus Christ - Secret Story Of Jesus Christ Documentary.
--------------------------------	--

I will summarize here the important points:

Until the year 0300, Christians hid mainly in catacombs due to persecution. St-Paul and St-Peter were executed during the first great period of persecution under emperor Nero in the 0060s.

In the 0300s, Christianity was developing very well alone. By cons, the empire of Rome was dying out. Emperor Constantine was looking for a solution to get his country out of this impasse. He noticed that the fervor for Christianity was growing among his people and the divinities of Rome (paganism) were increasingly neglected. Constantine, a very good organizer, then took (or seized) Christianity and legalized it. Constantine organized Christianity in his own way. He established a religious hierarchy. He retained 4 Gospels (canonical) and banished all others (apocryphal). Constantine wanted the new religion to please everyone (pagans and Christians). To extend his domination, Constantine knew the recipe very well. First, the emperor and monarchy were appointed by God through the hands of senior religious leaders. In this way, the population had nothing to say, their kingship came from the will of God! Secondly, God was the protector of the nation and the provider of all graces. Of course if a Christian did not do what the religious people said then God would take away his graces and the devil would come closer. It is from there that the false Christian idea emerged that God should solve all our problems (war, famine, health, work, etc.). For people nowadays, if God does not solve our problems, it is because he does not exist! No, if God does not solve our problems, it is because he is not the protector of the nation nor the purveyor of all the graces, **it is a false idea invented** by Constantine. In reality, it is up to us humans to solve our problems. On the other hand, it is true that God can give us a little help from time to time if he wants to. In addition, senior religious leaders determined who goes to Heaven and who goes to hell. In this way, Constantine established his absolute reign. Some theologians say that Constantine **has paganized Christianity or has Christianized** paganism. For the first time, Christianity became a religion of the world when Jesus and his apostles said that they were not part of the world, that they had been removed from the world! From the 500s, Christianity became so strong that some Christians even began to persecute other Christians. There were many religious wars. In the 1500s, there was a revolution (Protestantism) initiated by theologian Martin Luther who was nearly killed. Subsequently, from the 1600s, Christianity improved humanly and gradually eased up to today.

|32-K| Where are the prophets?

Have you noticed that we have no new Christian writing for nearly 2,000 years? The role of the Holy Spirit is to make the Holy Scriptures alive and adapted to the times. Christians are supposed to be a nation of prophets, but for that we must not lose the Holy Spirit! It is for this reason that the Lord has {inspired} this work to me. Yes, currently "Christianity of the world" is declining everywhere, but it has regained its freedom of expression since the 1960s and it is being reborn! Never in history has there been so much Christian information available: testimonies, reports, free writing, etc. **The Internet is full of them!**

| 32-L | Bible and demons

The Old Testament (Christian) comes from the Greek translation of the Torah (Jewish) by 70 scholars for 70 days. It is the translation of the Septuagint or the Old Testament from the Greek Bible. I compared the passages that are the basis of the Christian theory of demons (Isaiah chapter 14 and Ezekiel chapter 28). The difficulty is that the same passages of the Torah translated into (French/English) do not speak of the devil and hell, but of human death on earth. The basic idea is that in Sheol, a human is nothing, he (or she) remains only a memory for the Eternal God who has the power to bring him back to life if he wishes. Below, I give you a comparison of some important verses from Ezekiel (chapter 28). On the other hand, for Isaiah (chapter 14), I do not see any direct reference to the devil in this passage, see article | 22-F |.

Ezekiel 28. The fall of the king of Tyre.

Direct comparison of the Bible (Greek) and the Torah (Jewish).

I report here an excerpt from the prophet Ezekiel, chapter 28 of the Bible (New American Standard).

I report here an excerpt from the prophet Ezekiel, chapter 28 of the Torah (<http://www.sefarim.fr>).

16. Bible	"By the abundance of your trade You were internally filled with violence, And you sinned; Therefore I have cast you as profane From the mountain of God. And I have destroyed you (1) , O covering cherub, From the midst of the stones of fire.
16. Torah	By the multitude of thy traffic they filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned; therefore have I cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God; and I have destroyed thee (2) , O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire.
17. Bible	"Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty; You corrupted your wisdom by reason of your splendor. I cast you to the ground; I put you before kings, That they may see you.
17. Torah	Thy heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness; I have cast thee to the ground, I have laid thee before kings, that they may gaze upon thee.
18. Bible	"By the multitude of your iniquities, In the unrighteousness of your trade You profaned your sanctuaries. Therefore I have brought fire from the midst of you; It has consumed you, And I have turned you to ashes on the earth In the eyes of all who see you.
18. Torah	By the multitude of thine iniquities, in the unrighteousness of thy traffic, thou hast profaned thy sanctuaries; therefore have I brought forth a fire from the midst of thee, it hath devoured thee, and I have turned thee to ashes upon the earth in the sight of all them that behold thee.
19. Bible	"All who know you among the peoples Are appalled at you; You have become terrified (1) And you will cease to be forever (1) ."
19. Torah	All they that know thee among the peoples shall be appalled at thee; thou art become a terror (2) , and thou shalt never be any more (2) .'

(1) and **(2)**. In the French version (original), the texts of the Bible and the Torah are less similar. On the other hand, in this English version, we see that the texts of the Bible and the Torah are very similar and that they say that the fallen angel (Lucy) no longer exists.

Internet keywords	1) Safarim, Bible translated into French and English. 1) Safarim, Bible traduite en français et en anglais. 2) Torah translated into French and English. 2) Torah traduite en français et en anglais.
-------------------	--

Many theologians say that Bible passages with demons and hell would have to be retranslated. In the past, several words have been translated without taking into account their true meaning. This is the case of the word "Sheol" which had 4 depths or places, including a more surface place for the righteous who were waiting for the salvation of God and a very deep place underground (the abyss) for the devil. In the Bible, the 4 meanings of the word "Sheol" have been systematically replaced by the single word "hell."

The writings of the New Testament coincided with the first great persecution of Christians by the emperor Nero in the year 0060 and the destruction of the Temple of Jerusalem in the year 0070. Theologians believe that it was this wave of terror that produced a terrible shock in the minds of the early Christians. This shock would have introduced the reality of hell into the writings, because that is what the early Christians experienced! In psychology, which says persecution says (fear and death) and who says (fear and death) says demon. For the early Christians, since God was on their side, the only explanation for this massive persecution was that they were fighting against the forces of Evil! Even the number 666 would simply be a code to designate the emperor of Rome (the Beast). Since 7 is a holy number. 7 minus 1 equals 6, an imperfect number. 3 being a number that represents what is complete (example: 3 Persons in God), then 3 times the number 6 or 666 represents the number of the most complete evil, the devil.

|32-M| Here are some important questions I asked myself...

Why are there so many Christians who have not received the {gift of the Holy Spirit}? Why are the majority of people (even religious people) not interested in hearing that an individual has had Manifestations of the Holy Spirit or Apparitions? Why has the fervour for religions (Christian or other) decreased with the increase of science and technology over the past 100 years or so?

I worked a long time to find these few simple answers:

1) Before God presented himself to Abraham, all religions had several divinities (polytheism). Monotheism did not exist. People said that by praying to several divinities, they obtained more wealth. Each divinity had its function: fertility, war, rain, etc.

First answer: we see that there are people who practice a religion to obtain wealth and power.

2) Before the 1800s, people were very superstitious. How to protect yourself from evil spirits? How to influence the future?

Second answer: we see that there are people who practice a religion to coax a divinity in order to control what is uncontrollable humanly. The idea is to practice rituals to please a divinity in order to obtain from him something that we do not control humanely.

3) Since the 1900s, science and technology have brought more comfort to people: medicines, consumer goods, machines that do the hard work for us, etc. At the same time, religions have decreased in fervor. Why ask a divinity for things that science and technology can give us now?

Third answer: we see that there are people who practice a religion so as not to miss anything in their life.

So the overall answer to the questions I asked myself is simple. The majority of people do not need their Creator, but to live a beautiful life on earth without constraints and without missing anything. On the contrary, Jesus and his apostles were poor. They were mistreated for the cause of justice and truth. They were not focused on their own needs, but on those of the poorest. God did not cover them with gold or prestige. God did not defend them in front of their executioners. So, it is obvious that what the majority of people seek (the world) is not the same as what God seeks. God wants children of light for his Kingdom without evil. On the contrary, the majority of people (the world) want to create their own kingdom on earth despite the evil they do. A theologian said that the difference between a prophet and an ordinary person is that the prophet is in the service of God while an ordinary person is in the service of himself.

In general, the answer to the questions above is that the majority of people practice a religion to meet their own personal needs: security, health, work, wealth, power, etc. **Since they do not need the presence of God in their lives, God does not simply present himself to them!** They already had their rewards on earth and anyway, they would not be well in Heaven!

As for science and technology, **our new and precious divinity!** Yes, it has improved the quality of life of people in rich countries, but by pushing back the disadvantages in the countries of poor people!

Finally, for the very large number of religious people who have not received the Holy Spirit. I give you a first explanation by comparison. A teacher likes to practice teaching. A singer likes to practice singing. Well, a religious person likes to practice a religion! I give you a second explanation. A religion is reassuring: rituals, prayers, being part of a group, no longer

asking questions, being sure to be on the right path, studying endless theological mysteries and finally a function of power and tributes for some. Read the New Testament carefully and you will find exactly the opposite...

Here are some concepts that Jesus said:

- 1) The little ones will be the greatest ones (so, no tributes and no power).
- 2) It is not by saying "Lord Lord" that one will enter Heaven (so, the rituals are useless).
- 3) Seek and you will find, knock and it will be opened to you (so, the person who does not ask any more questions will not go anywhere).
- 4) God reveals his mysteries to the simple (so, great endless theological studies do not provide the true answers).

| 32-N | The Shroud of Turin

Internet keywords	1) The Shroud of Turin can only come from the Resurrection of Christ. 1) Le Linceul de Turin ne peut venir que de la Résurrection du Christ. Shroud Of Turin - BBC Documentary EWTN Live - Barrie Schwartz - Shroud of Turin - 2013-11-6 - Catholic History
-------------------	--

Did you know that the Shroud of Turin has undergone about 500,000 hours of scientific study? I saw several reports on this subject on the Internet. The conclusion is that the Light of the Resurrection of Christ is really imprinted on this Shroud. Some scientists participated in this study with the intention of unmasking the imposture of the Shroud, they returned home empty-handed! Scientists have come up against such powerful evidence that the majority of them preferred to remain silent. Yet science is supposed to be impartial, but in reality it is not. Human power games do not escape any discipline, even science.

Here are the important points of the study:

- 1) The Shroud contains pollens from the region of the crucifixion of Christ.
- 2) There are no blood tear marks on the fibers of the Shroud even when using an electron microscope. It is as if the body of Jesus did not touch the Shroud or the body had suddenly disappeared.
- 3) The fibres of the Shroud contain a three-dimensional image of the body. The image has a depth.
- 4) There is no case like this Shroud somewhere in the world and in all history.
- 5) The Shroud contains the details of the crucifixion of Jesus described in the Gospels.
- 6) To print this image, powerful lasers (lights) would have to come out of the body of Jesus.

When you think about it, only the fact of studying the Shroud 500,000 hours shows that the Shroud is not a fake since the imposture would have been unmasked long before that time!

All this (and much more) proves the Resurrection of Christ, because there is no other solution.

In fact, the scientists only had to read this present work which testifies that I received the Spirit of Jesus... then Jesus is obviously Risen!

| 33 | The Lord, Yahweh (I Am)

Chapters | 30 to 38 | are Optional. It is important to start by reading the introduction to Part 2. This chapter | 32 | was written in 2021.

| 33-A | The {God's child} is dwelt by the Spirit of the Son (Jesus)

In the New Testament we read that the Father abides in the Son and the Son abides in the {God's child}.

NT	St-John	14,20	"In that day you will know that I am in My Father, and you in Me, and I in you.
		17,21-23	that they may all be one; even as You, Father, are in Me and I in You, that they also may be in Us, so that the world may believe that You sent Me. "The glory which You have given Me I have given to them, that they may be one, just as We are one; I in them and You in Me, that they may be perfected in unity, so that the world may know that You sent Me, and loved them, even as You have loved Me.
	1st Epistle of St-John	1,3	what we have seen and heard we proclaim to you also, so that you too may have fellowship (1) with us; and indeed our fellowship is with the Father, and with His Son Jesus Christ.
		2,20	But you have an anointing from the Holy One, and you all know.
		2,27	As for you, the anointing which you received from Him abides in you, and you have no need for anyone to teach you; but as His anointing teaches you about all things, and is true and is not a lie, and just as it has taught you, you abide in Him.
		5,11	And the testimony is this, that God has given us eternal life, and this life is in His Son.

(1) Or **communion**.

The sign of this dwelling is the mark of the Sacred Heart {anointing} in the chest of the {God's child}. **I understood that Jesus insists that he abides in the heart of the {God's child}.**

| 33-B | In the Gospel of St-John, why does Jesus say that the Holy Spirit will come?

In the Gospel of St-John, Jesus speaks of the Holy Spirit as someone other than himself.

NT	St-John	14,26	"But the Helper, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all that I said to you.
----	---------	-------	---

So how can we understand that the Holy Spirit is actually the Divine form of the Son (Jesus)?

I believe that Jesus accepted his human condition very well. On earth, he is the **Son of Man**. Jesus is humble. It is only at his Glorification that he will return One in God. So Jesus speaks of another Person, this time Divine, who will come soon, but without saying that it is he Glorified by his Father.

NT	St-John	17,5	"Now, Father, glorify Me (1) together with Yourself, with the glory which I had with You before the world was (2).
----	---------	------	---

(1) To glorify means to become One in God.

(2) Jesus was the Son of God long before the creation of the Earth.

I believe that theologians should have understood that Jesus, after his Glorification, was going to return to his Divine form, yes the Spirit of God (the Holy Spirit). As I have already mentioned, a Spirit is a Wind and a Wind is a Divinity. So on Earth, Jesus presents himself as a human. He accepted that he was not God until he had his Glorification which will make him Spirit (God) at Pentecost.

|33-C| The Son United with the Father, Jesus is the Word of Yahweh of the Old Testament

Reread my Manifestations of chapter |13| and you will see this:

Jesus is God because he presents himself as a Spirit (the Holy Spirit). He is God because he calls himself: **I Am**.

See article |13-I|.

My testimony:

A few days later, one night, I had a dream. I was sleeping and I had a "flashback" that reminded me of my {birth of the Spirit}. Subsequently, I had these feelings:

- 1) **I Am** with you;
- 2) The commercial success of this book is unimportant;
- 3) You will not miss anything.

As I said before, there are no words, they are feelings.

When I felt this message from God, I also felt that **God has a human part!** At that time, I did not write it down because I could not explain it. I did not know that the Holy Spirit was actually the Spirit of the Son (**God-man**).

NT	St-John	8,58	Jesus said to them, "Truly, truly, I say to you, before Abraham was born, I Am ."
		10,30	"I (Jesus) and the Father are one ." (*)

(*) It is the **Union** between the Father and the Son.

In the Old Testament, God presents himself to Moses as Yahweh (**I Am**). **It is God the Son who Speaks**. In reality, **the Jews did not know God the Father**. It is for this reason that Jesus presents himself as the **Word** who makes God his Father known.

NT	St-John	1,18	No one has ever seen God (the Father). The (only Son , God), who is at the Father's side, has revealed him .
		5,37-38	"And the Father who sent Me, He has testified of Me. You have neither heard His voice at any time nor seen His form . "You do not have His word abiding in you, for you do not believe Him whom He sent.
		14,8-10	Philip said to Him, "Lord, show us the Father, and it is enough for us." Jesus said to him, "Have I been so long with you, and yet you have not come to know Me, Philip? He who has seen Me has seen the Father ; how can you say, 'Show us the Father'? "Do you not believe that I am in the Father, and the Father is in Me? The words that I say to you I do not speak on My own initiative, but the Father abiding in Me does His works.

(*) Note of 2022. These verses say that God the Father is Invisible and there is only God the Son (Jesus) who is Manifest (Visible). In simple terms, in the account of the burning bush, Yahweh (**I Am**) who presented Himself to Moses is God the Son (Jesus) because the Father is Invisible.

On the Internet, I give you a testimony of an Apparition of Jesus. It is a small video in English with French subtitles of an ex-Muslim converted to Christ. He was severely ill. He prayed to Jesus for help because he was going to die. Jesus appeared to him in the hospital. Jesus appeared in the form of a **Very Luminous Silhouette** and said, **"I Am the God of Christians. I Am the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob"**.

Internet keywords (YouTube)	Healed by Jesus, Nasir Siddiki becomes Christian (Testimony of an ex-Muslim converted to Christ)
	Guéri par Jésus, Nasir Siddiki devient Chrétien (témoignage d'un ex-Musulman converti au Christ)

(*) This form of the Luminous Silhouette of Jesus explains why the apostles were surprised and had difficulty recognizing the Risen Jesus in the testimonies of the New Testament. They then recognize him by his gestures. In article |6-G|, the Blessed Virgin Mary also presents herself in the form of a Luminous Silhouette in her Apparitions in Zeitoun.

As mentioned in article |32-C|, the weakness of the current theory of the Holy Trinity is: how can God separate himself into 3 Persons? A will, a word and a breath are obviously not persons. Many theologians say that this Christian way of seeing is a practical language game, but without logic to remain in monotheism (One God).

In reality, at the time of Jesus, the word used in the Hebrew Scriptures to define the reality of God is "ONE" in the sense of "UNION" therefore: "**God is Union.**" The same word "**union**" used for the meaning of "**marriage**." Husband and wife become "**one**."

Here is the chart from article |32-D| augmented:

	God (Union)			
{God's child}	Power of the Son		Power of the Father	
spiritual body	← Breath of the	Glorious Body	← Breath of the	Eternal Source
{birth of the Spirit}	The Spirit of the Son or (the Holy Spirit)		The Spirit of the Father	
	Exterior of God (Manifestation) Both, man and God (1)		Internal of God (Invisible) Eternal Source of Existence (2)	

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	1,15	He (Jesus, God the Son) is the Image (1) of the Invisible (2) God (God the Father), the firstborn of all creation.
----	--------------------------------------	------	--

To show you that this chart gives a good explanation, I will insert my Manifestation of the Spirit from article |13-Q|.

My testimony:

That night, I was dreaming of one of my old friends. I had lived in his home during my studies in the 1990s. In my dream, I spoke to him and there was a very light and continual breath coming out of my mouth and going towards his direction. However, my friend tried to avoid this breath. I felt that the breath did not come from me, but from inside me and that I was just trying to direct it towards him. Afterwards, I woke up softly and **felt that there was actually a continual Breath coming out of my mouth** for a few more minutes! Then, I recognized the Manifestation of the Spirit, and I was not even surprised. But I wondered, "Why this friend in particular?" I cannot talk to him about this book because he died about 10 years ago!

Note:

This is my first Manifestation in which I do not receive the Breath, **but I transmit it.**

If I place this Manifestation in the chart above, it gives:

		God (Union)			
I transmit	{God's child}	Power of the Son		Power of the Father	
← Breath of the	spiritual body	← Breath of the	Glorious Body	← Breath of the	Eternal Source
Coming out of my mouth	I (Dominic P.)	The Spirit of the Son or (the Holy Spirit)		The Spirit of the Father	

|33-D| A reflection on the title of the Immaculate Conception of the Blessed Virgin Mary

See article |6-K|.

About a year after the publication of book number 13, I was reflecting on Mary's response to Bernadette Soubirous: "**I am the Immaculate Conception.**"

The priest who had heard Bernadette's answer said that there was a grammatical problem with this sentence.

I will change the position of the noun and the adjective in Mary's answer in order to better understand.

"**I am the Immaculate Conception.**"

"**I am the Conception Immaculate.**"

The priest replied that Mary cannot be "the Conception" because Mary is a person. The priest said that Mary can have called herself, for example, "the Immaculate Virgin." So "the Virgin" is a person. On the other hand, "the Conception" cannot be a person!

On the other hand, this is similar to what some theologians have said about the Holy Trinity. How can "the Word" be a person? Or how can "the Breath" be a person?

I believe this is related to 2 realities:

1) The Timeless of God or his Name, the Eternal (I Am). There is no beginning and no end. So, we are not talking about a word, but "the Word," we are not talking about a breath, but "the Breath." We are not talking about a conception, but "the Conception."

2) The Spirit of God who acts in the person. The person then becomes the instrument or extension on earth of the Manifestation of God in him. For example, the prophet Jeremiah said that God spoke through his mouth.

OT	Jeremiah	1,9	Then the LORD (Yahweh) stretched out His hand and touched my mouth, and the LORD said to me, "Behold, I have put My words in your mouth.
----	----------	-----	--

NT	St-Matthew	10,18-20	(*) You will be brought before governors and kings for my sake, to bear witness before them and the Gentiles. But when they deliver you up, do not be anxious about how to speak or what to say: whatever you have to say will be given to you in that moment, for it is not you who will speak, but the Spirit of your Father (1) who will speak in you.
----	------------	----------	---

(*) From the bible of Jerusalem.

(1) Here the translation should have been: "**the Holy Spirit** who will speak in you." As I have already said, the translators of the New Testament did not understand what they were translating, so they combined everything (Breath, Spirit of the Son, Spirit of the Father) under one word: "**the Spirit**." The charts in article | 33-C | give the best representation. The same thing happened with the word "**Sheol**" which had 4 meanings or depths and which was systematically translated by a single word with one meaning: "**Hell**." Obviously, through these simplifications, the mysteries of the New Testament become impossible to understand.

In article | 33-C |, Jesus calls himself: "**I Am** the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob." I would like to point out that his name is "**I Am**." This is the Name of God (Yahweh of the Old Testament). In her answer to Bernadette, I point out that Mary uses a sentence with the same form...

If I make a link between current Christian theology and the announcement of Mary:

- ° **I am the Will** (1st Person of God, the Father).
- ° **I am the Word** (2nd Person of God, the Son).
- ° **I am the Breath** (3rd Person of God, the Holy Spirit).

This time:

- ° **I am the Immaculate Conception** (the Blessed Virgin Mary, Mother of the Son's humanity).

Here is my best explanation:

Mary named herself simply **by using a phrase having the same form** as the dogma of Unity of the Holy Trinity used and accepted by Christianity from the time of emperor Constantine in the 4th century.

In his Epistles, St-Paul says that God the Father shares his Divinity with his Son. St-Paul also says that in Heaven, the {God's children} (sons or daughters) will be Glorified and therefore God will also share his Divinity (through his Unity) with them.

In Canada, I would point out to you that children bear their father's (family) **name**. By comparison, God's **Name** is "**I am**." So in her answer, we see that Mary says that she is United with God since she uses his **Name**: "**I am** the Immaculate Conception."

In conclusion:

In Mary's sentence, there are 2 messages:

- 1) Mary says that the human body of Jesus was **Conceived** in her by the Eternal.
- 2) Mary says that she is a daughter of God and that she has been **Glorified** (United with God), for she bears the **Name** of the Eternal.

NT	1st Epistle of St-John	3,2	Beloved, now we are children of God, and it has not appeared as yet what we will be (*). We know that when He (Jesus) appears, we will be like Him, because we will see Him just as He is.
----	------------------------	-----	---

(*) The Apparitions of Mary are the answer to St-John's question.

Mary is therefore the living proof for all Christians of God's Promise (2nd Covenant) for a human {born of the Spirit}.

|33-E| What is the connection between God and fire?

Theologians say that in the Bible, **fire** is a symbol of judgment, purification, and the presence of the Holy Spirit or God.

OT	Exodus	3,2	The angel of the LORD appeared to him in a blazing fire from the midst of a bush; and he looked, and behold, the bush was burning with fire, yet the bush was not consumed (*).
----	--------	-----	---

(*) Here, it is spoken of a **flame without heat** (or mystical) since it does not consume the bush.

OT	Exodus	40,38	For throughout all their journeys, the cloud of the LORD was on the tabernacle by day, and there was fire in it by night (*), in the sight of all the house of Israel.
----	--------	-------	---

(*) Here, it is a Fire (Presence of God). This Fire is above the mercy seat of the Ark of the Covenant. This time, this Fire is not mystical, but a physical (real) Fire, because all the people can see it without exception. See article |33-J|.

OT	Daniel	7,9-10	"I kept looking Until thrones (1) were set up, And the Ancient (2) of Days took His seat; His vesture was like white snow And the hair of His head like pure wool. His throne was ablaze with flames , Its wheels were a burning fire. "A river of fire was flowing And coming out from before Him ; Thousands upon thousands were attending Him, And myriads upon myriads were standing before Him; The court sat, And the books were opened.
----	--------	--------	--

(1) The Kingdom of God.

(2) God the Father.

NT	Acts of the Apostles	2,1-4	When the day of Pentecost had come, they were all together in one place. And suddenly there came from heaven (sky) a noise like a violent rushing wind, and it filled the whole house where they were sitting. And there appeared to them tongues as of fire distributing themselves, and they rested on each one of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit was giving them utterance.
----	----------------------	-------	---

We see that the fire is the sign of Presence of God. Fire is the sign of His Power and Purity (Holiness).

So why do some Christians talk about the flames of Hell?

At the time of Jesus, when Roman soldiers wanted to remove sickness from a dungeon or purify it, they passed the dungeon to the flame. It is similar here. The flames of Hell are not the flames of Satan's power. No, it is the flames of God forming walls around Satan so that he cannot come out of this place we call Hell (the famous dungeon). Anyway, Satan is a symbol and Hell does not exist, see chapter 18 .			
---	--	--	--

|33-F| Why the Manifestation of an orange Perfume?

I give you again my testimony of article |13-K|.

My testimony:

At the end of September 2016, one evening when I finished my prayer in my room, I felt an "orange perfume!" I could smell this "perfume" for about 5 minutes. Yet there was no smell of orange anywhere! While taking the time to breathe several times, I realized that the smell of this "perfume" was in my head, in my brain and not elsewhere! It is like I felt it, not with my nose, but inside my head!

I solved this riddle on January 7, 2021. Subsequently, the Lord attested to the validity of this discovery by giving me the Manifestation of the Spirit of article |33-G| in the night.

On the Internet, it is often talk of a rose perfume released by the body of a saint who has died. The perfume is external since it is felt by the people around this saint. I believe that the roses represent Heaven. In article |6-K|, the Blessed Virgin appears with a yellow rose on each of her feet.

In my testimony, it is different:

- 1) It is the Perfume of orange and not of rose.
- 2) The smell is in my head and not outside of me.

Since the smell is inside me, I asked myself: what has I received in me?

From chapter |32|, I know that at the {birth of the Spirit}, ***it is the Spirit of Jesus that is received, the {anointing} in the chest.***

So, I asked myself what is the connection between an orange and Jesus.

In the New Testament, there is a lot of talk about incense and myrrh.

Looking at pictures on the Internet, I saw this:

The resin of myrrh is **orange** in color.

So in my Manifestation, the Lord did not indicate to me a fruit (orange), but rather **a color (orange), that of myrrh**. Since I am Canadian and not Jew, it is obvious that I would not have been able to recognize the smell of myrrh (I never smelled it).

So this Manifestation is actually a Perfume of myrrh.

At the time of Jesus, the Jews used it for:	Here is the meaning:
To make the holy anointing oil of the priests.	It is Jesus (the Priest) who gives the {anointing} in the chest of the {God's child}.
Embalm the dead like Jesus (mixture of myrrh and aloes).	In the New Testament, myrrh represents God made man (Jesus).

This Manifestation of article |13-K| has therefore 2 additional meanings:

- 1) The Holy Spirit had already identified himself in me without my realizing it. It is the Spirit of Jesus discovered later in chapter |32|.
- 2) The Spirit of Jesus dwells in the {God's child} since the Perfume is in me.

|33-G| My Manifestation of the Spirit of the night of Friday, January 8, 2021

I had not had another Manifestation of the Spirit since the publication of book 12 in French (in 2017). At the beginning of January 2021, I was about to publish book number 14. In prayer, I asked the Lord if he wanted to add something to his book or if it was okay like that.

Then the Lord made an additional contribution...

In 2017, I asked myself a question that was absolutely insoluble. What happens when a {God's child} dies on earth? What exactly happens at that moment?

Of course, I was thinking that I could never write this detail in any book since I would no longer be here to do so!

Since nothing is impossible to God, he gave me the answer!

The answer of the Lord is the **part 1** of my testimony below.

In fact, it is with this Manifestation that the Son of God (Jesus) brings with him a {God's child} for real. There is no other way to go to Heaven!

My testimony is divided into 3 parts:

1	In the night I slept without dreaming about anything. I began by feeling the presence of the {anointing} in my chest. Afterwards, I felt air continuously entering my nostrils. The inside of my body began to vibrate as if it were moved by the turbulence of a flame (but without heat). I understood then that it was a Manifestation of the Spirit. Afterwards, the turbulence became very strong. I no longer felt any of my little human pains in my body (1). I felt really good! I felt that God was drawing me to him, that God was bringing me with him now to Heaven. I continued to feel the air continually entering me. However, I felt that my human breathing had stopped (1). I understood that the Lord was coming for me. I was so happy! Finally Happiness forever!
2	Then I told the Lord that my mother is 75 years old and that she needs me on earth, I cannot abandon her. Afterwards, the Manifestation diminished in intensity. I continued to enjoy this happiness for several minutes. Then I began to feel my little human pains in me again. I felt that I still had to live on earth in spite of all the misfortunes. I already missed the Lord, because I knew that I would not feel his Presence any more soon. I was a little sad. The vibrations in my body became weaker and they stopped completely only an hour later.
3	As the Manifestation diminished, I had time to think. I realized that since I was {born of Spirit}, the ordinary way of dying (humanly) is not for me.

(1) When a person no longer breathes and no longer feels his body, it is because he is dead.

In article |33-E|, we saw that **fire** is a symbol of judgment, purification and the presence of the Holy Spirit or God.

A) What does the New Testament say about the Way to Heaven?

Here is an excerpt from article |23-D|:

St-John 3. The interview with Nicodemus.

13.	"No one has ascended into heaven, but He who descended from heaven: the Son of Man.
	(1) Only Jesus, the Son of God, has seen the Kingdom of God. Jesus is the only Way to Heaven.

B) What is the meaning of this Manifestation of the Spirit?

During this Manifestation, the Lord internally gave me the meaning. Within me, I knew that I was sharing the Body of Jesus (the Lamb) on the altar of the sacrifice in Flame. However, I did different research in the Old Testament and I thought long and hard to write to you the following summary...

The symbolism of this Manifestation is found in Jewish rituals of the Old Testament. Here, I give you the main idea, but in a very simplified way. To go further, see the book of Leviticus in the Old Testament.

A lamb was brought to the Temple by a faithful who wanted to purify himself of his sins. Then, a priest **sacrificed** (with **fire**) this **lamb** (*) on the altar. The smoke pleasing to God **rose from the earth to Heaven**.

(*) The lamb is a substitution. The lamb took away the sins of the faithful. Since the wages of sin is death, it is the lamb that would die in the place of the faithful. The faithful was thus freed from his sins which were forgiven by God. Of course, the faithful would commit other sins, and the same ritual would have to be repeated over and over again.

To bring a faithful to Heaven, a Perfect and Eternal place, it takes a Sacrifice with the same qualities. Since there is nothing on earth to make this kind of Sacrifice, God himself provides the Sacrifice.

This symbolism **materializes** with Jesus in the New Testament.

- 1) Jesus is the **Lamb** of God, the perfect **Sacrifice** on the Altar (the cross) for the sins of those Saved from death.
- 2) The {God's child} **is in Communion** with the Body of Jesus (the Lamb).

So the meaning of this Manifestation of the Spirit is:

The only way to be forgiven of one's sins and to be Saved from death (ascend from earth to Heaven) is through Communion with the Body of Jesus, the Lamb, the only Perfect Sacrifice before God.

C) Other important details in my testimony:

Strangely, I am still alive on earth and God brings me to Heaven! I understood that a {God's child} does not die, for his sins are forgiven forever. His human death is therefore different, he does not feel it, because God comes to get him in his time. Obviously his human body remains in the ground like the body of the apostles. I have already mentioned that after the {birth of the Spirit} for 3 months, we feel that Eternal Life has been given to us.

In my testimony, the Lord is taking me with him now and I am very happy, but I tell him this: "Then I told the Lord that my mother is 75 years old and she needs me on earth, I cannot abandon her." God does not bring his {children} right away, because they have a job to do here on earth despite the misfortune and suffering we all experience. I point out to you that God is always present on earth. He works for his Kingdom and endures all the evil that humans do. So to be {God's child} **is to be like him and to belong to him!** It is moving forward in life by choosing to do the good around us despite the evil that others do to us and forgiving them. ***In short, God leaves his {children} on earth so that they can participate in his Plan, to spread the good on earth.***

Note that this Manifestation of the Spirit confirms that the Last Judgment is on earth as stated in chapter |29|.

Even more, I believe that this Manifestation of the Spirit is unprecedented in Christianity!

Jesus does not need to come back at the end of time, because he is already in the heart of the {God's child} and it is he who brings him to Heaven.

I do not remember hearing such information in the New Testament. I even believe that the apostles did not know this Manifestation of the Spirit. They wanted Jesus to come back at the end of time so much! Maybe they needed that hope and Jesus did not want to disillusion them...

| 33-H | This Manifestation of the Spirit enriches the old model (chapter 31)

The Manifestation of article | 33-G | tells us that at the death of the {God's child}, it is the Spirit of Jesus dwelling in the {God's child} who brings him to Heaven. The Manifestation indicates that a {God's child} does not feel his human death and that it is done in a happy way. The Manifestation also indicates that God comes to take his {child} in his time. The {God's child} has nothing to worry about, his (life/Life) is in the hand of God. Obviously God will not forget him, because he dwells in him.

1) The human being on Earth:

Human breath	Human body
It is the deadly short breath	He is pulled from the ground and returns to it after his death (dust).

2) At the {birth of the Spirit}, the person receives the Spirit of Jesus in his heart:

Human breath	Human body, (heart, temple of the Spirit) ←	← The Spirit of Jesus Long Breath (Eternal)
--------------	--	--

3) At the death of the human body of the {God's child}, the Manifestation of article | 33-G | :

Human breath	Human body, (heart, temple of the Spirit) →	→ The Spirit of Jesus →	Heaven
--------------	--	--------------------------------	--------

(*) The {God's child} does not feel his human death, because his sins are forgiven forever. He leaves in happiness.

4) Glorification:

God (Yahweh)				In Heaven {God's children}	
Father (1) Eternal	Breath of Life (3)	Son (2) Glorious Body	Breath of Life (3)	spiritual body of St-Peter (4)	
				spiritual body of St-John (4)	
				spiritual body of St-Paul (4)	

(*) In his Epistles, St-Paul hypothesizes that each of the {God's children} will receive a spiritual body at the end of time during their Glorifications.

The Tree of Life.

If we compare with a tree. (1) The Father is the nourishing soil. (2) The Son is the root and the trunk of the tree. (4) The {God's children} are the branches of the tree. (3) The Breath of Life is the water that is taken from the soil, which changes into sap as it passes through the root and trunk to feed the branches.

In other words, God and his children form a Living Community.

Here is the correspondence of this chart 4) in the Gospel of St-John.

NT	St-John		
		15,1	"I am the true vine (2), and My Father (1) is the vinedresser.
		15,5	"I am the vine (2), you are the branches (4); he who abides (3) in Me and I in him, he bears much fruit, for apart from Me you can do nothing.

| 33-I | What does the modern model (chapter 30) say about this Manifestation of the Spirit?

Here is part 1 of my testimony.

1	In the night I slept without dreaming about anything. I began by feeling the presence of the {anointing} in my chest. Afterwards, I felt air continuously entering my nostrils (1). The inside of my body began to vibrate (2) as if it were moved by the turbulence of a flame (but without heat). I understood then that it was a Manifestation of the Spirit. Afterwards, the turbulence became very strong. I no longer felt any of my little human pains in my body (3). I felt really good! I felt that God was drawing me to him, that God was bringing me with him now to Heaven. I continued to feel the air continually entering me (1). However, I felt that my human breathing had stopped (3). I understood that the Lord was coming for me. I was so happy! Finally, Happiness forever!
----------	--

If I place the **(numbers)** of my testimony in the following 3 charts.

The {God's child} on Earth **(without any Manifestation of the Spirit)**.

1 individual, {God's child}			GOD		
{spiritual body} ← Breath	consciousness human body	← Breath (1)	Son Glorious Body	← Breath	Father Eternal Source

(1) Without the action of the Breath, the {spiritual body} is not felt in the human body.

The {God's child} on Earth **(during a Manifestation of the Spirit)**.

1 individual, {God's child}			GOD		
{ spiritual body } ← Breath (1)	consciousness human body (2)	← Breath (1)	Son Glorious Body	← Breath	Father Eternal Source

(1) Under the action of the Breath, the {spiritual body} is felt in the human body.

(2) Here, the Manifestation is a vibration like the very strong turbulence of a flame (but at body temperature).

During the death of the {God's child} on Earth.

1 individual, {God's child}			GOD		
consciousness ← (3) human body , { spiritual body }		← Breath	Son Glorious Body	← Breath	Father Eternal Source

(*) The human body of the {God's child} dies on earth, but his {spiritual body} is united with God for Eternity.

I did not invent the notion of the spiritual body, I simply extracted it from the New Testament!

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	3,1	Therefore if <u>you have been raised up (A)</u> with Christ, keep seeking the things above, where Christ is, seated at the right hand of God.
----	--------------------------------------	-----	---

NT	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	15,44	it is sown a natural body , <u>it is raised (A)</u> a spiritual body . If there is a natural body, there is also a spiritual body.
----	---	-------	--

(A) St-Paul indicates to his faithful that their resurrection is already made on earth through Christ's Resurrection at the {birth of the Spirit}. St-Paul indicates that when a faithful is resurrected, he receives a spiritual body.

So since the person is resurrected on earth at his {birth of the Spirit}, he receives his {spiritual body} at the same time.

In the **Apparitions** of article |6-H|, the children of Medjugorje said that **they touched the hand of the Blessed Virgin Mary**. So she has a **spiritual body**!

Conclusion:

We see that this chart explains the Manifestation sufficiently to give us a good idea of it. ***Let's say, a more rational idea for us humans of the 2000s.***

|33-J| The Ark of the Covenant

At the time of Moses, God asked to make an Ark of the Covenant. It is a gold-covered wooden box with a solid gold lid (the mercy seat) with a statue of an angel with outstretched wings at each end. The Ark also has 2 bars for moving it, because the Hebrews were nomads in the desert. The stone Tables of God's 10 Commandments were placed inside, along with a sample of the manna (bread from the sky in the desert) that God had made incorruptible this time. This Ark was a mark of the Covenant between God and his people, hence its name, the Ark of the Covenant.

When God wanted to speak to Moses, God came down from the sky under a Manifestation (Fire and Cloud) above the Ark between the 2 angel statues. There was a great Light above the Ark. Beware, **the Ark was not a Temple**, but a **Meeting place**. The lid (the mercy seat) was the place of contact between God and men.

OT	Exodus	25,21-22	"You shall put the mercy seat on top of the ark, and in the ark you shall put the testimony (the Tables of the 10 Commandments) which I will give to you. "There I will meet with you; and from above the mercy seat , from between the two cherubim which are upon the ark of the testimony , I will speak to you about all that I will give you in commandment for the sons of Israel.
		40,38	For throughout all their journeys, the cloud of the LORD was on the tabernacle by day, and there was fire in it by night, in the sight of all the house of Israel.
	Leviticus	16,2	The LORD said to Moses: "Tell your brother Aaron that he shall not enter at any time into the holy place inside the veil, before the mercy seat which is on the ark, or he will die; for I will appear in the cloud over the mercy seat ."

Under King Solomon, the Ark was introduced into the Holy of Holies in the heart of the Temple of Jerusalem.

Only high priests could approach the Ark once a year. Blood (example: of a lamb) was placed on the gold lid (the mercy seat) between the 2 angel statues. This was to make a ritual of purification of the sins of all the people. This purification was then available for the poorest who had nothing to offer in sacrifice.

The Ark of the Covenant disappeared about 600 years before Jesus when the Babylonians invaded Jerusalem. Many Jews and later archaeologists have tried to find it for 2600 years, but no one has proof that it still exists.

Here is an excerpt from article |22-A| of which I update some comments.

Jeremiah 31. The New Covenant.

31.	"Behold, days are coming," declares the LORD, "when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah, (*) This is the 2nd Eternal Covenant, written in the New Testament.
32.	not like the covenant which I made with their fathers in the day I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt, My covenant which they broke, although I was a husband to them," declares the LORD. (*) It is the 1st Covenant started with Abraham and made official with Moses, written in the Old Testament.
33.	"But this is the covenant (1) which I will make with the house of Israel (2) after those days," declares the LORD, "I will put My law within them and on their heart (3) I will write it; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people. (1) The 2nd Eternal Covenant. (2) With the Jewish people and then extended to all other humans who wish to be part of it. (3) At the {birth of the Spirit}, a person is filled with the Holy Spirit who causes his heart to dilate. See article 13-D . It is the {anointing}.
34.	"They will not teach again, each man his neighbor and each man his brother, saying, 'Know the LORD,' for they will all know Me (1), from the least of them to the greatest of them," declares the LORD, "for I will forgive their iniquity, and their sin (2) I will remember no more." (1) It is the {anointing} that teaches everything in the 1st Epistle of St-John. (2) It is the Forgiveness obtained by Jesus Christ on the cross for those who will be Saved. Beware, this forgiveness is not for all humanity, why else follow the Way of Jesus?

The prophet Jeremiah says that the Ark of the Covenant that was lost in his time was no longer important because the 1st Covenant was broken by the people (the people prayed to idols). God now wanted his Laws to be written in the hearts of the faithful and not on tablets of stone. Jeremiah announces a New Covenant that will be Eternal.

An Eternal Covenant obviously comes with an Eternal Ark (yes, the Resurrection of Christ at the tomb).

NT	St-John	20,11-12	But Mary was standing outside the tomb weeping; and so, as she wept, she stooped and looked into the tomb; and she saw two angels (*) in white sitting, one at the head and one at the feet (*), where the body of Jesus had been lying.
----	---------	----------	--

(*) This text from St-John demonstrates the link between the **Resurrection of Jesus** and the Ark of the Covenant of Moses.

Here it is:

Jesus (the Lamb) was slain on the cross. Afterwards, the bloodied Jesus was placed in a tomb, this is the lid (the Mercy Seat) of the Eternal Ark having this time 2 real Angels. God the Father Presents himself between these 2 Angels and Resurrects his Son Jesus. The Light above the Ark of the Covenant in the desert with Moses is thus associated with the Light of the Resurrection of Jesus at the tomb. It is this same Light that enters us during the {birth of the Spirit}, see article 13-D . In this Manifestation, the {God's child} takes part in the Body of Jesus at the tomb and his Resurrection. The Spirit of Jesus (the Divine form of Jesus) enters the heart of the {God's child} to make it a temple, hence the mark of the {anointing} in his chest. Thereafter, the Manifestations of article 13-G are a memorial of this Communion.			
The link between the Resurrection of Jesus and the ritual on the mercy seat of the Ark of the Covenant demonstrates that the forgiveness of sins is available to anyone who truly wants it, even the poorest, because it is God himself who offers himself in Sacrifice.			
As I mentioned, the Ark of the Covenant is not a temple, but a Meeting place between God (of the sky, Heaven) and man (of the earth). On the other hand, the body of Jesus on earth is the Temple of the Spirit of the Father. Likewise, the body of the {God's child} on earth is a temple of the Spirit of the Son.			

In 2017, when I wrote the original work. I knew there were connections between my Manifestations of the Spirit and the New Testament. However, it was only in this chapter |33| that I discovered that my Manifestations were also related to the rituals of the Old Testament. I knew that the New Testament was written with what Jesus said on earth as well as his Apparitions. On the other hand, I did not know that the apostles had received much the same Manifestations as I and many others to inspire their Writings.

NT	Acts of the Apostles	2,17	'It will come to pass in the last days,' God says, 'that I will pour out a portion of my spirit upon all flesh. Your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your young men shall see visions, your old men shall dream dreams.
----	----------------------	------	---

Moreover, what happened to the box, the Ark of the Covenant of Moses?

No one knows, and the Lord has not revealed it to me either! I believe that God simply made the Ark of the Covenant of Moses disappear from the Holy of Holies some time before the Babylonians arrived. Why? Simply so that it would not be desecrated. I also believe that the Ark of the Covenant of Moses had to disappear so that the Jews of that time could understand that this 1st Covenant had been ended for 600 years and that they now had to turn to the <i>New Eternal Covenant established by Christ.</i>			
--	--	--	--

|33-K| Links between the Old and New Testaments

With this last Manifestation of the Spirit, I understood that God educated the Hebrews in a progressive way.

1) Through Moses, the Lord began by giving laws and rituals. The laws are useful for the proper functioning of the people, respect of the people among themselves as well as respect of God. Some rituals are simply for hygiene (the pure and the impure) so that the people do not get sick. Other rituals recall stages in the history of the people in order to anchor a tradition in them. Examples: the exit of the people from Egypt, the Spirit of God (the Liminous Cloud) on the Ark of the Covenant; the lamb sacrificed; the manna (bread) given by God in the desert. You should know that the Old Testament Scriptures also announced the coming of God on earth.

OT	Isaiah	9,5	For a child is born to us, a son is given us; upon his shoulder dominion rests. They name him Wonder-Counselor, God-Hero, Father-Forever, Prince of Peace.
----	--------	-----	--

(*) Jesus.

2) God comes on earth (Jesus). He teaches that this whole tradition must now be internalized. Great gestures are useless. Laws must pass from the stone tablets of the Ark of the Covenant into the heart of the faithful. The Spirit of God will no longer dwell in the Temple of Jerusalem, but in the heart of the faithful. **All the symbolism of Jewish rituals becomes reality with Jesus.** Jesus is the Bread of Life. Jesus is the Lamb sacrificed. Jesus (Son of God) gives his Spirit, it is the {gift of the Holy Spirit} at Pentecost. Subsequently, the apostles claim that the Spirit within them or the {anointing} teaches them everything (such as the Manifestations in this book). Having become temples of God, the apostles say that they can pray anywhere (not just in Jerusalem) and that the Jewish Law is useless, for the Laws of God are now engraved in their hearts.

I give you some examples of connections between the Old and New Testaments:

Old Testament rituals	Link with	New Testament fulfillment
Being immersed in spring water, purification.	→	1) Initiation to Christian life. 2) Conversion of the heart requested by Jesus in the Gospels.
The unleavened bread of the Jewish Passover.	→	The body of Jesus, the Bread of Eternal Life.
1) The cup of wine of the Covenant. 2) The wine of the union. God being the bridegroom and the people being his bride.	→	1) The blood of Jesus, the cup of the 2nd Eternal Covenant. 2) Union of God and the human.
The altar of sacrifice.	→	The cross of Jesus.
The lamb of the sacrifice.	→	Jesus, the Perfect and Eternal Sacrifice.
1) The Ark of the Covenant having a mercy seat with 2 angel statues. 2) The mercy seat being the contact between human (on earth) and God (in Heaven). 3) The box of the Ark containing the 10 Commandments.	→	1) The Resurrection of Jesus at the tomb (the mercy seat) with 2 real Angels. 2) The Resurrection of Christ being the Way between human (on earth) and God (in Heaven). 3) The Commandments that Jesus asked to be observed in the Gospels.
The fire of the burning bush.	→	The Holy Spirit, God is Powerful and Love.
The smoke of the sacrifice going up to the sky.	→	The Spirit of Jesus, the only Way to Heaven.
1) God frees his people from slavery in Egypt. 2) By crossing the sea, God takes his people to the promised land.	→	1) God frees his {children} from the slavery of death. 2) Through the Resurrection of Christ, God takes his {children} to Heaven.
Circumcision, the mark of the Covenant in the flesh.	→	The {anointing}, the mark of the Eternal Covenant in the heart.
The Temple of God.	→	1) Jesus being the Temple of the Spirit of the Father. 2) The heart of the {God's child} being a temple of the Spirit of the Son (the Holy Spirit).

| 33-L | Here is the list of all the Manifestations of the Spirit that I have had (2016-2021)

Below each of the Manifestations I list very briefly **the links with the Bible.**

1) Manifestation of article | 13-D |.

- ° God is Spirit (Breath of Eternal Life).
- ° Presence of God in the person who is totally filled with it (mark of the dwelling).
- ° New birth (resemblance to the birth of Adam, which means human). It is a renewed human.
- ° Raising from the lying position (resurrection). From the Epistles of St-Paul: "you are risen with Christ."
- ° God has an incredible and unimaginable Power.

- ° God is Light.
- ° God is Sweet and Beneficent (Holy).
- ° Feeling of Happiness and Peace in his Presence (Glory of God).
- ° Precious gift forever within my body, it is the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.
- ° Never to be separated from God. Belong to God. Union of life/Life.
- ° God is Existence (which explains his Name, I Am).
- ° To be born {God's child}.
- ° God extends his hand even to ordinary people (humility).
- ° Heart filled and overflowing with the Breath of the Presence of God (making the {anointing} appear, a temple of God).
- ° For God, time does not exist. He is the Eternal.

2) Manifestation of article |13-E|.

- ° To be hungry for God. The {anointing} in the heart is like hunger in the stomach. Jesus is the Bread of Life.
- ° Continuous prayer for 3 days. From the Epistles of St-Paul: "you died with Christ on the cross."

3 and 4) The two Manifestations of article |13-G|.

- ° Communion with the Blood of Christ. Drinking from the cup of the New Eternal Covenant established by the blood of Jesus shed on the cross.
- ° Communion with the Body of Christ. From St-John: "whoever eats my flesh and drinks my blood will have Eternal Life"; "for I (Jesus) abide in him and he in me."
- ° Jesus sacrificed his human life. He Suffered out of Love for us on the cross. He is the Perfect and Eternal Sacrifice for the sins of those who will be Saved.

5) Manifestation of article |13-I|.

- ° The Holy Spirit or the Spirit of Jesus is **I Am** (the Word of Yahweh from the Old Testament).
- ° A {God's child} lacks nothing since God is with him.
- ° Call to write (become a prophet).

6) Manifestation of article |13-J|.

- ° Participation in Pentecost.
- ° God (Spirit) comes from (sky) Heaven. Thunderclap, flash of Light, mystical Wind that does not move an object.
- ° God, mystical Fire that burns without heat (like the burning bush in the book of Exodus).
- ° Presence of God in my body, through the turbulence of his Flame (Holy Spirit or Spirit of Jesus).
- ° God is a Wind (Spirit).
- ° Presence of the {anointing}. From the Epistles of St-Paul: "do you not know that you are a temple of God, for his Spirit dwells in you."

7) Manifestation of article |13-K|.

- ° Perfume of **orange** (the **color**) to designate the Perfume **of myrrh**. Jesus, God made man. Jesus received the Anointing from God the Father, he is the Priest of God.
- ° Smell in my head (mystical smell). My prayer goes up to God in a pleasant perfume. From St-John: "to pray in Spirit and in Truth."
- ° God is everywhere and hears everything. God is the Creator since he has access to my interior. From the Epistles of St-Paul: "the Spirit of God searches hearts."

8) Manifestation of article |13-L|.

- ° The {God's child} receives the {anointing} from the Son (Jesus, the Priest of God).

9) Manifestation of article |13-M|.

- ° The possession of the devil. Jesus casts out demons. The Breath of Life of God is stronger than death/Death.

10) Manifestation of article |13-N|.

° Call from Jesus to spread the Gospels.

11) Manifestation of article |13-O|.

° The soul is the human breath (short breath). The human is mortal.

° The Breath of God is Eternal. This Breath in the nostrils is continuous and slightly pulsating. It is a mystical Breath. The slightly pulsating side of the Breath is probably related to the turbulence of the Flame of God.

12) Manifestation of article |13-P|.

° The Transfiguration of Jesus on the mountain. God the Father certifies that Jesus is his Son. The link between the strong vibration in my face and the weak vibration in my body indicates that the Spirit of Jesus is in me. Moreover, the Transfiguration tells us that Jesus has a Special Body because he is Luminous. Jesus said, "In Heaven you will be like angels."

Note:

The **essential notion** that Jesus said in the Gospels is that **his Spirit dwells in the person from his {birth of the Spirit}**. This is exactly what I felt in article |13-D|. However, Jesus never spoke about receiving a spiritual body at the {birth of the Spirit}. It is important to understand that the spiritual body is a **secondary notion** that has been deduced by human logic. St-Paul is its inventor. My research in chapter |30| is along the same lines.

13) Manifestation of article |13-Q|.

° Call from Jesus to spread the Gospels.

° This book is {inspired} by the Spirit of Jesus.

° Spreading the Gospels is not easy.

° Without his {birth of the Spirit}, man dies in the ground.

14) Manifestation of article |33-G|.

° The {God's child} does not die, for the Spirit of Jesus dwells in his heart. He will not feel his human death on earth, for his sins are forgiven. Death has no power over him.

° Jesus is the Lamb; he is the Perfect and Eternal Sacrifice.

° The {God's child} is brought from earth to Heaven by the Communion with the Sacrifice of Christ.

° Jesus is the only Way leading to Heaven.

15) See article |32-D|.

° The Lord made me feel a Message after my prayer: "this book is between you and Me only." This present book is {inspired} by the Spirit of Jesus. The Word of God has also inspired the Scriptures of the Bible.

16) See article |20-B|.

° A Vision during the writing of this book. God walking in the Garden of Eden is Jesus.

17) See article |13-R|.

° I personally have had a healing. Of course, Jesus does healings.

18) I suggest you reread article |13-M|.

Here is a small Manifestation that I have not yet discussed in this book. I give it for readers who think that I have not gone far enough in my search for Satan.

In the Bible, Satan or the devil is the Opponent of God. Satan is the one who stands in the way of God's plan. Jesus even called St-Peter, Satan. For Jesus, every person who does not do the will of God is a "little Satan," so do not worry too much, because here we see all of humanity! See chapter |18|.

In 2016, at the very beginning of the writing of this book, I went to see a religious person to talk about my Manifestations of the Spirit. The night before I went to see this religious person, just after my prayer to the Lord, I saw (in my head) the facial features of this religious person gradually transforming into the stretched features of a demon! I was surprised! The next day, during my discussion with this religious person, she tried several times to convince me not to write this book. For her, the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is in the hands of the priest at Christian baptism **when in reality it is Jesus alone who gives it**. You see here, the Opponent to God's plan can be anyone, even a person who believes she is doing the right thing! I point out to you that Judas Iscariot delivered Jesus because he believed he was doing the right thing. Judas was convinced that Jesus could only be the Messiah (the Christ) if Jesus took up arms to expel the Romans and restore the kingdom of Israel. Even today, the Jews do not recognize Jesus as the Messiah for this reason. It is also for this same reason that the apostles (Jews too) firmly believed that Jesus would return at the end of time for the Last Judgment, he had to complete his mission. See chapter | 29 |.

Here is a summary of my Manifestations of the Spirit:

Jesus is God the Son made man. He conquered death through his Resurrection. He is the Light and the Truth. The Spirit of Jesus is the Holy Spirit. He is the Word of God revealed to the prophets and apostles. At the {birth of the Spirit}, the Spirit of Jesus enters through the nostrils of the person, fills his body, and then enters his heart, his temple. During a Manifestation, it is the Spirit of Jesus in the {God's child} that unveils himself for a moment and reveals his Mysteries. At the end of the life of the {God's child} on earth, it is the Spirit of Jesus dwelling in his heart that carries him from earth to Heaven. Jesus being the Lamb of God, the only Perfect Sacrifice before God and therefore the only Way to Eternal Life.

Hence the title of book number 14: The Spirit of Christ must dwell in you, for it is He who brings you to Heaven.

| 33-M | A word about the pandemic (Covid-19)

Obviously, God has nothing to do with this pandemic or any other in history for that matter, because God is Holy (without any evil). As I have already mentioned, the author of evil on Earth is the human. Human can only blame himself for his misfortune.

The current pandemic is simply a consequence of our globalization. Long ago, God made the Earth and its natural mechanisms with great precision. We can say that humans like to play (**science and technology**) in the gears of nature in order to enrich themselves. So, we can see this time that the human got his fingers stuck in it!

Several years ago, I thought we were in our first globalization. On the other hand, some historians have said that we were more in our second! The first globalization would have started in 1880, and it would have ended around 1950. You surely remember that there was a pandemic during this period, **yes the Spanish flu!** So with the second globalization (currently), we have the pandemic of **Covid-19**.

Why does not the Lord come to stop the pandemic? It is because he is not the author! God leaves human beings free to choose. Humans love money, power and might. They can never get enough of it, hence our globalization. So the consequences come with it! Human wants to make himself god on Earth, he does not need his Creator (God), so God does not come to help him or even repair his mistakes!

What should we do?

Turn to God and ask him to help you. He always listens to us. Ask him to protect you and your family. Be inspired by the prayers of chapter | 26 |.

The Lord will help you if you open your heart to him and ask him sincerely, rest assured!

Note:

For this subject of Covid-19, the Lord will give me a Manifestations of the Spirit in article | 34-N | in point 1).

| 34 | The Mysteries of the Bible solved

Chapters | 30 to 38 | are Optional. It is important to start by reading the introduction to Part 2. This chapter | 34 | was written in early 2022.

| 34-A | Introduction

From chapter | 1 | to chapter | 29 |, I tried to stay as faithful as possible to the ancient thought of the Scriptures of the Bible. Of course while removing certain myths. For example: the idea that the devil is a real Character. Subsequently, in chapter | 30 |, I tried to find in the Bible a logic that was a little more modern and understandable for us today (the 2000s). The Lord participated in the work through a little over 12 Manifestations of the Spirit from 2016 to 2017.

In chapter | 32 | written in 2019, we made a major discovery. From the event of Pentecost, the Holy Spirit is actually the Spirit of Jesus. We have discovered that the New Testament Scriptures are a progression in Christian beliefs (dogmas) as the small Christian communities were formed over a period of more than 80 years. Unfortunately, we have seen that the Gospels are not the exact words of Jesus. Yes, it is true that the evangelists made Jesus speak and theologians are the first to say so.

In chapter | 33 | written in early 2021, the Lord gave me another Manifestation of the Spirit which marked a turning point in the work. From here, the Lord gave me the ability to unite the New Testament with the Old Testament. The Lord confirms that the Last Judgment is on earth always now and not at the end of time. The Lord also confirms that the Holy Spirit is the Spirit of Jesus as discovered in chapter | 32 |. Moreover, in articles | 13-I | and | 33-C |, we find ourselves with a major problem, the Spirit of Jesus calls himself "**I Am**," it is the Name of God (**Yahweh**) of the Old Testament. According to Christian theology, "**I Am**" is **God the Father** who presented himself to Moses. How could the Son of God (Jesus) of the New Testament be God the Father of the Old Testament? In his epistles, St-Paul gives an explanation: "Jesus is the visible Manifestation of an invisible God (the Father)". With this explanation, it was possible to break this deadlock, complete chapter | 33 | and publish book number 14 in March 2021.

| 34-B | The Spirit of Jesus is in the person

In chapter | 33 |, we saw that the Spirit of Jesus is in the {God's child}. We have also seen that the {God's child} **takes part** (or communes) in the Sacrifice of the Body of Jesus.

The Lord gave me a very important Manifestation of the Spirit in April 2021 like this:

One evening, I was wondering if really the "Body of Jesus" is in me (the communion with the Body of Jesus). In the same night, my human body began to vibrate from head to toe. I felt the vibrations even at my fingertips and toes (1). It lasted about 10 minutes.

(1) **Then, the answer is yes.** The {God's child} is a temple of the Spirit of Jesus. In reality, the {gift of the Holy Spirit} in the New Testament is the {gift of the Risen Body of Jesus} in the {God's child}. The 2 Eucharistic Manifestations of article | 13-G | are communion with the Body and Blood of Jesus. So the {God's child} now **takes part** in: 1) the Sacrifice of Jesus on the cross, 2) the death of Jesus in the tomb, and 3) the Resurrection of Jesus 2,000 years ago.

Communion with the Body of Jesus is the mark of the **2nd Covenant (or Alliance)**. **Alliance** is another word for Marriage.

NT	St-Luke	22,19-20	Then he took the bread, said the blessing, broke it, and gave it to them, saying, "This is my body, which will be given for you; do this in memory of me." And likewise the cup after they had eaten, saying, "This cup is the new covenant in my blood, which will be shed for you."
----	---------	----------	---

It is for this reason that St-Paul writes:

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	3,1-4	If then you were raised with Christ (Jesus), seek what is above, where Christ is seated at the right hand of God. Think of what is above, not of what is on earth. For you have died (1), and your life is hidden with Christ in God. When Christ your life appears, then you too will appear with him in glory.
----	--------------------------------------	-------	--

(1) It is for this reason that after the {gift of the Risen Body of Jesus}, for about 3 months, I had a deep feeling in me that I was no longer part of the human world, that I had died here on earth, see article |13-F|. My (life/Life) is with God and not on earth. I felt my resurrection which is in fact to have **taken part** in the Resurrection of Jesus in the tomb, 2000 years ago. I felt within me that Eternal Life had been given to me, it is that God was sharing His Life with me from that moment on.

Very important:

In chapter |30|, this means that the vibration like a **Flame Turbulence** in my body is not the Manifestation of my spiritual body. **No, it is the Risen Body of Jesus in me.**

We really have a size problem!

The **Body of Jesus** is the **Turbulence of the Flame of Fire** as in the **burning bush with Moses** (the book of Exodus). But this is God (**Yahweh, I Am**) of the Old Testament! See also article |13-I| where the Spirit of Jesus in me calls himself "**I Am**." It is the Unique God (**Yahweh, I Am**) for the Jews and also God the Father for the Christians! In addition, this Manifestation reveals that the Body of Jesus (on earth) is not only human, but is God as well. This is the opposite of article |33-B| from the Gospels!

WE MUST THUS TAKE STOCK OF THESE REVELATIONS FROM THE LORD!

|34-C| There are problems between the Scriptures of the New Testament and the Manifestations of the Holy Spirit

With the New Testament Scriptures alone, we cannot understand all of the Manifestations of the Holy Spirit.

Here is what the Manifestations of the Holy Spirit Reveal:

- 1) The Holy Spirit is actually the Spirit of Jesus, see article |32-B|. It is barely mentioned in the New Testament!
- 2) Jesus who calls himself (**I Am**), see articles |13-I| and |33-C|. It is barely mentioned in the New Testament!
- 3) The Manifestations of the Holy Spirit are not described in the New Testament!
- 4) The Body of Jesus is in the {God's child} for the Sacrifice. At the end of his earthly life, the {God's child} goes to Heaven, because he takes part in the Sacrifice of the Body of Jesus on the Altar, see article |33-G|. It is not in the New Testament!
- 5) The Last Judgment is on earth always now. It is not in the New Testament!
- 6) The Body of Jesus who makes himself felt **God**, see article |13-D|, and who is called himself (**I Am**), see article |13-I|. It is not in the New Testament!
- 7) The Body of Jesus in the {God's child} is the Flame of Fire of the burning bush (Moses, Exodus). It is **Yahweh** of the Jews and **God the Father** of the Christians, see article |33-G|. It is not in the New Testament!
- 8) In all Manifestations **there is neither Father nor Son, but God alone**. It is not in the New Testament!
- 9) The Body of Jesus who is both **man and God** on earth, see articles |13-I| and |33-C|. It is not in the New Testament!
- 10) **Yahweh God** who walks in the Garden of Eden is Jesus in the year 0030, see article |20-B|. It is not in the New Testament!

In addition, all this also reveals that the 2 Manifestations of article |13-G| are not the "Memorial" of the Communion with the Body of Jesus as indicated in the New Testament, but **the real Communion with the Body of Jesus**. I point out to you that it is really strange that the 2 Manifestations of article |13-G| are not mentioned in the New Testament! We could say that the Eucharistic Communion at mass remains a "Memorial" until the day a person becomes {God's child} and receives the 2 real Manifestations of article |13-G|.

|34-D| Conclusion of the Revelations of the Manifestations of the Holy Spirit (the Spirit of Jesus)

Very important note:

I assure you that this conclusion is good since the Lord attested to it to me 3 times by giving me the Manifestation of article |34-I|, then of article |34-N| in point 3) and finally the Manifestation of article |34-U|.

It must be understood that the mysteries about Jesus are not accurate in the New Testament.

If I make a small return on the testimony of article |33-C|. The Apparition of Jesus says **he is God the Son** (I Am the God of Christians). But the Apparition of Jesus also says that he is the God who presented himself to Moses (I Am the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob). Again, Jesus says **he is the God of Judaism (it is God the Father of Christians)**.

Conclusion:

There is only One Person in God; yes God himself; God-man; I Am or Jesus. Here, I even allow myself a play on words: "I Am Jesus."

(*) In simple terms: Yahweh (I Am) of the Old Testament is Jesus (I Am) of the New Testament. It is the same Person.

Hence the title of book number 15: I Am Jesus, the Mysteries of the Bible Solved.

Here the mystery of the Holy Trinity is completely solved. This mystery is quite simply a human construction (invention).

It must be understood that the Reality of God is a Revelation that God gives by himself and not a theology (science made by humans).

NT	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	2,11-12	Among human beings, who knows what pertains to a person except the spirit of the person that is within? Similarly, no one knows what pertains to God except the Spirit of God (1). We have not received the spirit of the world but the Spirit that is from God, so that we may understand the things freely given us by God.
		12.3	Therefore, I tell you that nobody speaking by the spirit of God says, "Jesus be accursed." And no one can say, "Jesus is Lord (2)," except by the holy Spirit.

(1) The Spirit of God is the Spirit of Jesus.

(2) Lord means God, Jesus is God.

On the other hand, this is quite good news, because Christians have been trying without success (for 2,000 years) to link Jesus directly to **God who is ONE** (1 Person) of the Old Testament (Judaism).

OT	Genesis	1,1-3	In the beginning, when God created the heavens and the earth, the earth was a formless wasteland, and darkness covered the abyss, (a wind (1) of God whirled over the waters). Then God said, "Let there be light," and there was light.
----	---------	-------	--

(*) In English, (this little bit of verse) is imprecise, whereas in French, it is very revealing. So I translated it for you.

(1) Here we see very well that the Nature of God is not the Wind or the Breath. The Wind or the Breath comes from God, it is his Power, see article |32-D|. This was misinterpreted by the Greeks 270 years before Jesus (in the Septuagint). They believed that the Nature of God was Spirit (an Essence without a body). So God who, according to them, is Spirit (Breath or Wind), cannot have a Holy human Body (Jesus who walks on earth).

On the other hand, in the Old Testament, there is a piece of information that has escaped many people despite the fact that it is coming back from time to time: **I Am (Yahweh) says that he will come on earth in order to save his people.**

OT	Isaiah	9,5	For a child is born to us, a son is given us; upon his shoulder dominion rests. They name him Wonder-Counselor, (1) God-Hero, Father-Forever (Eternal Father), Prince of Peace (2) .
		40,3	A voice cries out: In the desert prepare the way of (1) the LORD (Yahweh)! Make straight in the wasteland a highway for our God (1)!

		40,10-11	Here comes with power (1) the Lord GOD (Yahweh), who rules by his strong arm; Here is his reward with him, his recompense before him. Like a shepherd (1) he feeds his flock; in his arms he gathers the lambs (2) , Carrying them in his bosom, and leading the ewes with care.
		45,5-6	"I am (Yahweh) the LORD, and there is no other; Besides Me there is no God. I will gird you, though you have not known Me; That men may know from the rising to the setting of the sun That there is no one (3) besides Me. I am the LORD, and there is no other,

(*) In English, (this little bit of verse) is imprecise, whereas in French, it is very revealing. So I translated it for you.

(1) We see that Jesus is God, the Eternal Father, Yahweh.

(2) We see that Jesus is the Prince of Peace (Holy) and not the "messiah of wrath" (a myth) expected by the Jews.

(3) We see that there is only one God, Yahweh himself.

For **God** to come and walk on earth and be visible to humans, what is needed? Yes, a Holy human Body (**Jesus**).

In the Old Testament, God alludes to his Body. He even has a human aspect since he walks in the Garden of Eden. I give you some of the most obvious examples, but there are many others where God alludes to his face, his hand, his back, etc.

OT	Genesis	3,8-10	When they heard the sound of the LORD God (Yahweh) (1) moving about in the garden at the breezy time of the day , the man and his wife hid themselves from the LORD God among the trees of the garden. The LORD God then called to the man and asked him, "Where are you?" He answered, " I heard (your footsteps) in the garden ; but I was afraid, because I was naked, so I hid myself."
		9,6	If anyone sheds the blood of man, by man shall his blood be shed; For in the image of God (2) has man been made.
	Ezekiel	1,26	Above the firmament over their heads something like a throne (3) could be seen, looking like sapphire. Upon it was seated, up above, one who had the appearance of a man (1).

(*) In English, (this little bit of verse) is imprecise, whereas in French, it is very revealing. So I translated it for you.

(1) Here Yahweh God is Jesus walking on earth, see my Vision of article |20-B|.

(2) God (Yahweh) becomes human, Jesus.

(3) Here, it is Jesus who is on the throne, because he is God (Yahweh).

God (Yahweh, I Am) of the Old Testament (Invisible) becomes (Visible) by coming to walk on earth in the New Testament. His Name is I Am or Jesus (the Emmanuel, God with us).	
That is why when I prayed to God, it was the Spirit of Jesus that Manifested himself to me.	
In simple terms, God (Yahweh) became man to walk with us on earth or if you prefer Jesus is God in person.	
This is also why the Blessed Virgin said in one of her Apparitions: " I am the Immaculate Conception. " It is that God himself (Yahweh, the Eternal) took human form (Jesus) in her. We now have the full meaning of her Message, see article 6-K . In simple terms, Mary says that she is the human Mother of God (Jesus).	

This is why Jesus Resurrects with his human Body. It is the **human Body** of God himself, it is sinless (**Holy**). This is why Jesus offers his Body as a sacrifice on the cross. God is Eternal, death has no power over him.

NT	1st Epistle of St-John	5,20	We also know that the Son of God has come and has given us discernment to know the one who is true. And we are in the one who is true, in his Son Jesus Christ. He (Jesus) is the true God and eternal life.
----	------------------------	------	--

(1) Jesus is the Eternal.

Moreover in current Christian theology, theologians say that there is something really strange:

1) Why does God the Father send his Son on earth for a Sacrifice?
2) Why does the Son have to die?

These are good questions!

In reality, it is God himself who Sacrificed himself for the human. It is a proof of the immeasurable Love of the Creator himself for his creation.

Here is a summary:

The Spirit of Jesus Reveals that he is God himself. There is neither Father nor Son, there is only God (Yahweh, I Am). In the Old Testament, God Presented himself to the Hebrews (Jews and Israelites) as the Spirit of God (Breath and Fire). **Subsequently, God presented himself on earth as a human being (it is Jesus).** After his Resurrection and at Pentecost, God Presents himself as the Spirit of God **(the Breath or the Wind of the Risen Body of Jesus).**

It is important to know that Jesus is the only one who Resurrects. We, we do not resurrect. We, we are {born again} right here on earth through the death and Resurrection of Jesus. This sharing is the Eternal Covenant. We will come back to this...

| 34-E | What does all this imply?

1) For the apostles, this was impossible to think and even less to write or say.

God, the one whose name was not even allowed to be pronounced (I Am or Yahweh), could not have presented himself on earth as a human.

God could not have died on a cross.

Humanity could not have killed its own Creator.

God (the Eternal) could not have Sacrificed himself to Save human from death.

In fact, all the mysterious and endless theology in the New Testament is to bypass this reality! Something that no one wanted to think, let alone say...

2) How is this possible?

For the Jews, the Manifestations of God were **ineffable**. This means that it was not permitted to describe them. This explains why the description of each of the Manifestations of God in the Bible has almost no detail. Without the twenty Manifestations of the Spirit of Jesus and the testimonies of his Apparitions, I would have understood absolutely nothing.

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Romans	8,26	In the same way, the Spirit too comes to the aid of our weakness; for we do not know how to pray as we ought, but the Spirit itself intercedes with inexpressible (ineffable) groanings.
	2nd Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	9,15	Thanks be to God for his indescribable (ineffable) gift!
		12,4	was caught up into Paradise and heard ineffable (1) things, which no one may utter.

(*) In English, (this little bit of verse) is imprecise, whereas in French, it is very revealing. So I translated it for you.

(1) Ineffable means: that we have no right to say.

| 34-F | The Scriptures of the Bible

A) In general.

It is important to know that the Bible is not a book, but a collection of several books. The Bible is a “library of books.” It includes several books spread over a long period of time (from about 1200 years before Jesus until 110 years after Jesus). Each of the books of the Bible contains a **theology (a human science about God)** which can be different according to the time. Theology is the set of beliefs that forms the framework or structure of a biblical book. Each of the authors of the

books of the Bible wrote according to the beliefs of his time. It is for this reason that beliefs in the Bible move or change from book to book.

It is important to know that the New Testament is the compilation of the early Christian Scriptures (approximately from the years 0060 to 0110) selected (only a small part) from the great multitude of Scriptures that existed at that time. This selection of scriptures was imposed by emperor Constantine in the year 0313 to establish a new state religion, Christianity. The other early Christian scriptures (not selected) were almost all destroyed. Several Scriptures have been found in archaeological excavations since the 1800s, these are the apocryphal Scriptures, see article |32-H|. A good example is the book of Enoch which I will present to you in article |34-G|.

B) It is easy to understand that the Bible is not exact!

1	In the NT, Satan and his demons are everywhere when they do not exist, even Jesus talks with Satan...
2	In the OT, the flood story cannot have existed. In biology, we know that the putrefaction caused by rotting corpses everywhere on Earth would have killed Noah and his family as they left his ark (his boat).

(*) I could give you a long list of inconsistencies in the Bible, but the purpose of this present work is not that. I have understood that for the Lord, the Truth is always good to Reveal even if it is difficult to take. This always makes us grow in our path towards him. Yes, the Lord does not hide that there are problems in the Scriptures and this is completely normal, because there have been many human power games throughout the centuries.

Unfortunately **the accuracy of the Bible is a myth that has been instilled in us all since childhood** and which we hold a little too much to be true without asking questions.

On the other hand, this reality should not destabilize you, because the veracity of the Christian religion comes from the fact that the Lord Jesus really exists (the gift of the Holy Spirit is concrete) and not that its sacred books are exact.

In fact, in order for any religion to spread, it is absolutely necessary that its sacred books are qualified as exact by its religious people and that they themselves are totally convinced of it. Why? Because the majority of the faithful base their faith on that alone. If they find that their sacred books are not accurate, then their faith drops to zero. Me, my faith is based on my search for God in 2015 and by my {birth of the Spirit} in 2016 and not on the accuracy of the Bible.

Even worse...

Theologians explain that it was the custom of the time to have the founders of a religion speak in their Scriptures. To make Yahweh speak in the Old Testament (the OT). To make Jesus and his apostles speak in the New Testament (the NT). Unfortunately, we do not have the exact words of Jesus and his apostles in the NT. Nor do we have the exact words of Yahweh in the OT.

C) The Old Testament.

Currently, several scientists (archaeologists, historians, theologians, etc.) say that the Bible is **an allegorical-type** religious teaching book and that there are several invented texts inside.

Internet Keywords	Wikipedia, archaeology, Israel Finkelstein, Neil Asher Silberman, summary of (The Bible Unearthed). https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Bible_Unearthed
On the other hand, here is my English translation of a part of the summary taken from: https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/La_Bible_d%C3%A9voil%C3%A9e	
The book (The Bible Unearthed) essentially presents a synthesis of scientific work on archaeology of the biblical period, in the Middle East, between the 1970s and the 2000s. This period saw the abandonment of what was called biblical archaeology (between 1900-1970), in favour of an unprejudiced approach supported by increasingly precise dating methods. The result has been a questioning of the historicity of a large part of the biblical accounts, in particular on the origin of the ancient Israelites, the exodus and the conquest of the land of Canaan, as well as on the united kingdoms of David and Solomon.	

This would explain very well why God was seen as vengeful, punishing and sometimes even wicked in the Old Testament when in reality God is Holy (without any evil).

In the Old Testament, it is true that several scribes invented or distorted texts in order to scare the people and enrich themselves. It is true that several kings invented or distorted texts in order to justify their quests (wars).

OT	Jeremiah	8,5-12	Why do these people rebel with obstinate resistance? Why do they cling to deceptive idols, refuse to turn back? I listen closely: they speak what is not true; No one repents of his wickedness, saying, "What have I done!" Everyone keeps on running his course, like a steed dashing into battle. Even the stork in the air knows its seasons; Turtledove, swallow and thrush observe their time of return, But my people do not know the ordinance of the LORD. How can you say, "We are wise, we have the law of the LORD"? Why, that has been changed into falsehood by the lying pen of the scribes! The wise are confounded, dismayed and ensnared; Since they have rejected the word of the LORD, of what avail is their wisdom? Therefore, I will give their wives to strangers, their fields to spoilers. Small and great alike, all are greedy for gain, prophet and priest, all practice fraud. They would repair, as though it were nought, the injury to the daughter of my people: "Peace, peace!" they say, though there is no peace. They are odious; they have done abominable things, yet they are not at all ashamed, they know not how to blush. Hence they shall be among those who fall; in their time of punishment they shall go down, says the LORD.
----	----------	--------	---

(*) Here, the prophet Jeremiah says that the priority of the people and the authorities is lies, war and plunder.

It is true that the Bible is a book of religious teaching (beliefs) and not a book of strict historical facts. Why? Because those who keep the Bible are religious people, not historians.

Currently (with the Internet keywords referenced above), archaeologists say that the biblical account of the Exodus from Egypt by the Hebrew people with Moses is an amplification of reality (an allegory) to serve the desire of hegemony of King Josiah (639-609 BC). For them, the Hebrew people originated in the territory of Canaan and never left it. At that time, Egypt would have seized the flourishing part of the territory and the Hebrew people would have fled to the mountains of Canaan. It would be in these mountains that the people would have met God (Yahweh, I Am) and would have received the basics of Judaism. Moses would simply be a Hebrew priest of the cult of Yahweh. Subsequently, when Egypt left Canaan (because there was nothing left to take), the people descended from the mountains in order to reestablish themselves in the abandoned territory. This would be the most realistic story of the displacement of the Hebrew people and their encounter with Yahweh. This account is not as legendary as that of the Bible, but it contains similar content. **It should be understood that for the Hebrews, the Hebrew Bible (the OT) was the central book containing all the subjects of the life of the people. Whether it be: God, Creation, rituals, the purpose of existence, food, politics and even war. In the Bible, everything is legitimized by passing it through the mouth of Yahweh (God)... even the crimes of the authorities.**

D) The New Testament.

On the other hand, today, historians attest that Jesus and his apostles really existed. Obviously! I received over 20 Manifestations of the Spirit of Jesus and one Apparition.

Internet Key words	Jesus really existed
--------------------	----------------------

Without the Manifestations of the Spirit, it is impossible to understand the mysteries of the Bible! Why?

Many prophets were injured or killed by Jewish authorities.

NT	St-Matthew	23,37	"Jerusalem, Jerusalem, you who kill the prophets and stone those sent to you , how many times I yearned to gather your children together, as a hen gathers her young under her wings, but you were unwilling!
----	------------	-------	--

So it is obvious that the texts of the Jewish authorities (the Hebrew Bible or the Old Testament) contain few exact (undistorted) texts from the (persecuted) prophets. This is where the idea of the “messiah of wrath” comes from. An invention of the Jewish scribes in order to give courage to the people through the trials. At present, the Jews have said that Jesus is not the announced Messiah since he did not restore the kingdom of Israel. Yes, it is true, Jesus did not fulfill the scriptures invented by the Jewish scribes of the time.

To complicate matters, from the year 0070, Judaism received a standardization to counter the nascent Christianity. Several Scriptures of ancient Judaism from the time of Jesus have unfortunately been destroyed. For example, the book of Enoch is dated to the year 0200 BC and it had disappeared. In addition, the majority of Jews today do not know that their Judaism has been "standardized" and that it is not the same as that of the time of Jesus. For more details, see article |35-A|.

E) The Bible is far too complex...

The Bible contains from 66 books (among Protestant Christians) to 81 books (among Ethiopian Christians) and this (from about 1200 years before Jesus to 110 years after Jesus). In the Bible, there is everything. There are the writings of oral traditions (word-of-mouth) as in the 4 Gospels. There are false writings like the book of Job and the book of Revelation. There are symbolic writings like the first 5 stories of the book of Genesis. There are prophets who never existed like Daniel (pseudepigrapha). There are books that were removed from the Hebrew Bible (the Old Testament) like that of Enoch (canonical only for Ethiopian Christians), see article |34-G|. In addition, for the Jews, it was forbidden to pronounce the Name of God (Yahweh, I Am). It was forbidden to describe the Manifestations of God and it was even more forbidden to draw them. In the Old Testament, the Jewish authorities martyred the prophets and adjusted their texts to their advantage. Religious people (Jews and later Christians) adjusted the texts of the Bible according to their beliefs (dogmas). The texts have been translated from different languages (Hebrew, Aramaic, Greek, Latin and others). Finally, as you surely know, Jesus never wrote anything and did not ask his apostles to take written notes of his words.

So as mentioned in article |32-H|, finding the exact words of Jesus in the New Testament is illusory.

Unfortunately, none of the evangelists is an eyewitness to the events surrounding Jesus. Why? The last apostles died around the year 0060 and the Gospels were all written afterwards. If the evangelists had actually been around Jesus, they would have been able to describe in detail the events surrounding Jesus. Examples: 1) we do not know what Jesus looked like; 2) we do not know what the Apparitions of the Risen Jesus looked like specifically; 3) we do not have the details of how the Manifestations of the Holy Spirit occur; 4) several details of the accounts of the 4 Gospels do not agree with each other.

In article 32-J , I gave you the references (Internet) for 2 documentaries (by historians and theologians).
According to these documentaries, here is a summary of how the Gospels were written...
In reality, a Gospel is not the simplistic writing of a single person's memoir (like an apostle). No, a Gospel is the well-structured writing (with a theology) made by several members of an early Christian community over a period of more than 20 years. To give importance to their Gospel, all the stories are put in the mouth of Jesus and his apostles. Thereafter, the title of their Gospel bears the name of an illustrious person (example: Matthew, John, etc.). In simple, the community wrote the oral tradition of its time. This is why, from one Gospel to another, the beliefs surrounding Jesus progress or even change.

Here is my English translation of an excerpt from Wikipedia about the Gospel according to John at the following Internet address: https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/%C3%89vangile_selon_Jean
The Gospel according to John is one of the most explicit statements of Trinitarian doctrine and Christian Christology, because it states the divinity of Jesus, whom it describes as the “Word of God” incarnate (1). Christian tradition has attributed this Gospel to one of the disciples of Jesus, the apostle John, son of Zebedee. This hypothesis is today rejected by most exegetes, who see in this text the work of a “Johannic community” at the end of the 1st century. (2)

- (1) The “Word of God” is the concept of the “Logos” that we will see in article |34-H|.
- (2) It has been discovered that the Gospel of John is not from St-John (the apostle), but from one of the first Christian communities around the year 0110.

I give you some search keywords if you want to go further. On the other hand, I discovered that this research on the origins of the Bible is unfortunately endless...

Internet keywords (YouTube)	History Of Jesus Christ - Secret Story Of Jesus Christ Documentary
	The Jesus of History versus the Christ of Faith
	1) Secrets d'Histoire - Un homme nommé Jésus (Intégrale)
	1) Secrets of History - A man named Jesus (Complete)
	2) Documentaire : L'Histoire Cachée de la Bible Que Nous Cache le Vatican
	2) Documentary: The Hidden History of the Bible that the Vatican hides from us

F) Here is what is important in the Bible...

In fact, the Gospels were written to teach Jesus's Message of Holiness and his Way to Eternal Life. I can attest that this is indeed the Key to Heaven!

But the Gospels were also written to try to demonstrate to the Jews of the time that Jesus is the long-awaited Messiah. However, the Jews said that Jesus did not correspond to the expected Messiah and they are right. Jesus is God (Yahweh in person) and not the “invented messiah” of the scribes of the Hebrew Bible. So the early Christians were rejected by the Jews and they had no choice but to turn to the pagans (Gentiles) for their growth. For the pagans, whether there were 3 Persons in God or even 3 distinct divinities, it did not bother them at all, because it was their habit to have dozens of them. On the other hand, for the Jews, there is only One God (Yahweh). So for the Jews, Christian theology (trinitarian) was heresy punishable by death. Let me explain, Yahweh being 1, he cannot be 3. In addition, Yahweh being Invisible, he cannot become human (Jesus). **In short, the reality that Jesus is Yahweh himself, has never been heard due to restrictive human theologies like:** “God cannot do this or that; God cannot be this or that.” In the Bible, it is written: "God made man in his own image." In fact, would not it be the opposite? In the Bible, humans created God in their image, therefore vengeful, punishing and wicked! For humans, when something is unimaginable, then God cannot do it! In the Bible, humans have often justified their evil actions by putting them through the mouth of God. **Here, it is the fatal error that shows their lies, for God is Holy (without any evil).** Anyone who has obtained the {gift of the Holy Spirit} eventually realizes that there are many lies in the Bible. Personally, I believe that only about 30% of the Bible is true. The rest comes out of the human power game. But now, when historians, archaeologists and many more inevitably discover that a good part of the Bible is false, then they try to destroy everything without caring that God Really exists or even that God (Jesus) Sacrificed himself humanly out of Love for us!

Note of 2023:

The Internet reports of article 38-A will allow us to better understand this subject of the Bible.
--

|34-G| The book of Enoch

We saw in chapters |32 and 33| that the Holy Spirit is actually the Spirit of Jesus. So the most precise Message of Jesus **obviously** comes from the Manifestations of his Spirit (the Spirit of Jesus) and **not** that of the texts of the Bible, because they are unfortunately not exact. On the other hand, in the Bible, the most exact texts are those which agree with the Manifestations of Jesus. See article |34-J|.

You should know that the book of Enoch was a book of Jewish mythology present in the Hebrew Bible (OT) at the time of the writing of the New Testament. **It is obvious that the early Christians were inspired by it to write the mysteries.** Even St-Paul mentions it. Subsequently, this book of Enoch was removed from the Hebrew Bible in the year 0090 by the Jewish authorities to counter the nascent Christianity. When I searched the Old Testament for the basis on which the current Christian theory of the devil and demons was built, I found almost nothing. See chapter |18| and then article |32-L|. I thought there was something missing in the Bible, but what? Well, yes, the mythical Jewish book of Enoch has been removed from it!

OT	Genesis	5,21-24	When Enoch was sixty-five years old, he became the father of Methuselah. Enoch lived three hundred years after the birth of Methuselah, and he had other sons and
----	---------	---------	--

			daughters. The whole lifetime of Enoch was three hundred and sixty-five years. Then Enoch walked with God, and he was no longer here, for God took him.
NT	St-Luke	3,37	the son of Methuselah, the son of Enoch , the son of Jared, the son of Mahalaleel, the son of Cainan,
	Epistles of St-Paul to the Hebrews	11,5	By faith Enoch was taken up so that he should not see death, and "he was found no more because God had taken him." Before he was taken up, he was attested to have pleased God.
	Jude	14	Enoch , of the seventh generation from Adam, prophesied also about them when he said, "Behold, the Lord has come with his countless holy ones

Obviously, I am not asking the reader to look at the book of Enoch in detail, because it is mythical and there is too much hatred in it. It is very far from the Revelation on the Holiness of God. On the other hand, we can see where the idea of fallen angels in the Old Testament comes from. We can also see where the idea of the "Son of Man on the clouds of sky for the last judgment" comes from in the New Testament. The book of Enoch obviously inspired some mysteries in the New Testament and the book of the prophet Daniel in the Old Testament. Currently, the book of Daniel is considered by many theologians as a pseudepigrapha (definition: text falsely attributed to an author who did not write it).

Internet keywords	1) Wikipedia, book of Enoch. 2) Wikipedia, book of Daniel.
-------------------	--

Hereafter, I give you 4 excerpts from the book of Enoch published in PDF (English) at the following Internet address:

vdocument.in_book-of-enoch-the-book-of-enoch-translated-from-the-ethiopic-with-introduction.pdf
https://vdocument.in/download/book-of-enoch-the-book-of-enoch-translated-from-the-ethiopic-with-introduction

But first, I give you my English translation of an excerpt from the summary description of the book of Enoch in French:

http://ekladata.com/VUIE6VcPP4FXk8j38bRf6yQrcEw/LE-LIVRE-D-HENOCH-COMPLET-1.pdf
The Book of Enoch is a writing attributed to Enoch, great-grandfather of Noah. It is part of the canon of the Ethiopian Orthodox Christian Church, but is considered apocryphal by other Christians and Jews. The text is also not included in the Septuagint (270 years before Jesus). Neither Protestants, Catholics, nor Orthodox consider this book inspired. The Ethiopian Church does and has included it in its Old Testament canon. The argument that it was not part of the Jewish canon was challenged after the discoveries of the Dead Sea Scrolls (1947 to 1956), because the Book of Enoch is dated to around 200 years before Jesus. Thus, it was established that it was the Jewish Sanhedrin at Yavneh, 90 years after Jesus, that excluded this book from the canon. Tertullian explained that in the year 200 after Jesus, this book was rejected because of the many prophecies concerning Christ.

Excerpt 1:

OT (1)	Enoch	46,1-6
And there I saw one who had a Head of days (2) [i.e. was old], and his head was white like wool ; and with him was a second whose countenance was like the appearance of a man , and his countenance was full of agreeableness, like one of the holy angels. And I asked one of the angels, who went with me (5), and who showed me all the secrets , concerning this son of man , who he was and whence he was, and why he goes with the Head of days? And he answered and said to me: " This is the Son of Man (3) , who has justice, and justice dwells with him, and all the treasures of secrecy he reveals, because the Lord of the spirits (4) has chosen him, and his portion overcomes all things before the Lord of the spirits in rectitude to eternity. And this Son of man, whom thou hast seen, will arouse the kings and mighty from their couches, and the strong from their thrones, and will loosen the bands of the strong, and will break the teeth of the sinners. And he will expel the kings from their thrones and from their kingdoms, because they do not exalt him and praise him, and do not acknowledge humbly whence the kingdom was given to them. And he will expel the countenance of the strong; and shame will fill them: darkness will be their dwelling-place and worms will become their couches, and they will have no hope of rising from their couches, because they do not exalt the name of the Lord of spirits."		

(1) It is important to know that the book of Enoch has been preserved, as it has been part of the Old Testament of the Ethiopian Orthodox Christian Bible canon from the beginning. However, it is unknown to the other Christian Churches.

(2) He is also in the book of Daniel. He is God the Father for Christians.

- (3) "The Son of Man" is also in the book of Daniel. We know that in the New Testament, the Son of Man is Jesus, the Messiah who was to be of wrath. That is why the label of the Son of Man was attached to Jesus.
- (4) "The Lord of spirits." In the New Testament, God is also defined as a Spirit.
- (5) The scripture is in the same style as the book of Revelation.

Excerpt 2:

OT (1)	Enoch	47,1-4
And in those days the prayer of the just, and the blood of the just one ascend from the earth before the Lord of the spirits (4) . In these days the holy ones (2) , who dwell in high heaven, will unite in one voice, and will petition and pray and praise and thank and bless the name of the Lord of the spirits, on account of the blood of the just which has been spilled, and the prayer of the just, that it may not be in vain before the Lord of the spirits, that judgment may be held over them, and they not suffer to eternity (2) . And in those days I saw the Head of days (4), as he sat upon the throne of his glory, and the books of the living were opened before him (3), and his whole host, which is in high heaven and around him, stood before him. And the hearts of the holy ones were filled with joy, because the number of justice was fulfilled and the prayers of the just had been heard and the blood of the just one (2) had been demanded before the Lord of the spirits.		

- (2) It looks like the book of Revelation.
- (3) It looks like the book of Daniel concerning the end of time (the Judgment).
- (4) For Christians, it is God the Father.

Excerpt 3:

OT (1)	Enoch	62,1-3
And thus the Lord commanded the kings and the powerful and the exalted and those who dwell on the earth, and said; "Open your eyes, and lift up your horns, if ye are able to recognize the Chosen One." And the Lord of the spirits sat on the throne of his glory, and the spirit of justice was poured out over him, and the word (2) of his mouth slew all the sinners and all the impious, and they were destroyed before his face . Then will stand up on that day all the kings and the powerful and the exalted and those who hold the earth, and will see him and will know that he sits on the throne of his glory, and that the just are judged in justice before him, and that there is no word spoken in vain before him.		

- (2) Here the "**word of his mouth**" is the same as the "**Word of God**." We know that in the New Testament the Word of God is Jesus, the Messiah who was to be of wrath. That is why the label of the Word of God was attached to Jesus.

Excerpt 4:

OT (1)	Enoch	67,5-7
And I saw that valley, in which there was a great shaking and a shaking of the waters. And as this took place there was produced from that flaming, flowing metal, and out of the shaking that shook them, at that place, an odor of sulphur (2) , and it united with those waters; and that valley of the angels (3) who had led astray burned under that earth . And through the valley of that earth come rivers of fire, where those angels who had led astray those who dwell on the earth are condemned .		

- (2) Hell.
- (3) Fallen angels or demons.

The document (LE-LIVRE-D-HENOCH-COMPLET-1.pdf, [in French](#)) gives the similarity of about 80 text extracts between the NT and the book of Enoch. Personally, it is obvious that the book of Enoch inspired a part of the NT and that is really nothing serious! Why? The book of Enoch was **legitimate** at the time of Jesus, because it was part of the canon of the Hebrew Bible just like the other books (Genesis, Exodus and Prophets). On the other hand, what is serious in the Bible (OT and NT) is to make Yahweh (OT) and Jesus (NT) speak falsely. Why? Because it deceives the faithful. Sooner or later, the false elements are discovered and trust is lost! This breaks the religion (Judaism or Christianity). In fact, what validates a religion is not the accuracy of its sacred books, but that God really exists and takes care of his people! In the OT there were prophets to straighten out the Scriptures even though they were persecuted. On the other hand, in the NT, the Christian churches said that the Revelation of God was finished, hence the absence of prophets since the apostles. So the Lord was abandoned and could not count on anyone to straighten out his Scriptures for almost 2,000 years. Unfortunately, Christianity has been even more stubborn than Judaism! Why make God speak falsely in the Scriptures? Why get rid of the prophets? Yes, our

world loves power! On the other hand, as I have already mentioned, Christianity has now been free of expression since 1960 and the Internet is full of testimonies.

|34-H| In the New Testament, the early Christians had 2 possible directions...

1) The first direction. To write that God himself presented himself as a human to come and walk on earth and that the human (his own creature) crucified him! **What no one would have wanted to admit!** In this direction, the first Christian community would surely have died out quickly for lack of relief...

At the end of writing chapter |35|, I understood that **this first direction** (even if it is the right one) was completely unthinkable for the apostles and the Jews of the time. Yahweh was seen distant and punishing with his Messiah, whereas Yahweh (God) is near and without evil (Holy). Yahweh could not make himself human, because Yahweh was seen as holding the universe in his hand, whereas science today has revealed that the universe functions autonomously. The knowledge of myths was the only science of that time. The Earth was square and flat. The stars were luminaries that could fall from the sky to the earth. There were demons everywhere. I understood that God came in person on earth (Jesus) in order to fulfill the Eternal Covenant promised by the prophets of the Old Testament and that finally the apostles taught what it was possible for them to understand with science they possessed, their myths. Even if Jesus had tried hard to make them understand the reality, the apostles could not have understood it.

2) The second direction. To stick the label of the **Messiah** to Jesus. The Jews had been waiting for their Messiah for centuries! So this is the direction the early Christians took to write the mysteries of the New Testament.

A) At the very beginning in Scripture (dated 0060), this is how Jesus was identified:

As a messenger of God:

NT	Acts of the Apostles	2,22	You who are Israelites, hear these words. Jesus the Nazorean, (this man whom God has accredited) (1) to you by God with mighty deeds, wonders, and signs, which God worked through him in your midst, as you yourselves know.
----	----------------------	------	--

(*) In English, (this little bit of verse) is imprecise, whereas in French, it is very revealing. So I translated it for you.

(1) Jesus is God (Yahweh) himself, so He does not need to be accredited (anointed) by anyone.

As the Son of Man:

NT	St-Matthew	16,27	For the Son of Man (1) will come with his angels in his Father's glory, and then he will repay everyone according to his conduct.
----	------------	-------	--

(1) We have seen that the idea (of the Son of Man) came out of the book of Daniel and originally came from the mythical book of Enoch. In all ages, people have always liked mythical (imaginary) stories better than real reality.

As the Son of God:

NT	St-Matthew	4,5-6	Then the devil (1) took him to the holy city, and made him stand on the parapet of the temple, and said to him, "If you are the Son of God , throw yourself down. For it is written: 'He will command his angels concerning you and 'with their hands they will support you, lest you dash your foot against a stone.'"
----	------------	-------	--

(1) The devil does not exist, he cannot tempt anyone and even less God in person (Jesus).

On the other hand, the Jews of the time said that God did not have a Son in the Old Testament Scriptures! **Yes, in this present chapter |34|, God himself proves them completely right!**

B) Later in the Gospel of John (dated 0110), this is how Jesus was identified:

As the Word of God:

NT	St-John	1,14	And the Word (1) became flesh and made his dwelling among us, and we saw his glory, the glory as of the Father's only Son, full of grace and truth.
----	---------	------	--

(1) **The Word** of God. This is the concept of the "**Logos**" used for the theology of the Gospel of St-John.

Note:

For the Gospel of John, see article |34-F| in point E) about the **"Word of God or the Logos"** as well as the writing of this Gospel by the Johannine community of the time.

St-John obviously did not write this Gospel dated in the 0110s, because St-John died (**in reality**) in the 0040s. St-John did not write the book of Revelation either, because it is dated in the years 0095.

The concept of the **Logos (the Word of God)** comes from Greek mythology used for several religions (not only Christianity) and which is also found in the Jewish mythical book of Enoch (200 BC), see article |34-G|.

The problem is that the concept of the **"Logo"** creates a **"theology that is completely locked and impossible to verify,"** because **"God the Father is Invisible"** and gives his Message through his **"Word which is Visible"** (Jesus, the Son of God).

This concept of the **Invisibility** of God the Father is also found with St-Paul, because he converted the Greeks (Gentiles):

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Colossians	1,15	He (1) is the Image (2) of the Invisible God, the firstborn of all creation.
----	--------------------------------------	------	--

(1) Jesus.

(2) The Image, the Mouth, the Word or the Visible.

The concept of the **"Logos"** has a very strong implication in the Christian Bible. **Even in the Apparition of Yahweh through the burning bush (Moses), it is the Son (Jesus) who is the Visible One and who Speaks.** The Son of God being the only Visible One, he calls himself I Am (Yahweh) as in the Gospel of St-John. In a way, the Son is the Visible intermediary of his Father who cannot be seen (the Invisible).

Since God the Father is Invisible, I told myself that I cannot find him in my Manifestations of the Spirit of the Son (Jesus). Since only the Son (Jesus) can see God the Father, then the Spirit of the Son (Jesus) would have to Reveal to me by himself, whether God (his Father) exists or not...

I said to myself that I would surely not pray to Jesus to show me his Father as St-Philip already did:

NT	St-John	14,8-9	Philip said to him, "Master, show us the Father, and that will be enough for us." Jesus said to him, "Have I been with you for so long a time and you still do not know me, Philip? Whoever has seen me (1) has seen the Father (2). How can you say, 'Show us the Father'?"
----	---------	--------	---

In the concept of the **"Logos,"** Jesus (1) is the Visible (the Word) of an Invisible God (2). Here, he who has seen the Son (Jesus) has seen everything, because the Father is Invisible. The Father (the Invisible) gives his Message through his Son (Jesus) who is Visible.

Therefore, I told myself that it is impossible to go further than the concept of **"Logos"** written in the New Testament, see article |33-C|.

Except that the Lord has decided otherwise! He unlocked the concept of the "Logos" of the New Testament to me by giving me a Sign (a Manifestation) in article |34-I|. Then the Lord made an Apparition to me in article |34-N| in point 3).

|34-I| In simple terms, to solve the mysteries, we must leave the theology of the New Testament

In my Manifestations, the Spirit Reveals that there is neither Father nor Son in God, but only (**God-man or God who makes himself feel human**), see articles |13-I| and |33-C|.

I did not want to leave the theology of the New Testament with its concept of the "Logos," because I found that far too heavy for me! I, who had already reduced the number of Persons in God to 2 (Father and Son), see chapter |32|.

So on the evening of November 26, 2021, I told myself that book number 14 was fine as it is, that **the work was finished, that is all.** I had finished my writing work. I did not want to continue if the Lord did not give me a Sign, because it is his book and not mine.

Well, I got that Sign that very night!

I had a Vibration like the Turbulence of a Flame of Fire inside me for about 10 minutes.

(*) The Lord **approved the validity** of my discovery and allowed me to write it in his book.

A simple conclusion, but very long to find...

I had more than 20 Manifestations of the Lord and worked about 5,000 hours to discover that **the Truth about the real identity of Jesus** was impossible to think about, let alone say at that time. God, the one who was not even allowed to pronounce the Name (Yahweh or I Am) could not have made himself human (Jesus) to walk on earth. No Jew of the time would have believed this, because God was seen as both avenging and punishing King whose Abode was the Most High (much higher than the sky where the angels dwelt). So for the Jews, God who was very distant and "Invisible" could only send a "Messenger" or a "Spokesman" on earth, hence the labels attached to Jesus: the Messiah; The son of the Man; the Word of God and the Son of God.

But, on the other hand, for the Jews, this conclusion should have been easy to make!

1) Since there is only One Person in God who is (Yahweh, the only Eternal).

2) Since the Body and Blood of Jesus give Eternal Life.

So Jesus is obviously God himself (Yahweh) who became human to walk on earth.

Without knowing it, in 2017, I inserted the concept of the **"Logos"** into the modern model of article |30-G|. I only discovered the concept of the **"Logos"** after book number 14 came out in March 2021. **I was discouraged!** On the other hand, it allowed me to understand why it was impossible to solve the dogma of the Holy Trinity. God (the Supreme Consciousness) divisible into Parts of God as if there were several Persons in ONE God: 1) the Will, 2) the Breath and 3) the Word.

Nevertheless, the modern model built in chapter |30| is an indispensable tool in order to extract the theology of the New Testament with its famous Greek (false) concept of the **"Logos."**

|34-J| The most exact facts of the passage of Jesus on earth

I start this topic here, I will add details to article |35-G|. Then I will finalize the reconstruction in articles |38-F to 38-I|.

A) In general.

On earth, Jesus never identified himself as the Son of Man (from the book of Enoch). Why? Because he is not at all and he would have been immediately identified as the "messiah of wrath" expected by the Jews. Jesus never identified himself as the Son of God either, because he is not. On the other hand, Jesus showed his apostles how to pray to God as a Father, the Heavenly Father. We must not forget that the Hebrew people were considered the "son of God." For the Hebrew people, God was seen as their "Father" (Creator and Protector). In simple terms, God (Jesus) came on earth himself to set an example for the people.

In the New Testament, Jesus made his apostles and disciples walk a way of conversion of the heart. **This way is the real Key to the mystery in order to receive the {gift of the Spirit of Jesus}**. God (Jesus) is Holy (without any evil), so those who follow him must belong to him (as their Master and Redeemer) and imitate him in their daily actions and thoughts.

At his Last Supper, Jesus told his apostles that he is the Sacrifice for sins (Communion with his Body and his Blood, therefore with his Life) in order to enter the New Eternal Covenant. Obviously, for the Body of Jesus to give Eternal Life, Jesus must be God himself! There is only God who is Eternal (Life).

After his Resurrection, Jesus made Apparitions to several people (including his apostles) as evidence. See article |34-N| in point 3) for the Apparition I had of the Lord Jesus.

Jesus never dictated theology to his apostles or to anyone else and not even to me who had more than 20 Manifestations from him. The early Christians developed their own theology on their own from what they heard and understood. **These are the endless mysteries of the Bible (which took me 5,000 hours to solve).** Obviously, they were inspired by the mythical book of Enoch which was in the canon of the Hebrew Bible in the time of Jesus and which the Jewish authorities made disappear in the year 0090.

Jesus asked his apostles to spread the Good News of Eternal Life accessible to every human who follows his Way (a person who truly becomes a disciple of Jesus).

At Pentecost, it is the {gift of the Holy Spirit or the gift of the Spirit of Jesus} in the {God's child} as in a temple. More specifically, it is the **{gift of the Risen Body of Jesus}** in the {God's child}. This, for Jesus to share with the {God's child} his Holy Sacrifice on the cross allowing access to Heaven.

Jesus gave the apostles and early Christians (including evangelists) the freedom to write in his name. Why? Because there is nothing better than a human to talk and write to other humans. Basically, the early Christians could write whatever mysteries they wanted, like the return of Jesus at the end of time. This was of no great importance since in any case the exact Reality of God is incomprehensible humanly. On the other hand: 1) believing in God, 2) having a conversion of heart and 3) belonging to God are all essential to be a follower of Jesus and therefore to obtain the {gift of the Spirit of Jesus}.

I can assure you 100%, that the apostles truly and firmly believed that the devil existed, that the end of time was near and that Jesus was the Messiah awaited by the Jews.

B) During my research, I discovered some additional details...

1) On earth, why did Jesus never say he was Yahweh?

It was impossible to say. It would even have been harmful. Let me explain:

- a) Saying that a human (Jesus) is (Yahweh) is an unbearable blasphemy for the Jews leading to stoning.
- b) No one would have believed Jesus, and he would have been called crazy.
- c) Jesus would have put his apostles and disciples in constant danger of death.

Under these conditions, Jesus could not have accomplished his mission at all. Jesus absolutely had to keep his identity secret. In reality, it was the people around Jesus who labeled him as they wanted.

2) How did the trial of Jesus happen?

When the label of the Messiah attached to Jesus ended up creating too much of a stir in the population, the authorities decided to kill Jesus.

In the Gospels, it is said that Jesus had a trial. **Obviously not!** Why? It was forbidden by Roman law to have 2 sentences: 1) flogging, 2) crucifixion. It was one or the other, not both! It is important to know that 120 strokes of flogging (according to the Shroud of Turin) was illegal. The maximum allowed by Roman law was 40. It should be noted that no one survived even 40 strokes of flogging, because there was a rusty iron ball at the end of the whip and the blood poisoning was long and always fatal. The Shroud of Turin reveals that Jesus had his beard torn off, his nose broken and probably his jaw too. Jesus was not recognizable (his face was bloody), he could not speak and even less give teaching on the way to his Calvary as written in the Gospels. In addition, when a person hangs on a cross, he cannot speak, because he dies by suffocation. Why all this mistreatment before Jesus was crucified? Simply so that Jesus would not be recognizable by the Jewish population who had acclaimed him as their Messiah (with palms) when he entered Jerusalem. When we read the Gospels, why is it written that the Jews manipulated Pontius Pilate to obtain the condemnation of Jesus? Simply not to put the blame on the Roman authority, because during the writing of the Gospels (0060 to 0110), there was a Christian community in Rome. To speak ill of the emperor was tantamount to putting this small community to death! In simple terms: the very short lapse of time between the arrest of Jesus and his execution; his disfigurement and his illegal double condemnation prove that Jesus was murdered brutally and without any trial. The Jewish population had nothing to do with the condemnation of

Jesus, they simply served as a scapegoat. The Jewish population loved Jesus because he healed them, fed them and gave them hope that God loved them despite their poverty. Their Messiah (Saviour), they needed him!

3) After his Resurrection, did Jesus Appear in the flesh to his disciples?

According to the Shroud of Turin, **no**. Why? Because the human body of Jesus has "disappeared in Light." The Apparition of article |33-C| indicates the same thing. In article |34-N| in point 3), we will see that **the Spirit of God (Jesus)** received in me Manifested this time visually in the form of an Apparition indicating substantially the same thing.

In reality, this is how the Risen Jesus Appeared...

He Appeared as a Luminous human Silhouette with a round face like the Jewish Passover bread and he said: "I Am."

Here I explain the Apparition:

He Appeared (1) as a Luminous (3) human (2) Silhouette with a round face (2) like the Jewish (5) Passover bread (4) and he said: "I Am (6)."

- (1) Jesus who was dead is now Immortal.
- (2) Here it is the Apparition of a man (Jesus).
- (3) The Light represents God the Creator.
- (4) The Body of Jesus is the Bread of Eternal Life.
- (5) The Body of Jesus is the Holy Sacrifice for the remission of sins in order to enter the new Eternal Covenant (Life).
- (6) Jesus was really God (I Am, Yahweh) in person on earth.

4) After the Resurrection, was the large stone in front of Jesus's tomb really rolled aside?

I think not. Why? We saw that Jesus is Risen in Light (in Spirit) and not in the flesh. So to exit the tomb, Jesus did not need to open the door. If the stone had really been rolled aside, the Jewish authorities would have sought out the apostles and disciples of Jesus and killed them as well. Let me explain, a rolled stone is worse than any blasphemy, it means that "Jesus is Immortal and possibly the Messiah!" So, in order for the first Christian community to grow and stay alive, it was better for the stone to remain in place, because the authorities were then satisfied and could move on. In addition, who has the Shroud of Turin in their hands? Is it the Jews, the Romans or the Christians? Yes, the Christians. So they are the ones who opened the tomb a few weeks after the Apparitions of Jesus. If the Jewish or Roman authorities would have entered the empty tomb, they would have got their hands on the Shroud and **they would have destroyed it** because the trace of the Resurrection of Jesus is imprinted in it and this is visible to the naked eye!

5) What has happened to the birth of Jesus?

Historians have looked to see if Jesus was born during a census. They also looked for evidence of the Kings Mages. They did not find much! Why? Because the mission of Jesus was already difficult enough as it was! It was not the time to put "fireworks" at the place of his birth to attract kings (criminals). For a young woman (Mary) who had just given birth, it was not the time to flee to Egypt (in a 3-month journey through the desert). Why does the Scripture say: "from Egypt I called my son back"? Here, the "son" is the Hebrew people in slavery in Egypt at the time of Moses, not Jesus. The entire chapter must be read, not just one sentence.

Yahweh became human (Jesus). Mary is really the human mother of Jesus (God). Probably the angel Gabriel's announcement to Mary was as simple as this: "that she will bear a **Holy child**."

I give you a **very important key** about God to discover the facts that really happened in the **OT** or in the **NT**. God (Jesus) always does very simple actions and never attracts people's attention. God is humble, remember that!

6) Why did the early Christians write all this in the Gospels?

They had been rejected from Judaism. Now they had to build a new religion. So they had to justify their beliefs by the fulfillment of all the promises of the Jewish Scriptures and even the mythical ones like in the book of Enoch. A Gospel is the fusion of the mysterious realities lived by the witnesses of Jesus as well as the admissible Jewish beliefs of the time (the

Invisibility of God, the Messiah, the resurrection of the bodies of the righteous at the end of time for the Judgment, Satan and demons, etc.), all of this put into the mouth of Jesus and his apostles.

I point out that with the archaeological research in article |34-F|, the Jewish (the **OT**) Scriptures are not very accurate either and have even been called a "national novel." In simple terms, the Jewish authorities wrote their national novel (the **OT**) and the Christian authorities decided to continue this national novel with (the **NT**).

7) Why is it so difficult to discover that Jesus is Yahweh in person?

We will see in chapter |35| that Jesus had given the apostles everything they needed to understand that he was Yahweh God in person, but that the idea of the Messiah inculcated in their heads from childhood was far too strong to move on.

I, a {God's child}, took 5,000 hours to find out! In addition, the Lord had to confirm it to me directly 3 times in this chapter |34|! The writing of this book demonstrates that God (Jesus) always allows himself to be discovered little by little and that he does not impose strict beliefs as imagined in Judaism. The one who imposes himself is not God, but the human being!

Later on, the Christian religion became rigid under the emperor Constantine, the Revelation being considered as finished. Nowadays, with the testimonies of the Apparitions of Jesus on the Internet, it is possible to discover that Jesus is Yahweh (I Am), but our Christian teaching since childhood is far from allowing us to understand it easily. For people who have had Apparitions of Jesus and Manifestations of the Spirit of God (Jesus), the dogma of the Holy Trinity is quite incomprehensible. We see only one Person in God, God himself... who eventually Reveals himself to be Jesus. The only way to understand that Christian churches have been ignorant for so long is that religion has always served human power games more than God himself.

8) Yes, the Christian tradition is still important!

Personally, what bothered me was not that Jesus was God in person on earth. Why? God does what he wants! If God wants to walk on his beautiful little blue planet (Earth), that is fine, why not! Me too, if I had been the Creator, I would surely have come to Earth to walk around a bit, it is not very difficult to understand! On the other hand, what bothered me was not really having the words of Jesus concerning his mysteries in the Gospels. Why? I could have written this work in 2,000 hours instead of 5,000! I would have liked to have a first text giving the description of what the first Christians (apostles, disciples, etc.) really saw and heard. Subsequently, the first Christians could have written a second text giving their beliefs (dogmas) in order to initiate new Christians. In this way, the Christian religion could have progressed for 2,000 years towards the Truth with the help of the Manifestations of Jesus.

This chapter |34| is very difficult for me as well as for you. I understood that we have to take the Bible and religion as a tradition. There is a part of true, but there is also a part of false. If God endures our world that does evil, it is because he also sees good in us. Tradition has made it possible to transmit Judaism and then Christianity through the centuries. Without this tradition, I would not have had the {gift of the Holy Spirit} and you would not be reading this book which gives you the recipe to obtain it too. So tradition (Bible and religion) is always important, because it gives a basic teaching. To continue this subject, I give you articles |35-D, 36-B and 36-C|. We will see that understanding the mysteries allows us to put them aside a bit in order to focus on what is really important, the Message of goodness of Jesus.

|34-K| What exactly did the apostles see?

Note:

I recently learned that the word God has as its root the word: "Light."

In front of his apostles, the Risen Jesus appeared with a **Luminous Silhouette** and said this: "I Am the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob" as in the Apparition of article |33-C|.

Here is the concordance in the New Testament:

NT	St-John	20,26-29	Now a week later his disciples were again inside and Thomas was with them. Jesus came, although the doors were locked, and stood in their midst and said, "Peace be with you." Then he said to Thomas, "Put your finger here and see my hands, and bring your hand and
----	---------	----------	--

			put it into my side, and do not be unbelieving, but believe." Thomas answered and said to him, "My Lord and my God! " (1) Jesus said to him, "Have you come to believe because you have seen me? Blessed are those who have not seen and have believed."
--	--	--	---

(1) Jesus is Yahweh (God).

It is important to understand that "Light" in the Old Testament represents: God the Creator (God the Father). The Silhouette represents: a human.

The Apparition of the Risen Jesus presents himself as **God with a human part**. He does not say that he is the Son, nor the Word, nor even a Messenger. He says he is: I Am (Yahweh) himself (of the Old Testament). My Manifestations of the Spirit of Jesus say the same thing, see articles |13-I| and |33-C|.

During the Apparitions of the Risen Jesus, the apostles thought they were seeing the "**Son of God**" because there was a "**human Silhouette**" in front of them. Therefore, they thought they were seeing the "**First Child of God (the Son)**". **In reality, it was not that! They were seeing God himself!** This was completely unthinkable for the apostles. Yahweh of the Old Testament, the one who was not even allowed to pronounce the Name and who was **Invisible** could not be in front of them. On the other hand, yes, because Yahweh (I Am) had become human, he was now visible to humans.

So the apostles persisted in looking for traces of the "Son of God" in the Scriptures of the Hebrew Bible (the Old Testament). Yes, they found a few little verses here and there, but that was far too little in the eyes of the Jews to conclude anything.

Subsequently, the apostles thought that they would become like **the Apparition of Jesus**. That they would be like the Risen Jesus, **ONE in God!** In short, the apostles did not understand what they were hearing and seeing. It was beyond their reasoning and their beliefs.

NT	1st Epistle of St-John	3,2	Beloved, we are God's children now; what we shall be has not yet been revealed. We do know that when it is revealed we shall be like him (Risen Jesus) , for we shall see him as he is (1).
----	------------------------	-----	--

(1) What St-John says is strange, he did not see Jesus as he is! So what did St-John see? The Apparition of Jesus from article |34-N| in point 3) explains everything! St-John saw a "Luminous Silhouette" and not a "man in the flesh and blood" as mentioned in the Gospels.

In reality, Jesus had not told them that they were going to become God, but that they would be like angels in Heaven.

NT	St-Matthew	22,30	At the resurrection they neither marry nor are given in marriage but are like the angels (1) in heaven.
----	------------	-------	--

(1) It is important to know that in the Old Testament, angels were considered as the children of God.

Subsequently, Jesus had given the apostles the right to speak in his name since they had received his Spirit (that of Jesus).

NT	Acts of the Apostles	9,28	He moved about freely with them in Jerusalem, and spoke out boldly in the name of the Lord (Jesus).
----	----------------------	------	---

So that is what they did by writing, in the Gospels, the mysteries that they understood somehow. I too, at the beginning of the writing of this present work, I had a "feeling in me like a flash" which told me that Jesus gave me the right to speak in his name. This then allowed me to understand how the Gospels had been written.

|34-L| God and his {children}

In the Bible, a person is a son of God (example: Adam) when God Breathes into the person. Since Jesus is not the Son, but God himself then the {sons and daughters of God} are the people who had their {birth of the Spirit} and not Jesus (who is God himself).

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Galatians	4,6	As proof that you are children, God sent the spirit of his Son into our hearts, crying out, "Abba, Father!"
----	-------------------------------------	-----	---

	Epistle of St-Paul to the Romans	8,14-16	For those who are led by the Spirit of God are children of God. For you did not receive a spirit of slavery to fall back into fear, but you received a spirit of adoption, through which we cry, "Abba, Father!" The Spirit itself bears witness (1) with our spirit that we are children of God,
--	----------------------------------	---------	---

(1) In reality, since there is only One Person in God, it is the Spirit (God or Jesus) who says in St-Paul that God is his Father (Abba). In short, it is the Spirit of God in St-Paul that Reveals or Teaches that he can pray to God as a {son of God}. St-Paul then thought that the Holy Spirit is the Spirit of the Son. Not quite, the Holy Spirit is really the Spirit of God, because Jesus is not the Son, but (God or Yahweh) himself.

In the Gospels, the early Christians thought that Jesus was the Son, "the First Child of God." So that Jesus had the same process as them and that he was the "First," the one who opens the doors of the Kingdom of God. For this, a Christian must be baptized in water, so they wrote in the Gospels that Jesus was baptized. A Christian must receive the Breath of God (the Holy Spirit), so they wrote that after his baptism, Jesus received from God the Father his Breath (the Holy Spirit), therefore the anointing. **That is not it at all!** This process is necessary only for the {God's children} and not for Jesus (who is Yahweh).

Moreover, the word "**Christ**" means: "a person consecrated by a divine anointing." Obviously, since Jesus is Yahweh himself, then Jesus does not need to receive an "anointing." As we see in the Apparition of Jesus to St-Paul, Jesus does not call himself the "**Christ**" because he is not.

NT	Acts of the Apostles	9,5	He said, "Who are you, sir?" The reply came, "I am Jesus , whom you are persecuting.
----	----------------------	-----	---

On the other hand, the {God's children} are really Christians. Why? Because they have received, in their hearts, the divine anointing of God (Yahweh, Jesus) to teach in his name. It is for this reason that in the Apparition of Jesus in article |33-C|, Jesus does not say that he is the Christ, but that he is the God of Christians (yes, those who received his anointing).

In the Old Testament:

- 1) Yahweh (I Am) is the One God. More precisely: one God, one Person.
- 2) The Spirit or the Holy Spirit is the Power of Yahweh. Here, Yahweh is Invisible, but He Manifests himself by different means including: Wind, Breath, Fire, Light and Perfume. See explanation below.

In the New Testament:

- 3) Jesus is Yahweh (I Am) who becomes human to walk on earth. Here, Yahweh then becomes Visible.
- 4) After the event of Pentecost, the Holy Spirit is Yahweh (**Jesus**) who presents himself by the "Breath of his Presence" or the "Breath of his Risen Body." Here, Yahweh becomes Invisible again, but he Manifests himself by different means including: Wind, Breath, Fire, Light and Perfume. See explanation below.

In short, there is only One Person in God, God himself as mentioned in the Old Testament. The dogma of the Holy Trinity of the New Testament is an invention (a human theology).

Explanation on the Manifestations of the Spirit. They are mystical. I will give you the simplest possible description:

- ° The Wind comes from a Storm in the sky (like at Pentecost). Afterwards, we feel the air moving around us and on our skin (even if we are clothed). Strangely, the Wind does not move an object or even a single speck of dust around us.
- ° The Breath is in our nostrils. This Breath mixes with our human breathing. We know that our human breath is back and forth with air. On the other hand, the Breath of God in our nostrils is continuous and slightly pulsating. Depending on the Manifestation, the Breath can enter into us or the Breath can go out of us.
- ° The Fire makes itself felt in us by its Turbulence (which makes our interior tremble), but this Fire does not burn.
- ° The very intense Light is visible inside us and this even if our eyes are closed.
- ° The Perfume represents the Presence of a person, for example that of Jesus.

|34-M| My Manifestations of the Spirit and the Old Testament

1) Here I take a look back at my Manifestation of the Spirit of article |33-G|.

The {God's child} is the temple of the Spirit of God. The Flame of the Presence of God is in the person as in the burning bush (Moses). God gives himself as the Bread of Life, like the bread of manna in the desert. The Law given to Moses by God is now inscribed in the heart of the {God's child}. The blood on the doorposts of the houses of the Hebrews in slavery in Egypt that spares from death is now the Blood of Jesus shed on the cross to spare the person from death.

2) Here I look back at some of my other Manifestations of the Spirit and their meanings.

A) In Genesis (the Garden of Eden):

The devil (Satan) is the serpent, the one who chokes the air (breathing) of his victim, **he is the actor of death**. It is the Manifestation of article |13-M|.

Marriage, man and woman being one flesh. It is the Body of Jesus in me of the Manifestation of article |34-B|. Marriage is another word for **Covenant**, it is the 2nd Eternal Covenant.

B) In the book of Exodus (Moses):

The fire of the sacrifice on the altar (the burnt offering) and the Fire of the burning bush (Presence of Yahweh). It is the Turbulence of the Flame of Fire (Yahweh) in me from my Communion with Jesus. These are the Manifestations of the Spirit after article |13-G|.

C) In the Gospels:

The words of Jesus at the Last Supper, his Sacrifice (the sharing of his Body). This is the Body of Jesus in me from article |34-B|.

And there are many more examples that I could give you... So, I asked myself the question, why is the New Testament so different from the Old Testament since I can link them so easily? Yet, Jesus was coming to fulfill the Scriptures of the Old Testament! The answer is that early Christians tried to make Jesus the "messiah of wrath" (a mysterious Messenger, the Son of Man on the clouds of sky) expected in the book of Enoch of the Hebrew Bible of the time. An invention of the Jewish authorities.

For the Jews today, if we read the description of everything their Messiah must do, it is impossible, it is an invention.

For a person to be the **Jewish Messiah**, here is what he had to accomplish:

Internet keywords: (Wikipedia)	1) Judaism's view of Jesus. 1) Point de vue du judaïsme sur Jésus
Here is my English translation of an excerpt from the following web address: https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/Point_de_vue_du_juda%C3%AFsme_sur_J%C3%A9sus	
In Judaism, the principle of the Messiah is to bring about the messianic age, a unique event. Each generation may have a potential messiah, but a presumed messiah who dies before he has accomplished his task (i.e., to lead all Israel to walk in the way of the Torah, to remove all the violations of the Law, to fight God's wars , to rebuild the Temple on its site, to gather all the exiles of Israel) cannot be the true Messiah. Maimonides states, "Since he (Jesus) did not succeed in all this and was killed, then he is definitely not the Messiah promised in the Torah..." Also, according to common beliefs in Judaism, the claim of the Christians that Jesus is the true Messiah according to the Hebrew Bible is based on a mistranslation of the Bible and Jesus does not meet the qualifications to be the true Jewish Messiah.	

It is very easy to understand that Jesus is not the Messiah expected by the Jews, because the Messiah is a man of war who does not fit Jesus at all.

In simple, the **Messiah** is an invention of the Jewish scribes in order to justify the crimes of their king (their sovereign and employer). **In this way, at any time, a king could proclaim himself the "Messiah" and lead his people into a war of God**

against their enemies. The king's crimes were then justified, because he was the powerful arm of Yahweh. The people were indoctrinated from childhood in expectation of this wrathful Messiah and some were even ready to die for this cause like the Zealots of the time of Jesus. Do not forget that Judas Iscariot committed suicide because he understood that Jesus could not be the expected Messiah since he died on a cross.

Moreover at the Transfiguration of Jesus, if the apostles had really heard "the voice of God the Father" on the Mountain saying that Jesus is his Son, they would not have doubted the Resurrection of Jesus after his death as they did.

On the other hand, the Transfiguration of Jesus really took place on the Mountain of God, because I have had a Manifestation of the Spirit of Jesus which is associated with it, see articles |13-P| and |30-F|. In my opinion, here is what really happened. **Jesus** (God) brought his apostles to his mountain then he showed them that he is the "**Light**" therefore that he is **Yahweh** (the Creator).

Since in the Jewish mentality, God is not visible, the apostles did not understand anything...

NT	St-Matthew	15,16	Jesus said, "Are you still lacking in understanding also?"
----	------------	-------	--

So the early Christians wrote in the Gospels that God the Father spoke from the sky. Unfortunately they contradict their own theology! Let me explain. Since the Son (Jesus) is the Word (**the Mouth**) of God. So tell me with what can God the Father (the Invisible One) "speak from the sky?"

But Jesus is much better than that, he is the Redeemer...

We will see in article |34-O| that in the Old Testament, it was possible to read that God is himself the **Redeemer** of his people (**the one who Saves by his Sacrifice**). But save the people from what exactly? Yes, from human death, because God is Life and he wants to share it with us.

|34-N| 3 more Manifestations of the Spirit...

1) In May 2021, I had an appointment to receive my first Covid-19 vaccine.

I thought to myself that I hope I do not catch Covid-19 before getting vaccinated, because there can be severe complications like lung problems for months!

The following night, the Lord gave me a Manifestation of the Spirit:

In the night, I felt that an evil breath or wind (a demon) (1) wanted to enter me through my nostrils. I then felt that the Breath or Wind of God in me (2) came out of my nostrils in order to block this demon.			
---	--	--	--

(1) The evil breath or wind (the demon) is obviously the symbol of the evil which is the Covid-19.

(2) The message here is that a {God's child} is protected from evil by God, for he dwells within him.

This Manifestation of the Spirit is also the "Message of the Lord" confirming indeed his help if we ask him, see article |33-M|.

Furthermore, a verse in St-John is similar to this Manifestation of the Spirit:

NT	1st Epistle of St-John	5,18	We know that no one begotten by God (1) sins; but the one begotten by God he (2) protects, and the evil one (3) cannot touch him.
----	------------------------	------	---

(1) A {God's child}.

(2) Jesus.

(3) The demon.

2) In June 2021, I was wondering...

As mentioned in chapter |29|, the Last Judgment is on earth always now.

On the other hand, I wondered if the people in our society would really get off easy without punishment (only to end their lives in the ground).

The following night, the Lord gave me a Manifestation of the Spirit:

I saw a great Wind of God (1) on Earth and that humanity (2) was afraid (3). Afterwards, I had the feeling that those (4) who are close to God have nothing to fear.

(1) It is the Power of God or the Spirit of God.

(2) People who do evil (wealth, power, etc.)

(3) The Judgment.

(4) They are the righteous.

I put the same numbers (1) to (4) of the Manifestation of the Spirit above in 3 similar passages of the Bible:

OT	Isaiah	2,7-11	Their land is full of silver and gold, and there is no end to their treasures (2); Their land is full of horses, and there is no end to their chariots. Their land is full of idols; they worship the works of their hands, that which their fingers have made. But man is abased, each one brought low. (Do not pardon them!). Get behind the rocks, hide (3) in the dust, from the Terror of the LORD and the splendor of his majesty (1)! The haughty eyes of man will be lowered, the arrogance of men will be abased, and the LORD alone will be exalted, on that day.
NT	St-John	3,17-21	For God did not send his Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world might be saved through him. Whoever believes in him (4) will not be condemned, but whoever does not believe has already been condemned (3), because he has not believed in the name of the only Son of God. And this is the verdict, that the light came into the world (1), but people preferred darkness (2) to light, because their works were evil. For everyone who does wicked things hates the light and does not come toward the light, so that his works might not be exposed. But whoever (4) lives the truth comes to the light, so that his works may be clearly seen as done in God.
OT	Genesis	7,1 & 4	Then the LORD said to Noah, "Enter the ark, you and all your household, for you <i>alone</i> I have seen (3) <i>to be</i> righteous (4) before Me in this time (2)... "For after seven more days, I will send rain (1) on the earth forty days and forty nights; and I will blot out from the face of the land (3) every living thing that I have made."

What is the meaning of this Manifestation of the Spirit? **The Message of the Lord is clear, humanity will be punished for the evil it does!** But what is this punishment? I believe the Lord simply meant to refer to the flood story. But this time, his Judgment is not effected by "**the rain from heaven** (sky)," but by the "**gift or not of his Spirit from heaven**" as at Pentecost. **I understood that God Presents Himself as Life itself and Existence itself. Without Him, there is nothing!** In simple, I believe that the Message is that God is Life/Life. Without Him, it is death (in the ground of course). That would be the punishment, not to know the happiness of Living with the Creator (God) for Eternity. In addition, since humanity is destroying the Earth rapidly by the evil it does, it would be to suffer from human extinction predicted in the next 100 years, see article |30-J|.

On the other hand, remember 2 promises of God:

In the Manifestation of the Spirit of article |33-G|: the {God's child} shall not feel his human death.

In the Manifestation of the Spirit above: God protects the {God's child} from evil (like Covid-19).

3) In February 2022, I had an additional Manifestation attesting to the validity of this present book.

In chapter |13|, I was thinking that the only thing I am missing is an Apparition. Well, here it is!

I had finished the French writing of this present chapter. Subsequently, I had this Manifestation:

In the night, when I was not thinking about anything in the dark. I felt a vibration in all my body like the turbulence of a Flame of Fire (1). Afterwards, I saw Light coming out of me (2) and then forming a Luminous Silhouette (3) in front of me, facing me. I could see the outline of the Luminous Silhouette (3) from the shoulders. I noticed that his face was not oval, but perfectly round like a white disk. Looking more closely, I realized that his face was like a host (Eucharistic bread) at mass (4). Afterwards, I saw to the right of the Luminous Silhouette, people standing with their faces turned upwards. There was a Wind (5) around them that entered into them.

For this Apparition, the Lord gave me the explanations simultaneously within me. I did not need to look for the meaning.

Here is:

(1) The turbulence of the Flame of Fire is the Presence of God (Yahweh, I Am) within me. As in the burning bush or the Sacrificial Fire on the altar in the book of Exodus.

(2) The Light that comes out of me is the same Light that came into me during the {gift of the Holy Spirit} or the {gift of the Spirit of Jesus} of article |13-D|. The Light represents God (Yahweh, I Am) the Creator in Genesis. Jesus is the Light of the world in the Gospels.

(3) The Luminous Silhouette is Jesus. The Silhouette represents a human. God (Yahweh, I Am) became human (Jesus) on earth.

(4) The face of Jesus has the same shape as the Eucharistic bread (host) at mass. The Eucharistic bread represents the Body of Jesus offered in Sacrifice. The human Body of God (Jesus) is the Bread of Eternal Life. On the Internet, I looked at the shape of the Jewish Passover bread from the time of Jesus. Usually it is: large, white and round. This Manifestation Reveals that the Risen Jesus Appeared to his apostles in the form of a Luminous Silhouette having the face like the Jewish Passover bread. In article |33-C|, we saw that this form of the Luminous Silhouette of Jesus explains why the apostles are surprised and have difficulty in recognizing the Risen Jesus in the New Testament accounts. They then recognize him by his gestures and words from the Last Supper.

(5) The Wind is the Spirit of Jesus (Yahweh, I Am) received by the apostles at Pentecost. It is the Wind or the Breath of the Risen Body of God (Jesus).

In simple terms, the Spirit of Jesus received in me in articles 13-D to 13-G is Manifested this time visually in the form of an Apparition.

Here, the Lord wanted to attest to the validity of the discoveries made in this present book by giving me a Manifestation (Apparition) which summarizes the following essential points...

- | |
|--|
| <p>A) Yahweh; I Am; the Spirit of God; the Holy Spirit; Jesus on earth and the Spirit of Jesus are the Names of One and the same Person, God himself. God is: Light, Life and Holy.</p> <p>B) God himself became human (Jesus) to walk with us. He sacrificed himself out of Love for us.</p> <p>C) The Body of God (Jesus) is the Bread of Eternal Life.</p> <p>D) The Breath of God (Jesus) is the Breath of Eternal Life.</p> <p>E) God (Jesus) dwells in the {God's child} and brings him with Him to Heaven at the end of his human life on earth.</p> |
|--|

<p>In article 34-U , I had another Manifestation of the Spirit (in August 2022) accompanied by a miracle in order to attest once again to the validity of this present book.</p>
--

|34-O| What is God's Plan?

This time, we cannot compose with 3 Persons in God as in chapters |30 and 31| nor even with 2 Persons in God as in chapters |32 and 33|, but with only 1 Person in God, God himself. **So the Plan of God becomes very simple** in this present chapter |34|!

I understood in chapter |33| that God does not use any science to speak to humans. Neither the science of the time (Jewish or Greek), nor even modern science today. Why? The Lord wants to reach everyone (educated or not) and this, whatever the time (of Abraham, Moses, the apostles and even us today). To do this, the Lord uses a universal language that are **(the symbols and rituals)**. It is for this reason that there are symbols and rituals in the twenty or so Manifestations of the Spirit that I have received. Examples: A) there is the symbol of the birth of Adam from article |13-D|; B) there is the symbol of Evil (the devil) in articles |13-M| and |33-L| in point 18); C) there is the ritual of sacrifice on the altar of article |33-G|. **I understood that the whole Message of God is in the Manifestations that he gave me.** To understand, we just have to remove the wickedness that humans have written in the Bible and focus on the Message of God (the symbols and rituals).

God's Plan is simple:

God's Message begins with the Creation story. God is the Creator of everything. Then, God creates the Garden of Eden. Here, the symbol of the Garden of Eden is simply our pretty blue planet (Earth). Adam and Eve are the symbol of humanity. God who walks in the Garden of Eden is Jesus, see article | 20-B |.

Thereafter, the Message of God continues with the religious symbols and rituals given to Moses. Here, God educates his people (the Hebrews). God speaks of a Marriage between him and his people. God is the bridegroom and his people is his bride.

OT	Jeremiah	3,19-20	I had thought: How I should like to treat you as sons (1), And give you a pleasant land, a heritage most beautiful among the nations! You would call me, "My Father (2)," I thought, and never cease following me. But like a woman (1) faithless to her lover (2) , even so have you been faithless to me, O house of Israel, says the LORD (2).
	Isaiah	54,5-8	For he who has become your husband is your Maker (2) ; his name is the LORD of hosts; Your redeemer (4) is the Holy One of Israel, called God of all the earth. The LORD (2) calls you back, like a wife (1) forsaken and grieved in spirit, A wife married in youth and then cast off, says your God. For a brief moment I abandoned you, but with great tenderness I will take you back (3) . In an outburst of wrath, for a moment I hid my face from you; But with enduring love (3) I take pity on you, says the LORD, your redeemer (4) .

- (1) The Hebrew people.
- (2) Yahweh of the Old Testament.
- (3) The Marriage between God and his people.
- (4) Jesus (Yahweh) is the Redeemer (Saviour) of the New Testament. The word Redemption means "to redeem or save by his sacrifice."

In the New Testament, God becomes human (Jesus) and comes to walk on earth in order to fulfill these symbols and rituals. God himself shows how humans should live on earth. By his example, God (Jesus) sacrifices himself (the Redeemer) for the human. By his Resurrection, God demonstrates that he desires to share his Eternal Life with the human who follows his Way.

Subsequently at Pentecost, God (the Spirit of God or the Spirit of Jesus) comes to concretize these symbols and rituals directly inside the {God's child}. Here, God deposits by his **Breath** (his Power), **his Risen Body** in the {God's child}. It is then, the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. See chapter | 13 |. It is the concretization of the Marriage that God has promised between him and the human. God becomes human (Jesus) to Marry the human and share his Eternal Life with him.

Finally, it is the Risen Body of God (Jesus) in the {God's child} that brings him directly to Heaven at the end of his earthly life. See articles | 34-B | and | 33-G |. Here it is God (the bridegroom) who brings his {God's child} (his bride) into his House (the Kingdom of God or Heaven).

When we think about it, the fact that God (Jesus) comes to walk on earth has a certain meaning. God does not hide like a king in his kingdom. No, he makes himself human too and comes to suffer the heat, the desert, the hunger, the misunderstanding, the injustice of our world and even human death. **The whole life of Jesus on earth is itself his Sacrifice for us.**

| 34-P | God and sciences...

As I have already mentioned, the Manifestations of the Spirit that I have had are not related to the science of the Greeks of 2,000 years ago and no more to our modern science for that matter. **The schematic charts in chapters | 30 and 31 | are only human representations in order to extract the logic of the Bible.**

On the other hand, in article | 32-D |, my definition of the word "Spirit" as being the "the Wind or the Breath of the Presence of a Person" is quite good. It was taken from a Vision that God himself gave to the prophet Ezekiel. See article | 22-B |. It should be noted that in the Visions of Ezekiel, we see that God (Yahweh) will make himself visible (Jesus).

In short, all the Manifestations of the Spirit are mainly related to the Jewish religion of the Old Testament as seen in chapter |33|. Why?

1) Because the New Testament did not yet exist at the time of Pentecost.

2) Because God comes to bring the religion that he himself taught (only the Old Testament existed at the time of Jesus) into the {God's child}. In simple terms, the Manifestations of the Spirit are the fulfillment of the Jewish religion of the time of Jesus in the {God's child}. In this way, religion and the knowledge of God are no longer the monopoly of the rich (priests) of the Temple of Jerusalem of Jesus's time, but can become accessible to the poorest by receiving the **Spirit of God (the Wind or the Breath of the Risen Body of Jesus)** in their human body as in a temple. For the {God's child}, human religions then become unimportant even now.

OT	Jeremiah	31,34	No longer will they have need to teach their friends and kinsmen how to know the LORD. All, from least to greatest, shall know me, says the LORD, for I will forgive their evildoing and remember their sin no more.
----	----------	-------	--

God (Jesus) came on earth to fulfill the scriptures of the Hebrew Bible (the Old Testament). Some theologians have said that Jesus came to conclude Judaism. Yes, it is true! However, since Jesus was rejected from Judaism, the apostles had no choice but to found Christianity.

|34-Q| Impossible to understand the nature of God...

I understood that God usually Presents himself to humans as a Spirit (Wind, Breath, Light, etc.), **but that his real nature is impossible to describe by any science**, see chapter |10|. Why? Because God is the Creator, he is everywhere in his creation and at all times! He makes Manifestations (miracles) here and there and disappears. God even hears our prayers in our head and this without the presence of even a "Wind" or a "Breath." Humanly, there is no imaginable concept to describe this! In this sense, God can present himself to us in Spirit (Breath, Wind, Light, etc.) and even in human (Jesus), 2000 years ago. In simple terms, God (the Creator) does what he wants. God reveals himself through his Manifestations. Even more, since there is no science for God, then the Scriptures that God inspires are symbolic. I give you a summary chart in article |35-H|.

|34-R| The Bible, between reality and fabulation

I give you, according to me, the way the Scriptures were realized in the Bible.

At the beginning there is the "Message from the Lord" or the "Events" (not necessarily grand) that actually happened. Subsequently within the population, there is 50 years and more of oral transmission (from mouth to ear). Here, the reality (the facts) is mixed with human exaggeration (the legend). Subsequently, the religious people are only interested in the information that corresponds to their beliefs (doctrine) and what is useful to them in order to pass on their own teaching to the people. Finally, the texts are standardized to fit into the canon of their Bible. Basically, all of the history (the reality) passes through a legendary effect as well as a tight doctrinal filter to obtain the Scriptures of the Bible (OT and NT). Obviously, the "original Message of the Lord and the actual Events" are distorted in the Scriptures we have.

Personally after 5,000 hours of work, I know that it is very difficult to differentiate the true from the false in the Bible. There is everything as already mentioned in article |34-F|. **However, in this present work (this book), there is no intermediary or deformation.** I give you the most accurate description of the Manifestations of the Lord. I had to progress towards the Truth for 6 years to write it. Remember that this book is free. I do not make any money from it and I even pay advertising fees every month to publicize it. So, I assure you that this book is true, because I have no time or money to waste on falsehoods! You should know that this present chapter |34| took me a colossal amount of work, because I had to get out of the New Testament theology. Without the special request from the Lord in article |34-I|, I would never have done it. Let me explain. **The Bible is made up of the Truth of God and human mythology. So how can I untangle all this? How can I explain it to readers?**

Yes, there is a way to know what "God says" and what "humans make God say" in the Bible.

It is by the Holiness of God (without any evil).

But for that, we absolutely need the {gift of the Holy Spirit} in order to get his help. Why? Because the Holiness of God (His Love) is quite incredible for a person who has not felt it.

The Lord Reveals that several Scriptures (OT and NT) seriously undermine His Holiness as follows:

OT	Exodus	32,26-28	he (Moses) stood at the gate of the camp and cried, "Whoever is for the LORD, let him come to me!" All the Levites (1) then rallied to him, and he told them, "Thus says the LORD (2), the God of Israel: Put your sword on your hip , every one of you! Now go up and down the camp, from gate to gate, and slay your own kinsmen, your friends and neighbors!" The Levites carried out the command of Moses, and that day there fell about three thousand of the people .
----	--------	----------	--

- (1) The Levites are the Jewish priests.
- (2) Here, Yahweh (God) cannot order a massacre, because he is Holy (without any evil). The Jewish scribes of the time invented this story to affirm how far their power could go over the people and that this was the will of Yahweh (God).

I give you the **Keys I have had so far**, to differentiate the true from the false in the New Testament and the Old Testament. Later, in chapter |36|, the Lord will Reveal to me yet another important key. But for now, let's not rush through it and move forward slowly.

Here is:

- 1) God is truly One (1 Person) as written in the Old Testament. There are not several Persons in God, but only God himself. The dogma of the Holy Trinity (3 Persons in God) is a human invention. The Holy Spirit is the spiritual Manifestation of God (Yahweh, I Am) on earth. Jesus is the human Manifestation of God (Yahweh, I Am) on earth. Yahweh (I Am) of the Old Testament who was Invisible becomes Visible in the New Testament, it is Jesus (Yahweh, I Am). God became human to come and walk with us.
- 2) God (Jesus) came on earth to complete his teaching to the people; to demonstrate by miracles that he is God; to demonstrate that God is Holy (without any evil) and finally, out of Love for us, to Sacrifice himself to Share his Eternal Life with us.
- 3) In general, God is Invisible. He is through his Creation, everywhere and at all times. In this sense, God Manifests himself to humans in different ways to make himself known. The Breath represents that God is the Author of all life. The Wind represents the Power of God. The Fire represents mainly the Purity of God and his Power. The Fire can also represent the sharing or exchange between God and human through the ritual of sacrifice. In the Old Testament, the human offers a sacrifice (a holocaust with fire) to God on the altar. The smoke of the sacrifice pleasing to God rises to sky. In the New Testament, God comes on earth in order to Sacrifice himself out of Love for the human, hence the Manifestation of the Flame of Fire in the {God's child} who is the Body of Jesus of article |33-G|.
- 4) God is Holy (without any evil). In simple terms, any scripture in the Bible that shows God (**Yahweh** or **Jesus**) as wicked, vengeful and punishing is automatically a human invention. Whether in the Old Testament or even in the New Testament. The books of Enoch, Job and Revelation are good examples of falsehoods.
- 5) God is Life. God educates the human. God is patient. God heals the human. God feeds the human. God loves the human. God wants to share his life with human beings. God is like a loving and caring mother for her children (the human). All of this is the Revelation of God (Jesus) in the New Testament. In reality, these are the same actions that God has always done even with his people (the Hebrews), this truth represents only about 30% of the Old Testament. On the other hand, the religious authorities of the time preferred to write that God justifies and encourages the crimes of their kings (wars), this falsehood represents about 70% of the Old Testament.
- 6) In order to reach every human (educated or not) and this, whatever the time, God communicates his Message by symbols and rituals in the Scriptures of the Old Testament. God has not changed his method and Jesus teaches in parables in the New Testament. God (Jesus) fulfilled these symbols and rituals by his coming on earth. **By Creative power, the rituals and**

symbols of the Scriptures become realities of God, these are the Manifestations of the Spirit that I have had. This is why even if the “Garden of Eden” and the “devil” never existed, they are yet found in my Manifestations of the Spirit.

7) Yahweh and Jesus being the same Person (God), their actions are obviously the same.

Here is a small chart:

New Testament (I Am or Jesus)	Links	Old Testament (I Am or Yahweh)
The Body of Jesus, in the {God’s child}, is like the Fire of sacrifice on the altar.	↔	Yahweh Presents himself as the Fire on the altar of the sacrifice or as the Fire of the burning bush.
Jesus educates his disciples.	↔	Yahweh educates his people (the Hebrews).
Jesus feeds the crowd by the multiplication of the loaves.	↔	Yahweh feeds his people in the desert with manna.
Jesus performs healings.	↔	Yahweh heals his people from death in the desert with the bronze serpent.
Jesus does no harm (Holy)	↔	So Yahweh (in the OT) does no harm either (Holy).
Jesus calms the storm. He protects his apostles.	↔	I believe it is conceivable that Yahweh (in the OT) could produce a storm in the desert around his people in order to protect them from their enemies who cannot then approach them.

8) To speak to the human, God uses symbols and rituals which are the language of the time of the Bible. If the symbols and rituals do not materialize, then we speak of a mythology (human invention). **On the other hand, if God uses and concretizes these symbols and rituals, then we speak of a divine reality.** The Coming of God (Jesus) on earth and the Manifestations of the Holy Spirit are examples of this (concretization of the symbols and rituals of the Bible). Without this, a religion is only mythological (invention), because built by humans, but not **Approved** by God.

The major problem is that the religious people want to do theology and celebrations. But when there are Apparitions (like those of the Blessed Virgin), they are not interested, they say that this is false most of the time, because they are afraid to lose their powers (which they do not have anyway in the eyes of God). So religion is decreasing in the world because of the lack of tangible and actual proofs which the unbelieving human needs to develop and maintain his interest in God.

|34-S| How will Eternal Life be?

I give you 4 points...

(1) Become all ONE in God as proposed by St-Paul and St-John in their epistles.

No, because a {God’s child} is not God. Because the {God’s child} would lose his own identity. Because our human body is sinful and dies in the ground.

On the other hand, for Jesus, he does not lose his identity by becoming God in Heaven, because he is already God himself on earth. The Shroud of Turin is the proof that Jesus left in Light, see article |32-N|. Do not forget that the root of the word God is: "Light."

In addition, in her Apparitions, the Blessed Virgin does not say that she is God. See chapter |6|.

→ Become all ONE in God is not the solution, because there is only Jesus who is God himself on earth. We are only human.

(2) Here are some Jewish concepts about Eternal Life.

From article |33-K|, we know that the Manifestations of the Spirit are related to the Jewish religion. So, I give you 4 Jewish concepts regarding Eternal Life at the time of Jesus.

A) The ritual of the offering to go to Heaven.

NT	St-Mark	8,35-37	For whoever wishes to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for my sake and that of the gospel will save it. What profit is there for one to gain the whole world and forfeit his life? What could one give in exchange for his life? (1)
----	---------	---------	---

(1) Here, the idea is simple. When a person dies, his entire life story becomes the offering that he presents to God. The offering of one's life on earth becomes the "currency of the ferryman of souls to the afterlife."

There are 2 choices:

1) A person who makes his own way on earth.	At the death of the person, the offering of his life is not sufficient to go to Heaven. This regardless of his good deeds or piety.
2) A person who follows the Way of Jesus and who receives his {anointing}.	At death, the Holy Offering (the Body of Jesus) deposited inside the {God's child} becomes sufficient to go to Heaven. But for Jesus to share his Holy Offering (his Body), the person must belong to him (he must be his disciple) and do the commandments asked by Jesus in the Gospels.

(*) This is the Manifestation of the Spirit of article | 33-G |.

The {God's child} is not deprived of God on earth, for he is a temple where God (Jesus) dwells. God (Jesus) accompanies him throughout his life and takes him to Heaven with him as in article | 33-G |.

B) The great Resurrection of the human bodies of the "righteous" at the end of time.

NT	St-John	6,40	For this is the will of my Father, that everyone who sees the Son and believes in him may have eternal life, and I shall raise him (on) the last day."
----	---------	------	--

This would explain why the human body of the {God's child} dies in the ground. He awaits the resurrection at the end of time.

C) The Marriage between God and the human.

God becomes human (Jesus) to Marry the human (the God's child). As man brings his wife into his home, as God brings his {children} into his Kingdom.

OT	Genesis	2,21-24	So the LORD God cast a deep sleep on the man, and while he was asleep, he took out one of his ribs and closed up its place with flesh. The LORD God then built up into a woman the rib that he had taken from the man. When he brought her to the man, the man said: "This one, at last, is bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh; This one shall be called 'woman,' for out of 'her man' this one has been taken." That is why a man leaves his father and mother and clings to his wife, and the two of them become one body (or one flesh) (1).
----	---------	---------	--

(1) This would explain the Manifestations with the Risen Body of Jesus (the Turbulence of the Flame of God) in the {God's child} of chapters | 13, 33 and 34 |. It is a Marriage, they are one flesh.

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Galatians	2,20	yet I live, no longer I, but Christ lives in me ; insofar as I now live in the flesh, I live by faith in the Son of God who has loved me and given himself up for me.
----	-------------------------------------	------	--

The Message I received is that Eternal Life is done as a Marriage between God and human. Marriage is another word for **Covenant**, here the 2nd Eternal Covenant. It begins on earth with the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. In her Apparitions, the Blessed Virgin never said that she was God. If I take the example of marriage. The man does not become the woman and the woman does not become the man. So God remains God and the human remains {God's child}.

D) The Garden of Eden.

In a simplified way, God had expelled the human (Adam and Eve) from the Garden of Eden due to his sin (doing evil). The human has therefore been deprived of the Presence of God. This is like humanity currently on earth who thinks that God does not exist. When God forgives a person's sins, he receives a new birth in the image of Adam, see article | 13-D |. It is a bit like the person coming back (or **being born again**) in the Garden of Eden. Thereafter, God comes to walk with his {child} on earth in the image of God who walks in the Garden of Eden. See article | 20-B |. Finally, the Tree of Life in the Garden of

Eden is the Holy human Body of God (Jesus) that the heart of the {God's child} is hungry for. See article |13-E|. By the Manifestations of the Eucharistic Communion of article |13-G|, the {God's child} eats of the fruit of the Tree of Eternal Life in the midst of the Garden.

→ These are the most consistent Jewish concepts with the Manifestations I have had from the Lord.

(3) The modern model of article |30-D|.

For the New Testament, the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is the Purification of the human body of the person to become {God's child}. Remember what John the Baptist said: "He (Jesus) will baptize you (Purification) with the Holy Spirit and Fire." This is why St-Paul believed at the beginning of the writing of his epistles that his human body would go directly to sky (Heaven), because his body had been purified. Later, he understood that this was not possible and that he would have to receive a new body (a spiritual body) at the end of time.

NT	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Thessalonians	4,17	Then we who are alive, who are left , will be caught up together with them in the clouds (a) to meet the Lord in the air. Thus we shall always be with the Lord.
	1st Epistle of St-Paul to the Corinthians	15,50-51	This I declare, brothers: flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God , nor does corruption inherit incorruption. Behold, I tell you a mystery. We shall not all fall asleep, but we will all be changed (b),

(a) This is the same idea as in the book of Enoch. Enoch did not die on earth, but was taken up to sky (Heaven) by God.

(b) This is the spiritual body for Living in Heaven proposed by St-Paul.

We saw in article |34-B| that the vibration as a Flame Turbulence in my body is not the Manifestation of my spiritual body. No, Jesus Reveals that it is his Risen Body in me. The Manifestation of article |34-U| will still give the same Revelation.

→ So my modern explanation of article |30-D| regarding receiving a spiritual body on earth in order to go to the Kingdom of God is unfortunately wrong.

Since article |30-D| is not exact, then I thought that I could simplify and reduce the work of 60 pages by removing the concept of the "spiritual body." On the other hand, the same evening, I had a small Manifestation of the Lord at the end of my prayer bringing me back to order like this: **"My Inspiration does not have to be changed!"** Yes, the Lord sometimes calls his {children} to order and I was surprised! It even allowed me to understand that if the Lord Jesus had not put his apostles in order with their mythical idea of the Messiah at the time, it was because the apostles and the Jewish people really needed it in the bottom of themselves and that the Lord Jesus respected this need. See article |35-G|.

I also understood that the schematic charts in chapters |30 and 31| are human representations necessary in order to extract the logic of the New Testament with its **trinitarian** (3 Persons in 1 God) and **unified** (all in Christ and Christ in God) theological construction. In addition, we have seen in article |32-D| that my definition of the word "Spirit" as being "the Wind or the Breath of the Presence of a Person" is quite good. This definition of the word "Spirit" correlates well with article |13-D|, it is the Breath or Wind of the Presence (of the Glorious Body) of the Risen Jesus of article |34-N| in point 3).

(4) From my twenty or so Manifestations of the Lord...

There are 3 essential Revelations in the Manifestations of God:

A) God calls himself "I Am." Here he says he is Existence itself. So if I have God in me, I will exist forever. B) God Presents himself as "the Breath." Here he says he is Life itself. So if I have God in me, I will live forever. C) God Presents himself as "the Bread of Life" (the Risen Jesus). So if I have God in me, I will live forever. This is the 2nd Eternal Covenant.

[34-T] How will the Kingdom of God (Heaven) be?

A) The Bible does not know.

The **1st Covenant** was God's promise of a new land to Abraham to settle his people. This has been fulfilled.

The **2nd Covenant** is God's promise of a new earth and a new sky (Eternal). Jesus also says that we will be like the angels. This is going to make a big positive difference with our humanity!

NT	St-Matthew	22,30	At the resurrection they neither marry nor are given in marriage but are like the angels in heaven.
	2nd Epistle of St-Peter	3,13	But according to his promise we await new heavens (a new sky) and a new earth in which righteousness dwells.

Furthermore, I understand that there is no information about what the Kingdom of God will look like in my Manifestations of the Spirit. There is only the {God's child} who lives Eternally with God and this from now on Earth.

B) If I go further than the old concepts of the Bible...

Our (human) world is completely separate from God. For us, it is impossible to reach God, because there is an **"Abyss"** between the 2 world/World. Only God can cross this **"Abyss."**

God made a world for us on earth so that we are completely free to choose without him. We can seek God or not. We can freely experience good or evil. Our world is a gift that God has given us and that God does not manage for us. Except that there is a consequence to our freedom, it is our mortality. I believe that God does not punish us by our death in the ground. We were born on earth, we die in the ground simply like plants and animals, it is simply the consequence of our autonomous world (without God). In simple terms, this **"Abyss"** between the 2 world/World created by God ensures the freedom of the human to experience good and evil temporarily. Obviously, God can do miracles for us here and there if we ask him and if he wants to.

God became man (Jesus) in order to come and walk with us on earth. The Sacrifice of God (Jesus) is not only his death on the cross, it began with his birth on earth and the sharing of our human condition. God (the Eternal) became human (Jesus), he is the **Redeemer**. This is the great mystery of the Creator's Love for his creation.

There are 2 crossings to this "Abyss":

In the Old Testament. God starts from his Kingdom and Presents himself in Spirit on earth. On the other hand, the human cannot cross this **"Abyss"** towards the Kingdom. It is important to know that the authors of the Old Testament allude to this **"Abyss"** here and there, such as this excerpt from article [21-C].

24.	So He drove the man out; and at the east of the garden of Eden He stationed the cherubim and the flaming sword which turned every direction to guard the way to the tree of life.
	(*) Since the human can do evil, there is a great gulf, an abyss, or an impossibility of crossing between the earth and the Kingdom of God.

In the New Testament. God starts from his Kingdom to make himself human (Jesus) on earth. Subsequently, God (Jesus) Resurrects. This time, Jesus (God-man) can bring a human across this **"Abyss"** to his Kingdom.

Obviously, it is impossible to understand the crossing of this **"Abyss."**

Our freedom on earth has its price to pay. 1) For the human, death in the ground. 2) For God (the Eternal), to take on the human condition (Jesus) on earth and Suffer in order to come and get his {children} for his Kingdom.

What does the Kingdom of God look like?

Frankly, the apostles wrote that they do not know. The Manifestations of the Spirit that I have had do not speak of it either. In addition, the majority of people who have had a near-death experience (NDE) and have seen Jesus say that they did not

see the Kingdom, or it was very distant, or it was veiled. So it is easy to understand that a human being cannot see the Kingdom of God, because there are steps that have not yet been taken. I even take this opportunity to make a small surprising remark. People who have had a near-death experience (NDE) and have seen Jesus say that Jesus called them "**my son or daughter**" and not "~~my brother or sister~~"... yes, because Jesus is not the Son, but God (Yahweh) in person.

For now, the only conceivable solution we have left is that on Earth, the {God's child} receives within him **the Carrier (Jesus)**. It is not until the human death of the {God's child} that the **Carrier (Jesus)** takes him across the "**Abyss**" in order to bring him to the **Kingdom (the destination)**. It would be for this reason that on earth it is impossible for a human to see the Kingdom, because the steps have not yet been taken. In simple terms, it is only after crossing this "**Abyss**" that the {God's child} will be able to see the Kingdom of God and not before.

On the other hand, the only thing we know about the destination (the Kingdom) is that God is Present (Love and Peace), because he is already present in the {God's child} on earth.

I give you **again part 1** of the testimony of my Manifestation of the Spirit of article |33-G|.

1	In the night I slept without dreaming about anything. I began by feeling the presence of the {anointing} in my chest. Afterwards, I felt air continuously entering my nostrils. The inside of my body began to vibrate as if it were moved by the turbulence of a flame (but without heat). I understood then that it was a Manifestation of the Spirit. Afterwards, the turbulence became very strong. I no longer felt any of my little human pains in my body. I felt really good! I felt that God was drawing me to him, that God was bringing me with him now to Heaven (1) . I continued to feel the air continually entering me. However, I felt that my human breathing had stopped. I understood that the Lord was coming for me. I was so happy! Finally Happiness forever!
----------	---

(1) When I felt this Manifestation of God within me, I did not see the "Gates of the Kingdom," but only the "**sky above me as in the middle of the night and without any stars as if it was something to cross in order to access the Kingdom of God.**" I had asked myself: "why did the Lord not show me his Kingdom?" The answer is simple, what I saw is this "**Abyss**" that only God (Jesus) in me can make me cross in order to reach his Kingdom.

The description given above is directly linked to the concretization of the symbols and rituals of Judaism in the chart of article |35-H|.

I give you an overview:

1st Covenant	The Hebrew people leave Egypt, cross the Red Sea <u>by Moses</u> , to get to the promised land.
2nd Covenant	The {God's child} leaves the Earth, crosses the Abyss <u>by sharing the Resurrection of Jesus in him</u> , to go to the Kingdom of God.

On the other hand, you will tell me that the account of the Exodus with Moses is not accurate in the Old Testament. Yes, it is true!

I understood that the details of the Bible do not have to be exact for God. Why? The validity of religion (Jewish or Christian) is not made by historical facts (of the Flood or of Moses), but by the concretization of the symbols and rituals of these accounts of Judaism directly in the {God's child}. In short, the validity of religion is not made by the historical accuracy of the Scriptures which the scientists of our time could destroy, but rather by the coming of Yahweh (Jesus) on Earth, the {gift of his Spirit} and his Manifestations in the {God's child}.

In short:

The Bible is a teaching tool for God. Not an object of absolute faith whose inaccuracies would destroy as has always been defended by religions (made by humans).
God has kept all his Powers in his only hand and the religious people unfortunately did not understand much. Perhaps brewing endless mysteries was more important than actually finding and encountering the Creator!

C) The Kingdom of God...

Can the Kingdom of God (Heaven) be like a Garden?

During the Apparitions of the Blessed Virgin to Bernadette Soubirous, Mary had a yellow rose on each of her feet. Where do we find the roses? Yes, in a garden! Mary also told Bernadette that she will be happy in Heaven...

God has made us a garden on Earth. So, it would be very possible that he also brings us to a Garden in Heaven!

Here is the surest image of the Kingdom of God...

I believe that the Kingdom will be like a Magnificent Garden, that Jesus (God) will be Present and that his Love and his Peace will be continually felt in us, his children, for Eternity.

Note of 2023:

The Lord will give me an important Revelation about Heaven in April 2023, hence the addition of chapter |37|.

|34-U| My testimony of another Manifestation of the Spirit and 2 healings

From early 2020 until early 2022, the Covid-19 pandemic paralyzed the Quebec health Service, including dentists. Since my dentist (whom I trust completely) is several hundred kilometers from my home, it was impossible to get an appointment. In August 2022, I found myself with a toothache. I thought that fixing this problem would cost me a fortune (which I do not have) and cause me a lot of pain (obviously, I dread pain). So I asked the Lord for help. In prayer, I told the Lord Jesus (for he is God) that I had taken care of his book as requested and that it was completed. That I had put in more effort than I was really capable of! And that I would like to get a little healing, I would be very happy!

My testimony of August 5, 2022:

That very night, I had a vibration like a Fire Flame Turbulence within me throughout my body for about 10 minutes. Of course, I was lying down and my body was lying flat on my bed. I felt that the Body of Jesus in me was lying on the ground, as if broken by suffering and death. Jesus was there, inside me, lying on the ground in the tomb. I felt that Jesus was not capable of suffering that much and dying tortured, he too was human. Afterwards, I felt that Jesus was asking for a mass.

In this Manifestation, we see once again that Jesus is Yahweh (I Am) in person. Why? Here Jesus says that he is in me and in article |13-I| he says that he is called "I Am."

I did not understand if having a mass sung in church was requested for him or for me. I think it is for both. To have a mass sung for me to get the healing I asked for. To have a mass sung for a deceased person, Jesus himself. I understood that Jesus was not capable of dying tortured for us, but that he did it anyway. I understood that even though Jesus had asked me to write this work so difficult that I was not really able to write it, Jesus had offered his human life to the point that he was not able to do it either. When I got up, I was upset. I thought to myself that my prayer had offended him... I was asking for a small reward, he had given me his life. I thought that I would not get what I asked for, because Jesus had done a lot for me. I had 2 masses sung in church. I remembered that during a mass we celebrate the death and Resurrection of Jesus. Without knowing it, I had the healing I had asked for that very night and I did not realize it until lunch, because I no longer had a toothache.

More than that... The Lord Jesus also says to you readers that it is not so difficult to get a miracle from him. He only asked me to have a mass sung in church! He says that getting a miracle does not come from the effort of our works, but from the trust (faith) we put in our request and our willingness to follow his Way. If you approach him with heart, he will give you what you really need (even a miracle). I who believed that a {God's child} had already received everything from Jesus, well I was wrong, the Lord always gives to those who ask.

I give you an additional example of the Goodness of the Lord. In article |33-G|, I told you about my mother who is 75 years old. She had been deaf in one ear for 2 years. One evening in November, I was using a voice synthesis to read her the new chapter |35| in order to find out what she thought of it. After about 30 minutes... her deaf ear started hearing again! Yes, a little healing! ***I did not know that a person could get a small miracle from the Lord Jesus just by reading this book he asked me to write for you...***

| 35 | Judaism and Christianity

Chapters | 30 to 38 | are Optional. It is important to start by reading the introduction to Part 2. This chapter | 35 | was written in late 2022.

| 35-A | A great separation, 1 religion that becomes 2

Ancient Judaism. This Judaism of the time of Jesus had various beliefs that were destroyed due to a separation to form 2 distinct religions, **rabbinic Judaism** and **Christianity** (between the years 0070 and 0313). Its diverse beliefs are poorly understood today, as several sacred books of the time were destroyed or nearly destroyed in this conflict. There is the belief in one God who is Yahweh from the book of the prophet Isaiah. According to Isaiah, Yahweh will come to earth to Save his people from their sin. He speaks of a filiation between Yahweh and his people or of a Marriage (Covenant). There is the widespread belief of a king Chosen (Anointed) by Yahweh, it is a human named the Messiah who will deliver the country (Israel) from its invaders by war (belief of the Zealot Jews). There is the belief that the Son of Man (Messiah) would be the right arm of Yahweh (here called the Lord of Spirits) and would come on the clouds of heaven (sky) to rule the earth in righteousness, from the book of Enoch (belief of the Essene Jews). There is the belief in the great resurrection at the end of time of the righteous who obtain this reward by their piety (belief of the Pharisee Jews). There is the opposite belief that the human is dust and returns to dust therefore dies in the ground only (belief of the Sadducees Jews). There is the belief in the reincarnation of the spirit of a once deceased person into the body of another person. There is the widespread belief of Satan (the opponent of God), who is a fallen angel and has many demons under his command.

It is in this fertile soil of diverse beliefs that the New Testament was written...

Ancient Judaism split into 2:

1) Rabbinic Judaism. This is Judaism today. It was born from a standardization from the years 0070. It is a pure monotheism, because there is only one Person in God (one Lord), Yahweh himself who is Spirit, Indivisible and Invisible. It is the stubbornness of this strict Judaism currently affirming that the only Divinity is Yahweh and the Manifestations of the Spirit of Jesus that allowed me to understand that Jesus is Yahweh in person. Subsequently, the Lord Jesus confirmed it 3 times.

2) Christianity. Formed completely from the years 0313. There are 3 Persons in God. The Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit, 3 equal Persons in One God. The Father being the Invisible of God. The Holy Spirit being the Breath and the Fire of God. The Son of God being Jesus, the Word (the Logos) or the Visible of God, the Lamb of God sacrificed for our sins, the Anointed of God (the Christ or the Messiah). Christianity is not pure monotheism, as the New Testament clearly states that there are 2 Lords. See article | 35-C |.

Internet Keywords	1) Wikipedia, rabbinic Judaism. 2) Wikipedia, Christianity. 3) Daniel Boyarin's book, The Jewish Gospels.
-------------------	---

| 35-B | Simply put, what is the Bible?

Several specialists today (historians, theologians, exegetes, etc.) say that the Scriptures of the Bible are pure mythology. For them, these are fables that they study endlessly to find out their origin.

I am far from agreeing with them! For the Bible to be pure mythology, our Creator (God) would have to not exist. I can assure you 100% that he does exist! Why? Chapter | 34 | is entirely his Will in order to help us understand what happened in the Bible. On my own, I would have written absolutely nothing, because it is far too complex!

In fact, the Bible is a mix between 1) the Realities of God and 2) the human mythology of the time:

<p><u>For the OT, mythology resides</u> in the belief that God is distant and punishing (<u>which he is not</u>). A God who is Invisible and so Powerful that no one can see him without dying. A God who helps his people to fight their enemies (the invading peoples) and who will one day send his Messiah to defeat them and begin an era of justice and peace.</p>
--

For the NT, mythology resides in the belief that Jesus is the Divine Messiah (which he is not). The Messiah first gives people on earth the way to behave to please God. But at the end of time, the Divine Messiah will return with his heavenly army for the Judgment. The enemy being Satan, demons and evil humans.

The Realities of God are in my Manifestations of him. God the Creator (I Am) is Holy (Love and Forgiveness). God became human (Jesus), he suffered in order to share his plan of Eternal Life with the humans who follow him.

It is important to understand that mythology was precisely the science of the time of the Bible. I give you an example. Arrive with a lit lighter in your hand at that time and you would be accused of being the devil's friend! Yet we know that a lighter is not evil! In the Bible, the Realities of God are seen through the eyes of superstitious people whose only knowledge is mythology.

On the other hand, psychology can help us understand...

In chapter |16|, I told you about how our psyche was built when we were children. I give you an example. The Oedipus complex that each of the children goes through was discovered by Freud (the founder of psychoanalysis). Freud discovered that children's thinking had a strong connection with mythology. **Simply put, the basis of our unconscious thought is mythological.** In the depths of our psyche, there is everything: the idea of the good fairy, the witch and even the devil. I understood that this is why the Bible teaches us with myths. I understood that this is why our Creator speaks to us with symbols.

So what is the Bible for?

Since God really exists, the Bible contains real facts. These real facts are difficult to extract, because they are fused with human mythology to make religious teaching. The Bible serves to educate us in order to know our Creator, to know the difference between good and evil and to choose God or not in our life.

Note:

In Christianity, I understood that we use the word "God" in a general and distant sense, while we use the word "Lord" in a closer and personal sense.

|35-C| Here are the most probable explanations of the origin of the mysteries in the New Testament

I recently understood that **there are 2 different theologies** in the New Testament. **A)** There is the theology of the years (0060) which is of Jewish origin. **B)** There is the theology of the years (0110) which is of Greek origin. Later on, Christianity mixed them together, these are our beliefs since the years 0313.

A) I give you my simplified explanation of the theology of Jewish origin (dated 0060):

1) For monotheism, since there is only one Divinity, then we just call him "**God**," because there is no other. On the other hand, God really calls himself "**I Am**," once before Moses and now in this book.

OT	Isaiah	45,5-6	I am (Yahweh) the LORD, there is no other, there is no God besides me. It is I who arm you, though you do not know me, so that all may know, from the rising of the sun to its setting, that there is none (1) besides me. I am (Yahweh) the LORD, there is no other.
----	--------	--------	--

(1) We see that there is only one Lord (Divinity), Yahweh himself.

2) In the Old Testament (**the OT**), God has a "Proper Name." The Jews call him **YHWH** which has been translated as **Yahweh**. This "Name of God" is so inaccessible and distant for the Jews that they are not even allowed to pronounce it. On the other hand, the Jews also give a "small Name, more friendly or more intimate" to God who is **Adonai**.

3) In Christianity, **Adonai** has been translated by the word "**Lord**" which means in a simplified way: "Divinity." It is for this reason that in the New Testament (**the NT**), "**God the Father**" and "**God the Son**" are both called "Lord." This has such a point that when it says "Lord," it is difficult for us to know who (God the Father or God the Son) is being referred to!

I give you a key example in the New Testament with St-Peter:

NT	Acts of the Apostles	2,32-35	God (1) raised this Jesus (2); of this we are all witnesses. Exalted at the (2) right hand of God, he received the promise of the holy Spirit (3) from the (1) Father and poured it forth, as you both (3) see and hear. For David did not go up into heaven, but he himself said: 'The Lord (1) said to my Lord (2), "Sit at my right hand (2) until I make your enemies your footstool.'" Therefore let the whole house of Israel know for certain that God (1) has made him both Lord (2) and Messiah, this Jesus whom you crucified."
----	----------------------	---------	---

(1) here God is Yahweh. He is called "the Father" and also "Lord." In simple for St-Peter, Yahweh is the (1st Divinity) or the (1st Lord), the one who is the (Absolute Divinity).

(2) Here the Risen Jesus sits on his throne at the right hand of the throne of Yahweh. By the grace of Yahweh (1st Divinity), Jesus was also made Lord (2nd Divinity). For St-Peter, Jesus (the Son) is a (Subordinate Divinity) to Yahweh (the Father) who is the (Absolute Divinity). It is necessary to know that the Judaism of the time of the apostles was different from that of today and that it had a broad vision of monotheism. Let me explain: a (2nd Subordinate Lord) to a (1st Absolute Lord) was considered as monotheism, because there was then only one Absolute Divinity. Currently, the new Judaism (rabbinic) no longer accepts this concept at all and wants to be a pure monotheism, a single Lord (or a single Divine Person) who is Yahweh.

(3) Here, the Holy Spirit is not described as the 3rd Person in God, but as a widespread promise, which is concrete since it is seen and heard. In Christianity, there is a creed for the 3rd Person in God as follows: "I believe in the Holy Spirit who is Lord and who gives life." In the NT, we saw above that it is explicitly stated that there are 2 Lords (the Father and the Son). Subsequently, Christianity added a 3rd Lord who is said to be **"deduced from the New Testament"** mainly from the Gospel of John, because it speaks of another Paraclete (Intercessor), the Holy Spirit.

Although Christianity tries to use the book of the prophet Daniel to see in Jesus the Messiah (the Son of man), the book of Daniel (canonical) is currently considered pseudepigrapha (text attributed to an author who did not write it). I go even further, the prophet Daniel is a myth! Why? In the book of Daniel, the king of Babylon (a conceited criminal) lodges and feeds a Jewish slave (Daniel) for free at his court to be strangely given lessons. This makes no sense at all!

In article |34-G|, we saw that the mythological book of Enoch (apocryphal), the book of Daniel (canonical) and the book of Revelation (canonical) share many points in common. Below, I give you some points of agreement between the book of Daniel and Enoch. **On the other hand, the book of Enoch has the advantage of defining more clearly the Son of man (the Messiah) expected by the Jews of the time of Jesus.**

Here is the concordance for the book of Daniel:

NT	Daniel	7,9-10	As I watched, Thrones (3) were set up and the Ancient One (1) took his throne. His clothing was snow bright, and the hair on his head as white as wool; His throne (1) was flames of fire, with wheels of burning fire. A surging stream of fire flowed out from where he sat; Thousands upon thousands were ministering to him, and myriads upon myriads attended him. The court was convened, and the books were opened (2).
		7.13-14	As the visions during the night continued, I saw One like a son of man (2) coming, on the clouds of heaven (sky); When he reached the Ancient One (1) and was presented before him. He (2) received dominion, glory (2), and kingship (2); nations and peoples of every language serve (2) him. His dominion is an everlasting (2) dominion that shall not be taken away, his kingship shall not be destroyed.

Here is the concordance for the book of Enoch:

OT	Enoch	46,1-4 (a)	
And there I saw the Head of days (1), and his head was white like wool; and with him was a second whose countenance was like the appearance of a man, and his countenance was full of agreeableness, like one of the holy angels. And I asked one of the angels, who went with me, and who showed me all the secrets, concerning this son of man (2), who he was and whence he was, and why he goes with the Head of days? And he answered and said to me: "This is the Son of man (2), who has justice, and justice dwells with him, and all the treasures of secrecy he reveals, because the Lord of the spirits has chosen him, and his portion overcomes all things before the Lord of the spirits in rectitude to eternity. And			

this Son of man, whom thou hast seen, will arouse the kings and mighty from their couches, and the strong from their thrones, and will loosen the bands of the strong, and will break the teeth of the sinners.		
OT	Enoch	62,6-9 (b)
And the powerful kings, and all who hold the earth, will honor, and bless, and exalt him (2) who rules over all, who was hidden. For formerly the Son of man (2) was hidden, and the Most High (1) preserved him before his power, and has revealed him to the chosen. And the congregation of the holy and the chosen will be sown, and all the chosen will stand before him on that day (2). And all the powerful kings and the exalted and they who rule the earth will fall before him upon their faces (2), and will worship (2) and will hope in this Son of man (2), and will petition him and ask him for mercy (2).		

(a) In the French version of the book of Enoch, these are verses (46, 1-3).

(b) In the French version of the book of Enoch, these are verses (61, 10-13).

(1) Here God is Yahweh (the Ancient One), commonly called the Most High by the Jews. We have seen that in other verses of the book of Enoch, Yahweh is called the "Lord of the spirits." Here Yahweh seems to be the "Lord of heaven (sky)".

(2) Here it is the Son of man. We see that the Son of man is also a Divinity (a Lord) since we prostrate ourselves before him, he is worshipped, prayed to and invoked. Here, the Son of man seems to be the "Lord of the earth." In the New Testament, Jesus was identified as the "Son of man (Messiah)." Since Jesus was the Son of man, then he was "Lord" as St-Peter mentions in the book of Acts of the Apostles (above). Therefore, Jesus (the Messiah) had to return at the end of time for the Last Judgment to establish his kingdom on earth. This obviously required the resurrection in flesh and blood of the faithful (the righteous) who had "fallen asleep" in death.

(3) Since there are many thrones, then there are many Lords (Divinities).

With these same numbers (1) to (3), you can also make the concordance with the extract above from the book of the Acts of the Apostles.

I end with a summary of this theology:

According to St-Peter and St-Paul, in the beginning there is only one Lord (Yahweh). Yahweh made a new creation, a new Adam, who is Jesus. Jesus on earth being a miracle baby born from the Will of Yahweh (who obviously becomes a Father here) and a woman (Mary) who is his (human) mother. Jesus (the Son of God) works wonders and teaches the Holiness of his Father (Yahweh). Jesus died on the cross, he is the lamb of his Father (Yahweh) for the remission of sins. Yahweh (1st Lord) Resurrects Jesus and makes him (2nd Lord) then makes him sit on another throne at his right. Yahweh (the Father) shares his Eternal Breath (the Holy Spirit) to Jesus (the Son) who then shares it with the {God's children} at Pentecost. Obviously, the Son (2nd Lord) is very little spoken of in the Old Testament, because he was not yet begotten or he was hidden by his Father (Yahweh). In addition, the Revelation of the Son (2nd Lord) being a little surprise from Yahweh in order to thwart his opponent, Satan.

B) I give you my simplified explanation of the theology of Greek origin (dated 0110):

It is recognized in Christianity that the Gospel of John (dated 0110) is the one that speaks most of the Divinity of Jesus. The dogma of the Holy Trinity would have been mainly formulated with this Gospel.

We saw in Jewish theology in A) that Jesus is the First Adam, a new creation who received the Spirit from the Father and poured it out at Pentecost to bring forth other {God's children}, this time adoptive (example: the apostles). 50 years later, in the Gospel of John (dated 0110), Jesus became the Word of God made flesh or if you want the Word Incarnate! What happened?

Some theologians see, in this Gospel of John, religious teaching adapted for the pagans (the Greeks).

On the other hand, I have a slightly more interesting explanation...

Around the year 0070, Christianity became a little more free of expression, as it separated from Judaism. The Manifestations of the Spirit of God (the Spirit of Jesus who calls himself: **I Am**) as well as his Apparitions (**Luminous Silhouette**) have shaken the Christian beliefs established until then by the apostles. The Christians of the 0110s now had

to try to understand why Jesus (a Risen man) was called: **I Am** (Yahweh)! At that time, the majority of Christians were of pagan (Gentile) origin. They then looked for an explanation in their mythology. Example, in the ancient Egyptian cult, an invisible deity named "A" could manifest in a visible form named "B." In simple: "B" was the visible manifestation of an invisible deity "A." This is where the concept of the "**Logos**" of the Gospel of John came from. Jesus (the Word) being the "Visible Manifestation" of an Invisible God (Yahweh, I Am). In this way, it was possible **to avoid "the unthinkable"**... that Jesus is Yahweh in person and to contradict the other Gospels (dated 0060).

In simple terms, the Gospel of John **is explained** by the reception of the same Manifestations of the Spirit of Jesus whether in the year 0110 or **currently in this book**. But with the difference that we are currently sufficiently free of expression to attest that Jesus is not this time ~~the image of God~~, but **God in person**.

This explains the following verse very well:

NT	St-John	14,26	"But the Helper, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all that I (1) said to you.
----	---------	-------	--

(1) Yes, because the Spirit of **God** is precisely the Spirit of **Jesus**.

|35-D| A difficult end to the work for all of us

As I told you in article |34-J|, the end of the work was very difficult for me as well as for you. We have solved all the mysteries of the Bible. We discovered that God is really One (1 only Person) as the Jews keep saying to counter Christianity. Except that Jesus is Yahweh in person. Yes, this is a very great discovery for Christians, but it also happens with very dark knowledge...

1) Since the mysteries of the Gospels are not totally in accordance with the Manifestations of the Spirit of Jesus, see article |34-C|, it became obvious to me that the first Christians made Jesus and his apostles speak in the Gospels to deposit their own beliefs there. Yes it took me a long time to understand it, **but theologians explain that it was the custom of the time to have the founders of a religion speak (here Jesus and his apostles in the NT). Just as the Scriptures of Judaism made their founder (here Yahweh in the OT) speak**. On the other hand, reread my Manifestations of the Spirit of God and you will understand that God (Yahweh, Jesus) is not very talkative. I only had 5 sentences in 6 years, see articles |13-I, 32-D and 34-S|! All the other Manifestations have no words at all.

2) Even after 2,000 years, the exact identity of Jesus has still not been discovered by Christianity. Me, I wrote it here, but it would surprise me a lot if this book is known one day. Why? When I stop advertising, book sales drop to almost zero. This means that readers do not talk about this book. So there is no growth effect and the message of the Lord will obviously die out when I am no longer there...

3) Moreover, I even saw the testimony of a 4-year-old little girl who had a near-death experience (NDE) and drew a picture of a man and said to her mother, "Mommy, when am I going to see God again?" Her Christian community said, "ha, she saw Christ!" No, no one even listens to what a 4-year-old says... she saw God in person!

Internet keywords (YouTube)	1) Fille revient du paradis et dessine ce qu'elle a vu 1) Girl comes back from heaven and draws what she saw
-----------------------------	---

I take this opportunity to give you other beautiful testimonials...

Internet Keywords (YouTube)	(a) J'ai vu Jésus, sa couleur n'existe pas dans ce monde! (a) I saw Jesus, his color does not exist in this world!
	(b) Elle arrive au paradis, entend Dieu lui parler (b) She arrives in heaven, hears God speak to her

(a) Here is the testimony of a young woman who nearly died. Her grandmother had told her to call Jesus if things were not going well in her life. She cried out with all her heart to Jesus. Jesus appeared to her. He took her in his arms of Love and healed her.

(b) Here is the testimony of a young woman with epilepsy who had a serious seizure during a party with her friends. The Light of God's Love picked her up and Brought her far from Earth, to the entrance to Heaven, where suffering does not exist.

4) How many times on the Internet have I seen testimonies of rabbis (Jews) who say that it is not permissible to pronounce the name of Yahweh in vain, **but endlessly repeat** that Jesus is a heretic, that he is not the Messiah! Yes, it is true, **Jesus** is not the Messiah... on the other hand, he **is** the one whose name they have no right to pronounce (**YHWH** or Yahweh) in vain!

|35-E| Did Jesus give his apostles the necessary to discover that he was Yahweh in person?

The facts:

1) Jesus on earth does concrete things (he does miracles). He teaches righteousness and goodness with authority (Holiness). He forgives people's sins and they heal. We must not forget that it is only Yahweh who forgives sins.

→ **Jesus demonstrated that he is Yahweh. He was restoring the Truth about his Holiness which had been flouted in the Old Testament.**

2) The apostles followed Jesus because they believed he was the expected Messiah. Jesus died on the cross, he could not be the Messiah! Judas Iscariot was the only one to understand this and he committed suicide, because the cause (the Messiah) for which he had worked all his life was over.

NT	St-Paul, 1st Epistle to the Corinthians	1,22-23	For indeed Jews ask for signs (1) and Greeks (2) search for wisdom (or a logic); but we (Christians) preach Christ (Messiah) crucified, to Jews a stumbling block (3) and to Gentiles (the Greeks) foolishness,
----	---	---------	---

(1) Here, the Jews do not find the idea of the crucified Messiah in their Scriptures (the OT).

(2) Obviously, the Greeks (Gentiles) do not find any logic in a (Powerful) Messiah who was crucified.

(3) St-Paul should have understood that there was something wrong with the Christian idea that Jesus is the Messiah. Perhaps St-Paul should have understood that the Scriptures (the OT) he had before him were distorted (by the scribes and kings).

→ **Jesus was clear, he demonstrated by his death on the cross who he was not. He was not the expected Messiah.**

Jesus was demonstrating to his apostles that the Messiah (the Avenger and Punisher from heaven (sky)) expected by the Jews was a human invention (a myth) and now had to be mourned. Vengeance, war and evil had to be mourned.

→ **Jesus Revealed that God (Yahweh) is Love, Forgiving and Holy (without any evil).**

→ **Now, it was necessary to look again for the identity of Jesus...**

3) Jesus said at the Last Supper with his apostles that Communion to his Body gives Eternal Life. Since there is only Yahweh of Eternal, then Jesus finally revealed his identity to them.

→ **Jesus affirmed for the first time that he was Yahweh (the Eternal).**

Note:

Subsequently, Jesus claimed to be Yahweh (I Am) several times after his Resurrection.
Scholars of ancient Jewish Scriptures explain that in the OT, it is not the messiah who Saves from death, but Yahweh himself. Yes, they are right! Jesus Reveals himself to be actually Yahweh in person and not the messiah (a myth).

|35-F| A lack of self-confidence...

A) On earth, did Jesus want to remain mysterious?

I think so. Why? To say that he is Yahweh in person was obviously impossible. Staying mysterious was a search engine for people. In the time of Jesus, religion had the function of educating the population. On the other hand, the authorities used religion to control the population. This meant locking people into strict beliefs (burdens) and asserting that God was distant and punishing. On the other hand, Jesus came with a different vision. It was necessary to go in search of God personally. Jesus taught that God is like a loving and merciful Father. Obviously Jesus knew God very well, because he was God himself!

B) Could a person who got the {gift of the Holy Spirit} discover that Jesus is Yahweh in person?

We will discover that if a person trusted himself completely, yes it was possible to find out. This regardless of his time (including the apostles) and his beliefs and even from the start! To do this, I give you a small overview of my Manifestations of the Spirit from the beginning of 2016.

1) Manifestation of article | 13-D |.

Here it is the Light and the Wind of the Presence of God that enters me. It is as if God were a **"Stream of Luminous Air"** that entered through my nostrils and filled the inside of my body completely. This is accompanied by the feeling of being born like Adam by the Breath of God. We could even make the connection with the **"Bright Cloud of Yahweh"** in the book of Exodus (Moses).

Here we know instinctively that it is God the Creator, that there is only one God and that he is Holy. The Spirit of God dwells in the person as in a temple. Here, the person brings his religion with him and no longer needs a temple made with human hands to pray and priests. So far, the Manifestations are only felt by the Wind or the Breath.

2, 3 and 4) Manifestations of article | 13-E | then of article | 13-G |.

Here, it is surprising **to have "hunger for God"** in my heart like hunger in my stomach. It is not the hunger for food or the hunger for the "Body of the Messiah," but the **"hunger for God himself."**

Why be "hungry for God" if I have already received the Spirit of God in me? I understood that the Manifestation of article | 13-D | is the Sanctification (Purification) of my human body by the Spirit of God so that he prepares in me a place to receive his Body. Thereafter, why pray continuously for 3 days as for a deceased. Here the answer was simple. God I hunger for is the Body of Jesus (the Bread of the New Passover). So Jesus is the "human Body of God himself" that I hunger for.

5) Manifestation of article | 13-I |.

Here is the Message of the Lord for the writing of this book. The request comes from "I Am."

This is the name that Yahweh gave himself before Moses. So, God who dwells in me (Body and Spirit) is Yahweh.

6) Manifestation of article | 13-J |.

Participation in Pentecost.

From here, it is the Manifestations of the Turbulence of Flame of Fire in me which begins and resembles the story of the burning bush with Moses. It is the presence of Yahweh who comes from heaven and who now dwells in me.

7) Manifestation of articles | 13-K | and | 33-F |.

The Perfume of **orange** (the **color**) to designate the Perfume **of myrrh**. Jesus, God made man.

Here, God (Yahweh) confirms that he became human and dwells in me.

Conclusion:

Yahweh gave freely to each of the people who obtained the {gift of his Spirit} all the knowledge necessary to discover that Jesus is Yahweh in person on earth. **This even to the apostles.**

| 35-G | According to the Manifestations I received from the Lord Jesus, this is what really happened...

This topic was started in article | 34-J | and I add more details here. Then I will finalize the reconstruction in articles | 38-F to 38-I |.

a) Jesus (a man) walks the earth, he teaches goodness (Holiness) with authority. Contrary to the NT, Jesus absolutely does not say who he is. The apostles identify Jesus as the long awaited Messiah of the Jewish population.

b) Jesus is arrested. The authorities execute Jesus by the hand of the Romans illegally and without any trial. Jesus is dead, he is laid in the tomb, a large stone closes his tomb for one year (according to Jewish custom). The apostles hide because they fear for their lives. The apostles are defeated, Jesus cannot be the Messiah since he is dead and his mission to restore the kingdom of Israel is not accomplished.

c) Jesus Resurrects in the tomb. His body left in "Light" according to the Shroud of Turin. **Jesus passed from the human condition to the Spirit condition.** It is important to understand that **(the Risen Jesus) is (the Spirit of God)**. So, Jesus does not need to open the door (the big stone) of the tomb to come out as mentioned in the NT.

Very important note:

Since the Lord Revealed to me that I had the same Manifestations as the apostles, **then contrary to the NT accounts**, the event of Pentecost occurred first and the Apparitions of the Risen Jesus occurred afterwards, because it is in this order that the Lord gave me his Manifestations.

d) It is the event of Pentecost. The apostles are all hidden in the upper room, probably 3 days after Jesus died. At night, each of the apostles receives the same Manifestation as me of article |13-D|. Each receives the Breath and Light of the Presence of God into their nostrils that makes them {be born again}. Although this is an individual Manifestation for each of the apostles, it occurs simultaneously for all the apostles.

e) The apostles ask themselves the question, what exactly did they receive? They try to find the answers in their OT Scriptures as I did in my NT Scriptures.

f) As requested by Jesus, the apostles commemorate the breaking of bread and the cup of wine. They then receive twice the Eucharistic Manifestation like me in article |13-G|.

Note:

Without the apostles knowing and understanding it, these 2 Eucharistic Manifestations indicate that the Body of Jesus (the Bread of the New Passover) is that of "God whom they are hungry" of article |13-E| and who is now in each of them. Thereafter, the Spirit in them names himself "I Am" thus "Yahweh" like me in article |13-I|.

g) A few days later, all the apostles are together and the doors are closed. At night, each of the apostles receives the same Manifestation as me from article |34-N| in point 3). Light comes out of each of them (from their human bodies) and a Luminous Silhouette with the face like the Jewish Passover bread Appears before them. At the end of the Apparition, the Luminous Silhouette disappears. Again, although this is an individual Manifestation for each of the apostles, it occurs simultaneously for all of the apostles. The Light of the Apparition represents God (Yahweh). The Silhouette represents that Yahweh became human (Jesus). The face like the bread of the Jewish Passover represents the Eternal Covenant. Why did the Apparition of Jesus actually take place after Pentecost? Because the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is actually the {gift of the Risen Body of Jesus in the apostles}. Because **(the Risen Jesus) is (the Spirit of God)** in them. **So he only remained to Appear in Light coming out of them as for me.** It is for this reason that in article |34-N| in point 3), the Lord indicated to me **that there is a direct link between Pentecost and his Apparition.**

Note:

This explains why St-Paul is able to define the identity of the Holy Spirit dwelling in him. He calls him the Spirit of Christ (Jesus). Yes, because he saw (like me) the Luminous Silhouette of Jesus coming out of him! **On the other hand, the apostles interpreted this Apparition with their dearest desire in mind!** Before them, the Risen Jesus (the human Silhouette) was in the Glory (Light) of Yahweh. For them, Jesus had received the Spirit of Yahweh in him and therefore that Jesus was the Anointed of Yahweh (the Christ or the expected Messiah). On the other hand, since Jesus made himself felt God in them, there was a big price to pay for this idea, **Jesus (the Messiah) was Divine.** So, to obtain their precious desire for the Messiah, it was necessary to build a "distorted theology" in order to make God pass from 1 Lord (Yahweh) to 2 Lords (Yahweh and Jesus). The idea was simple, they were One (they were Unified). As Yahweh was in Jesus, as Jesus was in the apostles. The Gospel of John makes this "distorted theology" perfectly explicit in verse (14,20) as follows: "On that day you will recognize that I (Jesus) am in my Father (Yahweh) and you in me and I (Jesus) in you (the apostles)".

h) A few days after the Apparition, the apostles open the tomb and discover that the body of Jesus has disappeared, but that his Shroud remains in place with his Risen image imprinted in it. This proves that Jesus is Risen. Jesus is now Spirit (Divinized or Lord) and he dwells in them.

Note:

The Ascension of Jesus into heaven (sky) did not take place unlike the NT. Why? The Message of Jesus is that he dwells in the {God's child} in order to bring him into his Kingdom at the end of his human life as in article |33-G|. Obviously for that, Jesus had to not go to heaven (sky) leaving them all alone!

Like me, the apostles had had the same Manifestations of the Lord Jesus. In addition, the apostles knew the real facts of Jesus on earth and they knew all the Jewish symbols and rituals! So they were able to understand that God (Yahweh) was taking the Jewish religion and making it real in them. Even more, the prophet Isaiah had announced that Yahweh would come to earth to Save his people from their sins and that he saw his people as a bride. Even the prophet Jeremiah was announcing a New Covenant (Marriage) that would be Eternal. Yes for the Jews, Yahweh was Invisible, because he was Spirit! But that is exactly what the apostles received at Pentecost, the Spirit of Jesus making himself felt God (I Am) in them! **The Light of God that entered them at Pentecost was that which came out of them for the Apparition of Jesus, Jesus was obviously Yahweh in person.** The apostles were too blinded by their idea of the Messiah to understand this!

Simply put, all Manifestations of the Spirit of Jesus demonstrate his Plan. Jesus (Yahweh) was taking the symbols and rituals of the 1st Covenant with Moses and concretizing them in the {God's child} to establish the 2nd Eternal Covenant.

Note:

Unlike the endless theological teaching stories of Jesus in the NT, Jesus did not need to discuss any mysteries with his apostles, because they all knew the Jewish religion by heart. Yahweh had become man (Jesus) and was fulfilling the promised Eternal Marriage (Covenant) in them, that is all. See article |35-H| for the summary chart.

We have seen that at his Last Supper, at his Resurrection, at Pentecost and during his Apparitions, Jesus revealed in a very sufficient way to his apostles (this even within them) that he is Yahweh in person. So what was the obstacle to this Revelation? For the (Jewish) apostles, it was completely unthinkable that (the Almighty and the Invisible Yahweh) would become human (Jesus) and die as a heretic on a cross! Here is the wall! In psychology, this is called the "stumbling block." Even though the apostles felt within themselves that the Spirit of Jesus is God (I Am) in person, they were completely unable psychically to admit it. Of course, that was a bit of denial. **I believe that if the Lord Jesus had insisted on bringing the apostles to order, they would have blocked in their mission.** So the Lord let the apostles develop their own human theology, let's say "acceptable" for them and for the people.

What did the apostles do?

Of course, the apostles chose the direction they were hoping for, the Messiah! For his part, the Lord Jesus only had to be satisfied with this mythical label... which still lasts 2,000 years later!

Since the Risen Jesus made himself feel "God with a human part" in them, then the apostles imagined that "Jesus the Messiah" had been made 2nd Lord by Yahweh (1st Lord) as described in article |35-C| in point A). Jesus became for the apostles a Lord Messiah or a Divine Messiah hence one of our Christian songs: "O Come Divine Messiah."

For the apostles, the idea of the Messiah was impregnated in their head since childhood and they did not budge! Why? The idea of the Messiah was the only hope they had of escaping the yoke of the invaders. With the Messiah, it was over to be humiliated, to be beaten and to see the people they loved die around them! **Then I understood that Jesus left them their hope and the early Christians wrote the mysteries they wanted in the NT, because they needed them.** The apostles had gone in the wrong direction with their complex theology to understand nothing and their endless mysteries to justify at all costs that Jesus is the expected Messiah! Now that Jesus had been falsely identified as the Messiah, the apostles thought they were at the end of time (the messianic age). So the apostles hurried to convert as many people as possible before the return of the Messiah. The apostles wrote practically nothing, because it was not worth it, the Messiah would be back very soon. It was not until the apostles died that the early Christians decided to write down the oral tradition of their time, the Gospels. For them, the Messiah (Jesus) gave a time of grace for the conversion of people before his Return. Yes, we are still waiting for him...

NT	2nd Epistle of St-Peter	3,9-10	The Lord is not slow about His promise, as some count slowness, but is patient toward you, not wishing for any to perish but for all to come to repentance. But the day of the Lord will come like a thief, in which the heavens will pass away with a roar and the elements will be destroyed with intense heat, and the earth and its works will be burned up.
----	-------------------------	--------	--

Obviously, everything the apostles had experienced was not really in line with the idea of the Messiah!

The Jews had been waiting for the Messiah for a long time. Yes, the apostles had been witnesses of Jesus, who according to them, was the Messiah! So the early Christians of the years (0060 to 0110) wrote in the NT (by making Jesus and his apostles speak) all that was needed to convert the Jews of the time with their multiple beliefs that we saw in article | 35-A |.

To justify that Jesus is the Messiah, the early Christians wrote this in the NT:

- 1) The Apparition of the Risen Jesus both human (in the flesh) and both Glorious (in Spirit or Divine). Here Jesus was now immortal, the Divine Messiah (the 2nd Lord), the Son of man of the book of Enoch.
- 2) The Ascension of Jesus into heaven (sky). The Messiah was returning to the Ancient of Days (God the Father) awaiting the end of time.
- 3) The sending of the Holy Spirit at Pentecost. Jesus was sending the promise, the mark of the Covenant of Life into the faithful.
- 4) The return of Jesus at the end of time. The Messiah would finally restore justice and peace as in the book of Enoch.

As said in article | 35-B |, the Bible is a mixture between 1) the Realities of God and 2) the human mythology of the time.

Note:

You can be convinced that without the real request of the Lord Jesus, I would never have written chapters | 34 to 38 |. Why? Writing in the same direction as the Bible goes relatively well. On the other hand, writing to dislodge the Truths of Jesus under the human mythology of the Bible is extremely difficult! I give you an example. The time spent per page of this present book (researching and writing) has tripled from chapters | 1 to 29 | to chapters | 34 to 38 |! See also article | 34-U | for my prayer to the Lord Jesus.

After 2,000 years, theologians have said that Christianity has failed since the Messiah has still not Returned. In addition, the bones of the deceased from 2,000 years ago are in dust, so the great resurrection of human bodies (of the flesh) has also failed. In addition, the Jews say that Jesus does not match the expected Messiah. See article | 32-G |.

Finally, theologians say that the Trinity is a construction (invention) of Constantine. **This is really not going well for Christianity!**

Since the early Christians had written (50 Gospels and more, see article | 32-H |), then they knew very well that all this was not the exact words of Jesus, but teaching for the early communities. On the other hand, what sealed (frozen) the New Testament (canonical) that we have in hand was the legalization of Christianity by the emperor Constantine. It needed a State religion with an official dogma to unify the empire. **So the Scriptures had to be called exact, that is what we have in mind even now.**

Without the Manifestations of the Spirit of God (Jesus), I would have understood nothing. It is not Christianity that has failed, but those who are currently trying to destroy Christianity. **Nobody can destroy that God (Jesus) is True!**

During the writing of this present work, I had the feeling (several times) that the Lord is really not happy with what has happened! Especially the feeling that the Lord is not happy with the religious people as if they had gagged the prophets and stiffened the religion to such an extent that his teaching did not pass at all, that his plan was never understood! Perhaps this is the reason for his request for this work. In any case, when I wanted to go see a theologian, his Message was quite stiff: "this book is between Me and you only!"

Personally, I have never seen in all my life something so complex to solve as the Bible, a mixture between the Realities of God and human mythology.

Theology had to move...

1	With the Synoptic Gospels (dated 0060), Jesus was identified primarily as the 2nd Lord, the Messiah of the book of Enoch.
2	Obviously for theology to move, the Lord must give Manifestations...
3	With the Gospel of John (dated 0110), Jesus was identified primarily as the Incarnate Word of God.
4	On the other hand, in the year 0313, theology has been frozen. The Revelation being considered finished at the legalization of Christianity, so the Lord had nothing more to say!

The Lord made me understand something important...

By using:

1	The steps that a person (like me) took in his own life that allowed him to obtain the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. See chapter 12 .
2	The Manifestations of the Spirit. These are the same as those received by the apostles. The Manifestations Reveal that Jesus is not the Messiah (a myth expected by the Jews), but God (Yahweh) in person. I understood that all the {God's children} receive the same Manifestations of the Spirit of Jesus and this, whatever the era. So, we can go back to the time of the apostles in order to know what it actually happened.
3	The New Testament. A) The message of goodness (Holiness) of Jesus. B) The message of Jesus in order to follow his example and become his disciple (belonging to Jesus or to God). C) The account of his last meal with his apostles. D) The testimony of the Resurrection of Jesus for the Eternal Covenant.
4	The Scriptures of the Old Testament. They contain the Jewish symbols and rituals of the 1st Covenant that the apostles knew.

With this chart, any {God's child} who is free to express himself can reconstruct the Plan of the Lord Jesus. This regardless of the era, hence this present work.

I believe that the myth of the Messiah was well ingrained in the heads of the Jews of the time of the apostles and that it was part of their fundamental beliefs. **More so, this myth was part of their reason for living in order to bear their misfortunes.** Since the Lord Jesus wants to share his Life with the human, but does not impose any strict beliefs on him, then the Lord has worked **with the limit of the beliefs** of his people. **On the other hand, I believe that Christianity has matured enough now to no longer need this myth of the Messiah...** It is not very difficult to understand that Jesus and his holy angels will never come down from Heaven with swords in their hands, because that would go against his teaching (Holiness).

By the request of this present book, I even understood that the Lord Jesus now believes that we can finally take on reality (after 2,000 years of Christianity). **This reality is that our Creator loved us so much that he became human in order to share our life on earth and that he died humanly for us.**

For the Christian idea of (3 Persons in One God), I recently read that the church of Constantine once went through a major problem! If there is only One Person in God as the Jews claim, then Jesus on the cross is Yahweh in person! At the time, this idea was completely rejected hence the development of the dogma of 3 Persons in God. In closing, I will let you discover (by yourself) some of the observations I made while looking at near-death experience (NDE) testimonies on the Internet. You will see that Jesus never speaks of his Father. You will also notice that Jesus comes to see the person by calling him or her my son or my daughter (because he is God) and that in addition, there is only one throne!

|35-H| What do the Manifestations of the Holy Spirit Reveal?

They are the Manifestations of the **only God** (Yahweh of the OT) who became human (Jesus of the NT). He dwells in the {God's child} as in a temple in order to instruct him, to protect him and even to heal him and then to bring him into his Kingdom at the end of his life here on earth. It is a Covenant or a Marriage between God and the human. In ancient Judaism, God gave rituals and symbols. Thereafter (God the Creator) concretizes these symbols and rituals directly into the {God's child}. These Manifestations of God are mystical, they do not involve any science.

For the detailed summary chart below. It is important to understand that in the OT, Yahweh is Spirit. Subsequently, Yahweh becomes human, he is Jesus. At the Resurrection, Jesus (Yahweh) becomes Spirit again (the Wind of the Risen Body of Jesus).

The symbols and rituals of Judaism are	→concretized→	by Jesus on Earth and the Manifestations of the Spirit
The knowledge of the 1st Covenant is	→internalized→	in the 2nd Covenant, through spiritual realities
In the book of Genesis, Yahweh walks in the Garden of Eden with the human, his creation. In the book of the prophet Isaiah, Yahweh says that he will come to earth in order to Save his people from their sins. The book of Ezekiel announces that Yahweh comes in person on his Chariot and that he has human appearance on his sapphire throne.	← link →	<u>The Manifestation of article 20-B </u> : This Vision Reveals that Yahweh who walks in the Garden of Eden is Jesus on earth in the year 0030. To come to earth, Yahweh (of the OT) who is Spirit becomes human, he is Jesus (of the NT). The Apparition of the Holy Virgin says: "I am the Immaculate Conception," it is that Yahweh became human in her (Jesus).
1) In the book of Genesis, Adam is born from the Breath of Yahweh in the Garden of Eden (Paradise). 2) For the Jews, in the book of Exodus, Yahweh is the Breath (Wind or Spirit), he is the "Bright Cloud" that enters his Temple and Sanctifies (Purifies) it. The Ark of the Covenant is placed in the heart of the Temple and serves as an Altar.	← link →	<u>The Manifestation of article 13-D </u> : 1) The person is born from the Breath of Yahweh and becomes {God's child} in order to have access to Paradise. 2) Yahweh enters the person through his nostrils. He is Breath and Light. Yahweh Sanctifies (Purifies) the body of the person so that he becomes his temple. Then, Yahweh places an "altar" in the heart of his temple. This "altar" is the ark of the New Eternal Covenant, which causes the bosom of the {God's child} to swell.
Invitation to the Jewish Passover, the Covenant.	← link →	<u>The Manifestation of article 13-E </u> : The {God's child} is "hungry for God in his heart."
1) The blood of the slain lamb shed on the mercy seat of the Ark of the Covenant for the remission (forgiveness) of sins. 2) Eating the bread of the Jewish Passover to become part of the Covenant.	← link →	<u>The 2 Manifestations of article 13-G </u> : 1) The Blood of Jesus on the cross is now shed at the heart (the altar) of the {God's child} for the forgiveness of his sins. 2) Eating the Body (<u>dead and Risen</u>) of Jesus which is the Bread of the Eternal Covenant.
The lamb is sacrificed and dies in place of the faithful.	← link →	<u>The Manifestations of articles 33-G and 34-U </u> : The {God's child} has received the Breath of Eternal Life within him. God Presents himself as Life and Existence itself. The {God's child} will not feel his human death even if his body remains in the ground, because the only Eternal (God) became human (Jesus) to take his human death in his place (a).
The book of Jeremiah announces a new Covenant which will be Eternal.	← link →	<u>The Manifestation of article 13-I </u> : The Covenant is now established between God (Yahweh) and the {God's child}. Yahweh, in his temple, calls himself: "I Am." <u>The Manifestation of article 13-J </u> : The Wind of Yahweh which comes from heaven (sky) and its Flame of Fire is in the {God's child} as in a temple.
Circumcision, the mark of the Covenant in the flesh.	← link →	<u>The Manifestation of article 13-L </u> :

		The {anointing}, the mark of the Eternal Covenant in the heart. It is the mark of the Sacred Heart.
1) The books of the prophets Isaiah and Jeremiah announce a renewed Covenant, a Marriage between Yahweh and his people. 2) In the book of Genesis, marriage is defined as two people becoming one flesh.	← link →	<u>The Manifestation of article 13-P :</u> 1) Here, Jesus (Yahweh) Manifests that he is in the {God's child}. <u>The Manifestations of article 34-B , article 34-N in point 3) and article 34-U :</u> 2) The Body of the Risen Jesus is in the body of the {God's child} in order to share his Holy Sacrifice with him. This is the promised Marriage (Covenant).
The fire of the sacrifice on the altar which brings the offering in smoke to heaven (sky).	← link →	<u>The Manifestation of article 33-G :</u> The Spirit of Jesus brings his {child} to Heaven after his human life on Earth, because he shares with him his Holy Offering, his Risen Body.
1) With Moses, the passage of the Hebrew people in slavery in Egypt across the Red Sea to the freedom of the promised land, the land of Canaan. 2) Obviously, it was impossible to see the promised land (Canaan) from Egypt without the crossing of the Red Sea !	← link →	<u>The Manifestation of article 33-G and its explanation of article 34-T :</u> 1) With the Risen Jesus in the {God's child}, it is the Passage (b) from human death through the Abyss to the Eternal Life of the Kingdom of God. 2) Obviously, it is impossible to see the Kingdom of God from the Earth without crossing this Abyss ! This explains why there is no description of the Kingdom of God (c) in the NT and this by no apostle.
The Manifestation of article 13-E is the "hunger for God" which is in fact the "hunger for the Body of Jesus." Obviously for this, Jesus must be God in person on Earth. In fact, there is only one Person in God. The Trinity is an invention to bypass a reality that was unthinkable at the time the NT was written. Jesus is Yahweh God in person made human in order to come and establish his Alliance of Eternal Life.		
The Manifestation of article 13-D is the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. The Holy Spirit is the "Breath of the Resurrected Body of Jesus." Here the person receives within himself the {gift of the Body of Jesus}. Even if the person does not practice the ritual of bread and wine at mass for different reasons, he has still received the Body of Jesus within. On the other hand, if the person practices the ritual of bread and wine at mass, he will receive the 2 Manifestations of article 13-G . I got them 3 months later. Since my community rarely practices the wine ritual, then I have had 2 Manifestations with the bread ritual. These 2 Manifestations are the Memorial of Communion with the Body and Blood of Jesus. It must be understood that each of these 2 Manifestations is a Memorial, because the Body of Jesus is already in the person in article 13-D . Simply put, this is a Memorial, because each of them occurs approximately 3 months after the {gift of the Body of Jesus}.		

(a) Here, Jesus is in the image of the lamb slain on the altar who dies in place of the faithful. It was necessary for God (Yahweh) to become human (Jesus) to take our human death, because only Yahweh is capable of doing so (he is the Eternal, the Immortal). We must give our life to God (Jesus), because he also takes our end (our human death).

(b) The Birth of Jesus is **God's Passage** from His Kingdom to earth. The (death and Resurrection) of Jesus is **God's return Passage** from earth to his Kingdom. It is by sharing this return Passage that God (Jesus) Brings a human into his Kingdom. It is for this reason that Jesus is the only Way of Life.

(c) On the other hand, I believe that the Lord Jesus can give an "Image or Vision" on Earth of what his Kingdom looks like, for example during a near-death experience (NDE). But we must not confuse an "Image or a Vision" with reality. Only a {God's child} can really go to the Kingdom and this only after his human death, because it is Jesus (God) dwelling in him who makes him cross this **Abyss**.

Here is a chart of other symbols...

The possession of the devil. Deliverance from evil by the Power (Spirit) of God.	← link →	The Manifestation of article 13-M .
Satan is the opponent of God.	← link →	The Manifestation of article 33-L in point 18).

The demons that cause disease.	← link →	The Manifestation of article 34-N in point 1).
The flood. The last judgement.	← link →	The Manifestation of article 34-N in point 2).

So what is important in the Bible is not the details that humans wrote! No, the Truth of the Bible resides in the rituals and symbols, in the Coming of Yahweh to Earth (Jesus), in the message of goodness of Jesus and in the Eternal Covenant. This Truth existed in the Scriptures of Judaism, see also articles | 34-D and 34-O |. **So the apostles could understand this Truth, because they were Jews and knew these symbols and rituals very well. On the other hand, not being a Jew, the Lord Jesus had to teach them to me in chapter | 33 |.**

Even more, even after the Manifestation of the Risen Jesus from article | 34-N | in point 3), the apostles did not trust what they saw and heard. For them, Jesus could not be Yahweh in person, because he was seen as a very distant Ideology, completely inaccessible and totally invisible. Above all, they were waiting for the Messiah and Jesus was going to receive this label!

| 35-I | How to understand our human life on Earth?

The majority of people in our society do not know that our Creator (God) made for us a school, yes the Earth. We are here to experiment and learn. We are here to experience "**the absence of our Creator (the only one without evil)**". So here, there is everything: giving/taking; joy/suffering; beginning/ending; parent/child; strength/weakness; peace/war; love/indifference; etc. God is always next to us, he is invisible, but he can Manifest himself as he pleases. We are like flowers in a garden that the Lord made and then he hid himself. He waters and fertilizes here and there. Some readers will tell me: "I have been asking the Lord for a healing for years and I still have nothing!" Yes I know, I experienced it too and it is frustrating... I even wondered one day if God really existed! The Lord made me understand that he always gives us something at the right time. Not our good time, but his good time. God's plan is to give us the {gift of his Spirit} that frees us from our human concerns on earth and opens to us his Eternal Home. I even understood that if leaving us with our disease is the only way for us to get closer to God, then we are in the right direction. On the other hand, if a healing brings us closer to God, he will grant it at the right time. We are free to give or not and the Lord is free to give or not too. God created us free because he loves us. To love God, you have to leave him free too. God is a Parent who wants us to grow and that is never easy.

What I am about to tell you is going to seem really strange to you. God is the only source of Holiness (the absolute Good). For God, our world marked by his "**absence**" is automatically bad. Yes for us this is a strange and extreme thought! On the other hand, for God, he is the Light and without him on earth it is darkness. As I mentioned before, God speaks with symbols (good/evil, Light/darkness, etc.). The Lord is not wrong! The more a person tries to do good on earth, the more opponents he will have. The ultimate proof, the Holy One (Jesus) was put to death. Anyone who truly follows the Way of Jesus has misery in our human world. It is for this reason that Jesus gives a {new birth}. St-Paul says that one must die on earth in order to be reborn for Heaven. He is right. When I got my {birth of the Spirit}, I felt like I was dead on earth, no longer a part of our world, and had received Eternal Life within me. This feeling lasted about 3 months and then disappeared. In psychology, death is the transition from one state to another, which always includes a bereavement. The {birth of the Spirit} is the passage from our **1) individualistic state on earth without the Presence of our Creator (without God, it is evil and death)** to the **state 2) Married with our Creator for Eternity (with God, it is Good and Life)**. Thereafter, the Lord leaves the {God's child} on earth to try to participate in his Life project such as the free writing and distribution of this present book for you. I understood that the Lord cares for his {children} even in our wicked world. **So if you want a healing or a miracle, it is better to become a {God's child} yourself.** You will say to me: "I only want a healing, nothing more"! Maybe that is the problem, it does not fit in with God's plan.

|36| It is important to build!

Chapters |30 to 38| are Optional. It is important to start by reading the introduction to Part 2. This chapter |36| was written in late 2022.

|36-A| With a Unique and True God, it is important to build and not to destroy!

Currently, there are many reports on the Internet that try to demonstrate, for example: 1) that Jesus is not the Messiah or that 2) the Trinity is a construction. These reports are easy to find as follows...

Internet keywords (YouTube)	1) CHRISTIANISME: invention de la trinité par l'empereur CONSTANTIN 1) CHRISTIANITY: invention of the trinity by the emperor CONSTANTINE
-----------------------------	---

There are even people on the Internet who are trying to use these truths to destroy Christianity!

1) For them, since Jesus is not the Messiah (the Christ), then the Christian religion is false. I have bad news for them, Jesus is Yahweh in person. For Christianity, the plural word "christians" means "little christs." Yes, those who have received the {anointing of Yahweh}, the {God's children} and not Jesus (who is not the Christ, but Yahweh).

2) For them, the Trinity is a construction. Yes, it is true! However, the Trinity can be seen differently. A) God the Father is the **Absolute Ideology** that the Jews made of Yahweh (Distant, Inaccessible and Invisible). B) The Spirit of God or the Holy Spirit is the **Spiritual** Manifestation of Yahweh on earth (Wind, Breath, Fire, Light, etc.). C) Jesus is the **human** Manifestation of Yahweh on earth. Yes, it is always the same Person (Yahweh), but who is perceived differently by humans. **I can tell you that our Creator (Yahweh) has no limit and does what he wants!**

Since the One God (Yahweh) is True. He has Manifested himself in the past, He is Manifesting himself now and will do so again in the future. Brewing ancient Scriptures and human myths is okay. But there is even better! There is the Encounter with the Lord Jesus today. To find the Lord Jesus is to find our reference, our point of origin, the Truth in all human lies and to share the Life of the Lord right here and forever.

I end this article with this beautiful testimony of a Jew converted to Christianity...

Internet keywords (YouTube)	1) Incroyable témoignage d'un homme juif qui voulait découvrir la bible des chrétiens 1) Incredible testimony of a Jewish man who wanted to discover the Bible of Christians
-----------------------------	---

|36-B| How to take the Christian religion after the discoveries made?

I can tell you that in chapter |34| I myself lost some of my Christian points of reference! I told myself that it must be even worse among the readers (you)! We have lost the exact facts of the passage of Jesus (Yahweh) on earth. Our Creator comes to see us in person and we have no exact accounts of his passage. I am really ashamed! I even had to reconstruct what happened to the best of my knowledge.

After the end of the writing of the book number 15 of May 2022, I was a little upset. In my head, when I went to mass, I said to myself: "what should I do with all these mysteries... Father; Son; Holy Spirit; Messiah; Son of man, etc." The first few weeks, I found it difficult! But gradually, I found that this mysterious tradition written by the early Christians was still very pretty to hear! It is true that my account of the passage of Jesus on earth is much less poetic! Finally, after 3 months, I completely accepted that the Bible and religion are just a tradition. That is how it is, that is all... and it is still very beautiful! Yes, it is not the exact reality, but it is charming and it warms the heart!

So now, how to read the New Testament? Simply by focusing on the Message of goodness of Jesus and making the effort to imagine that Jesus is God (Yahweh) in person who comes to meet us on Earth. It is the same for the mass on Sunday. Whether the priest speaks of God the Father, Jesus or the Holy Spirit, for me it is the same and only Person (**God himself**). It is just that the priest does not know it... Even if I told him, he would not want to hear anyway! I tell myself that maybe he likes to juggle mysteries and that I would cut him off his fun. In any case, I find the mass much simpler now without all these mysteries and it is easier to concentrate on the Message of goodness of the Lord.

|36-C| What did the Lord Jesus want?

It is important to know that many religions existed before Abraham and Judaism. All countries like Egypt and Babylon had several religions.

What is the purpose of a religion? The best picture I can give you is that, without us knowing it, "**materialism**" is currently the new religion of our globalized society. Like any religion: it has the answer to everything (through science); it cures everything (through medicine); it allows us to get what we want (through technology); it educates us (through television); it holds information (through the Internet); it has its beliefs (through fashions); it makes promises (happiness here and now); it has its followers (the consumers, us) and priests (the financiers).

It is important to know that all the ancient religions answered the same human concerns. Every religion uses knowledge. The religion of our modern society uses the knowledge of science. Ancient religions used the knowledge of mythical (imaginary) stories. It is for this reason that the Bible is full of myths that sometimes make us smile. Obviously, we use our "new religion" (with its science) to analyze an ancient religion (with its myths). The difficulty is that every religion has its good and bad sides. Any religion can be used for good or evil. Doing good as improving the human condition. Do evil like trapping people in very restrictive beliefs in order to manipulate them. Even the new religion of our society (**materialism**) does all this.

The Bible does not need to be exact to contain the essential, the Plan of the Lord... For the Bible, obviously the human being has deposited in it his myths through the centuries as any other religion. On the other hand, the Lord has made me understand that he has deposited in it: 1) symbols and rituals as well as 2) a promise of a Covenant of Eternal Life. These symbols and rituals are teachings that are able to pass through all times (even today). The Lord made these symbols and rituals and his Covenant promise concrete by his coming to Earth and the Manifestations of his Spirit in the {God's children}. Then the teaching of the Lord or his message becomes a reality forever and even now.

Several theologians have said that there is no religion in the New Testament. Yes, it is true. At the time of Jesus, Judaism had locked itself into endless rituals of purification. So much so that religion became mechanical. The Lord Jesus wanted to remove the restrictive beliefs of Judaism that imprisoned the faithful in fear. He wanted strict religion to change into a search for God and an intimate relationship with him. The Lord was establishing a Covenant (Marriage) of Life. Obviously, no one wants to enter into an Eternal Marriage with someone who is unknown, no loved, who does not share the same values and who does not have the same goal. To do this, God (Yahweh of the OT) had to make himself known humanly (Jesus) to us; reveal and demonstrate that God is loving; teach God's values (doing good as described in the Gospels) and then have us discover his plan of Eternal Life together by sharing his Resurrection. In short, God became human (Jesus) to Marry the human who loves Him and bring him into his Eternal Kingdom.

On the other hand, the majority of the faithful and religious people want to function with God as with the ancient human religions. There is a divinity "who is adored" or "whose ego we flatter endlessly with praise" to gain his good graces, such as a place in his Kingdom after human life on earth. The problem is that the Lord Jesus says that this is not possible and that a Marriage (Covenant) between him and a human is absolutely necessary to obtain the Sharing of his Eternal Life. In addition, the Lord is humble (the opposite of conceited), so he does not need "that we flatter his ego." Perhaps that is why the faithful and religious people get so little the {gift of the Spirit of Jesus}. The Lord does not want to make "a marriage with a flatterer," but "**a true Marriage of love for Eternity.**"

The Christian religion does not need to be perfect, because the Lord Jesus is with us always... I also understood that even if the Christian religion is lame and religious people do not understand much about all their mysteries, and well practicing the Christian religion fervently is a necessity for Jesus. When Jesus walked the earth, he also had to deal with the tradition of the Jewish religion of his time, the lame Scriptures of the Old Testament and the religious people who do not understand much. So we have to do the same thing with Christianity today.

Yes, Christianity is not perfect, but it is the gift of the suffering of many (Jesus, the apostles, the first Christians, the persecuted and the martyrs) so that this new religion comes to us now. Yes, a religion that is a bit battered, but still beautiful!

|36-D| Fidelity of the NT in order to obtain the essential, the {gift of the Holy Spirit}

Parts 1 and 3 (Essential) of this book:

The Message of the Lord (what is really important)	The information written in the NT	Fidelity (evaluation)
God is Holy (without any evil). Jesus is Lord.	Very well understood	20 out of 20
Jesus establishes the New Covenant for Eternal Life.	Very well understood	20 out of 20
To follow the Way of Goodness of Jesus and to belong to Him.	Very well understood	20 out of 20
The law, rituals and symbols of Judaism pass to Christianity with Jesus who is the successor of Moses.	Fairly well understood	16 out of 20
The {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a concrete Manifestation in the person and not poetry.	Moderately understood	14 out of 20
Fidelity rating for the Lord's essential message in order to obtain the {gift of the Holy Spirit} = 90%		

As I have repeated many times in this book, what is important to know is what to do in order to obtain the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. I give you a summary in article |39-B|. The New Testament contains all the information necessary to obtain it with an excellent fidelity of 90%!

Hence the title of book number 16: To the Discovery of Jesus (Way, Truth and Life).

|36-E| Fidelity of the NT concerning the mysteries

Part 2 (Advanced, Optional) of this book:

The Message of the Lord (his mysteries)	The information written in the NT	Fidelity (evaluation)
The rituals and symbols of Judaism are concretized by the coming of Yahweh (Jesus) to earth and the Manifestations of the Spirit of Jesus in the {God's child} and not by a physical concretization on the whole people.	Not really understood	5 out of 20
The Kingdom of God is not on earth.	Not really understood	5 out of 20
God's Last Judgment is always taking place on earth now and not at the end of time by the {gift of the Spirit of Jesus} or its non-receipt. God is Life itself.	Not really understood	5 out of 20
The Jewish Scriptures of the Old Testament were not accurate because the prophets were persecuted and the Jewish scribes made Yahweh speak.	Not understood	0 out of 20
Jesus is not the Messiah (a myth), but Yahweh (God) in person.	Not understood	0 out of 20
Fidelity rating for the Lord's optional message regarding his mysteries = 15%		

The mysteries are not accurate because they were written in the wrong direction, believing that Jesus is the Messiah, whom he is not. Jesus is Yahweh in person who came to establish the promised Eternal Covenant. This misdirection stems from several constraining factors: 1) the very diverse beliefs anchored in the minds of the first Christians; 2) the OT Scriptures which are not accurate, but which were not allowed to be contradicted; 3) the people of that time who cried revenge (the Messiah) and who were very superstitious; 4) God (Yahweh, Jesus) who never imposed theology on anyone (neither in the OT nor in the NT); 5) the construction of Christianity mainly through pagan territories (Greeks and Romans); 6) the first Christians who were not free to express and who were persecuted. This explains very well why Jesus did not insist on readjusting the Mysteries of the Scriptures. It was necessary to wait until Christians were sufficiently free of expression like us today (from the 1960s) for Jesus to make his request.

|36-F| The healings and miracles of Jesus in the Gospels...

On December 8, 2022, I had finished the French correction of this present chapter for about a month and I had almost finished making the English translation. I was thinking that since the mysteries of the Gospels were written to convince the Jews of the time that Jesus is the expected Messiah, then how to recognize if a miracle is genuine or not in the NT (if it really happened). I thought it was impossible to know. Why? Jesus is God himself who walks the earth, so I have no reference.

That same evening, I had a cold. In my prayer, I asked the Lord Jesus for a little help, because translating texts (French-English) with a headache is not going well.

The Lord Jesus is super fine, I had a Manifestation the same night like this:

I was lying down and all of a sudden I felt a vibration on my left hip then the vibration quietly rose to my neck. Strangely, it is as if I could see (in my head) this slightly luminous vibration on me. Afterwards, I felt as if Jesus inside me was massaging my head and face with his hands. Afterwards, I felt that my cold had lessened.
--

The next day, I reflected on the course of this Manifestation. Here it is... the light vibration on my left hip is a small missionary bag that Jesus wore on his hip at the time, the light vibration that goes up to my neck is simply the strap of his bag. In this bag, there were things to treat people (ointments, bandages, medicinal herbs, etc.). The message received is that Jesus was going to treat people by using the contents of his bag and his hands to rub.

However, there was something I did not understand. My pain (headache) was lessened, but my cold was still there and it continued. Yes, I was a little better, but I was not cured! 2 days later, I was still not cured! However, in article |34-U|, the healing of my teeth had occurred completely the same night! I can tell you that I was a little frustrated! I thought to myself, the Lord is giving me a Manifestation, rubbing my head and face, but not healing me! So what is this Manifestation for?

Well, the Lord Jesus gave the answer to my question:

After his Resurrection (when Jesus became Spirit again), yes the Spirit of Jesus does healings and miracles.

On the other hand, when Jesus walks as a human on earth, Jesus helps and treats people in a human way, but does not do any healing or miracles, contrary to the Gospels.

I could not believe it! Jesus claims that he did not perform healings or miracles when he walked on earth!

Why?

The answer is that God wanted to come to meet us in a human way in order to share our daily life. To share our joys as well as our sorrows. To show us that he is near and not far. That he wants to share our life with his Life.

Our Creator is a Love, do not forget it!

|36-G| What is the historical value of the NT accounts?

Since in article |36-F|, Jesus Reveals that he did not perform healings or miracles on earth, then it is the (very superstitious) people around Jesus, not understanding the advanced healing methods used by Jesus, who cried out for a miracle. For all those "thirsty" for the Messiah (a myth), Jesus became very interesting!

If I recap:

On earth, Jesus is not the Messiah, but Yahweh made man who comes to establish his Eternal Covenant.
--

On earth, Jesus is human. He is flesh and blood like you and me. He treats people but he does not perform miracles or heal.

Jesus will only perform miracles and healings after his Resurrection.

Since the Gospels are full of stories of healings and miracles. That, with this last Revelation of the Lord Jesus, he did not do it at all. So, tell me, what is left accurate in these NT accounts.

Historians say that they have looked in detail at the chronicles of the time of Jesus. They say that the chronicles speak about Jesus. That he was a charismatic prophet. He took care of people. That he was killed by the Roman authorities. The chronicles do not speak of an extraordinary star in the sky. They do not speak of a census or even of the visit of the Magi. Historians say that these wonders are found only in the Gospels, not elsewhere.

Theologians recognize that a Gospel is not a historical text, but a text putting into images the religious beliefs of the time and this puts in the mouth of its founders (Jesus and his apostles). I give you some examples.

Religious beliefs →	put into images	→ in the NT
Jesus is the King Messiah who is to come.	Matthew 2, 1-2	Now after Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of Herod the king, magi from the east arrived in Jerusalem, saying, "Where is He who has been born King of the Jews? For we saw His star in the east and have come to worship Him."
Jesus is the Son of God.	Matthew 3, 17	and behold, a voice out of the heavens (sky) said, "This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well-pleased."
On earth, Jesus has divine powers.	Matthew 8, 14-15	When Jesus came into Peter's home, He saw his mother-in-law lying sick in bed with a fever. He touched her hand, and the fever left her; and she got up and waited on Him.
Jesus is the Christ (the Messiah).	Matthew 16, 16-17	Simon Peter answered, "You are the Christ, the Son of the living God." And Jesus said to him, "Blessed are you, Simon Barjona, because flesh and blood did not reveal this to you, but My Father who is in heaven.
	Luke 24, 26	"Was it not necessary for the Christ to suffer these things and to enter into His glory?"
Jesus is the Son of Man, half-man and half-divine (spirit).	Matthew 14, 26-27	When the disciples saw Him walking on the sea, they were terrified, and said, "It is a ghost!" And they cried out in fear. But immediately Jesus spoke to them, saying, "Take courage, it is I; do not be afraid."
Jesus is the Messiah (the Son of Man), he will return to judge the living and the dead at the end of time.	Matthew 16, 27	"For the Son of Man is going to come in the glory of His Father with His angels, and will then repay every man according to his deeds.
	Acts 1, 11	They also said, "Men of Galilee, why do you stand looking into the sky? This Jesus, who has been taken up from you into heaven (sky), will come in just the same way as you have watched Him go into heaven (sky)."
The announcement of the great resurrection of the dead at the end of time.	Matthew 27, 52-53	The tombs were opened, and many bodies of the saints who had fallen asleep were raised; and coming out of the tombs after His resurrection they entered the holy city and appeared to many.

See also the chart in article |38-B| concerning the Gospel of John.

Theologians explain that any religion is based on a set of founding myths (beliefs). Whether it is Judaism, whether it is Christianity, or other religions. Yes, there is a lot of folklore in the NT, but that is exactly what makes up the mysterious charm of Christianity!

On the other hand, I can tell you that the New Testament has some points that are really real:

Jesus really existed.
Jesus is God (Yahweh) made man. The Lord Jesus reveals that he had no divine power during his human condition on earth. On the other hand, when Jesus Resurrects, he takes back all the Divine Powers (Yahweh) that he had before.
Jesus taught that God is not far away, but close to people. Obviously, he was next to them!
Jesus taught that God is Holy (without any evil) and Forgiving and not punishing and vengeful.
On earth, Jesus was making a difference by caring for people as any dedicated human could. Jesus did not do any healing or miracles. He was demonstrating to everyone that it is possible to improve our world (to do good) simply with our small human capacity. Jesus was teaching a message of kindness, forgiveness and conversion of heart possible only by the desire to do so.

Jesus was teaching a message of belonging to God as (a father with his children). This membership is necessary in order to establish the Eternal Covenant (Marriage).
Since the mission of Jesus was to establish the Eternal Covenant, he had to comfort people by telling them of a "Kingdom without evil" that will soon come. Obviously, for the revolutionaries of the time, it necessarily passed through the Messiah, hence the false label stuck to Jesus.
It was with this false label that Jesus was brutally murdered by the authorities. Unfortunately, this label of the Messiah has been stuck to Jesus forever in Christianity.
By his passage on earth, his death and his Resurrection, Jesus established the Eternal Covenant promised in the Old Testament. The possibility, for every human, to access a world without evil eternally.
The {gift of the Spirit of Jesus} is always available. Even for you now.

| 36-H | What is the precision of the Way of conversion asked by Jesus in the NT?

In the NT, since the mysteries and accounts of the events surrounding the life of Jesus and his apostles are not accurate. So the Way of conversion asked by Jesus cannot be exact either.

We have seen that these are texts that put religious beliefs into images. On the other hand, we have seen that there are real facts (of God) hidden under these texts.

It is important to know that a religion does not only have beliefs, but it must put in place a way to spread or grow. Theologians explain that there are 2 ways to propagate a religion. Either to impose it by a royalty, it is Christianity after the emperor Constantine. Either to propagate it by heroes of the faith (they are the martyrs), this is the mode used by Christianity before Constantine.

Since the NT was written long before Constantine, there is unfortunately a message to become a martyr (a hero) in these texts. This message sometimes makes Christianity a little gloomy. This message is the source of much suffering among religious people before the 1960s. To be a saint, one had to suffer a lot and sometimes make oneself suffer (in a cloister) or even do extraordinary, superhuman things... From the beginning of this present book, I have tried to remove this misconception from Christianity. Yes, my life has not been easy, but I did not need to be a martyr to receive the Spirit of Jesus. I do not need to be a martyr for Jesus to be interested in me. Yes, the Lord asked me to write this book, but I wanted to do it too. If this book has taken so long to write, it is not the fault of the Lord, but the fault of the human power plays inserted in the Scriptures of the Bible. How to untangle all this human mess and, moreover, how to explain it to you...

From chapters | 1 to 29 |, I have tried to interpret the texts of the Bible to make your path to Jesus as pleasant as possible. No need to get religious, no need to suffer, no need to fight demons, no need to lock yourself up, no need to leave your family, no need to change the world! **Only the desire to do good, the need to meet our Creator and to belong to him.**

Even if the Way of the Heart is not exact in the NT, the fact remains that its basis is quite good. However, we need to remove extreme things like martyring yourself and sacrificing yourself to change the world.

It is important to know that anyone who has had the {gift of the Holy Spirit} knows all the steps of the Way of the heart to Jesus, because this is lived experience. **So, I give you the main points in chapter | 39 |.**

| 37 | Heaven

Chapters | 30 to 38 | are Optional. It is important to start by reading the introduction to Part 2. This chapter | 37 | was written in 2023.

| 37-A | A Revelation from the Lord about Heaven

It should be known that the Lord requires that all important Revelation be shared in testimony.

So I give you the Revelation he gave me on the night of April 3, 2023...

A) How was this Revelation given to me?

You will think that it was Jesus in me who gave it to me. Well, yes and no! I give you a verse from the Gospel of John which I separate into 2 parts (A and B), in order to prepare you...

NT	St-John	6,56	A) Whoever (1) eats my flesh and drinks my blood remains in me (2) And B) I (2) in him (1).
----	---------	------	---

(1) The {God's child}.

(2) Jesus.

In **B)**, Jesus says he dwells in the {God's child}. This was Manifested to me in chapters | 33 and 34 |.

On the other hand, in **A)**, Jesus also says that the {God's child} dwells in him. Well, this time it was part A) that was Manifested to me.

Among others, who received the {gift of the Holy Spirit} in the NT? Yes, Mary (mother of Jesus). Mary is also {God's child}.

If we take this verse from St-John, it gives: "A) Mary dwells in Jesus and B) Jesus dwells in me." I could also write: "A) Mary in Heaven is in Communion with Jesus and B) Jesus is in Communion with me on Earth."

Well, the night of this April 3, 2023... (Jesus in Communion with me on Earth) Manifested me (Mary who is in Communion with Him in Heaven)! The next Revelation (in 5 points) obtained does not come from Jesus, **but from Mary in person!**

In chapter | 34 |, I told you that Jesus Appeared to me by coming out of me. This time, Mary Manifested her Presence directly in me...

I give you the simplest possible description of the Manifestation of Mary in me. I numbered it in 5 points:

The Manifestation took place at night when I was not thinking about anything in the dark. The Manifestation of Mary in me did not involve any "turbulence of a flame of fire" (4). In an instant, Mary Presented herself in my human body directly, she did not come from outside of me (5). She showed me her (Child Jesus in Light) in her womb (1). Then, she made me feel her great happiness inside (2). Mary showed me the Earth (*). Then the Child in Light arrived on Earth through her (1). Mary Revealed to me that she was a virgin (3).

(*) The Earth was round in blue and white like the photos we know (taken from space).

(1) We know that the Light represents the Creator. In a simplified way, the message is that Mary's womb is like a nest and that God took human form in this nest. God came to meet us humanly on Earth.

(2) For Mary, carrying the Child Jesus did not involve any suffering and it was even a happy period, because God is Holy (without any evil).

(3) It was Revealed to me by an inner feeling. Christianity has had this belief for a long time.

(4) Mary Reveals that she is not divine, for there is no "turbulence of a flame of fire" which is the sign of divinity.

(5) Mary Reveals that she does not have a personal body, she "Lives in Communion with the Body of Jesus" which I received in 2016 and which she also received, almost 2,000 years ago.

This Manifestation of Mary also makes the link with her Apparition to Juan Diego of article | 6-F |, "Mary Mother of Heaven (sky)" with stars on her blue mantle representing the celestial vault.

Obviously I was surprised, but I confess to you that I was very honored by his Presence in me.

In chapter | 10 |, when I said that it is the Spirit of God who brings the Blessed Virgin Mary during a Marian Apparition, this is now confirmed. The Apparition of Mary on Earth is done through the Communion with God.

If we only look at points (1) to (4) of this Revelation, they provide little more knowledge than already mentioned so far in this book. I thought that maybe the Lord wanted to confirm his book. Maybe also Christians have questions about Mary and the Lord wanted to answer them.

On the other hand, let's try to go a little further...

Here, God Reveals that the world of Earth is hermetic and that He Himself (the Creator) had to be born as a child (Jesus) on Earth to meet us physically. It is easy to understand that in the Bible, the **Manifestations of God** are made spiritually. After the coming of Jesus on Earth, the Manifestations of God are made by the Spirit of Jesus (in the NT). Before the coming of Jesus on Earth, the Manifestations of God are made by the Spirit of Yahweh (in the OT).

Theology (Jewish and Christian) has always seen the Creator (God) completely separate from his creation (the human). God, by coming to Earth as a human (Jesus), **he makes this perception a little different**. On the one hand, the Earth is such a free world that the Creator had to be born there as a human (Jesus) in order to meet us physically. On the other hand, **the Creator marries his creation by becoming human**.

Important note for the rest of this article:

It is better that you read again article 34-Q about the “nature of God” which is impossible to understand.
God is Revealed to be in fact one Person. The names (God, YHWH or Yahweh) refer to (the distant ideology of God the Creator). The name Jesus refers to (the humanity of God, with a body). The name Spirit refers to the (mystical Manifestation of God) or the (spiritual Presence of God) on Earth (Breath, Wind, Light, Fire, Perfume, etc.).
To simplify your reading, I will only use 3 names, but it is always the same Person: ° (God) to refer to the Creator; ° (Jesus) to refer to his humanity or his body; ° (The Spirit) to refer to his spiritual Presence on Earth.

The point (5) brings very important information to this book:

Jesus Reveals that his Body (his Divine Life) is the support of Eternal Life for the {God’s children} including Mary.

Of course, the {God’s children} on Earth have a human body (like me). However, after human life, {God's children} do not have an individual body. The only one who has a Body is God himself (Jesus) and he Shares it with everyone.

This 5th point is difficult to explain and even more to understand for us humans. In chapter | 5 |, we saw that there was no life on Earth at the very beginning, 4 billion years ago. There was only sterile (dead) matter. The Earth was just a big pebble. God placed life on Earth which has propagated autonomously (temporal and mortal) since that time.

On Earth, each person has an individual life support which is his human body.
Jesus Reveals that his Body is the Support of Eternal Life and that he Shares it with all {God’s children}.

In article | 34-N | in point 3), Jesus Reveals his (Glorious) Body as the Bread of Eternal Life. In simple, Jesus is saying much the same thing again, the {God’s children} Live by Him. Even if the Gospel of John does not report the exact words of Jesus, the fact remains that we find this same 5th point of this Revelation there. So, the writers of this Gospel knew inside this 5th point of this Revelation, or at least they had heard of it.

NT	St-John	6,51	I am (a) the living bread (b) that came down from heaven; whoever eats this bread will live forever; and the bread that I will give is my flesh (c) for the life of the world."
		6,56	Whoever eats my flesh and drinks my blood remains (d) in me and I in him.

- (a) Here, Jesus subtly names himself (**I am**), this is the real name of YHWH.
(b) Jesus calls himself the Bread of Eternal Life.

(c) Jesus says that this Bread of Life is his body, obviously when he is Risen (his Glorious Body) which is, in a much easier way to understand, the Holy Spirit.

(d) Here is the 5th point of his Revelation, his Glorious Body (**the Holy Spirit**) is the support of the Life of the {God's children}.

The key to solving this mystery comes from the definition of the word "**body**." The meaning of this word is not the same for the Jews of Jesus's day as it is for us today. We think of a "body" in a biological sense. On the other hand, for the Jews, the word "**body**" meant "**the whole of one's being, all of one's being**." Here, when Jesus speaks of his "**body that gives Eternal Life**," he is Revealing that the "whole of his being" that people see (Jesus) is (God made human). In simple terms, Jesus on Earth Reveals that he is not "a part of God," but **God in totality** and that **he is the support of Eternal Life** available to all people.

So far in this book, I have always used the word "Resurrection" for Jesus. Why? It is the word that all Christians know and use. Some Jews of the time believed in the great resurrection at the end of time. But what was the idea of this resurrection? The dead person rose from the ground in flesh and blood. But that is not what Jesus did. God became human (Jesus) in the womb of Mary. Subsequently, Jesus Returned (God, Light) to the tomb. The expression "**Passage to the Divine Life**" would perhaps be more accurate than the word "Resurrection."

For Jesus, there is a second meaning for the sharing of his Body. By the death of his body on the cross, Jesus takes the human death of the body of the {God's child} on Earth. By his Resurrection in the tomb, Jesus shares his Glorious Body with the {God's child} so that he Lives Eternally from Him.

In chapters |30 to 33|, I believed to have received in me (my spiritual body) at my {birth of the Spirit}. Subsequently, in chapter |34|, God Reveals that I was wrong and that it was in fact his Glorious Body that I received within me. Subsequently, when I wanted to remove the concept of the spiritual body from his book, God did not want to! So, I understood that there is some truth in chapters |30 to 33|.

B) But what is this part of the truth?

Until chapter |29|, I defined the Holy Spirit as "the Wind of the Presence of God." But what is a Wind? It is like a pleasant draft on your face in the summer, but this time you feel the Presence of God is strangely in this draft! It is a mystical current of air. The OT defines God as a Wind. For the OT, a Wind is a Divinity and a Wind has no body. It is for this reason that in the OT, God (who is Wind) is Invisible. Subsequently, I defined in chapters |30 to 33| that in the NT, the Holy Spirit is "the Wind of the Glorious Body of Jesus." This time, a Wind has a Body! Why? Simply because God became human on Earth and Left.

C) The problem of chronology.

A reader might say to me: "if one must receive the Breath of the Glorious Body of Jesus (**the Holy Spirit**) in oneself to go to Heaven, then how could the OT prophets go to Heaven?" Likewise in the OT, how can God speak of his "body" as in article |34-D| when he was not yet born (Jesus) on Earth? I believe this is all just bad human reasoning. We on Earth see the chronology of events (time). For God (the Creator), chronology (time) does not exist. In simple when Jesus Resurrected, his body changed from temporal to Timeless. This passage of Jesus gives a rather surprising conclusion! God has always had his Glorious Body.

D) Jesus and Mary.

This Revelation also indicates that Mary (mother of Jesus) did not need to be perfect or even to be born miraculously in order to carry the Child Jesus in her womb, contrary to Christian belief. The conception of Jesus is not like Greek mythology, half-divine (of God the Father) and half-human (of Mary). The title of "Immaculate Conception" does not come from Mary's own nature, but that a "Miracle" happened in her. This "Miracle" being that the Child Jesus she carries within her is "the Creator who became human."

It is very important to know that Judaism is a closed religion. No one is admitted into the Jewish religion by conversion unlike Christianity. One must be born of a Jewish woman to be a Jew. So for God (Yahweh) to come and walk as a human among the Jews, he had to be born as a child of a Jewish woman, here Mary.

Since Jesus is God in person, then the Ascension of Jesus into heaven (sky) never existed as I already mentioned in chapter |34|. Since Jesus Reveals that **his Body (his Divine Existence)** is the support of Eternal Life, then Mary's Assumption into heaven (sky) never existed either. Mary received her {birth of the Spirit} like all {God's children}. In Heaven, Mary is not divine. However, she has her titles of "Immaculate Conception" and "Mother of Heaven."

|37-B| What does the Bible and the Christian religion say about Heaven?

I give you my English translation of an excerpt from Wikipedia about Paradise:

https://fr.wikipedia.org/wiki/Paradis	
In Christianity, Paradise is also called the Garden of Eden and often represents the final place where humans will be rewarded for good behavior or faith. It is an important concept presented at the beginning of the Bible.	Dans le christianisme, le paradis est aussi appelé jardin d'Éden et représente souvent le lieu final où les humains seront récompensés de leur bon comportement ou de leur foi. C'est un concept important présenté au début de la Bible.

I give you my English translation of an excerpt from the Diocese of Paris about Heaven:

https://dioceseparis.fr/ciel-purgatoire-enfer-comment-27353.html	
As for Heaven beyond death , we cannot give a representation of it that is not very deficient. It is necessary to consent to a fall of the images, to a purification of the representations. We know nothing about the way in which the dead live their union with God. But we believe that Jesus entered into divine life with his full humanity. Now the dead are members of the ecclesial body of Christ. Their union with God is carried by the body of Christ.	Quant au ciel au-delà de la mort , nous ne pouvons en donner une représentation qui ne soit pas très déficiente. Il faut consentir à une chute des images, à une purification des représentations. Nous ne savons rien de la manière dont les morts vivent leur union à Dieu. Mais nous croyons que Jésus est entré dans la vie divine avec sa pleine humanité. Or les morts sont membres du corps ecclésial du Christ. Leur union à Dieu est portée par le corps du Christ.

In this book, in article |34-S| in point 1), I told you about the NT Christian idea of "being all One in God in Heaven." This "fuzzy and enigmatic" idea is a construct in order to comply with the Jewish theology of the time. Since "the Eternal is One," then "we will all be One in Him in Heaven." Unfortunately, this does not define anything...

NT	Epistles of St-Paul to the Ephesians	4,3-6	striving to preserve the unity of the Spirit (3) through the bond of peace: one Body (2) and one Spirit (3), as you were also called to the one hope of your call; one Lord (2), one faith, one baptism; one God and Father (1) of all, who is over all and through all and in all (3).
----	--------------------------------------	-------	---

(*) For the schematic representation of these verses, see the chart in article |31-C| with the numbers (1) to (3).

On the other hand, we have seen that the last Manifestations of the Spirit that I had, make this model (this New Testament theology) inaccurate. Why? 1) There is neither Son nor Father in God. 2) Jesus does not need to come back at the end of time, for his Risen Body already dwells in the {God's child} on earth to bring him into his Kingdom. 3) Jesus is not the Messiah (expected by the Jews) or even the Christ (the anointed of God), but Yahweh God in person.

In the Gospel of John, its authors faced the same problem concerning the image of Heaven (sky).

NT	St-John	3,9-12	Nicodemus answered and said to him, "How can this happen?" (...) If I tell you about earthly things and you do not believe, how will you believe if I tell you about heavenly things?
----	---------	--------	---

Simply put, we see that the Bible and religion do not know much about Heaven.

|37-C| Analysis of the Lord's Revelation about Heaven

In article |37-A|, Jesus and Mary Reveal something much more understandable...

On the other hand, from the start, it is important not to try to find obvious (or direct) links between 2 different realities. The reality of Earth and the reality of Heaven are not similar.

We saw in chapter |10| that the reality of Earth is: individual and temporal. Being individual, evil between people is possible here. Being temporal, the end (death) exists. **The Earth is a biological world.**

We have seen that in Heaven, reality is Revealed: in Communion between the {God's children} and Timeless (Eternal). Being in Communion, evil does not exist. Being Timeless, there is no end, for God is the Source of Life. **Heaven is a spiritual World.**

A) The beings in Heaven...

The Revelation of Mary removes the subtle idea in the NT that the {God's children} will be "divine" in Heaven. We see this subtlety in the 1st epistle of St-John as follows: "We do know that when it is revealed we shall be like him (the Risen Jesus, who is Lord and therefore also God), for we shall see him as he is." See article |34-K|. Saint Mary Reveals not being divine in Heaven, so no {God's child} will be. Jesus, on the other hand, is God in person.

When Jesus Manifests himself in us as God: he is Light, Wind, Love, Holy and of unimaginable Power.
When Jesus Manifests himself in us as a human being, he is very gentle and we feel that he suffered a lot for us on Earth.
When Mary Manifests herself in us, we know that she is a loving mother and a generous and humble woman.

Here, Jesus and Mary Reveal that in Heaven, each of the {God's children} keeps his or her own identity that he or she had on Earth.

B) The Communion between beings in Heaven...

On Earth, we all know what it is to live together, but it is still "individual." On the other hand, we do not know what a "Life in Communion" is. So Mary gives us an idea of it in article |37-A|.

The Revelation I have had indicates that the Communion between each of the {God's children} is through God himself who is the Life Support. One {God's child} is in Communion with another {God's child}, because it is God himself who makes this link.

God reveals that all {God's children} Live by Him, for He is Life itself. God Reveals that this bond is so strong that, through his Body, God forms a Living Community with the {God's children} where evil and death do not exist.

In short, Mary Reveals that all {God's children} are not divine, but that they Live in Communion with each other and with Jesus (who is God). Mary Reveals that this Life in Communion begins right now on Earth through the {gift of the Spirit of God}. Mary Reveals that it is God himself who makes the connection between the {God's children}, whether on Earth or in Heaven.

C) You will say to me: "but what does Heaven look like?"

Since Jesus and Mary do not say: "Here is the image of Heaven!" So, we have to work a little to discover it...

God created the Earth for us. It is an autonomous world with an ecosystem so that we can live freely and make our choices. Our human body is biological and our Earth world is biological too (trees, plants, water bodies, etc.). Simply put, the source of life on Earth is biological. It exists and functions without God.

On the other hand, God Reveals that in Heaven, it is He who is the Source of Life (the Bread of Life). So the idea that Heaven looks like a Garden like Earth is totally useless! Heaven does not look like a Garden as imagined at the beginning of the book of Genesis.

Mary simply Reveals that Heaven is to Live Eternally in the Happiness of the Existence of God. This is the Marriage (Covenant).

In article |34-T|, I was looking for Heaven as a "place" according to our human understanding. At that time, I believed that God could not show me his Heaven because I had not yet died. Now that we know that God himself is "Heaven," then it is not a place in the strict sense of the word, because God is Everywhere.

Without knowing it, God had already shown me what we call "Heaven" in article |13-D|. Yes, God made me {born} in the image of Adam. However, I did not know that the place of Paradise (Heaven) was precisely to Live in the Presence of God

as during this Manifestation. Afterwards, God Manifested himself in me as human (Jesus) to Reveal to me the Communion of each of the {God’s children} with Him. Then God Manifested Mary in me to Reveal to me the Communion between the {God’s children}. When I told you that this present work was not only inspired by the Lord, but also structured by Him over 6 years, then you understand it better now!

D) In my Manifestations, God Presents Himself in 2 ways:

- 1) God Presents himself as the Support of Eternal Life. He is Holy (without any evil); he is Life itself; he is Existence itself; it is Everywhere, Timeless and Invisible. Here, God Presents himself as the Support we call “Heaven.”
- 2) God also Presents himself as a human (Jesus). We have seen that even if Jesus is God in person, he keeps his own identity that he had on Earth like the {God’s children} by the way. Mary Reveals that all {God’s children} are not divine, but Live in a relationship of Communion with each other and with Jesus.

E) The world of Earth and the World of Heaven are different:

God being the Light and Jesus being God made human. At the Resurrection, Jesus Left in Light (God). Subsequently, God gives {birth} by his Light to his {children of light} like Mary directly from the Earth. This in order to make them all Live in Communion in his Existence as described in the Manifestation of article |13-D|. To "be born" one must obviously receive a body, here it is the reception of the Body of God. Thereafter, the Body of God is Revealed to be what we call "Heaven." In simple, at the Manifestation of article |13-D|, the person is {born directly in Heaven}. This explains the feeling of no longer being part of the Earth world for about 3 months. Mary Reveals that she has no body of her own, but Lives in the "Body of God." The “**Body of God**” is the “**Luminous Silhouette**” of article |34-N| in point 3). So, the Apparitions of Mary occur by a “**Luminous Silhouette**,” since this is the Body that God shared with her at her {birth of the Spirit}.

In simple:

Earth is a biological world with its biological beings. A world to make our choices freely without God.
Heaven is a World of Light with its beings of Light. A World in Communion chosen by God (without evil).

The Apparition in Zeitoun of article |6-G| gives us a good example of this **World of Light** with Mary and Jesus in “**Luminous Silhouette**.” Since this Apparition was filmed and photographed, so this time the information has not been distorted and it is reliable!

Hence the title of book number 17: Jesus, Light of the Kingdom of God.

The first Marian Apparition recognized by the Christian authorities dates from the year 1061. But you should know that Marian Apparitions were reported well before the 0380s, so more than 1 600 years ago!

The testimony of the 1st Marian Apparition in Medjugorje of article |6-H| indicates that Mary appeared as a “**Luminous Silhouette**.” Afterwards, under the fear of the 17 interrogations of the religious authorities, the testimonies of the children became obviously confused.

In article |6-K|, this explains why Bernadette Soubirous began by throwing holy water on the Apparition of Mary believing that it was a "demon." Obviously, she did not see a “young woman out of Paradise with a blue belt and yellow flowers on her feet”... as reported by the authorities in order to comply with their catechism!

This explains why, from one Apparition to another, the testimonies describing "the appearance of Mary" are not constant. For example, in the Apparition of Fatima, Mary is described as "a lady all dressed in white." So what happened to the blue belt and the yellow flowers on her feet?

I give you my English translation of the excerpt of the description of the Apparition of Mary from the book (page 51, de Fatima de Sylvain Charron, 2009):

They were continuing their maneuver when they saw, suspended above a young holm oak, a lady all dressed in white. A bright but soft light emanated from his silhouette. It was not a light reflected by the whiteness of her dress, but the light that truly emanated from her. "Like a crystal glass filled with water and placed in front of the brightest of suns," said Lucia.

Well, this description corresponds exactly to the Marian Apparition in Zeitoun, yes a "**Luminous Silhouette**" and not a "lady all dressed in white" in the sense that there are "the real features of a woman with luminous clothes!"

On the other hand, over the centuries, instead of piling up a bunch of complex mysteries to fit their lame catechism, the religious people should have understood that the "resurrection of the flesh at the end of time" does not exist. **Yes, Mary was already Living in the Light of the Resurrection of the Body of Jesus (which is God in person)!** At Mass on Sunday, this is the real meaning of the presentation of the host saying: "this is the Body of Jesus given for you and for the multitude."

In the Gospels, the early Christians thought that at the great resurrection (at the end of time), each Christian would receive an "eternal and limitless body" like that of Jesus. They believed that the body of Jesus was going to be multiplied and that they would each receive one. This is the cause of my erroneous conclusion of chapter |30| about the reception of my {spiritual body}, coming from the logic of the Gospels. On the other hand, Mary Reveals that it is not that. To give you an example of what Living in Communion is, the "**Body in Luminous Silhouette**" of the Apparition of Jesus in article |33-C| is the same "**Body that Mary has during her Apparitions.**" God (Jesus) shares his "**Glorious Body**" to all, here even to Mary. In simple, the Body of Jesus is not multiplied, but it is the "**Bread of Life shared by all.**"

Even more, in article |34-T| in point C), I took the wrong path with the "Heaven resembling a Garden." Why? There is little accurate information in religion and far too much mythology. Even many facts (like Marian Apparitions) have been hidden or distorted to fit the catechism.

F) Near-death experience (NDE) testimonials:

For people who have had a near-death experience (NDE), this explains why God did not show them his "Palace." On the other hand, many people report having been "surrounded by light" and that there is a "Person in light" who welcomed them and called them: "my son or my daughter." Some people believed that this "Person in light" was one of their deceased relatives (father or mother). In reality, it was God in person (Jesus) who was in front of them.

G) Let's recap:

I admit that Mary's Revelation of "Living Eternally in God" surprised me! I who believed that God was going to place us in a "Heavenly Place" for Eternity.

I believe that our misunderstanding comes mainly from our human landmarks. We have an individual human body and we live in a place, the Earth (a garden).

God Reveals that he is Existence itself and that he is Life. Without Him, there is nothing.

If we take God as a person, there is God and there are others (us). Jesus Reveals that on Earth, he was the Eternal in person made human. Simply put, on Earth Jesus was the only Eternal human. We are only mortal humans. God Reveals that he had to come to Earth as a human (Jesus) to establish a "Marriage of Life" with us. Jesus being the Eternal, he is the only one capable of taking our human death. Jesus being the Eternal, he is the only one capable of sharing his Life with us forever.

The human having neither soul nor spirit in him, but only a biological body (which remains in the ground), God had no choice to give us another body for Eternity. Here, God Reveals that at the {birth of the Spirit}, it is his Glorious Body without limits of time or space that he Shares with us.

For us to live Forever, God Reveals that we must share his Existence. God being the only Saint, he Reveals that it is only in his Existence that evil does not exist.

God created the human in a place that of the Earth. Science has discovered that our world (Earth and the universe) functions completely autonomously (without God). In simple terms, God created a world for us, but he does not support it, contrary to the belief of the Bible, because God even came to walk himself as a human (Jesus) on Earth.

On Earth, we receive a **birth outside of God**. This is an individual birth without God, a limited life where evil exists.

Then, God gives the {birth of the Spirit} to a person who really desires it. This time, God Reveals that he gives the {God’s child} an **inner birth into his Existence**. This is a birth in Communion with Him for Eternity.

|37-D| A further Revelation from the Lord about Heaven

The Lord gave me a Manifestation of the Spirit on the night of June 26, 2023, in order to clarify the following points:

1	Our world of Earth is completely hermetic. Without God (Jesus), no one gets out of here. Thus, our Creator came in person to Earth in order to take our human condition (Jesus), Save us from death and bring us with Him.
2	The Eternal Covenant promised by God is made like a Marriage. It is the Marriage between his Glorious Body and the body of the {God’s child}. A marriage is a sharing. The {God’s child} shares his existence (his human body). God (Jesus) shares his Glorious Body.
3	We have seen that God Reveals that his Glorious Body is in the body of the {God’s child}. Now, in this Manifestation of June 26, 2023, God Reveals that the body of the {God’s child} is in his Glorious Body! Even more, since the body of {God’s child} is in His Glorious Body, then the body of {God’s child} does not die!
4	The Lord Reveals that 2,000 years ago His human death on the cross was not His, but ours. The Eternal became human (Jesus) to die in place of each of the {God’s children}. When Jesus was Risen, his Sacrifice became Eternal or if you want Timeless (regardless of the era). This great mystery is Manifested in chapter 13 , from the {birth of the Spirit} to the {communion to the body of Jesus}. Here the body of Jesus (God) and the body of the {God’s child} are linked. The 2 bodies are Married, they are One, it is the promised Eternal Alliance. The death of the body of the {God’s child} becomes the death of the body of Jesus, 2,000 years ago. The resurrection of the body of Jesus 2,000 years ago becomes the resurrection of the body of the {God’s child}. It is for this reason that the Lord Reveals that the body of the {God’s child} does not die. It is bound to His Glorious Body for Eternity.
5	According to the biblical accounts, mankind is blamed for the evil he does on Earth. Since hell does not exist, the Judgment for this accusation is final death in the ground for every human being. The Lord Jesus Reveals that he took the Judgment of each of the {God’s children} in his place by his death on the cross 2,000 years ago.

Of course, we know that the body of each of the {God’s children} dies in the ground. So we find ourselves in front of a contradiction, between what God Reveals and what we observe. But is this really a contradiction or a human misunderstanding?

We have seen that God (who was Invisible) had no choice but to become human (visible) in order to come and get us on Earth. We have seen that at the {birth of the God’s child}, he or she does not receive an individual spiritual body, but a Collective Body which is the Glorious Body of Jesus.

At the {birth of the Spirit} of article |13-D|, God births the body of the person directly inside his Glorious Body. It is a transfer of life from our individual support (our body on Earth) to the collective support of God (his Glorious Body). Subsequently, our individual human body that is unfit for the Collective world of God simply ends up in the ground. Obviously, no science allows us to understand this transfer of life.

Even more, God Reveals here that the body of the {God’s child} does not die, for he dwells in his Glorious Body. Why? Because Jesus took the death of the {God’s child} in his place.

Since God Reveals that the {God's child} does not die, then the {God's child} does not need to await his end on Earth to see Heaven, he is already part of it! **This implies that the Manifestations that God gives to the {God's children} on Earth are in fact Heavenly realities! So, the descriptions of the main Manifestations of the Spirit that I have given you are actually little bits of what Heaven is. The entrance to Heaven being the {birth of the Spirit} of article | 13-D |.**

Moreover, the Risen (Glorious) Body of Jesus being the Holy Spirit, then Heaven is simply the Holy Spirit received at Pentecost. In the Gospels, Jesus announced the Kingdom of God soon. Yes, at his Resurrection the Kingdom of God was established. The apostles were waiting for the Kingdom of God, but they had already received it within themselves without knowing it, it is the Holy Spirit!

Some theologians say that Christianity has failed since Christians are still waiting for Jesus and his Kingdom. In fact, they have been missing the point for 2,000 years!

Moreover, since Jesus is the Eternal in person, at his Resurrection, his Kingdom became Timeless (past, present and future) for everyone, even the patriarchs and prophets of the Old Testament.

| 37-E | Here is my best description of what we call Heaven

God made me understand that Heaven is not an individual world like Earth's, but a Collective World.

On Earth, we all have individual bodies, because we have choices to make. However, if we choose God, then God makes us {born again} in his Collective World, which is his Glorious Body.

In the Collective World of God, there is only one Body, that of God (the only Holy). Then all the {God's children} share the same Body. I give you an example or an image with the means of transport that we know well. In the individual world of Earth, we each travel on our own bicycle, which is exhausting. In God's Collective world, we all travel together on God's bus, which is fun.

To understand a world, we need 4 pieces of information. 1) What does the place (the setting) look like? 2) Who are we in this world? 3) What is the relationship between us? 4) What is the purpose of this world?

I begin by giving you a small description of what we know, the individual world of Earth:

1) What does the place (the setting) look like?	It is a world outside the Creator. It is an individual world. It is a temporal and mortal world (limited in time and space). It is a world that God does not support, but of which he has given us a garden as a support for life. This garden gives us the protection and nourishment we need.
2) Who are we in this world?	We are individual living beings. We each have our own identity.
3) What is the relationship between us?	Everything is possible, good and evil. So both joy and suffering exist here.
4) What is the purpose of this world?	To try to be happy in the time we have left. To seek and choose or not our Creator (the Good).

God Reveals in article | 37-D | that the main Manifestations of the Spirit that I have had are in fact little bits of what Heaven is. The entrance to Heaven being the {birth of the Spirit} of article | 13-D |.

So, it is now possible for me to give you a little description of Heaven:

1) What does the place (the setting) look like?	It is a world inside the Creator. It is a Collective world. It is an Eternal and Timeless world (without limit of time or space). It is a world which God supports through his Glorious Body (Jesus), which is the Life Shared with all. It is a Divine, Holy (good only), Immaterial, Powerful, Living world. It is a world of Peace, Love and Truth. As on Earth, we have our 5 senses. This world within the Creator that we call Heaven is in fact the Holy Spirit at Pentecost. See article 37-D .
2) Who are we in this world?	We are the {God's children}. Everyone has their own identity that they had on Earth. Only Jesus is God. The {God's children} share the Life of God, but they are not divine.

3) What is the relationship between us?	Suffering does not exist, there is only Good. It is a Communion of Life and Love among all. God Shares His Knowledge with us.
4) What is the purpose of this world?	The Happiness of Living Eternally all together with our Creator.

Obviously, it will be Magnificent!

|37-F| Who are the angels and demons?

I give you some reports on this subject:

Internet Keywords (YouTube)	1) La Démonologie - Histoire et hiérarchie des Démons
	1) Demonology - History and Hierarchy of Demons
	2) Anges et Démons - Histoire des origines et du symbolisme
	2) Angels and Demons - History of origins and symbolism

Here are the main points of these reports...

Before the time of Judaism (the One God, Yahweh), all peoples (the pagans) had various beliefs about celestial beings. More than 3,000 years ago, all peoples believed in "daemons." A "daemon" is a being that is linked to the celestial world and the terrestrial world. The "daemons" were neutral, they were neither good nor evil, they simply possessed celestial knowledge that humans wanted to obtain. In simple, the "daemons" were the messengers of a knowledge or if you want a science.

Later, with the beginning of Judaism (Yahweh), the belief in "daemons" was gradually cataloged in 2 opposing clans. The "good daemons" were called angels. The "bad daemons" were called demons. Angels and demons are, in a way, the heritage of very ancient pagan beliefs adapted to Judaism and then to Christianity.

It is said that there are even angels who only exist for a moment, the time to deliver the "Message of God," then they no longer exist at all afterwards. It is said that the subject of angels and demons is so complex that it is impossible to define them exactly.

"Heaven" has been Revealed to be "God Himself" whose "Glorious Body" is shared among all so that through his Communion, Eternal Life is possible and evil does not exist. Moreover, for God to share his Life in Communion, an autonomous person (without God) must desire it. On the other hand, the Bible defines angels as perfect, celestial and autonomous beings having an individual spiritual body. Unfortunately, this is not compatible with the Revelation of the Lord! The Bible defines angels as servants or warriors of the Palace of God (a King). The Lord Reveals that he is not a "king" but a "parent with his children." The Lord Reveals that his Power is unimaginable, so he does not need warriors. The Lord Reveals that he is the Bread of Life, so he does not need servants.

In article |34-N| in point 1), God Manifested to me a "demon" which is in fact the Covid-19. In article |13-M|, God Manifested to me the (possession of Evil) while the Devil cannot exist. In 6 years I have never had a Manifestation of the Spirit about angels.

In chapter |6|, some Marian Apparitions were announced (in advance) by one or more angels, but these are mainly Apparitions made to young people. These young people obviously needed to be reassured about Mary in "**Luminous Silhouette**" who will come to see them soon.

I give you my best explanation about the angels...

Since in Bible times, God (Yahweh) was believed to be "Terrible" and impossible to see without dying, then I believe that God got around this psychological barrier through the ancient belief in angels (God's Messengers). I believe that God had no choice but to go through "angels" in order to make himself known to the people. Our Creator is a parent who educates us, do not forget it! Perhaps the Creator would answer me that I do not understand much like this: "when I Manifest to you (an angel or a demon), he is very real in front of you, but when I no longer Manifest him to you, he does not no longer exist, because **I Am the Existence** and it is I who decide what exists or not!"

In simple, the angels would exist only for the short moment of their celestial Message.

| 38 | The main points found during the research of this Part 2

Chapters | 30 to 38 | are Optional. It is important to start by reading the introduction to Part 2. This chapter | 38 | was written in 2023. It provides an overview of the discoveries made during this Part 2. It is very difficult to read this chapter | 38 | directly without reading the other chapters. Why? What the Lord Jesus Reveals is unfortunately a little different from what we know as Christians. It is important to keep in mind that chapters | 30 to 37 | contain all the details and that you can refer to them as needed.

On the other hand, whatever the Truth found, you do not have to be destabilized in your faith, because the Lord Jesus exists for real and he is next to you now, I confirm it to you 100%. Unfortunately, we are going to discover that the Bible did not "fall from the sky," but is the fruit of a long process to set up Judaism and then Christianity over the centuries. Remember that this book is a gift from the Lord to all of us. So even if this book may displease you at times, the fact remains that it is True.

| 38-A | Reports about the Bible (see also articles | 34-F, 35-A and 35-B |)

A) For the Old Testament.

I looked at several archaeological reports concerning the OT of which here are the following:

Internet Keywords (YouTube)	1) Les secrets révélés de la Bible (01 à 03)
	1) The revealed secrets of the Bible (01 to 03)
	2) La Bible, entre mythe et réalité (Parties 1 et 2)
	2) The Bible, between myth and reality (Parts 1 and 2)

I give you a small summary of what archaeologists have found in 100 years of work...

There are no archaeological traces in the ground for the important or founding stories of the Hebrew people mentioned in the OT such as the story of the moving of the Hebrew people from Egypt to Canaan (the Exodus with Moses). Ancient writings reveal that at that time Canaan was one of the provinces of Egypt! There are no archaeological traces of the account of Joshua's conquest of Canaan, as the remains clearly indicate that the Canaanites were in fact the Hebrews. The archaeological traces of Kings David and Solomon are so rare that they could only be minor kings of a small kingdom of Israel without any splendor.

On the other hand, there are really archaeological traces concerning secondary details mentioned in the OT such as those of the small neighboring peoples. So how to explain this? Archaeologists say that the Hebrews formed a small people without history in the territory of Canaan and that they invented a glorious past in order to unite the people around a common ideology, their religion. The important stories of the OT are mainly mythological, they are religious teaching. On the other hand, the scribes of the time based their important stories on secondary (real) historical details so that the people believed them.

Moreover, according to the theory which is called "documentary," the Torah (the 5 books of Moses) would have been written in 4 named phases (J, E, D, P). This during a rather large period, from 0900s to 0500s BC. We see that the Torah did not "fall from the sky," but that it is the result of a long religious process.

Archaeologists say that the stories of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob are impossible to trace in the soil of Canaan, because the OT says that the Hebrew people numbered only about 70 at that time. On the other hand, the Lord said in one of his Apparitions that it was with this little people that he concluded the 1st Covenant, so they existed. Nevertheless, it is very likely that the OT stories of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob are steeped in mythology. Example: the story of the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah cannot come from God since he is Life and he is Holy (without any evil). So originally, this story may have come from a natural phenomenon (volcanic eruption) which was attributed to the anger of Yahweh. Finally, according to archaeologists, Abraham and his family were originally from Mesopotamia and they migrated to Canaan probably as mentioned in the OT.

B) For the New Testament.

Since the Lord Jesus Reveals that he did not perform miracles or healings when he walked on Earth, then I wondered: "what is the use of the many accounts of miracles and healings recorded in the Gospels?" Why did the early Christians write this?

To do this, I watched several reports about the NT, of which here is the most interesting:

Internet Keyword (YouTube)	1) Le Jésus historique Ce reportage est le commentaire du livre de John P. Meier, Un certain juif Jésus. 1) The historical Jesus This report is a commentary on John P. Meier's book, A Marginal Jew.
----------------------------	--

We have already seen that the Gospels are not historical texts, but theological texts (texts of religious beliefs from the time of the first Christians illustrated by stories of Jesus and his apostles in order to found Christianity). It is for this reason that after the 0100s there were over 50 different Gospels. Yes, each of the small early Christian communities tried to start their own small Christian religion in their own small territory by writing their own Gospel. You only have to compare the Gospel of Mark (Jewish Gospel dated 0060) with that of John (Greek Gospel dated 0110) to see that the facts and the words surrounding Jesus do not really agree with each other! In the apocryphal Gospels, it is even more different.

You should know that the 2nd Covenant is mainly based on (belief, belonging to God and commitment) as insistently said in the Gospel of John. We have seen that the 2nd Alliance does not materialize in tangible facts that all people can see. It is concretized by the death and the Resurrection of Jesus and his spiritual Manifestations in the {God's children} as indicated in the table of article |35-H|.

Some theologians say that a Gospel is a profession of faith from a small early Christian community that has been put into images by accounts of Jesus and his apostles. I go even further... it was impossible to start and propagate the Christian religion in the world by using only small personal miracles and inner spiritual realities as I testify them in this book. So, it was necessary to use these small personal miracles and inner spiritual realities **in order to write great miracles** that would have happened among the Jewish people to convince people and convert them to Christianity. It is for this reason that Christian movements do not want to recognize the testimonies of mystics who have had, for example, Marian Apparitions. Because the Bible speaks of great miracles that are visible to all the people, whereas in the vast majority of cases, God does not work in this way! In general, God uses the testimony of those who have received something from Him to try to convince other people. God rarely performs miracles that are visible to all people, because each human being was created free to believe in Him or not. It is for this reason that the Gospel of John insists so much on faith.

I give you an example of an Apparition that was refused by the Christian authorities:

Internet Keywords (YouTube)	1) Apparition de la Vierge Marie à Garabandal (Documentaire 1994) 1) Apparition of the Virgin Mary in Garabandal (Documentary 1994)
-----------------------------	--

It was obvious that this Apparition is true, we only have to see the behavior of the 4 children of 12 years old in ecstasies. This Apparition was not recognized, because it disturbed too much. Yes, the Apparition of Mary openly criticized the religious authorities.

I am convinced that for God, the worst sin of a person is not wanting to believe in Him. Why? God cannot do anything for that person, because that person is free to make efforts or not.

On the other hand, since I understood (during the writing of this book) that any information that passes through the hands of religious people receives a distortion, then there is a mythical (false) part in this report in Garabandal! You guessed it, the Apparition of Mary announces a great "Sign of God visible to all the people of the Earth," in order to begin a conversion otherwise, "God will send a great Punishment." This obviously refers to the texts of the book of Revelation (**which is false**), but which religious people really like! Subsequently, people will even go so far as to affirm that the Apparition of Mary in Garabandal was false since this "great Announcement" will not have happened!

God may make efforts, but people have always wanted great miracles to believe.

[38-B] The people needed great miracles to believe (see also articles [36-F and 36-G])

So the Gospels contain a lot...

I will use **the Gospel of John** to give you examples of beliefs that were justified by miracles.

<u>Pictured stories (Gospel of John)</u>	<u>Types of religious miracle</u>	<u>Associated beliefs</u>
<u>Chapter 2</u> The wedding at Cana.	Baptismal miracle. Here is the entry into Christianity.	The water of the purification jars is like the water of the Christian baptism of repentance associated with John the Baptist. Wine is considered a spirit. The water represents human life, the wine represents the Eternal Life given by Jesus hence being born of water (repentance) and the Spirit (the wine of the cup of the Covenant of Jesus).
<u>Chapter 4</u> Healing of the son of a royal official.	Miracle attesting to the Divinity of Jesus.	Jesus is life (he is a Divinity) since he prevents death. This belief is true, but after the Resurrection of Jesus.
<u>Chapter 5</u> Healing of a paralytic at Bethesda.	Miracle attesting to the Divinity of Jesus. Miracle of purification.	Only God forgives sins and the paralytic heals. Jesus obtains the forgiveness of sins by his blood shed on the cross. The blood of Jesus cleanses from sins.
<u>Chapter 6</u> The multiplication of the loaves.	Eucharistic miracle. Miracle of conversion.	Jesus is the Bread of Life. Through the little bread (here, the body of Jesus), Eternal Life is available to the whole population. In this Christian era, Christians identified themselves by the drawing of a fish in the sand. The fish in this miracle represent the multitude of people converted to Christianity.
<u>Chapter 6</u> Jesus walks on the sea.	Miracle attesting to the Divinity of Jesus.	Jesus is both human and spirit (divine). Here is the belief in the myth of the "Son of Man." In reality, Jesus is not the "Son of Man," but Yahweh made human. Jesus Reveals that he did not perform miracles and healings when he walked as a human on Earth, but only after his Resurrection.
<u>Chapter 9</u> Healing of a man born blind.	Miracle attesting to the Divinity of Jesus.	Jesus is the Light (Divinity) of the world since he allows a blind man (living in the dark or if you want in the darkness) to see (to be reborn to the new Life, that of Jesus).
<u>Chapter 19</u> Raising of Lazarus.	Miracle announcing the Resurrection of Jesus. Miracle in connection with the great resurrection at the end of time.	The Jews believed that they would be resurrected in the flesh at the end of time, so that belief is pictured here. Yes, the Resurrection is really done by Jesus, but in the "Spiritual" form and not in the physical "flesh and blood" form.
<u>Chapter 20</u> Apparition to Mary of Magdala.	Miracle attesting to the inauguration of the 2nd Covenant by Jesus.	At the tomb, the stone where the body of Jesus lay is associated with the mercy seat of the Ark of the Covenant of Moses (1st Covenant). The Apparition of the 2 angels is associated with the 2 angel statues on the mercy seat of the Ark. The body of Jesus is associated with the sacrificial lamb. This story represents the beginning of the Second Covenant which replaces the First Covenant.
<u>Chapter 20</u> Apparition to the disciples.	Miracle attesting to the Resurrection of Jesus.	Yes Jesus is Risen, but in Spirit and not in flesh and bone. Yahweh made man (Jesus) becomes Spirit again (the Spirit of God). Yes Jesus Breathes or gives his Spirit to the disciples at Pentecost.

<u>Chapter 21</u> Apparition on the shore of Lake Tiberias.	Miracle opening Christianity to the world.	Here, Jesus calls the apostles to spread the Good News of the 2nd Covenant available to all. The fish from this miraculous catch represent the people who will be converted to Christianity.
--	--	--

(*) See also the chart in article |36-G|.

As I told you in article |36-F|, yes the Lord Jesus does healings and miracles, but after his Resurrection. A reader might say to me: "did the miracle of the multiplication of the loaves exist?" It is a little more complicated than that! No, during the human life of Jesus. Yes, after the Resurrection of Jesus. Let me give you an example. A nun (in a convent near me) told me that her community had very few slices of bread in a bag on the kitchen counter for breakfast one morning. The nun said that every time we reached for a slice, the bag of bread never got empty! Here we have the miracle of the multiplication of the loaves, but this time in the 1980s!

In this present book, I have told you about several miracles and healings that have taken place in our time. I believe that the miracles and healings that Jesus (after his Resurrection) gave to the early Christians were the inspiration for writing the miracles and healings recorded in the Gospels. They are simply miracles and healings moved to the time of Jesus on Earth and imagined by the stories of Jesus and his apostles to give something concrete (palpable) to people in order to convert them.

Yes, these are theological miracles, but with a background of hidden reality!

|38-C| In order to discover the Truth, mythology and mysteries must be removed

From 2016 to 2023, the Lord gave me many Manifestations in order to unravel the mythology and mysteries in Judaism and Christianity as follows:

See articles 33-L, 34-C, 34-D, 34-I and 37-E .
God is the Creator, Existence itself, Life itself, Holy and Love, Immaterial, Everywhere and Powerful.
We believe that God controls the Earth and must solve all our problems, whereas God created the autonomous Earth without Him so that humans are totally free of their actions and choices.
God alone holds Eternal Life, so souls and ghosts cannot exist. God is (the Creator, the only Holy and the only Eternal), so the Devil and demons cannot exist.
We believe that God is distant, while God is close to us.
We believe that Jesus is the Messiah and the Son of God. We believe that there are 3 Persons in God. In fact, there is only one Person in God, God himself as said in the OT. Jesus is the Creator in person made human on Earth.
We believe that Jesus is Risen in flesh and bones. In fact, Jesus being God made human, at his Resurrection, Jesus disappeared in Light, as witnessed by the Shroud of Turin. Jesus is Risen in Spirit. He is the Holy Spirit or the Spirit of Jesus or the Spirit of God.
God being the Creator, so he had no choice but to make himself human (Jesus) in order to establish his Eternal Covenant (Marriage) with us.
At the {gift of the Holy Spirit}, the person receives within him the Holy Spirit which is always a real Manifestation. The Holy Spirit is the Breath or Wind of the Glorious Body of Jesus. The {gift of the Glorious Body of Jesus} is in fact the Eucharistic Communion with the Body of Jesus that we celebrate at Mass on Sundays. Eucharistic Communion is effective only after the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. Me, I had 2 Eucharistic Manifestations (Body and Blood) 3 months later.
As the Manifestations of the Spirit proceed, God educates his {child}. There are Manifestations of the Spirit for all subjects as described in this present book. Be it the Garden of Eden; the Devil and demons; certain details concerning the OT and NT narratives; Mary mother of Jesus; the Heaven; and so on.
2,000 years ago, Jesus said his Kingdom was near, then early Christians sought the end of time, a Judgment and the Palace of God. Whereas the Kingdom of God is the Holy Spirit at Pentecost. Here, Jesus (God) Reveals that he is Sharing his Life with the human life of his {child} from right here on Earth and this is the beginning of the Kingdom he announced.
Since God is the only Eternal, then he had no choice but to make us Live by Him. Through Jesus's death and Resurrection, the person {is born again} into God. It is an {inner birth into God}. By becoming {child of God}, the person passes from the individual world of the Earth to the Collective World of God. We believe that Heaven is a place, while it is neither a

place nor a garden. We believe that the world of Heaven is individual like the Earth, while the World of God is collective (in Communion). Heaven is to Live in our Creator (God). Since God is the only Saint, then He had no choice but to make us {be born into Him} so that evil does not exist. **See article | 37-E |**.

| 38-D | Religion was written by humans, but God also has something to say...

A) The purpose of a religion.

At all times, the central point of any religion has been to be under the protection of one or more divinities, even to make the harvest grow.

Some readers might tell me that God does not perform miracles for us on a daily basis as requested at Mass on Sunday. The difficulty is that we do not know how to recognize what God does for us.

B) Has God fulfilled his role?

In a religion we do speak of protection from danger and even of help to grow the crop for food... The answer is that God gave us a garden, the Earth!

Earth is the greatest miracle of life in our barren (dead) universe. By its Van Alan belts, the Earth is protected from the (deadly) X-rays of the Sun. Through its atmosphere, the Earth is protected from meteorites. By its oceans, the Earth is protected from extreme temperatures contrary to the maintenance of life. Through the millions of species of plants and animals, the Earth does not lack food. If we needed a miracle to believe in God. Well, God gave it to us long ago. Just the fact that you exist is a miracle in itself!

The only thing humanity lacked was to be educated in order to live together without destroying each other (evil). God has also done this through his teaching of goodness in Judaism and Christianity. Simply put, if people helped each other as God asked, there would be little evil on Earth.

So humanity has already had what it needed. Our divinity (God) has kept his religious promises from the beginning without us realizing it...

C) There are people angry with God...

Some movies and TV shows are about: **God's help on earth through angels**. Yes, these movies and TV shows are very beautiful and I encourage you to watch them! On the other hand, there are questions or statements that come up often.

1) Question: where was God during our misfortunes? 2) Question: why did not God send an angel to help me? 3) Statement: if God really existed, there would be no evil on earth!

In fact, all this confusion stems from the criteria necessary to form any religion. In simple, our divinity must settle everything like music paper: success and failure, life and death, our problems and even our wars. However, God Reveals in this present book that the reality is not that. He Reveals that the world of earth is so hermetic (free) that he was even able to come here in person (Jesus) 2,000 years ago.

Now, I answer... 1) Question: where was God during our misfortunes? Answer: God is with us always and asks us to do good despite the difficulties. On the other hand, where was humanity when God (Jesus) was murdered on a cross? Answer: humanity had the nails and the hammer in its hands. 2) Question: why did not God send an angel to help me? Answer: because it is the job of every human being to help others. 3) Statement: if God really existed, there would be no evil on earth! Answer: even God himself (Jesus) suffered from the evil that mankind has spread here through its selfishness and indifference. God Reveals that we alone are responsible for what happens on earth (good or evil). Finally, God Reveals that he has a plan for Life and Happiness for those who follow him.

D) Did the Bible really need to contain accurate facts in order to deliver God's message of goodness?

To be formed, any religion must contain a part of the beliefs of its converted peoples (the pagans). So no religion can be exact, because it must please everyone.

From chapter |34|, we saw that the Bible does not contain historical texts, but theological texts. Of course, texts were needed for the population. Not texts containing facts in detail that are difficult and time-consuming to write and transcribe by hand. It was better to write pictorial texts containing the message in a simplified way.

The texts of the Bible are not exact, but since God really exists, they have elements of hidden reality...

E) Here is what the Lord Jesus Reveals in this book:

Generally speaking, we say that God is Invisible, because God sees and hears us, but we do not see or hear him. On the other hand, he can Present himself in a spiritual way (examples: Wind, Breath, Light, Fire, etc.). Moreover, he even Presented himself in a human way, 2,000 years ago, it is Jesus.

God is in reality one Person as in the OT, but who Manifests himself in many ways. God is not "3 Persons in One" as imagined by the first Christians in order to correspond to 3 Realities of God. In a simplified way in the NT: 1) the Invisibility of God was named, **the Father**; 2) the humanity of God was named, **the Son**; 3) the spiritual Manifestation of God was named, **the Holy Spirit**. If one day you really receive the Holy Spirit, you will feel that there is only one Person in God, God himself. On the other hand, like me, you will search for "the 3 Persons in God" long enough, but without finding them. Then, God will Reveal to you that he is in fact one and the same Person (both divine and human). His divine name is: "I Am." His human name is: "Jesus" in English or "Yeshua" in Hebrew when he walked on Earth, which means: "God saves." Obviously in prayer, I recommend you to call him simply "Lord Jesus," because it unites his divinity (Lord) and his humanity (Jesus).

God being Holy (without any evil), the authors of the Bible were not really able to understand the origin of "evil and demons." Obviously, psychology did not exist at that time. I understood that the Creator knows perfectly well the good and the evil, on the other hand, he chose to be Holy (without any evil) since ever. I understood that when the Creator creates a being, whatever it is (human, animal, or other), this one is always free and mortal. **In fact, it is through the freedom of these individual and autonomous beings that evil inevitably appears.**

God Reveals that the only way to obtain a world without evil is to be in "Communion with Him." But for that, an individual must desire it and give up his full freedom. This is what God calls the Eternal Covenant or Marriage of Life. Obviously on Earth, a {God's child} cannot do only good even if he desires to, because he has a human body like everyone else and evil is very present here on earth. Then the {God's child} does only what he can...

When the biological support of the {God's child} is extinguished, it is the Body of God received at his {birth of the Spirit} which takes over for Eternity. This is the Manifestation of article |33-G|. Obviously, for the {God's child}, it is only from this moment that evil will never exist again. But in the meantime, God asks each of his {children} to do a little something for his Life project. Of course in our own way and with our ability. I wanted to write this free book for everyone. So the Lord decided to give me the necessary Manifestations to inspire and structure it. Be assured that the Lord never asks us to do something impossible; or something we do not want to do; or even something that would put us in danger. Never try to be a hero, that is not what the Lord asks. Do not try to cast out demons, because they do not exist. Do not try to perform miracles, because even Jesus Revealed that he did not do any when he walked on Earth. So just be yourself with your strengths and weaknesses.

|38-E| God's Project, update

The Creator (God, I Am) is Existence and Life. He is Invisible and Timeless (Eternal). He is Present everywhere. The Creator is the only one who can really tell the difference between good and evil, because he possesses all knowledge. The Creator has made his choice (the good) since always, he is the only Holy One (without any evil).

God wants to have children...

Obviously to be a child of God, one must strive to make the same choice as God (the good). To be a child of God, one must belong to his parent (God). To live eternally by God, God must Share or Communicate his Life directly to his child. Since Heaven is to live in God, one must desire his Presence forever.

(*) I believe that few religious people really understand what I have just stated, because they do not obtain the {gift of the Holy Spirit} more easily than ordinary people. Yet what I have just said sums up the teachings of the priest during Mass!

Now for a being to make a choice, he must first exist, that all possibilities are available around him and that he is free. Obviously to make a choice, one must not be in "Communion of Life with the Creator" from the start! So God (the Existence itself) creates a garden, it is the Earth. Subsequently, he gives birth to humans on Earth. Here, the human is born externally to his Creator. Obviously this world of freedom has its price to pay. Humans need a (biological) body with an autonomous life without God (therefore mortal). The human body needs to be supported by the (biological) ecosystem of the Earth which is also autonomous without God (therefore mortal). Since the Creator is the only Saint and the world of Earth is external to Him, then on Earth everything exists (good/evil, happiness/suffering, life/death, etc.).

Subsequently in the OT, God forms a people, the Hebrews (Jews and Israelites) so that they begin to belong to Him (the Unique God), this is the 1st Covenant. He helps the Hebrew people to settle in their territory. God educates people to tell the difference between good and evil. Humans now have everything they need to freely choose their life. Through his prophets, God promises the people a new Covenant, this time Eternal (or if you want belonging to Him forever).

The world of the Earth being hermetic, God becomes human (Jesus) in the womb of Mary. He completes the education of his people. Jesus dies on the cross. His human body being that of God (the Eternal), Jesus Resurrects and disappears in Light in the tomb. The Eternal now having a Body, Marriage (the new promised Covenant) is now available between Him and the human in a Timeless way (past, present and future).

Thereafter when an individual does good, desires the Presence of God ever near to him, and truly desires to belong to God, then God gives him a {new birth} making him a {God's child}. This time it is an {inner birth to the Creator}. God {brings the person into His Glorious Body}. Or, if you like, God {gives birth} to the person in his Collective World, which we call Heaven.

By his death on the cross, Jesus takes the human death of each of the {God's children} in his place. By his Resurrection, Jesus shares his Body (his Communion of Life) with each one. This is the new Support of each of the {God's children} for Eternal Life when his biological support is extinguished. It is important to understand that the Sacrifice of Jesus (God) is not only his death on the cross, but that it includes his whole mission on Earth, because God took our human condition.

The Earth is a school (free and temporary) created by God so that humans can make their experiences and their choices freely. The Earth is a gift from God which humans manage themselves, this is their heritage. Humans can do all the evil they want and even destroy their heritage (the Earth) without God intervening, because when God gives... he does not take back! The human is responsible for himself and he does not receive any bad supernatural influence. The "Devil" is the "psychic personification (quite natural)" of our "invisible fear of suffering and dying." This allows us to understand the value of our life and to fight to preserve it. Obviously, this "mythical character of evil" cannot exist, because our Creator is Holy and he alone holds Eternal Life.

Finally, God gives us an understandable picture of Heaven in article |37-E|.

It is now easy to understand why it is absolutely necessary to desire to obtain the Presence of God close to oneself on Earth and to give one's life to God to obtain the {gift of his Body}, see chapter |39|.

It is important to know that a person must truly desire the Presence of God for him to Manifest, because everyone is created free, even not to seek their Creator.

|38-F| Introduction to the real history of the Bible

In 6 years, the Lord Jesus gave me many Revelations and I worked hard by research in order to try to reconstruct the facts, the truth. So, I decided to tell you the story of the Bible as simply as possible with what I have. These are articles |38-G to 38-I|. We have seen that archaeologists have not found evidence of the Exodus account of the Hebrew people with Moses. Historians say that the account of the Exodus is in no way known from the chronicles of other peoples living at that time.

The Exodus story exists only in the OT, not elsewhere. For Jesus, the chronicles of the time attest that he existed, that he was a charismatic prophet and that he was executed (killed) by Roman authority. The chronicles of the time do not speak of fabulous miracles or a bright star in the sky. On the other hand, they speak of a Jewish group which has formed, which is spreading and which has the belief that Jesus is the expected Messiah (these are the early Christians). The fabulous story of "Jesus as the Messiah" exists only in the NT, not elsewhere.

|38-G| I give you what I know about the real history of the Old Testament

In an Apparition, Jesus says that he is the God (of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob). Jesus testifies that he is the God of the Jews (Yahweh in person). In chapters |30 to 34| of this present book, the Lord Jesus Reveals that there are not 3 Persons in God, but only one Person who is Yahweh and whose real Name is "I Am." In fact, Jesus is Yahweh (the Creator) made man who came to meet us on earth in order to establish the Eternal Covenant promised by the OT prophets. In this same Apparition, Jesus says that he is the God of Christians. In chapters |30 to 34| of this present book, the Lord Jesus Reveals that he is not the Messiah or even the Christ, but the **Redeemer God** (the one who Saves from human death by his Holy Sacrifice). The Lord Jesus therefore testifies that Abraham, Isaac and Jacob existed. About them, the accounts of the Bible will have to suffice for you, because I have no additional information.

In his Apparitions and Manifestations, the Lord Jesus does not speak of Moses as a person. Moses is an invented character. The Lord will confirm it in article |38-P|. The name "Moses" means "son" in Egyptian. The story of Moses has been invented at the time by King Josiah and his scribes (around 630 BC). See article |34-F| in point C). This character of Moses had as a model of legendary construction (archetype), king Sargon of Akkad (about 2,300 BC). King Josiah wanted to unify his kingdom and needed an invented (mythical) text to gather his people. On the other hand, the (religious) scribes of King Josiah have also used their Hebrew Scriptures of the time having a basis of truth. Why? God is really called "I Am" and there is only one. In these ancient Hebrew Scriptures, it was to be spoken of the meeting of "I Am" on a sacred mountain. God really presented himself as a Spirit (Wind, Breath, Light, Flame, etc.). I believe that during a sacrifice, the priest of Yahweh (I Am) put the offering on the altar and **the fire lit itself**, because Yahweh accepted this offering. This must have been like the story of the sacrifice (burnt offering) of the prophet Elijah where the fire caught on its own. The "burning bush story" was invented and echoes these ancient Hebrew Scriptures. However, for the scribes, Moses could not have met Yahweh by making a sacrifice, because Moses was an Egyptian pagan who did not know Yahweh. So the character of Moses must have had a "Revelation from Yahweh" in something like a "flame on the altar of sacrifice," yes, the story of the famous "burning bush."

2 religions with the same model:

<u>Judaism</u>	In simple terms, Moses was the character of a liberator of the Hebrew people and a founder of the religion, in a way a first "messiah." The character of Moses became the legislator of the 1 st Covenant, with the Law. It is with King Josiah and the legendary character of "Moses the messiah of the OT" that Judaism became a State religion. Yes, Judaism with its legendary texts fortunately containing a fund of hidden truth (Yahweh God really exists, he is not punishing and vengeful, but Holy and he intends to establish a New Covenant).
<u>Christianity</u>	In simple terms, for Christianity, it is essentially the same recipe as Judaism. Jesus (the new Messiah) replaces Moses (the old messiah). Jesus becomes the legislator of the 2nd Covenant in place of Moses of the 1st Covenant. It is with the emperor Constantine and the legendary character of "Jesus the Messiah of the NT" that Christianity became a State religion. Yes, Christianity with its legendary texts fortunately containing a fund of hidden truth (Jesus is Yahweh God in person who came to earth to fulfill the promised Eternal Covenant).
It is through the legendary (invented) account of the "Transfiguration of Jesus" on the sacred mountain with the Apparition of Moses and of the prophet Elijah as well as of God the Father who says from the sky: "This is my beloved Son, listen to him," that the transition from the lawgiver Moses (1st Covenant) to the lawgiver Jesus (2nd Covenant) has been pictured in the Gospels. For the transition, all the equivalent elements are there. For Moses, there is God (from sky) giving the 2 tables of the 10 Commandments on the sacred mountain. There is Moses who is transfigured (with a luminous face) in the tent of meeting when God is present there. For Jesus, there is God the Father (from sky) on his sacred mountain giving the Command to listen to his Son. In the presence of the Luminous Cloud (God), there is the Transfiguration of Jesus (luminous face and garment).	

I, who thought that the "Transfiguration of Jesus" on the mountain had really taken place since the Lord had given me the Manifestation of the Spirit of article | 13-P |. No, this Manifestation of the Lord Jesus was to Reveal to me that his Glorious (Resurrected) Body is in me as in article | 34-N | in point 3).

Although the kings David and Solomon existed. They were in reality small kings of a small kingdom of Israel that was not very powerful compared to Egypt. It was King Josiah who invented the myth of the splendor of David and Solomon. King Josiah was in search of new territories. He made his people believe that the surrounding lands were once part of the kingdom of David and Solomon, and that they had to fight to take them back. The connection between Jesus and David is folklore to try to demonstrate the kingship of Jesus. No, there is no connection between Jesus and David.

Truly inspired prophets of God have announced a New Covenant. These are mainly Isaiah, Jeremiah and Ezekiel. God (Yahweh) wanted the people to be closer to him, for the people to do good. God was speaking of an Eternal Covenant (a Marriage) between himself and his people whom he saw as a bride. The prophets were not heard by the authorities and were sometimes persecuted. I even believe that the deportation of the Hebrew people to Babylon was necessary to bring the texts of these prophets into the Canon of the Hebrew Bible of the time. The deportation of the Hebrew people to Babylon was a consequence of the desire of the authorities, for they had built for themselves a sumptuous Temple with riches. This attracted the lust of the king of Babylon who conquered them. The prophet Daniel is a myth (invention) to encourage the people in slavery in Babylon. For Daniel, God (Yahweh) had not abandoned them and a deliverer (another messiah like Moses in the past) was going to come and deliver them. 50 years later, King Darius conquered Babylon and returned the Hebrews to their land. He was considered a bit like a "messiah." According to them, King Darius had had a "vision from Yahweh." In reality, King Darius had no money to feed the hungry and sick Hebrew people, so he sent them home. After their return, the Hebrews wondered why Yahweh had abandoned them. They found the answer in the Scriptures of (Isaiah, Jeremiah and Ezekiel) which the (religious) scribes had rejected and then they finally incorporated them into their Canon of the Hebrew Bible. In this way, Yahweh announced his coming to earth and his New Eternal Covenant in the Scriptures, but this time finally recognized by the authorities and the people.

The 5 stories from the beginning of the Bible, from the Garden of Eden to the Flood are symbolic stories. They were written a few centuries before Jesus and not before Abraham. In simple, the Hebrew people wanted to know their origins so the scribes used mythological stories from neighboring countries and adapted them to respect their own religion. For example, the story of the Garden of Eden comes from a Sumerian myth.

It should be known that after the exile in Babylon, the Hebrews never again became sovereign of their country, but that they continued to live under the tutelage of the invaders. Then, around 200 years before Jesus, some fantastic texts appeared. This is the case of the book of Enoch describing a Messiah (liberator), a character "**half-man and half-divine.**" It was also at this time that the book of Daniel appeared, making people believe that it was 300 years older, so that "**so-called ancient prophecies**" would be fulfilled in the present. These books of Enoch and Daniel are mythical texts that greatly inspired the writing of the NT narratives (the Gospels and Revelation), because Jesus was identified as this "fabulous Messiah."

At that time, God could not be named. His name "I Am" had been made unpronounceable with the tetragram "YHWH" which simply comes from a clever pun on the Hebrew verb "to be" in the past, present and future to mean "the Eternal." YHWH or Yahweh, the only divinity was so Powerful and so Invisible that it was not possible to see him without dying. Why? Because at that time, the invaders stole the statues (idols, deities in gold and silver) in the temples. So, in this way, no one could steal "YHWH!" During a war, "YHWH" was even more frightening than all the other deities of the adversaries. In addition, the Ark of the Covenant in the middle of the Temple was considered "**magical**," if anyone other than a priest touched it, he would die instantly. Obviously, since the character of Moses did not exist, then the Ark did not exist either. On the other hand, I believe that King Josiah actually had an Ark built to make his character of Moses tangible in the eyes of the religious and the people. Subsequently, the Ark disappeared during the Babylonian invasion.

Yes, the priests and scribes made speak, in front of the people, their puppet divinity "YHWH." The problem is that "YHWH" is not some fake metal deity who will never say anything! **So, "YHWH" decided to come to earth...**

|38-H| The Lord has always taken care of us

Today, some theologians and historians are asking themselves a question. How could the little tribal deity of Abraham (Yahweh) of 3,000 years ago with its small population of 70 people be able to generate 2 world religions which are Judaism, then Christianity and that they did not have never been extinguished all this time? Answer: God (Yahweh) really exists and takes care of his people!

We know that Christianity is in decline all over the world, because technology meets all our needs and science has discovered a lot of mythology in the Bible over the last 200 years. So what can the Lord do? He can, among other things, ask to write a book like this in order to understand what happened...

Mythology was the only science of the time of the Bible, so it is normal that religion is strongly impregnated with it. At that time, to say that the "Son of God" descended from heaven (sky) without there being a star in the sky to announce it was impossible and no one would have believed you! To say that demons do not exist is impossible, because there must be a reason for people to be sick! When a healer (like Jesus) practiced his profession, in addition to physically treating the sick, he absolutely had to make prayers for the release of the demons that caused the disease, which is called a small ritual of exorcism. The mentalities of the time were very far from ours. We, we try to write accounts of facts. In contrast, the Bible writers were writing accounts of religious beliefs (a tradition). For them, Adam and Eve, the Flood and the Tower of Babel were realities. At that time, if you had told them that all this never existed, they would have called you crazy!

Nowadays, however, Christians no longer believe in mythology, so the Lord explains his realities to us with our modern science, as in this book. In the course of writing this book, I had to learn that the Bible is largely religious tradition and contains little real fact. In addition, the majority of the real facts it contains are distorted. Why do you think this book took me 5,000 hours of research and writing? Without the Revelations of the Spirit of Jesus and the powerful computer tools we now have, this book would have been impossible to make!

|38-I| I give you what I know about the real history of the New Testament

Articles |34-J, 35-G and 37-A| contain useful information for the construction of this article.

We have seen that unlike the Gospels, Jesus Reveals that there is neither Father nor Son in God. Jesus Reveals that he did not perform miracles when he walked as a human on Earth. In the Gospels, Jesus calls himself the Messiah several times. We have seen that the Messiah was a man of war, probably a glorious king like David, who was going to drive the invader (the Romans) out of Israel. We have seen that Jesus has nothing to do with the myth of the Messiah. You should know that the Roman army had great difficulty in containing the revolutionaries in Israel. Unlike the Gospels, large gatherings of people were not permitted and were suspect. At that time, the word "Messiah" was explosive like dynamite. I do not believe people were allowed to use that word in public, they used it in secret. In the Gospels, Jesus strongly challenges the authorities. Jesus is even described as having supernatural powers in order to thwart those who want to kill him. On the other hand, Jesus Reveals in article |36-F| that he has no power on Earth. In reality, Jesus cannot challenge the authorities as described in the Gospels, because his premature death would abort the very purpose of his coming to Earth, his mission!

The mission of Jesus was to: a) announce the Kingdom of God; b) show its Way by his example; c) set up a succession; d) establish the Kingdom of God through his Sacrifice and Resurrection.

The only way to reconstruct the story of the passage of Jesus on Earth is to use: a) the real identity of Jesus; b) the important points of his mission and his actions to achieve them; c) the religious and political situation of the time; d) the mentality and customs of the time; e) the Manifestations of the Spirit of Jesus which are the same for all the {God's children} and this regardless of the time, today or the apostles 2,000 years ago.

Now, let's begin...

It was at the time of all these religious myths that Jesus was born... "YHWH or Yahweh" became human, it is Jesus. He is the Creator in person who decided to come and see his creation.

Jesus, although Yahweh, is human and does not do any healing or miracles on earth. God came as a human, not to be served as a divinity, but to fulfill the Eternal Covenant promised by the mouth of his prophets. Since Jesus is the Eternal, that is why he has Risen and is the only one who can do it.

1) Birth of Jesus.

Mary was chosen to be the human mother of God (Yahweh). The Announcement of the angel Gabriel to Mary is certainly a myth. Why? The angel Gabriel is associated with the earthly paradise which is itself a myth. The angel Gabriel is also associated with the Word of God or the Logos which is another myth and of which Jesus is not at all. On the other hand, if we study the OT carefully, we discover that the Spirit of Yahweh (God) makes his messages himself as described in the "Visions and Dreams" of the prophets Isaiah, Jeremiah and Ezekiel and as also described in this book. So, it is more realistic to believe that it was in fact the Spirit of Yahweh who asked Mary if she agreed with his Project. God Reveals that he took human form in the womb of Mary. So probably the Message was as simple **"that she will give birth to a Holy child in 1 year."** Why 1 year? Because that is the time given for all the "miracle child Announcements" in the OT. You should know that at that time, all young women dreamed of being the mother of the "Messiah announced" by the prophets. So Mary accepted this great honor with joy. See also articles |37-A and 37-F|.

Unlike the NT, Mary did not have a fiancé. Why? God is Holy, he is not a manipulator who inserts himself into people's love lives to play tricks as mentioned awkwardly in the Gospels. Mary was a virtuous 16-year-old woman and her parents knew it very well. She broke the news to her parents 3 months before the very beginning of her pregnancy. Of course, her parents were eventually forced to admit this miracle. At that time, a pregnant woman had to have a husband. So Joachim (Mary's father) searched for a man of great trust for his daughter, and that man was Joseph. Joseph was 29 years older than Mary. Joseph was waiting for the coming of the "Messiah" for his people Israel. Joseph believed Joachim. At 45, Joseph was too old to start a new family and he was not interested in that either. He only wanted to help fulfill the prophecy of Isaiah. Isaiah had announced that "the virgin will be pregnant," therefore without a husband. For Joseph, it was obvious that she was going to need a husband, so he decided to take this honor by protecting Mary and her child (the Saint of Israel). Joseph was a carpenter. It is reported that he worked on the palace of Herod. Obviously, he did not come home often. So I think it reasonable that Mary stayed with her own parents until she became a mature woman and Jesus was at least 5 years old.

According to the Jewish beliefs of the time, it is unthinkable that Joseph touched Mary in a marital way. Why? **God was seen as "Terrible."** Mary was the **"temple of the Messiah of God,"** so for Joseph **Mary was sacred.** Yes, it is mentioned in the canonical Gospels that Jesus had brothers and probably sisters. On the other hand, for this point the apocryphal Gospels inform us. They report that Joseph was a widower and that he had children from a first marriage.

Jesus being Yahweh made human and not the Messiah, the accounts of the birth of Jesus in the Gospels are only folklore. No census, no star, no mage king, no murder of newborn children by Herod, no flight to Egypt, no gifts (gold, frankincense and myrrh) and nothing to see with King David. Yes, a little baby in the loving arms of Mary. Joseph happy to welcome the miracle child announced. A baby like other babies who simply need to be taken care of. And a very great hope in the hearts of Mary and Joseph. Jesus grew up like other children of his time. A Jewish family like the others. He was circumcised like all 8-day-old boys. Jesus was a wise and intelligent boy. He played like all the others and hurt himself sometimes. He helped his parents in the required family tasks. He went to the Synagogue and practiced Judaism like all Jews. Jesus was born in Nazareth (in Galilee) and spent his childhood there.

2) Profession of Jesus.

Even though Joseph was a carpenter, it is more realistic to think that Jesus was a healer and that he had learned his profession young (about 16 years old). Why? To accomplish his future mission, Jesus needed to be very accustomed to the public, to be known and appreciated by people. In addition, Jesus had a very gentle character (he is Saint). Obviously, the hard work on construction sites like Herod's Palace (in Caesarea near Nazareth) was completely incompatible with his character and his preparatory work. In addition, Jesus had to study in depth the Jewish Scriptures invented by the scribes in order to thwart the traps of the religious of the time.

3) New Covenant.

At the time of Jesus, the people of Israel were under the yoke of the invader (Rome). Through his prophets, Yahweh (God) announced forgiveness and a new Covenant, so the people waited for Israel to be reborn and to become sovereign again. The people were obviously waiting for a liberator (the Messiah) to make all this happen.

For the people, peace (the new Kingdom) could only be achieved by waging war and driving the enemies out of their land. For God, peace (the new Kingdom) can only be accomplished by his own coming to earth (Jesus), because God is the only Holy One (without any evil). God wants to show humans how to live in peace even with those who are against us, through forgiveness. God wants to show how to live in harmony, by helping people and uniting them as if they were brothers and sisters. Obviously here, what the people wanted and what God wants are in complete opposition. The people wanted peace (the Kingdom of Israel) through violence. God wants peace (the Kingdom of God) by building it day by day and little by little through acts of kindness around us.

4) Beginning of the mission of Jesus.

According to the Gospels, Jesus began his mission at age 30, after the death of Joseph. When Jesus was baptized by John the Baptist, there was no "dove or voice from heaven (sky) from his heavenly Father," because he does not exist. With this baptism, Jesus began his mission. Nor was Jesus "carried away into the desert to meet Satan," because he does not exist either. Yes, Christianity is full of folklore (or traditions) and that is what makes it so charming.

In article [36-F], Jesus Revealed that he went to meet sick people. Jesus used the contents of his missionary bag and healed people with the effort of his hands as a dedicated person could. Jesus Revealed that he did not perform healings or miracles on earth. Jesus taught righteousness and goodness of heart. Money was not important. Jesus taught that one should seek God personally in one's life. He taught that rituals were not pleasing to God and did not cleanse any one of their heartlessness. At best, it gave one clean hands. Jesus encouraged the underprivileged by telling them of a Kingdom without evil that was coming soon. Jesus spoke to people in a universal way. Whether men, women, children, the sick, the lame, the publicans, and even those believed to be possessed by a demon. No one was excluded from the Eternal Covenant. God came to earth (Jesus) for everyone. He came to show, by his example, what pleased God.

5) Jesus and Judaism.

Judaism at the time of Jesus had more than 600 laws whereas God (Yahweh) once had only given the 2 tables of the 10 Commandments. Jesus denounced the abuses of religious authorities. Saying that they put burdens on the people while they themselves did not touch it with their little finger. Jesus said that religion is a matter of the heart and not of mechanical rituals. Jesus displeased the religious authorities who were the very wealthy class of the time. Jesus taught that people should live as brothers and sisters and help each other. Jesus announced a new Kingdom soon, that of God. In fact Jesus announced the Kingdom of God and not the Kingdom of Israel, people have surely confused the two. Some people followed Jesus to get a good place in this new Kingdom, they are the apostles. Jesus let all those who needed him to approach him. He did not reject anyone. Around him, there were even women of bad life who had decided to start a new righteous life.

6) Jesus and theology.

All the time the apostles walked with Jesus, he never taught theology (a science about God) like in the Gospels. Jesus was announcing the Kingdom of God or the New Covenant and a Way of conversion of the heart, that is all. No "Son of God", no "Son of Man", no "many Persons in God."

Like any Jew of the time, Jesus spoke of Satan and demons. Why? I have 3 Manifestations of the Spirit of Jesus on this subject. Obviously since Jesus was a healer, he physically healed the sick, but at the same time recited prayers for the release of the demons that caused the disease (small ritual of exorcism). On the other hand, Jesus did not speak of a great divine battle against Satan and his demons as in the Gospels and the book of Revelation, because we have seen that they are "symbolic characters of evil" and not realities.

Moreover on earth, Jesus did not call himself "Lord" as mentioned in the Gospels, because that means "Adonai" which is the "little sacred name of YHWH," that would have been an unbearable blasphemy for the Jews. All this is still folklore.

We saw in article |35-A| that Judaism at the time of Jesus was not unified, but that it contained several Jewish religious movements, each with diverse beliefs (Sadducees, Pharisees, Essenes, etc.).

7) Jesus and his group.

I point out to you that there is a very serious problem in the accounts of the Gospels. Jesus does not sufficiently prepare his apostles and disciples in order to put in place a solid relief. The thought of the apostles is downright scattered! In the real world, we have seen that Jesus Reveals that he is human and has no power. Then Jesus could be killed at any time and his mission would be aborted! Obviously, Jesus had to prepare his relief very early on. **Jesus must give a tradition to his disciples. Jesus had no choice but to lay the foundations of his own small Jewish religious movement.**

To do this, Jesus used what the Jews knew of his time. Jesus gave rituals. Purification by water has become water baptism. Jesus used the ritual of the breaking of bread and the cup of wine well known in Judaism, symbols of the Covenant with God (Yahweh). Jesus gave the prayer of the children of God, the "Our Father." Jesus also gave beliefs. The belief that the Kingdom of God is coming soon. The belief that God is loving like a Father and is forgiving. At that time, the doctrine of Jesus was transmitted orally and not in writing. In fact, the disciples of Jesus were his followers and the apostles were the leaders of the new small religious movement. At any time, the apostles had to be ready to take over the succession of Jesus. I believe very likely that this small religious movement was initially called: "the children of God" and not the Christians, because Jesus is not the Christ, but the Father of Heaven made human without anyone knowing it. Jesus obviously kept this secret impossible to reveal. Concerning the belief of the Kingdom of God soon, in chapter |37|, the Lord Revealed that the Kingdom of God was really established on Earth as in Heaven at the time of the apostles without them understanding it.

This small religious movement grew after the Resurrection of Jesus. The Gospels that we have (0060 to 0110) are not texts to found the basis of a new religion. **No, the basis was already there with Jesus, it was oral.** The Gospels are in fact texts to expand a small existing religion. The Gospels are texts to convert Jews and Gentiles from the years 0060 to 0110. I give you a proof. In the Gospels, Jesus strongly criticizes the Pharisee movement as if it were a very important religious movement. Yes, the Pharisee movement is important, but after the destruction of the Temple (0070) which coincides with the writing of the Gospels. On the other hand, at the time of Jesus, this Pharisee movement had no importance. We see here that the Gospels put concerns in the mouths of Jesus and the apostles that are not those of the 0030s, but of the 0060s to 0110s. In simple terms, to make a large-scale conversion of the Jews and pagans of the years 0060 to 0110, people had to be told what they wanted to hear, which was the Gospels (a unifying religious teaching). Here, Jesus dead and Risen (therefore invincible) was going to restore the Kingdom. The Gospels are texts to please everyone, all the beliefs of the time and even those of the pagans are there: the Messiah, the Christ, the Son of man, the Son of God, the Word (the Logos), etc.

It is impossible to use the Gospels to reconstruct the real story of the passage of Jesus (0030), because these are stories to convert people with multiple beliefs (Jews and pagans) from the years 0060 to 0110. In fact, the Christians of the years 0060 to 0110 did not write the memories of their past. No, they wrote texts in order to explain and prove, by all imaginable means, including making Satan and the demons speak, that Jesus is the expected Messiah.

8) The Christian religion did not exist.

Contrary to the Gospels, Jesus sometimes went out on the road, but he was not always away. Why? Jesus was working on the construction and solidification phase of his small movement of the 0030s. On the other hand, the Gospels were written for the expansion phase of the movement, so here the "character of Jesus" is always shown on the roads with his apostles and disciples.

Contrary to what we have been taught, it was not the apostles who founded the religion and the assembly of the children of God after the Pentecost of the apostles, but Jesus himself when he was human on Earth. I give you a proof. After Pentecost, the book of Acts of the Apostles describes the establishment of a small, well-organized community (with prayers, meals and very complex religious teaching) in a very short period of time when the apostles were until totally disorganized. Impossible, because the apostles are described as uneducated workers and not as experienced religious! I can tell you that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} does not teach us in minutes, but in years! So it was Jesus who founded and organized his Jewish religious movement little by little over the years. Jesus must have had at least a hundred followers including the apostles

when he was put to death. The succession was sufficient and everything was in place. Why did the early Christian communities hide this in the NT? Simply to gain power over the new religion. In this way, only the communities coming from the apostles could claim the right to teach in the name of Jesus. In reality, Jesus Reveals that only those who have received his Spirit within them have the right to teach in his name. This explains the dispersion of Christianity, the ignorance that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is a real Manifestation (not poetry) and that the Holy Spirit is in fact the Spirit of Jesus. It is also for this reason that St-Paul founded several Christian communities without being an apostle. For my part, the Lord asked me to write and distribute this present book and not to set up a Christian community.

As I said, Jesus founded his small Jewish religious movement in the year 0030 which was probably to be called "the children of God." After the destruction of the Temple of Jerusalem in the year 0070 by the Romans, the whole of Judaism was forced to redefine itself. There were only 2 Jewish religious movements that survived, because they could do without this Temple. The Pharisee Jewish movement and the Jewish movement founded by Jesus. The first was renamed "Rabbinic Judaism" and the second was renamed "Christianity." See article |35-A|.

9) The NT is very complex.

After thousands of hours of work, I can tell you that the Gospels are very far from being simple texts collecting the memories of the apostles. The Gospels bring together the cosmogony of the time, hence the star and the Magi. The Gospels bring together the fulfillment of many prophecies invented by OT scribes such as the "Son of Man" and the "Messiah." The Gospels try so hard to bring together the many religious beliefs of the time (Jewish and pagan) that the speeches in the mouth of the character of Jesus, about the mysteries, are sometimes contradictory and on the whole they are insoluble.

10) The Messiah.

Why was Jesus killed by the Romans? When the small religious movement of Jesus began to make people talk a little too much about it with its announcement of the Kingdom soon, the Jewish and Roman authorities set in motion. Jesus was talking about a new Kingdom, so obviously there would be a new king. At that time, who speaks of a new king, automatically speaks of the expected Messiah King, because Israel was under the yoke of the invader (Rome). It is important to know that the idea of the Messiah of the time of Jesus is not the same as that of the Messiah of Christianity today. For Christians today, Jesus is the Messiah, the Liberator of human death. This is a distortion, it was not the idea of the Messiah of that time. The Messiah was a man of war, probably a glorious king like David, who was going to drive the invader (the Romans) out of Israel. Jesus has nothing to do with the myth of the Messiah. If you want to give a qualifier to Jesus, you can say that he is the Redeemer. Redemption means: "to Save by his sacrifice, that of his life." Rome allowed the priests to keep their religion and their Temple if in return, they helped Rome to keep peace among the people. A person claimed to be the Messiah King had to die so as not to raise the scourge of Rome against the population. It is for this false label of the Messiah King stuck to Jesus that he was executed (put to death). Historians say that at the time of Jesus, the people were so desperate for a "messiah" that they saw him everywhere. They say that the authorities killed these "so-called messiahs" regularly and that for them, Jesus was just one of many. On the other hand, we will see the real reason for the condemnation of Jesus in article |38-S|.

How was Jesus arrested? Here we are going to have to draw from the Gospels, because the Lord has given me no information on this subject. When Jesus and his apostles went to Jerusalem for Passover that year, there were a few too many pilgrims waiting for the "Messiah" in the eyes of the Roman authorities. You should know that the story of Jesus on the little donkey is only folklore. Why? Jesus is not the Messiah of the Scriptures invented by the Jewish scribes of the time. It was only then that Jesus realized that his days were numbered. He did not need to be a seer and see into the future. Judas Iscariot decided that it was time to deliver Jesus to the Jewish authorities so that they recognize that Jesus is the expected Messiah King and that an insurrection against the Romans begins. We know that this did not work and that Judas committed suicide the day Jesus died. Moreover, you should know that "Iscariot" is not a "name," but a "nickname" that the apostles gave to Judas after delivering Jesus. "Iscariot" means "he is a knife specialist and he gets paid," so he is a mercenary or a traitor. Here, "Judas Iscariot" means "Judas the Traitor."

Unlike the NT, Jesus did not hint that he was going to die until he saw the many pilgrims awaiting for the Messiah at the Jewish Passover that year. Why? Jesus Revealed to be human like you and me, so he did not know it. The Gospels speak of thousands of pilgrims awaiting the Messiah. We have seen that one of the functions of the Gospels is to prove, by any

means necessary, that Jesus is the expected Messiah, hence this large number. On the other hand, in reality, I believe that there were not more than a hundred and for the Romans, that was already too many. On the evening of his last meal (the Last Supper) with his apostles, he unveiled something very astonishing. Jesus said he was the new Passover. That it was by offering his body and his blood that he was going to establish the New Eternal Covenant promised by Yahweh. Jesus became like the lamb slain on the sacrificial altar. How could the body of Jesus replace unleavened bread? How could the blood of Jesus replace the blood shed on the mercy seat of the Ark of the Covenant for the forgiveness of sins? Here I point out to you that Jesus is talking about eating a human sacrifice and not that of a lamb. **So the apostles must have been really afraid of what Jesus was saying!**

11) The death and Resurrection of Jesus.

Did Jesus announce his Resurrection? No! Why? Because we have seen that Jesus left in Spirit (in Light at the tomb). He is not resurrected in flesh and bones like the Jewish belief. So Jesus did not announce Jewish myths! In addition, all this would have created appalling complications in front of the great stone closing the tomb as described in the Gospels. There would have been Roman guards everywhere, the search for the missing body and the hunt for Jesus's disciples. Obviously, Jesus kept secret about his Resurrection.

That same evening, Jesus was arrested in the Garden of Gethsemane. The apostles panicked. They were afraid for their lives. They did not know what was going to happen. Then there was this so-called trial in the middle of the night at the Sanhedrin. The condemnation of Jesus had already been pronounced for weeks. Historians say that Pontius Pilate was, exceptionally, in Jerusalem that Passover. Obviously, in order to condemn Jesus! Jesus was arrested on Thursday evening and put on the cross the following day at noon. This lapse of time is far too short for the account of the trial of Jesus described in the Gospels to be possible. In such a short time, Jesus did not have a trial, he was murdered by the authorities. In addition, Jesus received 2 sentences, the flogging and the crucifixion. According to Roman law, it was illegal to have 2 sentences, it was one or the other, not both. The first sentence was a slow death by blood poisoning and the other was a slightly faster death by suffocation. His crown of thorns and his royal mantle were taken from him at Fortress Antonia before the very beginning of his way of the Cross. They hit him in the face so that the population would not recognize him, so that he could not speak, fearing that revolutionaries would rise up in the name of their "Messiah King." Jesus suffered 3 hours on the cross before dying. This is the duration of each of the 2 Eucharistic Manifestations that I had. Jesus suffered so much that his blood on the Shroud of Turin became impregnated in red and not in black or brown. This is what scientific analysis of the Shroud of Turin has revealed.

During this time, the apostles had hidden, because they feared for their lives. Who were at the foot of the cross? The Gospels report the presence of women including Mary Magdalene, Mary the mother of Jesus and the apostle John. Joseph of Arimathea and Nicodemus took down the body of Jesus from the cross. Obviously, to obtain the body of Jesus, it was easier to bribe the soldiers than to ask permission from Pontius Pilate! Jesus was laid in a new tomb that belonged to Joseph of Arimathea. The body of Jesus was washed and put in a Shroud (that of Turin). The stone has been closed in front of the tomb. No, there were no dead people buried in the past who resurrected and walked the streets of Jerusalem when Jesus died.

The Jewish custom of the time says that the stone remained closed for one year during the time of degradation of the soft parts of the body. Afterwards, people came to collect the bones to put them in an ossuary to await the great resurrection at the end of time. Jesus had not said that he was going to Rise, so no one was waiting for anything in front of the tomb. There were no women, no Roman soldiers, not even angels, only Jesus alone lying in the tomb.

Jesus is Risen on Passover morning. Jesus is not Risen in flesh and bones as said in the Gospels, but in Spirit. This is the flash of the Light imprinted on the Shroud of Turin. Yahweh who had become man became Spirit again. At the Resurrection, Jesus passed from the human condition to the Spirit condition, he is the Spirit of God (the Holy Spirit), the Spirit of Jesus and more precisely (the Wind or Breath of the Risen Body of Jesus). At the tomb, the stone never rolled aside. Jesus never Appeared as a human being (in the flesh) before his apostles. The story of the Ascension of Jesus into heaven (sky) never happened. All this is just folklore, beliefs put into images in the Gospels.

After the Resurrection, it is the Event of Pentecost. Article |13-J| describes the beginning of Pentecost. At night, the Spirit of Jesus comes from Heaven and fills the upper room. Article |13-D| describes the continuation of Pentecost by the {birth

of the Spirit} of the apostles. Unfortunately, like all NT accounts, the facts are mixed with the mythology of the time. So, we must remove the story of the many peoples who came from everywhere and who heard the apostles speak in their own respective languages. Take away the story of the almost instantaneous conversion of 3,000 people. Take away the story of St-Peter who spoke as if he knew all the mysteries of God from the start, while God Reveals them gradually over the years as in this present book. In fact, this grandiose and cosmopolitan part of the Pentecost story pictures God's forgiveness following the mythological story of the Tower of Babel that once separated peoples and created many languages.

12) Communion with the Body of Jesus and his Apparitions.

In the small religious movement that Jesus had established, the ritual of bread and wine was often practiced as we do today. So, without knowing it, the apostles commemorated the last meal of Jesus (the Last Supper). They received the same 2 Eucharistic Manifestations as me from article |13-G|. With this commemoration, Jesus (Yahweh) established the new Eternal Covenant promised by the prophets of the Old Testament.

Some time later, at night, the Spirit of Jesus Appeared coming out of them in "Light" like me in article |34-N| in point 3). The Light represents Yahweh (the Creator), the Silhouette represents that Yahweh became human (Jesus) and the Face like the Jewish Passover Bread represents the Eternal Covenant. After this Apparition of the Lord Jesus in them, the apostles removed the stone in front of the tomb. The Shroud remained in place, but Jesus was gone. The mark of the Resurrection of Jesus was imprinted in the Shroud. The apostles picked up the Shroud and kept it, it is the Shroud of Turin that we have today.

13) Search for the identity of Jesus.

The reality the apostles experienced did not agree with their Jewish beliefs. Of course, the Scriptures (the OT) they had in their hands were full of myths like any other religion. All that remained was to distort what they had experienced to fit the beliefs of the Jews of the time. It was necessary to continue the myths (beliefs) that the Jews had in mind at that time to convince them. **Otherwise, the message of Jesus would not have survived!** All the Scriptures of the time were put to use, and even the mythical books of Daniel and Enoch. Here, the NT was born with its myths. For more details, see articles |34-J and 35-G|.

Jesus Reveals in article |36-F| that he did not perform healings or miracles when he walked as a human on earth and that he had no power unlike the Gospels. So for the apostles, Jesus was a man like the others, but with a different vision of things. Jesus was simply building up his little Jewish religious movement. Jesus taught that it is by working together that this Kingdom of peace will finally exist. Jesus was announcing the Kingdom soon, but the apostles never knew exactly what it was. See article |37-E|.

Jesus taught that we should pray to God as a Father. This was nothing new at the time. The Hebrew people saw God as their Creator, their Protector and that they were heirs of the Covenant, therefore that the people were "sons of God." For Jesus, each member of the small community he had formed was a "son or daughter of God." The members saw Jesus as a "son of God," a big brother. Jesus recited the "Our Father" prayer with his members.

It was only after the Resurrection and Pentecost that the belief about Jesus as an ordinary man changed. The apostles felt that the Spirit in them made himself "feel God" and that he had made them {reborn} in the image of Adam. The apostles did not understand. Thereafter, they ate the bread and drank the wine as usual, then Communion to the Body of Jesus was felt in them. They knew even less than I what had happened, because they did not have the Scriptures of the NT, but only those of the OT. At first, the Manifestations of the Spirit in them were felt only as "God." Then, gradually, the human Presence of Jesus made himself felt in the Manifestations of the Spirit. In the Manifestations, there was everything: 1) the Presence of God, 2) the Presence of a Wind or a Breath, 3) the human Presence of Jesus. Then the Apparition of Jesus coming out of them in Luminous Silhouette with the face like the bread of the Jewish Passover.

The best explanation that the apostles found for "the Apparition of Jesus coming out of them in Luminous Silhouette" was that Yahweh (God), who is Spirit (Breath and Light), had given Life to the Body of Jesus (Resurrected). Yahweh had United Jesus to him. The (Lord Yahweh of the OT) had begotten his Son (the Lord Jesus of the NT). The Son (Jesus) had received the spiritual anointing (the Breath) from his Father (Yahweh), Jesus was then the Christ and the expected King Messiah,

hence the beliefs of the Synoptic Gospels. Thus the Messianic age had arrived, hence the beliefs of the book of Revelation. The Lord Jesus being in the Breath of Yahweh, Jesus was then "the Lord who Speaks" hence the belief that Jesus is the Word of God (the Logos) of the Gospel of John.

The apostles never knew the real identity of Jesus, because Jesus could not tell them. It would have been unbearable blasphemy leading to stoning. The search for the identity of Jesus has continued in Christianity for over 300 years without ever being discovered. Finally, Constantine invented the Trinity: 1) the Presence of God (being Yahweh the Father), 2) the Presence of a Wind or Breath (being the Holy Spirit), 3) the human Presence of Jesus (being the Son). All these many mysterious constructions were to bypass a simple but unthinkable reality, Jesus is Yahweh made human who came to fulfill on earth the promised Eternal Covenant.

14) Beginning of the Christian religion.

The Christian religion was built with all these mysteries, they are the Gospels. The Gospels are not historical texts of the memoirs of the apostles as we have been taught since childhood, but texts of religious beliefs forged in the late first century and brought to life through stories of Jesus and his apostles, in order to expand an already existing religion. Here, the initial message of Jesus (in order to begin the construction of the Kingdom of justice and peace on earth) was put in the background, because Jesus the "divine Messiah" was soon to return with a sword in his hand and his holy angels to solve all our problems. The mysteries became more important than making one's conversion of the heart, spreading good around us and belonging to God as Jesus had taught in the 0030s. In reality, Jesus being Yahweh in person made human and the Kingdom of God being Revealed to be "in God" as seen in article |37-E|, then the announced Kingdom had already begun on earth since Jesus (God) was with his apostles and disciples. Thereafter, by receiving the {gift of the Spirit of Jesus} in them at Pentecost, the Kingdom begun on earth continued Eternally after their human life. No one needed to wait for anything, not the end of time, not the Return of the Messiah, not even the Judgment.

Although Jesus Reveals that he did not perform miracles when he was a human on earth, Jesus performed miracles after his Resurrection. In this book, I have given you several testimonies. We have seen that the Gospels do not give accounts of historical facts, but pictures the religious beliefs of the time. For example, if Jesus is identified as the "Son of Man," then it is written that Jesus walked on water to picture this. On the other hand, it should be known that there are real facts hidden under these accounts. The miraculous birth of Jesus is real. On the other hand, Jesus is not the Son of God, but Yahweh in person. The Resurrection of Jesus occurred in Spirit, it is the Breath or Wind of the Risen Body of Jesus. After his Resurrection, Jesus did not Appear in flesh and bones in front of his apostles, but by his Luminous Silhouette with the face like the Bread of the Jewish Passover. The real Apparition of Jesus in Luminous Silhouette was taken up to write the imaginary story of the Transfiguration of Jesus on the mountain. In the Gospels, several miracles performed by Jesus after his Resurrection have been taken up and pictured to try to demonstrate to the Jews of the time that Jesus was the Lord (Adonai) when he walked on earth. Yes, Jesus is the Lord, but after his Resurrection, because he becomes Spirit (Yahweh) again.

15) Fabulous Scriptures as in all other religions.

Like all NT accounts, there is a fabulous part in the accounts of the Acts of the Apostles. This is the case of the story of the death of Ananias and his wife, because they had lied to St-Peter. This imaginary story simply serves to demonstrate the power of the new church. There are accounts of St-Paul giving many details, surely real, about the expansion of Christianity into pagan territories. Finally, there is the Christian tradition making the apostles heroes of the faith, dead in excruciating pain, whereas the Lord Reveals that a {God's child} does not die, but departs from Earth, by His Spirit dwelling within him, without any suffering and in Happiness, see article |33-G|.

Now for readers who would like to hear about Mary Magdalene. According to my sources, she was about 50 years old and wealthy. She would have financed part of the mission of Jesus and his apostles. She had notoriety among the apostles. She would have suffered from attacks of hysteria, which explains why she was believed to be possessed by demons. Of course, she was healed by Jesus, but when she received the Holy Spirit (the Spirit of Jesus) within her. In the Gospels, this miracle was simply moved to show that Jesus on earth had the power to cast out demons.

It is true that early Christians were persecuted, but it was not as legendary as reported. See also article |36-H|. Throughout their journey, the Lord Jesus supported them by the {gift of his Spirit}, by Manifestations of his Spirit in them, by many

miracles and healings. **Without this support of the Lord, Christianity would never have survived.** With the double Manifestation of the Spirit in article |38-K|, the Lord Jesus will inform us about the healings and miracles he gives.

16) Legalization of Christianity.

Finally, all that remained was to wait for emperor Constantine in the year 0313 to make Christianity, a State religion. Obviously, the NT accounts had to be called accurate **in order to cement the whole thing forever.** It is for this reason that this present book has been so difficult to make. It was necessary that the Lord Jesus, the only one present at that time, gives his Revelations. That he asks me to break the cement of the NT (this from the Manifestation of the Spirit of article |34-I|) to thus allow the reconstitution of the real history.

The Lord wanted his story to be known, so you have it in your hands...

|38-J| Where do the many titles given to Jesus in the Gospels come from?

A) First title: Jesus is Lord.

Lord means “Adonai” which is the little sacred name of Yahweh. Lord means “Divinity.” In the NT there are 2 Lords. There is God the Father who is named: “the Lord God.” There is also God the Son who is named: “the Lord Jesus.” Unlike the Gospels, when Jesus walked as a human on Earth, he did not call himself Lord, he called himself Jesus or “rabbi which means master or teacher.”

It was only after the miracle of his Resurrection that the apostles sought the real identity of Jesus. At the Last Supper, Jesus said that he is the new Passover. After his Resurrection, the Lord Jesus caused the apostles to {be born again} as {God’s children}, through the {gift of his Spirit} in them. Yes, the Spirit of Jesus made himself felt as God in them. Subsequently, there was the double Manifestation of the communion with Jesus (Body and Blood). Then, the Spirit of Jesus Appeared coming out of each of the apostles in the form of a “Luminous Silhouette with the face like the bread of the Jewish Passover.” See article |34-N| in point 3). The apostles clearly felt that Jesus is God. The Spirit of Jesus Manifests himself as “a Wind or a Breath” which is the sign of Divinity. The Spirit of Jesus Manifests himself through the “Turbulence of his Flame of Fire” and is called himself “I Am” as in the account of Yahweh in the burning bush with Moses. In addition, the Spirit of Jesus is Invisible like the Spirit of Yahweh Manifested to the prophets of the OT. Since in Judaism, there is only one God who is Yahweh. So Jesus was simply Yahweh God made human.

On the other hand, the apostles did not understand! Why? Jesus had walked with them and performed no miracles. Jesus was human. For them, Yahweh God who is Spirit and who is seen as Terrible could not have become human. Yahweh God could not have died like a heretic on a cross. **All this was unthinkable at the time!** The only explanation that the apostles found is that at his Resurrection, Jesus was Divinized (Glorified) by Yahweh God (who here became his Father). The Lord Yahweh God had changed Jesus from a man to a Lord (Divinity). Yes for the apostles, before the Resurrection of Jesus, there was only one Lord (Yahweh) as mentioned in the OT. But after the Resurrection, there were 2 Lords: God the Father (Yahweh) and God the Son (Jesus).

B) Second title: Jesus, God the Son.

For the apostles, when Jesus walked on earth, he was an ordinary man like any other, but with a big heart. Jesus was a healer who founded his own small Jewish religious movement. Jesus healed people in a humane way and at the same time recited prayers for the deliverance of the demons that caused illness (small exorcise ritual). The small religious movement of Jesus was to resemble a “welcome house” for people in society who were in difficulty. This little movement healed the sick and fed the hungry, all the while telling them about God, his Love and his Forgiveness. Obviously, this explains why the apostles were mainly fishermen. Yes, they contributed food to the movement founded by Jesus.

In the community Jesus formed, **they were all sons and daughters of God**, for the Jews of the time saw God as their Father in heaven (sky). They were all brothers and sisters and Jesus was seen as their big brother. The disciples of Jesus saw him as a prophet, announcing the coming of the Kingdom of God soon. A Kingdom of justice and peace. In fact, this was actually going to be accomplished, at the Resurrection of Jesus and the {gift of his Spirit}. See article |37-E|. Since the Resurrected

Jesus made himself feel “God” and when he walked on earth he was seen as a “son of God” and a big brother, then Jesus was identified as God the Son.

C) Third title: Jesus, Son of Man.

This title of “Son of Man” comes from the mythological book of Enoch that the apostles had in their hands at that time. Here, the Lord God (Yahweh) is called the “Lord of spirits,” he is the Lord of heaven (sky). The “Son of Man” is the right arm of the Lord of spirits, he is the Lord of the earth. It is the Son of Man who will return at the end of time to rule humanity in peace and justice, and to judge the living and the dead. The book of Revelation of (John of Patmos and not of St-John) illustrates these beliefs of the time.

D) Fourth title: Jesus, the Messiah (in Hebrew) or Christ (translated into Greek).

On earth, Jesus announces the Kingdom of God. Then there will be a new king. Israel was under the yoke of the invader (the Romans). For the Jews, the King Messiah was needed to expel them from their country. The Jews were awaiting the great resurrection at the end of time which was the messianic era (the era of the Messiah). Jesus was Resurrected, so the messianic era had begun! After his Resurrection, Jesus was immortal and therefore impossible to defeat. So Jesus was, according to the apostles, the expected Messiah who would soon return to begin the Kingdom he had announced.

The Christian religion was born from a mixture between:

1)	The miracle of the Resurrection of Jesus who is Yahweh God in person (not the Messiah).
2)	The belief and very strong expectation of the Messiah by the Jewish population which is in fact a myth.

The people were waiting for the Messiah to take revenge. Yahweh became human (Jesus) to establish his Kingdom of peace (his 2nd Alliance), see article |37-E|. The Gospels are imaginary stories of Jesus and his apostles in order to assemble the fact that (Jesus is God) and the myth of the expected Messiah. The character of Jesus here becoming the Divinized Messiah, which he is not.

E) Fifth title: Jesus, the Word of God.

In the book of Enoch, the Son of Man existed even before the Creation of the world. On earth, the Son of Man was the spokesperson for the Lord of spirits (the Lord of heaven). The apostles thought that during the Apparitions of Jesus in Luminous Silhouette, Jesus was in the Glory (Light) of Yahweh. So, the Lord Jesus was the Image (the Visible) of Yahweh (the Invisible) or even that Jesus was the Word (the Visible) of Yahweh (the Invisible). This concept is the “Logos” which is the basis of the writing of the Gospel of John.

F) Sixth title: Jesus, one of the three Persons in God (the Trinity).

The Trinity is composed of: 1) the Father (Yahweh), 2) the Son (Jesus) and 3) the Holy Spirit who is seen as the Spirit of Unity shared between the Father and the Son.

3	In the OT, there is only one Lord or Divinity, Yahweh. Here <u>the Spirit of God</u> inspired the prophets.
2	In the NT, Jesus was Divinized by Yahweh (God). Jesus is <u>the Son of God and the Word of God</u> .
1	Yahweh (1st Lord) of the OT is <u>the Father</u> of Jesus (2nd Lord) of the NT.

Here, a human invention to bypass a simple reality... Jesus is (Yahweh God) made human to fulfill the Eternal Alliance announced by his prophets of the OT. The Holy Spirit is in fact the Spirit of Jesus who is “the Wind or Breath of the Resurrected Body of Jesus.” In Part 2 of this book, the Lord Jesus repeatedly testifies that this is the reality.

|38-K| Double Manifestation of the Spirit of 16 September 2023

The day before this double Manifestation, I asked myself 2 questions. They are found below in 1) and 2).

1) Why does not the Lord perform physical miracles and healings in abundance on Earth?

Why do we sometimes have to pray for a long time to obtain what we ask for to the point that it seems a little discouraging? Why sometimes do we receive nothing? This, even for the requests of {God’s children}...

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Romans	8,26	In the same way, the Spirit too comes to the aid of our weakness; for we do not know how to pray as we ought,
----	----------------------------------	------	---

(*) Here, St-Paul subtly lets us see that he does not always get what he asks for!

My first Manifestation of the Spirit, on the night of September 16, 2023, was simply a “**Turbulence of Flame of Fire within me.**” Then about an hour later, my second Manifestation was a direct message like this: “every {God’s child} died and Resurrected in the tomb with the Lord Jesus, **this is the only Miracle.**”

(*) Here what the Lord points to is the **{gift of the Spirit} of article | 13-D |**. **This is the entry into the 2nd Alliance.**

The Lord says that the {gift of the Spirit} is in fact "the only Miracle" he has promised us. He says that the little miracles and healings we ask for are absolutely not part of his promise, and that if we do not receive anything, it is perfectly normal. At first glance, I must admit I found his Message a little discouraging! Of course, we all need a little help from our Creator! On the other hand, I know that the Lord does little wonders here and there on our Way to Him, because I have had several. So, I understood that there is a “**Key**” to the little miracles and healings that the Lord gives. They are for advancing his Project (his 2nd Alliance). Here it is...

A	If a person follows the Way of Jesus to the {gift of the Spirit}, he can obtain a healing or a miracle from the Lord to support him. I had at least 3.
B	If a person has obtained the {gift of the Spirit}. He can obtain a healing or a miracle if it serves the Project of the 2nd Alliance. For example, after the {gift of the Spirit}, I obtained 2 small healings to help me write this present book requested by the Lord for you.

2) On the other hand, why can a {God’s child} obtain a Manifestation of the Spirit of the Lord often?

In fact, a {God’s child} can have Manifestations of the Spirit of the Lord frequently, because **{the Spirit of the Lord dwells in him}** from the article | 13-D |. Subsequently, the other Manifestations of the Spirit in the {God’s children} are direct Communication. The most common Manifestation being the {mark of the anointing} in the chest.

| 38-L | God’s only promises and his great work for us for 3,000 years

A) Before Jesus (the Old Testament).

God established the 1st Covenant by providing himself with a people (that of Israel) in order to educate them and bring them out of the common barbarity of humanity at that time. God gave dietary prescriptions and hygiene rituals so that the people would stop being sick. He made the people proud around religious festivals. **The only promise of God being the Manifestation of his Presence (by his Spirit) in his prophets in order to inspire them with his Wisdom and transmit it to the people.** The mission of the prophets was very difficult, because they were little listened to and the authorities persecuted them. Through the inspiration given to his prophets, God shares his Wisdom with the people. God gradually makes his Holiness known and teaches the people mutual aid, kindness and forgiveness. The people are becoming more and more a “holy nation” in order to enlighten all other nations (the barbarians and the pagans). After 1,000 years of work on the part of God and his prophets, the people were now becoming educated and ready to take a further step in belonging to their Creator. Through the prophets Isaiah then Jeremiah, God describes his people as a “bride” and he announces a new Covenant (or Alliance) soon, an Eternal Marriage.

B) With Jesus (the New Testament).

God became human, it is the Lord Jesus. He desires that we follow His Way of goodness described in the Gospels and that we belong to Him, because He alone is the Absolute Good (Holy). God Reveals that he became human (Jesus) in order to complete our education. Then to take our human death through his cross and to Share his Eternal Life with us through his Resurrection. **This is the new Alliance (Eternal Marriage), the only promise he made to us.**

The Lord Reveals that the 1st and 2nd Covenant are the only 2 “Miracles” that he promised us, regardless of the way in which the “message” was humanly transmitted in the Scriptures of the Bible and whatever the many promises made by religious people (Jews or Christians) in His Name throughout history (like solving all our problems). **The Bible is sacred because it contains 2 real miracles buried beneath its legends.**

|38-M| God Presents himself in different ways

In the OT.

God (Yahweh) Presents himself mainly as a “Current of air” or if you want a “Wind” or a “Breath” which was translated by the word “Spirit” in Greek. Unlike Christianity, there is not one Person who is “Yahweh” and another Person who is “the Spirit of Yahweh.” When Yahweh Presents himself, He is “Spirit” that is all!

In the NT.

God (Yahweh) becomes human (Jesus). A Jewish rabbi would tell me it is impossible: "There is the Creator and there is the creation. The Creator cannot make himself creation!" On the other hand, God Reveals that creation is completely autonomous without him and that no religious theology can define him, because he is Existence in person. He Reveals that he had to become human on Earth in order to establish an Alliance or a “Marriage” between his Divinity (Eternal) and our humanity (temporal). Since Yahweh became human (Jesus), he has all the Divine and human attributes at the same time. It is for this reason that the Lord Jesus Presents himself in different ways. He can Present himself in me as a Spirit. He can Present himself in me as a human caring for the sick or even an executed person lying in the tomb. He can Present himself as God who has Sacrificed himself, here by his "Turbulence of Flame of Fire" in me. He can Present himself in a Divine and human way at the same time as his Apparition in “Luminous Silhouette with the face like the bread of the Jewish Passover.”

|38-N| A “missing Jewish spark” in order to understand!

In the double Manifestation of the Spirit of article |38-K|, the Lord Jesus Reveals capital information. He Reveals that he does not perform miracles in abundance on Earth and that the {gift of his Spirit} in the {God’s children} is for him “the only Miracle.” He Reveals that the {God’s children} are the continuation of the prophets of the OT. So, this means that the only significant Miracles in the OT were simply the inspiration of the prophets by the Spirit of God. This explains the demand for this present book to which the Lord still continues to contribute even after 6 years. Except that this raises an important problem, where do the many wonders recorded in the Bible come from? What are they for? Subsequently, I looked to see if there was a “human recipe” for founding a religion and I found the report of a Jewish rabbi, who without even knowing it, gave me “the spark missing” in order to answer my question below.

Internet Keywords (YouTube)	1) Jésus avant le Christ, un livre d’Armand Abécassis 1) Jesus before Christ, a book by Armand Abécassis
-----------------------------	---

Is religion God's project or a human project?

The general recipe for a religion that I found takes place in 3 times: 1) Past, 2) Present and 3) Future.	
1	In a glorious past, God performed many wonders visible to his people. God gives his prescriptions to the people. Everything is recorded, by the religious, in their sacred books. Finally, God gives an ultimate promise that will only be fulfilled in the (time 3). Then God disappears, because his mission is accomplished.
2	Thereafter, there is a very long absence of God. During this time, the authorities establish their religion and rule the people in the name of God by interpreting their sacred books as they wish. Unfortunately for the authorities, there are prophets who affirm that God is not absent and that he has a Message for us, so they are persecuted.
3	In their sacred books, God's promise to come includes a great punishment and a great reward. But this promise is fabulous, of incredible complexity and very distant. This is to ensure that the promise never happens, and that the religion of the (time 2) has no end.

We have seen that archaeologists discovered that the story of the Exodus with 10 miracles (plagues of Egypt) never existed, so Moses is an invented character. In fact, the real founder of Judaism is Abraham.	
The 3 times of Judaism (the OT)	
1	Through the hand of Moses, God performs 10 miracles (plagues of Egypt) to deliver the Hebrew people from slavery in Egypt. God inspires 5 sacred books to Moses. Then, God disappears.

2	Thereafter, there is a very long absence of God . During this time, the authorities establish their religion and rule the people in the name of God by interpreting their sacred books as they wish. Unfortunately for the authorities, there are prophets who affirm that God is not absent and that he has a Message for us, so they are persecuted.
3	Here, this is the “messiah” awaited by the Jews. The messianic era. In article 34-N , Rabbi Maimonides describes the impossible list that the “messiah” must fulfill. After thousands of years, the Jews are still waiting for their “messiah.”
Since the Lord Reveals that he does not perform miracles in abundance and shows. So, the prodigies of the (time 1) and the (time 3) are legends in order to found a human religion. In an Apparition, the Lord said that His Covenant is with Abraham. Here, only the (time 2) remains true, God inspires his prophets in order to educate the people.	

Since Christianity opened up to the world, then it was necessary to please everyone, Jews and pagans! The (time 1) of Christianity is the fulfillment of the (time 3) of Judaism. Christianity is a “super religion,” because it is propelled from the divine promise fulfilled in an ancient religion (Judaism), which here becomes obsolete.	
The difficulty is that the Lord Jesus Reveals that "the only Miracle" he has performed on Earth is his Resurrection, which he Shares with us. The Lord Jesus Reveals that he dwells in the {God’s children} and has never left! He Reveals that the {God’s children}, including the apostles, are like the prophets of the OT, in order to continue to educate the people.	
The 3 times of Christianity (the NT)	
1	In the Jewish sacred books (the OT), there is a promise of God to come. This is the messianic era (the messiah). Here, Jesus is identified as the “Messiah” of the Jews by his numerous prodigies (miracles and healings) visible to all the people. Since Jesus is Resurrected, the messianic era has finally arrived! Through Jesus, God the Father gives his prescriptions to the people. Everything is recorded, by the religious, in their sacred books of the NT. Finally, Jesus disappears, because he returns to Heaven. The first part of his mission is now accomplished and Jesus will return in the (time 3) , which is the end of time, to fulfill the last part of his mission, the Last Judgment.
2	Thereafter, there is a very long absence of the Lord Jesus. Meanwhile, the religious people lead the people in the name of the Lord by interpreting their sacred books as they wish. Christian religious people, not wanting to be played the same trick as they once played on Jewish religious people, they affirm that God's Revelation is now finished. This so that each of {God’s children} has nothing more to say. Obviously, it was also necessary to slow down the Apparitions (like those of the Virgin Mary), hence the authentication, by the Christian authorities, of only 18 Apparitions out of a total of well over 5,000 reported throughout history.
3	In the sacred books of the NT, there is the promise of the “Return of Jesus the Messiah” for the Last Judgment. He will destroy all evil and God the Father will renew the Earth. It will be a new world of peace and justice. Christians have been waiting for this “Return of Jesus the Messiah” for 2,000 years.

So as discovered in chapter |34|, the Bible is a mixture between:

1	God's inspiration to the prophets and {God’s children} before Constantine, to educate the people.
2	The legends invented by the authorities in order to form 2 human religions (Judaism then Christianity).

Article |38-L| describes God's only promises and his great work for us for 3,000 years. Yahweh God became human (Jesus) not to form a new religion (Christianity), but to fulfill his promise of the 2nd Covenant with his people Israel. Jesus was not the messiah (a myth), so it was not the end of Judaism. On the other hand, God considered that his people Israel were ready to move forward into a new stage, an Eternal Belonging. For God, Judaism would have been reborn and would have opened itself to all other nations in order to enlighten them and share the New Covenant with them. The difficulty is that his people Israel rejected his Project. So God turned to the pagans where he was welcomed. Christianity was born from the fusion of (God's Project) and (Jewish and pagan myths).

Furthermore, God did not want a stagnant religion in the “so-called great period of the absence of God” as Judaism and then Christianity did. No, he wanted a religion which progressed through his Inspiration given to the prophets then to the {God’s children}. This in order to adapt to all times and to the needs of people. A religion that advances in the search for a personal Relationship with God.

|38-O| Why is God seen as “Terrible” in the OT and “Good” in the NT?

A) In the OT.

More than 3,000 years ago, all people were barbarians. Kindness and charity did not really exist. Violence and murder were part of everyday life. God chose a barbarian people among the others, it was the Hebrews who were in fact the Canaanites. The Canaanites even went so far as to make human sacrifices of children to offer them to their divinities. Here, the story of Abraham sacrificing his son Isaac is obviously a prohibition from God to continue their cruel and foul rituals! **God gave himself a barbarian people and educated them, that is all!** It was impossible to educate this wicked and perverse people without making them fear God and believe Him to be Terrible. The people were like a wild beast and God had to domesticate them through his Wisdom.

In the OT, there is a simple explanation for the “**Messages and Visions**” given to the prophets. God gave them the “**Consequence**” of the desire of the authorities and the people to obtain wealth. Yes, the lust of the invaders who would wage war against them, make them suffer and exile them as in Babylon. If the people had owned little, then the conquerors would not have even seen it and the people could have lived in peace in their small territory as God had promised Abraham. In short, God had not promised the Hebrews “war victories” and “splendor” for the nation of Israel, but “Wisdom” to avoid war, live in peace and be a light to other peoples. They did not understand, hence the confusion about God in the OT Scriptures!

B) In the NT.

God presented himself as a human being on Earth (Jesus). Here Jesus described God as the “good Father in Heaven.” I can assure you that not all Jews were convinced of this! The people's fearless and loving relationship with God only appeared with the teaching of Jesus. To establish an Eternal Alliance (a Marriage) between God and humans, God had no choice in making his Goodness known to the people and forgiving them their faults. It is the NT with Christianity. God did not go from “bad” in the OT to “good” in the NT, but the people had to go from “fearing God” in the OT to “loving God” in the NT. Without this passage, the promised 2nd Alliance would have been impossible to achieve, because it is an Alliance of Love between the Creator and his creation (humans).

|38-P| Why is there such great conflict over a single divinity (Yahweh) in the OT?

A) The origin of the name YHWH (Yahweh).

In the real history of the Hebrew people, who were in fact the Canaanites, there were several divinities. Among others, there was the goddess of fertility (Asherah) who was seen as the “wife” of Yahweh. Yahweh is the translation of the tetragram YHWH of Judaism which itself comes from the divinity YHW of the Bedouins of the desert (the Shasu). YHW was the god of desert storms. The difficulty with multiple divinities is that it is very difficult for authorities to govern a people. Yes, one divinity says this and another divinity says the opposite! So, we must unify the people around a single divinity whose authorities control “his words.”

This is the case of Judaism (between the years 900 and 500 BC) with the 5 books of Moses (the Torah) concerning the Law of the one God (Yahweh). This is the case of Christianity with emperor Theodosius (around the year 392 AD), who abolished the old pagan cults on his territory. In fact, if our Creator had truly wanted to annihilate all the divinities, he would obviously have strongly opposed the invented concept of 3 Persons in one God of Christianity (the Trinity)! So, if you do not know what to call God, just call him “**my kind loving Creator**,” he knows very well who you mean, because there is only one and you cannot go wrong!

Internet Keywords	Wikipedia, Shasu
-------------------	------------------

B) My Manifestation of the Spirit of December 7, 2023:

In the night, when I was dreaming of nothing in the dark, I had a Vision. There was a very strong current of air around me, like a storm which scared me a little (2)! Then I saw the Bible in front of me and Scriptures coming out of it. Complete sentences scrolled before me in blue light against a black background. These sentences were very old, from the time of the accounts surrounding Moses. The words in these sentences then separated. Some words moved to the left and other words moved to the right. The words on the left formed a new sentence on the left. The words on the right formed a new sentence on the right. It was as if there were 2 texts hidden inside each other in each of these sentences, and God was separating them. Subsequently, I was able to examine these now separated and revealed sentences. I was scandalized, for they contained the names of pagan divinities (1)!

I did not need to look for the meaning of this Manifestation (Vision), I understood it little by little...

(1) The Lord confirms the modern research of archaeologists and historians regarding the Scriptures surrounding the accounts of Moses. These stories are really Jewish religious constructions from pagan mythologies. Here, mainly Assyrian or Babylonian myths which were adapted to the Jewish religion probably during the deportation of the people to Babylon around 600 years before Jesus. See the so-called "documentary" theory about the Torah (the 5 books of Moses) in article |38-A|.

(2) The Lord also confirms that the name YHWH of the Old Testament indeed comes from the name of a pagan divinity of the wind of desert storms which is YHW. Here the Lord Reveals that his name is not YHWH (Yahweh), but that this name was labeled to him in the Old Testament. The real Name of the Lord is "**I Am**." His Name means that he is "**Existence in person**" and that without him, there is nothing at all (neither matter, nor time, nor life). So, if you want proof that God exists, well that proof is yourself, because you exist!

With the definition of the Name of God (**Existence**), it is easy to understand why there can only be one Divinity. Obviously, **Existence** cannot be separated into 3!

After his Resurrection, the Apparitions of Jesus in Spirit (Luminous Silhouette) making himself feel "**God**" and calling himself "**I Am**" indicated very clearly that (**God**) had become human (**Jesus**). The Jews and pagans of the time did not want to hear it, hence the insoluble mysteries of the NT to outline it!

|38-Q| A better understanding of the (1st Covenant) and the (2nd Covenant) of God

In a Covenant (or Alliance) with God, there are 3 important points:

- | |
|--|
| 1) God's real promise regarding his Covenant. |
| 2) What is actually required of us, in order for God to fulfill His Covenant. |
| 3) The real fulfillment of the Covenant by God. |

On the other hand, there is in the Bible, in the form of legendary stories, everything that the people humanly desire and which is not part of the real Covenant promised by God. This in order to found a human religion (Judaism then Christianity).

A) Judaism.

Here is the (1st Covenant) truly given by God:

1) God's promise	God promises that the people will be educated by his Wisdom and that it will fill the Earth.
2) What is required of us	To have the desire to listen to the Wisdom of God.
3) The fulfillment	The Wisdom of God is transmitted by Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and the prophets. This Wisdom is the message of kindness inscribed in the OT then in the NT with Jesus. The Wisdom of God has filled the Earth for 2,000 years through the world's greatest religion, Christianity. It is in fact the Wisdom of God recorded in the Bible that makes it sacred and not its legends.

These are the desires of kings, religious and people. This is not part of the (1st Covenant):

Non-promise	The wealth and glory of the nation of Israel. Divine protection during wars.
Non-Fulfillment	<u>The legends of the OT.</u> The legendary account of the Exodus from Egypt and Joshua's conquest of Canaan. The glorious legends of kings David and Solomon. The legend of the victory of the kingdom of Judas against the Assyrians by the divine intervention of Yahweh (around the year 700 BC), recorded in (chapters 40 to 66 of the book of the prophet Isaiah) and which were recently discovered as not having been written by Isaiah in his time, but after the exile in Babylon (around the year 500 BC). In short, all the miraculous stories surrounding the glorious past of the people of Israel did not exist, they were legends.

B) Christianity.

This is the (2nd Covenant) really given by God:

1) The promise of God	The continuation of the education of the people by the Wisdom of God (Jesus) which will fill the whole Earth. The establishment of the Eternal Kingdom of God, justice and peace, from the time of Jesus and right here on Earth. See article 37-E .
2) What is required of us	To desire and listen to the Wisdom of God. To open our hearts to God's message of goodness. To put into practice every day the Way of the heart requested by Jesus in the Gospels. To belong to God, so that he can help us lead our human lives on Earth.
3) The fulfillment	The human coming of God (Jesus) to Earth. The death of Jesus on the cross for the forgiveness of our sins. The Resurrection of Jesus at the tomb in the Spirit. The sharing of his death and Resurrection so that we can Share his Body. The Body of Jesus (God) being the "collective Body of God" shared with all his {children} which is in fact what we call Heaven or the Kingdom of God and which really begins here on Earth and continues Eternally after our human life. See article 37-E .

These are the desires of kings, religious and people. This is not part of the (2nd Covenant):

Non-promise	Divine protection during wars. The glory of the churches. Divine protection of the people against all misfortunes on Earth (wars, famines, diseases, etc.)
Non-Fulfillment	<u>The legends of the NT.</u> The legendary accounts of the many miracles and healings of Jesus and his apostles. The legendary account of Jesus giving the keys of the Kingdom of God to St-Peter, while the Kingdom of God is in fact the Body of Jesus (the Spirit of Jesus) over which no one can have the slightest power.

In Christianity, it is common to say that the 1st Covenant (with Abraham) ends with the beginning of the 2nd Covenant (with Jesus). In reality, the 1st Covenant never ended and will always be in force. Why? In the Apparition of Jesus in article |33-C|, Jesus says: "I Am the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. I Am the God of Christians." He does not say: "I was the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, I Am the God of Christians now." So the 1st Alliance is still in operation.

But what exactly is this 1st Alliance? We have seen that this is the promise of knowing God and being educated by his Wisdom (found in the Bible). Furthermore, this present book requested by the Lord is also part of his promise of the 1st Covenant for us. Simply put, the 1st Covenant is the promise to be instructed by God, whether it is me or you, see article |38-V|. Furthermore, Christians affirm: "we are part of the 2nd Covenant." In fact, to be part of the 2nd Covenant, it must be fulfilled by the {gift of the Spirit of Jesus}, which the vast majority of Christians do not have. So without knowing it, the Christian religion, as a whole, only functions with the fulfilled promise of the 1st Covenant which God (Jesus) came to perfect through his teaching of goodness (the Wisdom of God) in the NT.

In short:

The Jews function under the fulfillment of the (1st Covenant) of the OT which they have kept for themselves.
Christians function under the fulfillment of the (1st Covenant) which was opened to the whole world by Jesus and his teaching of goodness (Wisdom) in the NT and which allows access to the (2nd Covenant) if the person fulfills the teaching of Jesus in his everyday life.
The {God's children} function under the fulfillment of the (2nd Covenant) which is the {reception of the Spirit of Jesus}.

The Lord Jesus Reveals that the 1st Covenant (**instruction through his Wisdom**) is the only promised Miracle of the OT. And that the 2nd Covenant (**the Sharing of his Resurrection**) is the only promised Miracle of the NT. So, this tells us a lot about the extent of the legendary miracles in the Bible to form Judaism and then Christianity over the centuries!

The legends and glorious promises accumulated over the centuries in the OT obviously harmed the true prophets of Judaism, because they saw clearly that Yahweh did not perform miracles as in the so-called past and they asked themselves many questions. They too believed that Yahweh was Terrible and that he would intervene with force to fight their enemies. In his book, the prophet Jeremiah describes well his incomprehension of Yahweh and his people. Subsequently, the legends surrounding the myth of the messiah were the cause of the execution of Jesus and the inability of the apostles to discover the real identity of Jesus after his Resurrection. Ultimately, the legends of the OT and NT are the cause of my endless search for this Part 2 of the book. Imagine... 5,000 hours of work to untangle all this human confusion in the Bible and try to explain the truth to you as simply as possible. I have examined over a hundred Internet reports and the Lord has contributed by 28 Manifestations of the Spirit to direct my steps in the right direction. See the table in article |38-U|. All this work to find the (Message of God) buried under the endless legends of the Bible and religion. In simple terms, God has always left us free to live our own way, but he has the Project to educate us (1st Covenant) and to come and get us so that we can Live Eternal Happiness with Him (2nd Covenant). Is that so complicated?

C) Why did Judaism and Christianity survive after the destruction of the Temple in the year 0070?

For Jews, a religion has important components. There are: God, the country or territory, the Spirit of God dwelling in the Temple, the sacred books, the priests and the king. I am listing to you the reality of that time. The invaders had taken over the country (Israel) for 500 years. The people did not have a legitimate king, because he had been imposed by the invaders. The Temple was now destroyed and the priests (the Sadducees) had been killed. In fact, the Pharisaic movement of the time survived, because it was able to reinterpret the 5 books of Moses (the Torah) in order to fill in the gaps.

On the other hand, for people who have received the {gift of the Spirit}, a religion has no physical components. God is everywhere. It is a religion without territory (open to the world). The Spirit of God dwells in the {God's children}, who are his little mobile temples. God directly educates his {children} as in this present book. The only Priest and King is the Lord Jesus. The promise of Heaven is being realized directly on Earth now, see article |37-E|.

Simply put, the Lord no longer wanted a human religion like Judaism comprising a monopolizing and stifling religious institution (organization). No more than Christianity, which was completely formed 300 years later and had essentially the same concept. **In fact, the Lord wanted a direct and intimate relationship with Him without an intermediary.**

Currently, Jews and Christians are connected to God through a religious institution (organization) (Judaism and Christianity) with their biblical canon of texts chosen by them from a great multitude.

On the other hand, the {God's children} are in direct relationship with God, the only Priest and King being the Lord Jesus who is God in person. You should know that the Lord does not ask to change a religion, because it operates under Scriptures considered accurate and of which their religious people are totally convinced, so there is nothing to do! The Lord asks his {children} to transmit his Message to the people, hence this present book requested for you.

|38-R| What are legends used for in the Bible?

3,000 years ago, God established his 1st Covenant with Abraham who was the leader of his own small family clan. God promised Abraham to transmit his teaching (his Wisdom) to him. God Revealed to Abraham that if he and his clan followed his teaching (his Wisdom), then they would live in peace. At that time, all people believed that there were divinities for all purposes such as growing the crops in the fields or even waging war. A religion is based on an exchange between the people and a divinity. The people give their offerings and in exchange, the divinity gives his graces. The difficulty comes from the fact that (nature on Earth) functions autonomously without God. So, in the OT, the only thing the people needed was the teaching of God (his Wisdom) in order to escape from barbarism. On the other hand, it is impossible to found a humanly interesting religion with this promise alone. So, like any other religion, religious people inserted legends into their Scriptures in order to satisfy the desires of the people and kings, whether for great prodigies, miracles and healings. Yes, the OT and NT contain a lot...

The first Christians were perfectly convinced that Jesus was the expected (but Divinized) messiah, so they wrote everything necessary to fulfill the legends surrounding the OT messiah and to be listened to by the people. Yes, nothing better than a new legend to fulfill an old legend! It is for this reason that the NT is a mixture between the fulfillment of the legends of the OT and the real life of Jesus which is: 1) his teaching of goodness (his Wisdom); 2) the establishment of the 2nd Covenant (by his death for our sins and his Resurrection); 3) The {gift of his Spirit} which is the inauguration of the Kingdom promised by Jesus from right here on Earth.

|38-S| The real reason for the condemnation of Jesus

The NT tells us that the main reason for the condemnation of Jesus was that the Jewish authorities did not recognize Jesus as the King of the Jews (the messiah). But is this really the main reason? In the actual story of Jesus's time on Earth in article |38-I|, Jesus did not fulfill the invented OT scriptures regarding the messiah myth. So the authorities could not easily stick this label on him!

It is by rereading the Gospels that we can find the real reason for his condemnation. Through his teaching (example: the Our Father prayer), Jesus removed the institution of religion (the organization founded by humans) and replaced it with a direct relationship with God. Here, God (Jesus) replaced everything. By his death, Jesus became the only (Eternal) Sacrifice. By his Resurrection, Jesus became the only Priest who teaches and gives his divine anointing {the Spirit} in the hearts of his disciples in order to bring them into the Covenant (Alliance) of the {God's children}. With the coming of God (Jesus) to Earth, human religion was now set aside. This obviously did not please the religious authorities of the time!

Since the Romans did not allow the condemnation of a man (Jesus) on religious charges (in this case, heresy), then all that remained was for the Jewish authority to accuse Jesus of a false political charge, that of King of the Jews (the messiah).

|38-T| What I know about the attributes of God...

To form Judaism and then Christianity, the Bible obviously had to qualify as accurate. Unfortunately on the Internet (YouTube), there are people who use the (ideological attributes of God mentioned in religion) in order to ridicule the Bible for its illogic. **Yes, the Bible contains many legends, but it is nevertheless sacred!**

Attributes	Here I give you what I know about the Lord...
Omnipotence	I felt that God is of Unimaginable Power! But, he leaves his creation free to choose.
Omniscience	Obviously, he knows the science of his creation. He does not control the future, because every living being was created free. On the other hand, he knows where our actions lead us and can warn us of the consequences.
Omnipresent	Yes, God is everywhere and this can seem a little surreal and incomprehensible to us.
Eternal	God calls himself "I Am," because he is Existence. He made me feel that for Him, time does not exist.
Immutable	Unlike religion, God Reveals that he is not Immutable . Why? Yahweh God became human (Jesus). The Spirit of Jesus has all the attributes of his Divinity and his humanity at the same time.
Love	Yes, he has an unimaginable Love! It is from his Love that our freedom and his Freedom come.
Justice	God made for us the world of Earth, which is completely free to choose without him. I believe that justice is much more a religious attribute given to God in the OT to fill a human need for retribution. On the other hand, God Reveals that He is Life and that, without Him, no one will go further than the Earth where he was born.
Mercy	Yes, because God became human (Jesus) and Sacrificed Himself for the forgiveness of our faults in order to Save us.
Wisdom	Obviously, he knows the life of his creation, so he knows what must be done to all live in harmony.
Holiness	God is the Creator, he knows Good and Evil, but he has always chosen Good only. He created for us the world of Earth which is autonomous and external to Him. It is through the freedom of these small, autonomous and free living beings that the concept of good and evil inevitably appears. This is so that we can freely make our choice too. In article 27-E , the Lord Reveals that His Goodness is infinite, He is the only Saint.

|38-U| Retrospection on the Manifestations of the Spirit that I had (2016-2023)

In article |33-L|, I very briefly listed the links of my Manifestations received (from 2016 to 2021) with the Bible. Now here, in the light of the Manifestations received (from 2021 to 2023), I reinterpret all the Manifestations received since 2016 in a summary table. To do this, I suggest you reread the Manifestation indicated on the left, then read its reinterpretation on the right. **This, one Manifestation after another and not reading the table all at once.**

Manifestations	Retrospection (reinterpretation) in the light of the Manifestations received (from 2021 to 2023)
13-D	In this Manifestation, the Breath of the Light of God received in me is the Resurrected Body of Jesus whose visual Manifestation is found in article 34-N at point 3). To be born on Earth, one must obviously receive a body and a place to live there. By comparison, the {new birth} comes from the {God's child} having received within him, the Collective Body of God. Since God is the Creator and everywhere, then the Body of God is not in a place as we humanly understand it.
13-E	Here, the "hunger for God" is in fact the "hunger for the Body of Jesus." Jesus is God made human.
13-G	Subsequently, there are the 2 Manifestations of the memorial of Communion with the Body of Jesus (the Collective Body of God). Here, this is a memorial, because the Body of Jesus is already received in article 13-D .
13-I	The Manifestations of the "Turbulence of Flame of Fire" begin in the {God's child}. This indicates the Sharing of the Divine Sacrifice of the Body of Jesus, dead and Resurrected. The Spirit of Jesus (God) in his new temple calls himself: " I Am " who is Yahweh in person.
13-J	Jesus (God) tells me that the {gift of his Spirit} is always a tangible Manifestation.
13-K	The Lord shows me that the Spirit of God received in me is in fact the Spirit of Jesus. The Perfume of Myrrh indicates the death of Jesus for us 2,000 years ago.
13-L	The {anointing}, the mark of the Eternal Covenant in the heart. The heart of the {God's child} being the Ark of the Eternal Covenant, on which the Sacrificed Body of Jesus is placed.
13-M	The Devil is the actor who brings us to death. The Spirit of God (Jesus) Saves us from death.
13-N	Like this young woman who goes from house to house, like Jesus was a prophet who went on the roads in the Gospels. Call of Jesus, every {God's child} is a prophet.
13-O	Here there is our human breath which is a temporal life. On the other hand, there is the Breath of God which gives Eternal Life.
13-P	Here Jesus is trying to Reveal to me that what I have received within me is in fact His Resurrected Body.
13-Q	Jesus's call to become a prophet. Without receiving the Spirit of Jesus into us, no one leaves the Earth after human death.
13-R	The Lord Jesus gives me what I need to fulfill his request, this book for you.
20-B	Jesus is Yahweh God made human on Earth.
27-E	The Lord has infinite Goodness (the only Saint). He asks us to forgive everyone.
32-D and 38-P	This present book is {inspired} by the Spirit of Jesus. Yes, there are many mythologies and legends in the Bible.
33-G	A {God's child} is born into the Collective Body of God (Jesus). He leaves Earth in happiness.
33-L at point 18)	Satan is God's opponent. For God, even a religious person can be his opponent.
34-B	The {God's child} is a temple of the Spirit of Jesus. In reality, the {gift of the Holy Spirit} in the NT is the {gift of the Resurrected Body of Jesus} in the {God's child}.
34-N at point 1)	The message here is that a {God's child} is protected from evil by God, because God dwells in him.
34-N at point 2)	The Message from the Lord is clear, humanity will be punished for the evil it does! But what is this punishment? The Lord simply wanted to refer to the story of the flood. But this time, his Judgment is not carried out by "the rain from the sky," but by the "gift or not of his Spirit which comes from heaven (sky)", as at Pentecost.
34-N at point 3)	The Spirit of Jesus received in me in article 13-D Manifests this time visually in the form of an Apparition of Jesus in Luminous Silhouette with the face like the Jewish Passover bread. Yahweh God became human (Jesus) in order to fulfill his Eternal Covenant.

34-U	In this Manifestation, God does not present himself in me as a Divinity, but directly as a human (Jesus). Here we see once again that Jesus is Yahweh (I Am) in person. Jesus gives us the gift of his Eternal Sacrifice.
34-I	Here, the Spirit of Jesus is Revealed as Yahweh God of the OT in person.
36-F	Jesus claims that, contrary to the Gospels, he did not perform healings or miracles when he walked on earth! The only real Miracles being only his birth and his Resurrection.
37-A	What we call "Heaven" is not external to the Creator, but internal to the Creator. Living in Heaven is in fact Living in the Happiness of God's Existence. It is a Communion all together in the Creator.
37-D	<p>Our world of Earth is completely hermetic. Without God (Jesus), no one gets out of here. Thus, our Creator came in person to Earth to take our human condition (Jesus), Save us from death and bring us with Him. The Manifestation of article 13-D is a {new birth} through the {communion with the Body of Jesus}. Here the body of Jesus (God) and the body of the {God's child} are linked. The 2 bodies are Married, they are One, it is the promised Eternal Alliance.</p> <p><u>If I rephrase in another way.</u></p> <p>God came to Earth (Jesus) in order to share a process of {Eternal Rebirth}:</p> <p>1) The death of the body of the {God's child} becomes the death of the body of Jesus, 2,000 years ago. In article 13-F , the continuous prayer of 3 days is for the dead, here Jesus and the {God's child}. See also the Manifestation of article 34-U .</p> <p>2) 2,000 years ago at the tomb, the body of Jesus, upon Resurrecting, became the Collective Body of God. Here the {God's child} is born into the Collective Body of God for eternity.</p> <p>Simply put, who is the Holy Spirit? He is the Wind and Light of the Collective Body of God (Jesus) emerging from the tomb. 2,000 years ago, the great stone of the tomb never rolled aside, and the Ascension of Jesus into sky (heaven) never happened.</p> <p>In fact, the Collective Body of God is what we awkwardly call Heaven. See article 37-E . The apostles were waiting for the Return of Jesus and his Heaven, when in reality, they had already received it within themselves without knowing it!</p> <p>If you want proof that God really exists. Well, he left us his photo in the shroud of Turin, see article 32-N .</p>
38-K and 39-D	God does not perform wonders in abundance on Earth, because we are responsible for taking care of ourselves, taking care of others and taking care of the Earth. For his part, God has made only one promise, the {gift of his Eternal Life} to those who want to participate in his Project (the 2nd Covenant). Finally, the Lord Revealed to me that Hell does not exist.
39-C	<p>The Lord gives several pieces of information about:</p> <p>A) The Kingdom of God which begins on Earth with the {gift of His Spirit};</p> <p>B) Prayer;</p> <p>C) What the Eternal Covenant entails.</p>

| 38-V | Why did the Lord want this Part 2 of the book (which is a research)?

I figured that very few readers will read this Part 2 (Optional), because it takes us out of the Christian tradition. This is not easy for anyone... even for me! Well, I found the answer in the OT as follows:

OT	Jeremiah	31,33-34	But this is the covenant (1) which I will make with the house of Israel after those days, says the LORD. I will place my law within them, and write it upon their hearts (1) ; I will be their God, and they shall be my people. No longer will they have need to teach their friends and kinsmen how to know the LORD (2) . All, from least to greatest, shall know me (3) , says the LORD, (...)
----	----------	----------	--

(1) This is the 2nd Covenant. **(2)** Jesus is Yahweh (God) in person.

(3) Even in our time, God fulfills the promise made by the prophet Jeremiah, that **of instructing all his {children}**.

Then I understood that the Lord asked me to write this Part 2 **so that He would instruct me**. Then, to share the unfolding of my instruction as a {God's child} to all who are willing to read it. If you become {God's child} or you are now, the Lord

will also instruct you like me. This present book gives you a good boost, because unraveling all the religious mythology is difficult (here, 5,000 hours of work).

The Lord Jesus Reveals that even if the Christian religion is not exact, we must still practice religion fervently. The Lord asks to continue to recite all our Christian prayers, because they are part of the tradition and the Lord is accustomed to them. The Lord Jesus Reveals that he particularly appreciates the "Our Father" prayer, because he gave it and it sums up his teaching. We now know that there is only one Person in God, so Jesus is actually our Heavenly Father who came to meet us on earth.

|38-W| The Bible and religion give a useful teaching for all

We have seen that the Bible (the OT and NT) contains theological teaching with a hidden reality background. But what is the purpose of the teaching it contains? It serves to unify a people and give them human values. To unify the people so that they are more proud and responsible for their good development. To give human values so that the people function in respect of each other, so that harmony reigns within the community. The Bible teaches values of kindness, charity and mutual aid. The Bible teaches that the purpose of existence on Earth is not to obtain wealth, but to discover our Creator and to integrate his values of goodness within us. The Bible teaches that the Earth is only a passage and that the afterlife catches up with us sooner or later. It teaches us that our little life on Earth does not have to be perfect, because our Creator is there beside us always. The Bible, through its Judeo-Christian teaching, has made it possible for our society to improve humanly over the past 2,000 years.

Historians say that no book of the Bible (OT and NT) is signed by its author. All these books are anonymous, but that the religious authorities (e.g. the Fathers of the Church) have attributed them, to the best of their knowledge, to great characters of history: Moses, Daniel, Matthew, John, etc. An archaeologist said that each of the authors of the Bible obviously knew the history of his time, but that it did not interest him. The purpose of these authors was to make the Creator known, to make the people better, to establish a common purpose and a common ideology. Yes, the texts of the Bible are not exact, **but did they really need to be** in order to make us more human, more responsible for each other, more generous, more welcoming...

Our globalized society has used its science to discover that the texts of the Bible are not accurate. Why? Because believing that God really exists bothered us! No punishing God, no Devil, so all that remained was to become again without faith nor law as 3 000 years ago (before Judaism) in order to obtain power and wealth at the expense of the poor everywhere in the world. No Creator, so the Earth became a consumer good that we could squander quickly. For example, some environmentalists have said that at the rate at which humanity currently catches fish in the oceans, these will be practically empty in the year 2070. But what will the children of tomorrow eat?

This is what the Bible and religion were for! To understand that we are not alone, but that others also have the right to live; that we are all little creatures of our Creator who wants us to be happy together! So the Bible and religion have a role. That of moderator of humanity who becomes grateful for the graces that our Creator has placed on Earth for all of us. The Bible and religion are not perfect, but they provide a tradition necessary for harmonious social life. They create united groups that help and encourage each other. They allow research and knowledge of our Creator (God). Without God, our human life has no meaning, we are ephemeral, living dust that returns to the dust of the ground forever.

PART 3 OF THE WORK (ESSENTIAL)

|39| Following the Lord to get to Heaven

Reading this chapter |39| is important.

General note:

In 2016, after my Manifestation of the Spirit of article |13-I|, I wondered why the Lord wanted a complete book like this. I thought that a short written testimony of my Manifestations of the Spirit in connection with the New Testament as well as the detailed recipe of what to do to obtain the {gift of the Holy Spirit} was sufficient. After the in-depth research of Part 2 (**Optional reading**), it is now easy to see why the Lord wanted his book! **Chapter |38| gathers the important points of this research.**

Introduction for readers arriving directly from the end of Part 1 (Essential):

The in-depth research work of Part 2 (Optional) extended over a period of approximately 5 years (2 to 3 thousand hours). Obviously, my knowledge has progressed a lot! Now for this **Part 3**, I will use the knowledge of Part 1 (Essential) and add some fundamental notions of Part 2, which I will only indicate the article references. This, in order to give you this **Part 3 (Essential)** without going into complex details.

Keys to follow the Way that Jesus asks:

See articles |3-F|, |39-B| and chapter |12|.

|39-A| Choosing God means taking a stand in your life...

At the end of 2017, after the initial publication of this work (book 12), I obviously returned to the labor market, but with additional debts due to the lengthy writing period. Thereafter, do not think that the sale of this book brought me anything as I have already mentioned in article |34-R|. On the contrary, it is an additional expense, because the meagre profits from the sales are far from covering the advertising costs. On the other hand, you remember that in article |13-I|, the Lord told me in a dream that I would not lack anything. Well, this happened and I found a very well-paying job as a lab technician in my small area. In December 2019, I was able to pay off all my debts.

You are going to tell me, well done, no more problems!

Well, no! One week before the renewal of my work contract (January 2020), my boss told me that I would soon have to work with a highly toxic chemical used only by automatic (robotic) machines. I knew that the fume hood in our laboratory was faulty. I had calculated the concentration of the product in the air. It would be on average 100 times higher than that allowed by government standards. My boss told me that I would have a special suit with a full-face mask (safe for me). It was obvious that some of the fumes coming out of the fume hood were going to come back through the ventilation of the building and endanger the workers in the office area. My boss did not want to consider this at all. In addition, in Canada, it is illegal to discharge active (untreated) waste into the environment.

I know that it is impossible not to pollute a little in our industrialized society. However, we must not deliberately introduce dangerous chemicals into nature. Let us not forget that the Earth is the garden of God.

So what to do? There are 2 possibilities:

1) Here is what most people would have done:

He would have signed the next work contract saying to himself: "All this is not my problem, I have a well-paid job. If I do not do the work, it will be someone else..."

2) Here is what I did:

I did not make a ruckus. I did not renew the contract, and I ended up on Employment Insurance again.

On the other hand, I found another job about 2 months later.

I will give you a secret:

A person who makes the possibility (1) is not a Christian even if he is baptized. I can tell you that he is not on the right path to go to Heaven either...

Being a Christian:

A Christian takes a stand in his life. He chooses the good in spite of the uncomfortable situations and the harm that others do to him. He does not make a ruckus.

NT	1st Epistle of St-John	3,18	Little children, let us not love with word or with tongue, but in deed and truth.
----	------------------------	------	--

| 39-B | How to get your {birth of the Spirit} in a nutshell...

The Lord asks Christians to seek Him (Him, the Way of Life).

Currently, Christianity proclaims that Jesus will save all mankind. So the faithful have no more efforts to make to reach Heaven! Throughout history, all the children who have seen Apparitions of the Blessed Virgin have been scorned. There is no more room for the Manifestations of God. For our modern society, all this is nothing but madness. Power, money, science and technology have become the new deities of our world.

NT	1st Epistle of St-John	2,15-17	Do not love the world nor the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh and the lust of the eyes and the boastful pride of life, is not from the Father, but is from the world. The world is passing away (1), and also its lusts; but the one (2) who does the will of God lives forever.
----	------------------------	---------	--

(1) Humans are mortal.

(2) The {God's child}.

No Christian movement has the power to open or close the gates of Heaven.

In chapter | 12 |, I gave you the steps to get your {birth of the Spirit}.

Here, I give you a short summary:

° In your life, you must make the conversion of the heart that Jesus asks for in the Gospels. You have to follow them for real, every day.

° You must realize that the criteria for success in our society are based on competition. Competition leads to individualism, selfishness, the desire to always want more and finally to want to crush others to climb the social ladder. You must reject this way of doing things. For you, good understanding and mutual aid are essential.

° You must hold on to do good despite the evil that people do to you. Yes, it is not comfortable. Yes, you will often feel rejected, because it is not by doing good and practising righteousness that our society becomes richer.

° You have to forgive everyone even though it is not easy.

° Without knowing it, you detach yourself from our world (which does evil) like a ripe fruit that detaches itself from its tree. See article | 20-D | or its little reminder in article | 39-E |.

° You must seek God to help you. You must feel the real need to find him.

° You must believe in God so much that you actually see the nature around you as his garden. To see all that the Creator has put in place, the Earth that he has given to us. **Believing in God (deep inside you) is a crucial point.** It is only after this step that the Lord will take care of you in order to finalize the missing steps for the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. I understood that this stage is the stumbling block for the majority of Christians (even religious), because when we say that God is real, they do not want to hear! Get help from chapter | 6 |.

° You must trust God completely. He is the only Source of Life and Happiness.

° **You must need the presence of God in your life. You must ask the Lord always to be present near you, this is a crucial point.** On the other hand, it should be known that the conversion of the heart does not need to be perfect and that piety is a point of less importance.

° You must understand that you do not deserve the Life that God wants to give you. None of your good deeds allows you to have access to Heaven. It was Jesus who paid the price for your sins with his Sacrifice on the cross. Jesus died humanly out of Love for you.

NT	Epistle of St-Paul to the Ephesians	2,7-9	that in the ages to come he might show the immeasurable riches of his grace in his kindness to us in Christ Jesus. For by grace you have been saved through faith, and this is not from you; it is the gift of God; it is not from works, so no one may boast.
----	-------------------------------------	-------	--

° You must have a desire to serve God.

° **You must give your life to God so that he leads it on earth. It is important to understand that you must belong to God for Him to bring you with Him, for Heaven has been Revealed to be: "to Live Eternally in the Happiness of the Existence of our Creator (God)." See article | 37-E |.**

The Plan of God is to link our life with his Life forever, it is the Communion with Jesus. ***This is the greatest Gift our Creator could give us!***

It is true that in our society of iniquity, doing good as Jesus asks in the Gospels is not comfortable. In addition, a person can say to himself: "I am really going to receive the Spirit of God in me, but that is scary"! If you understand what you are receiving, then it is not scary at all. It is the Spirit of our Creator (God) Sharing His (Eternal) Life with your human (mortal) life from right here on earth.

It is important to understand that the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is the entry into God's Covenant of Eternal Life and you must obtain it concretely on earth before your death if you want to be part of it. After that, it is too late. It is important to understand that when you are part of the Covenant, you are truly {God's child}, and this on earth now. The Spirit of God will really dwell in you as in a temple in order to teach you, to protect you and even to heal you and then to bring you to the Kingdom at the end of your life here on earth. Receiving the {gift of the Holy Spirit} does not hurt at all. On the contrary, it is an unimaginable happiness!

Is the Holy Spirit disturbing? Not at all! His Manifestations are spiritual. They will teach you and allow you to understand that there are realities that go far beyond our little world on earth and that we must stop worrying about our miseries. You will understand that God is always present with you in your joys as well as in your sorrows and that you can count on him to help you. Unlike other people, you will no longer be afraid of dying and even strangely you will be a little eager for the Lord to come and get you in order to make you experience Eternal Happiness with him.

In this present book, I have testified to you a little more than twenty Manifestations of the Spirit necessary for its writing. On the other hand, since each of the {God's children} is in relationship with the Lord, he receives small personal Manifestations of the Spirit from time to time. The most common Manifestation is the {anointing mark} in the chest (or Sacred Heart, if you like), as this is the mark of the Eternal Covenant. All it takes is about 20 minutes of prayer for it to appear. The Lord can make us feel that he Loves us. The Lord can remind us that he is there with us to sustain us. The Lord can even tell us that it is better to pray to Him a little more often (at least every 3 days), because the distractions and

worries of our society are so strong that they distance us from Him. Remember that each of the {God's children} belongs to the Lord and he keeps them all in his Peace and Love.

In short:

No need to get religious, no need to suffer, no need to fight demons, no need to lock yourself up, no need to leave your family, no need to change the world! **Only the desire to do good, the need to meet our Creator and belong to Him in the depths of your hearts.** Unfortunately, if you keep your life to yourself, it is impossible to receive the {gift of the Holy Spirit}.

|39-C| The Lord is always generous...

For writing chapters |37 and 38| and updating chapters |36 and 39|, I had 8 Manifestations of the Spirit. I only described the most important ones. On the other hand, certain Manifestations not comprising any Revelation, I decided not to describe them. This is the case with my Manifestation of the Spirit of August 11, 2023, which highlights topics that the Lord wanted to emphasize in his book.

So here they are...

A) The Kingdom of God begins on Earth.

The Bible and religion provide a tradition necessary for harmonious social life. They create united groups that help and encourage each other. They allow research and knowledge of our Creator (God).

The Lord Reveals that religion and the Bible are not perfect and did not fall from heaven (sky). The Bible contains texts of traditional beliefs that were used to found Judaism and Christianity over the centuries. Unfortunately, contrary to what we have been taught, the Bible is not a collection of historical accounts. On the other hand, it contains real facts hidden under its tradition. Tradition is a necessary medium for bringing people together for occasions such as celebrations and feasts. On the other hand, the Lord Reveals that Christians have preferred celebrations and feasts to what he asked. The Lord reminds us that each Christian has a job to do. Spread justice and peace around him every day. Do not be indifferent to the misfortune of others. Be generous and offer help. Forgive everyone and do not hold grudges. Share your faith with those in need. Help people discover that God really exists and loves us, get help from chapter |6|. Work on ourselves in order to obtain the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. Read and learn the Gospels, focusing on the message of goodness they contain, not on the mysteries. Why? The Lord Jesus Reveals that the mysteries of the Bible are not exact. It is therefore useless to persist in solving them without the {gift of his Spirit}. See Part 2 of this book.

B) Prayer.

Prayer is necessary to allow us to experience moments of intimacy with our Creator. The only one who really knows the bottom of our heart. The only one capable of understanding us and welcoming us, whatever our difficulties and what we have done wrong (even terrible). The only Merciful (Forgiveness), the only Holy (without any evil), the only Eternal (Life forever) and the only Source of True Happiness. Without God, our human life has no meaning, we are ephemeral, living dust that returns to the dust of the ground forever.

Pray often to the Lord for His help. The Lord is always near us. The Lord asks only to Manifest Himself to you by his Spirit, but he cannot do this if you are not ready yet, for he respects your freedom. You must trust the Lord completely. He is the only Source of Life, Peace and Happiness.

C) What the Eternal Covenant involves.

A person who has obtained the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is part of the **Covenant (or Alliance)**. **Alliance** is another word for Marriage. A marriage is a sharing, what one person has, the other has too. Like any marriage, the spouses belong to each other. Here the Eternal Life of the Lord belongs to the {God's child}. In return, the life of the {God's child} belongs to the Lord. It is for this reason that one must give his human life to the Lord in order to have the {gift of his Eternal Life} in return. To have the {gift of the Holy Spirit} is not nothing, you really have to desire it. Obviously, the Lord will ask you to participate in his Life project, but he will never ask you for something that you cannot do. On the contrary, it is you who will want to

do something for Him with your small capacity and your limits. The Lord will help you. You can even make this free work known, see the Appendix in |A-1|.

You should know that the Alliance between God and a {God's child} does not prevent him from having a job, a spouse, children and leisure activities like the majority of people! Remember that St-Peter was married and had children.

Here the Lord Reveals the following points:

1	The Lord Jesus took the death of each of the {God's children} in his place by His death on the cross 2,000 years ago. By his Resurrection, the Lord Jesus gives his Eternal Life to each of the {God's children} right here on Earth. The Lord Reveals that a {God's child} does not die, but departs from the Earth, by His Spirit dwelling in him, without any suffering and in Happiness, see article 33-G .
2	It is important to know that our world on Earth is external to the Creator, and that the world of Heaven is internal to the Creator. When a person {is born a God's child}, he or she is already part of what we call "Heaven," and this even on Earth, because "Heaven" has been Revealed to be to "Live in the Happiness of the Existence of God." The Manifestations of the Holy Spirit are actually little bits of what Heaven is. See article 37-E .
3	A {God's child} does not have to worry about all the little worries on earth, because he already dwells in God.
4	Being a Christian is a commitment of the heart every day and not just attending mass once a week.

|39-D| Why does not the Lord perform physical miracles and healings in abundance on Earth?

In the double Manifestation of the Spirit of article |38-K|, the Lord clearly Reveals that his Efforts are directed towards his {Life Project} with those who want to be part of it. He also Reveals that he does not put on shows and that he does not come to solve all our problems on Earth!

Unfortunately, our Christian idea in order to obtain healings and miracles from the Lord, comes mainly from the Bible whose purpose is to promote a religion (which is the project of the religious) and **not to care about the real project of the Lord which is to receive the {gift of his Spirit}**. For more details, see articles |38-A and 38-B|.

In addition, since the Christian religion makes the faithful believe that they are already saved by the ritual of water baptism, then all that remains is for the faithful to ask the Lord for healings and miracles from our little world on Earth that have absolutely nothing to do with his promise (the 2nd Alliance).

NT	St-Matthew	7,13-14	"Enter through the narrow gate; for the gate is wide and the way is broad that leads to destruction, and there are many who enter through it. "For the gate is small and the way is narrow that leads to life, and there are few who find it.
----	------------	---------	--

There are even Christian movements that organize healing shows in front of their congregations or on television:

Internet Keywords (YouTube)	Christian healing and evangelism
-----------------------------	----------------------------------

Simply put, God does not do healings in abundance, because he has given us all a biological body that must be taken great care of. **This is our responsibility.** To help us, there are many books written by health specialists. Basically, it says to drink water, get some exercise, and eat as much unprocessed food (that comes from nature, not factories) as possible. God does not perform miracles in abundance, because he created the Earth's garden that functions autonomously to support our human life. **It is up to us to take care of the Earth, because it is the inheritance that our Creator gave us.**

In short, we see that obtaining or not obtaining (a healing or a miracle) has absolutely nothing to do with our Creator's lack of Love for us. In fact, the Lord relentlessly puts all his Efforts into his collective project of {Living Eternally with Him} and not into our own human project of having a comfortable life free from all problems.

In summary:

Unfortunately in this double Manifestation, the Lord reproaches Christians for not desiring {the Miracle of Living Eternally in his Presence} which is the 2nd Alliance, but for desiring (miracles and healings of our little world of Earth).

The Christian religion is very good, but it has the bad habit of making a lot of promises, in the name of God, which infantilize its faithful. If you listen carefully to a mass, you will realize that it contains a lot of requests to God regarding problems that

humanity keeps creating on its own. Be it wars, political problems, pollution problems, etc. Subsequently, each of the Christians returns home with a clear conscience, because God, they think, will fix everything! The Lord Reveals that he only made 2 Promises to us. He promised to teach us through his Wisdom (1st Covenant from Abraham) so that we make good decisions. This is the Message of kindness (Wisdom) inscribed in the Bible. He promised to bring with Him those who want to share His Project of Eternal Life (2nd Covenant). For everything else on Earth, it is up to us to join hands and make things better. Yes, the Lord can do little things here and there to help us draw closer to Him, but do not expect big miracles visible to everyone or for Him to solve your problems for you. In fact, God's help in finding the solution to our problems comes from his Wisdom (example: Jesus's Message of kindness in the Gospels). God's great Miracle for us is the {gift of His Spirit} to share His Presence with us right here on Earth and to bring us to Heaven. Hence the title of this present book number 18: Jesus, Lord and Savior, Light of the world.

For the Lord, our world on Earth is only ephemeral, the time to make the choice of {Living with Him} or (living temporarily alone and dying definitively on earth). The Lord Jesus Reveals that it is Him (Noah's ark) and that ultimately without Him, there is no life at all.

In a recent Manifestation of the Spirit, the Lord finally Revealed to me that Hell does not exist. On the other hand, the Devil really exists as the “psychic personification of our fear of dying.” In fact, I understood that it is through the “fear of the Devil at the time of death” that the punishment of humanity is carried out according to the Revelation of the Lord in article |34-N| at point 2). On the other hand, article |33-G| Reveals that a {God’s child} will not feel his human death, because he departs from Earth without pain and in Happiness through the Spirit of the Lord dwelling within him.

Finally, God Reveals that he created the Earth long ago so that humans could be happy together and that God asks nothing in return. He Reveals that our personal human life and the life of the Earth have always been our responsibility and not his. He Reveals that he has given us all the education necessary to make our choice of life freely.

|39-E| The Plan of our Creator, here a little reminder of article |20-D|

The best comparison I can give you is that our world looks like an apple tree. Each human being is like a small, unripe apple. God lets the little apples ripen without influencing them. As our Creator (alone without any evil) is not visible here on earth, this creates a great lack. Obviously, every human being can take advantage of it and do whatever evil he wants. The bad human being does not seek his Creator and automatically contributes to our world of injustice. On the other hand, the good human being seeks his Creator, because there is too much evil around him and he does not know what to do. He needs God's help to direct his life. The good human being begins to detach himself from our (bad) world like a ripe fruit from the tree. God never draws on the fruit to detach it. The fruit is ready when the person gives (from the bottom of his heart) and (without return) his life to God. It is a bit for this reason that St-Paul says that the person is dead to our world (that is doing evil). God collects the fruit through the {gift of the Holy Spirit}. The person is reborn a {God's child} here and naturally helps others on the Way of Jesus as I do in this book for you. This maturation can be the work of a lifetime, so do not wait. Rituals and great impulses of adoration give nothing, because God is not purchasable. We must do the work that the Lord asks.

|39-F| This book uses all possible sources of information

Currently, theologians will never be able to fully understand the Bible. Why? They only use ancient writings. They do not hide at all to say that the testimonies of the Manifestations of the Holy Spirit, miracles and near-death experiences (NDE) do not interest them. So they are limited in their research.

Currently, here is what theologians use:

- 1) The Bible and apocryphal books.

2) History and archaeology.

On the other hand, in this present book, to disentangle all the “human spaghetti” and to discover the Truth, I had to appeal to all the sources of information available:

- 1) The Bible and apocryphal books.

2) History and archeology.

- 3) A little over 20 Manifestations of the Holy Spirit, an Apparition of the Lord Jesus and a Manifestation of Mary.
- 4) Testimonies of miracles, healings and Apparitions.
- 5) Testimonies of near-death experiences (NDE).
- 6) Testimonies of exorcisms.
- 7) Science in general (physics, psychology, biology and medicine).

The Bible affirms that God is the Eternal and that he is always present near us now. **I confirm it.** The Bible contains many accounts of spiritual (mystical) experiences. **I have had several.** So, it is completely illogical to currently study the Bible (which is mystical) without the testimonies of people who have actually had mystical experiences! In this work, I have answered all Christian questions... all this knowledge has been given to you for free! The little you paid was just the minimum cost for the merchant to pass this book on to you. Everything on the author's website is free. The message of the Lord has no price, so the Lord gives it to us, because we are not able to pay for it. I have invested 6 years so far; hundreds of prophets and authors of the Bible have invested much more than that and the martyrs have invested their sufferings and their lives so that Christianity and the Bible reach us now, **do not forget it!** Even the price of Eternal Life has been offered to us for free by the Sacrifice of a martyr named Jesus, it is enough to follow his Way...

With chapters |34 to 38|, it is now possible **to redo the link** between Christianity and Judaism which has been broken since the 0070s.

|39-G| End of book number 18

For 2024, this book number 18 contains all the articles and chapters of the work started since 2017. The writing history of this work can be found at the very beginning of Part 2. The addition of chapter |37| is a promise I made to the Lord if he would Reveal to me what Heaven is, what he did...

After chapter |33| of 2021, I considered this work to be finished. Afterwards, the Lord insisted that I dive under the Scriptures of the Bible (**our tradition**). To do this, the Lord gave me several Manifestations and I carried out an in-depth search. These are chapters |34 to 38|. The Lord being the Truth and the Light, he wanted to illuminate the hidden side of the origins of Judaism and Christianity. The Lord Reveals that we have preferred the power of a religion and the euphoria of the mysteries (which distance us from Him) rather than really seeking Him and doing what he has asked of us. The conversion of our heart, spreading good around us and really belonging to God.

500 years before Jesus, the Jewish authorities closed Judaism with the Torah and the prophets were persecuted. 300 years after Jesus, Christian authorities closed Christianity with the NT making it seem like a Living God had nothing more to say. In fact, Christianity has only been free to express since the 1960s.

Even though this book was very difficult to do, I understood that the Lord Jesus has been gagged for a very long time and that he was waiting for the possibility of Revealing himself again. Obviously, he had a lot to say, hence this voluminous book! The Lord Jesus deserves to be heard without any religious censorship since he died on the cross freely out of Love for us!

Of course, like everyone else, one day I will not be here anymore. I will no longer be able to continue to make known this work, which in any case is already impossible to make known to me alone. On the other hand, the Lord Jesus gave us all this gift in order to support Christianity which is currently going through a very difficult time. **So it is up to each and every Christian to preserve this free gift that belongs to us, and to make it known. Without the effort of each of you, this gift from the Lord Jesus will unfortunately be forgotten and disappear.**

|39-H| One last word...

This book is {Inspired and structured} by the Lord. **Yes, this book is truly sacred**, because it contains the description of 28 Manifestations of the Spirit of God listed in the table in article |38-U|. If one day you become {God's child}, then you will recognize my Manifestations of the Spirit and I can assure you that on that day, this book will be your best friend and you will truly believe in it! I would have liked to have had this book in hand on March 14, 2016...

I asked myself the question, why did the Lord ask me for this book? In article |38-V|, I discovered that the Lord made the Promise to instruct each of {God's children} and that he asked me to write down the instruction he gave me in order to share it with you. I understood that the Lord wanted this book because it is a drop in the ocean of His Promise to share his knowledge and Wisdom from the time of Abraham. Yes, each of the prophets gave his drop of water and now it was my turn to do so too.

A reader might say to me: "being {a God's child}, is it difficult?" In fact, it is a great joy, but it also comes with some difficulties, including people's unbelief and indifference. In the Old Testament, the prophet Isaiah already wrote that the Message of the Lord was not listened to, so that will not change now.

NT	Epistle to the Romans	10,16	But not everyone has heeded the good news; for Isaiah says, "Lord, who has believed what was heard from us?"
----	-----------------------	-------	--

On the other hand, I eagerly wait for the Lord to bring me to Eternal Happiness with Him. I can assure you that even if I do not deserve it, I will take it with joy!

Humanity has had everything from its Creator: a pretty blue planet full of life; teaching and divine Wisdom to live united and in peace; no intervention from the Creator to punish us. Total freedom! Yes, but freedom involves a price to pay when we reject our Creator who is Life itself! Despite all this, the Lord does not stop loving us and putting his hope in us. I admit to you that His Holiness is disconcerting! Give so much and receive so little! How our Creator must suffer, with all our indifference! I even saw a report of a person who had a near-death experience (NDE) and whom Jesus said that he did not know what to do with us anymore, because he gave us everything, even the possibility of dying in our place and to be {reborn} through his Resurrection.

The Creator gave us Earth as a school to learn. He offered us his teaching and his Wisdom to light the path of our human life. For Him, the ultimate goal of humanity is that it discovers its Creator, that it learns to live in harmony together with respect for each other and for nature. On Earth, if a person has this desire, then he will find his Creator (God). This desire is absolutely necessary in order to go to Heaven, because Heaven has been Revealed to be to Live united together in the Happiness of the Existence of our Creator for Eternity. See article |37-E|.

|39-I| In short...

We seek God, God Presents Himself to us. We need God, God is there and offers us his Love. We want to know God, he Unveils himself as in this present book. We want to have the presence of God in our life, he gives us his Eternal Life. We know that we are going to die in the ground, God has come to die in our place and to offer us his Resurrection. We seek justice and truth, we find the only Holy One, God.

|39-J| This book on Truth is a gift from the Lord for all of us...

God really exists, this book is the proof!

Without the request of the Lord and his help, this present book would never have been written. Do not forget that I have a basic training in applied science. It is a real privilege to have been able to participate in this book.

I hope this book has inspired you to go in search of our Creator! He really exists and is waiting for you!

Annex

|A-1| Conservation of the complete work

This free work (French/English) is kept at:

Bibliothèque et Archives nationales du Québec

Library and Archives Canada

It is available in paper format and electronic formats (EPUB, printable PDF).

Simply search by the author name (Dominic P. Simon).

If a reader wants to share this work with other people, he is welcome and the Lord thanks him...

Note that you can always find the most recent book of the work on the author's website.

|A-2| Several books, one work

(English/French):

Legal deposit: Bibliothèque et Archives nationales du Québec
Title of the work: The Holy Spirit is a real Manifestation in you; without it, no Heaven!
Title of book number 17: Jesus, Light of the Kingdom of God
Format: Paper
ISBN : 978-2-924881-77-4
Format: Printable PDF
ISBN : 978-2-924881-78-1
Title of book number 18 (complete work 2017-2024): Jesus, Lord and Savior, Light of the world
Format: Printable PDF
ISBN : 978-2-924881-82-8
Title of book number 19 (work 2017-2024 lightened): God really exists, He loves you, here's the proof
Format: Printable PDF
ISBN : 978-2-924881-86-6
Availability: consultation of these books is free.

(Français/Anglais) :

Dépôt légal : Bibliothèque et Archives nationales du Québec
Titre de l'œuvre : L'Esprit Saint est une Manifestation réelle en toi, sans elle pas de Ciel !
Titre du livre numéro 17 : Jésus, Lumière du Royaume de Dieu
Format : Papier
ISBN : 978-2-924881-74-3
Format : PDF imprimable
ISBN : 978-2-924881-75-0
Titre du livre numéro 18 (œuvre complète 2017-2024) : Jésus, Seigneur et Sauveur, Lumière du monde
Format : PDF imprimable
ISBN : 978-2-924881-80-4
Titre du livre numéro 19 (œuvre 2017-2024 allégée) : Dieu existe vraiment, Il vous aime, voici la preuve
Format : PDF imprimable
ISBN : 978-2-924881-84-2
Disponibilité: la consultation de ces livres est libre.

The work:

The Holy Spirit is a real Manifestation in you; without it, no Heaven!

Whether you are a Christian or not, this book on the Truth is for every human being. It addresses concrete topics and says what everyone should absolutely know. You have the right to know the true reality!

The website <https://www.dominicpsimon.com> gives you access to the information and the Internet resources used for this book.

The work:

The publication of the initial work was done in 2017 with the participation of the Lord (a little more than 12 Manifestations of the Holy Spirit). Thereafter, the Lord advanced the work until 2023 with a little more than 8 additional Manifestations.

About the author:

I have 3 diplomas in applied science and I am only interested in what is real and proved.

The heart of the work:

The gift of the Holy Spirit is the cornerstone of Christianity. Contrary to the common thinking of Christians, this gift is not imaginary and is not in the hands of religious people. To go to Heaven, Jesus must give it to you concretely during your life on earth...

In this work, I give you all the information and the arguments needed (science, the Bible, miracles and testimonies) to prove what I write.

Enjoy your reading!